

Palmerin D'Oliva.

# THE FIRST PART:

SHEWING  
THE MIRROVR OF NOBLE  
lities, the Map of Honour, Anatomic of rare  
Fortunes, Heroicall presidents of Love, won-  
der of Chivalrie, and the most accomplished  
Knight in all perfection.

Presenting to Noble minds, their Courtly desires,  
to Gentiles their expectations, and to the inferiour  
*sots, how to imitate their Versues : Handled with*  
modestie to shun offence, yet delightfull  
for Recreation.

Written in Spanish, Italian, and French : and from  
them turned into English, by A. M. one of the  
Messengers of his Majesties  
Chamber.

*Patere & Abstine.*



LONDON,  
Printed for B. ALSOR and T. FAUCETT, dwelling in  
Gorb-street neare the lower Pumpes.

1637.



TO  
THE WORSHIPFULL,  
MR. FRANCIS YONG, of Brent-

Pellam, in the County of Hertford Esquire,  
and to Mistresse SUSAN YONG his wife,  
and my most kind Mistresse, health, and  
their hearts contentment, con-  
nually wished.



Eing indebted to you both for your manifold kindnesses. I am bold so conseru-  
ing my Labours begun, concerning the  
course of my promised histories, this  
being the first part of PALMERIN D'  
OLIVA, ringleader to all the rest, and  
therefore the Original from whence they which follow  
have bin derived. Though in my translating they came last  
which should have bin first, now I have good hope, that by  
the reprinting of them over againe, at length they will  
come to a just order, and each have his place as their course  
describeth. The Second part of this will shortly follow: then  
the Third and last that I am now in hand withall, which

## The Epistle Dedicatore.

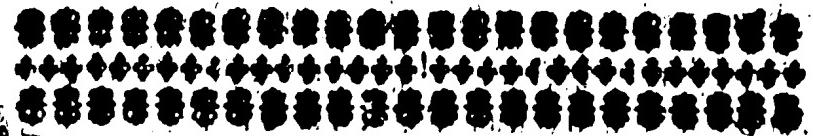
concluding with PALMERIN of England, and PRY-  
MALLION of Greco; their severall lost Part, will  
perfite the whole Historie, and make it compleat in eve-  
ry Part. As therell, so I commend this to your Worship.  
full protection, remaining always yones with my most  
endeavours, and pray:ng that your Prosperity may  
ever fail.

Your poore well-willer  
till death,

A. M.



TO



### To the Reader.



When I finished my second Part  
of Palmerin of England, I  
promised this worke of Palmerin D'Olina, because it de-  
pended so especially on the o-  
ther: to discharge that debt,  
for promise is no lesse accoun-  
ted, with the new yeare I send  
him abroad, a friendly com-  
panion for the long evenings,  
and a fit recreation for other vacant times.

But because some (perhaps) will make exceptions a-  
gainst me, that being but one Booke in other languages,  
I now devide it twaine: my awnswere is, That to glut men  
with delight, may make them surfeit, and so in expecting  
thanks for my paines, I should remayne condemned by  
general misliking. Beside, a Booke growing too bigge  
in quantitie, is Profitable neither to the minde nor the  
purse: for that men are now so wise and the world so hard,  
as they love not to buy pleasure at unreasonable price. And  
yet the first Part will entice them to haue the second, when  
(it may be alledged) the cost is as great, though it had come  
altogether: yet I am of the minde, that a man grutched  
not so much at a little money, payd at severall times, as hee  
doth at once, for this advantage he hath, in meane time he  
may employ halfe his money on more needfull occasions,  
and raise some benefit toward buying the second part. Ag-  
aine, the other part will be new at the comming forth,

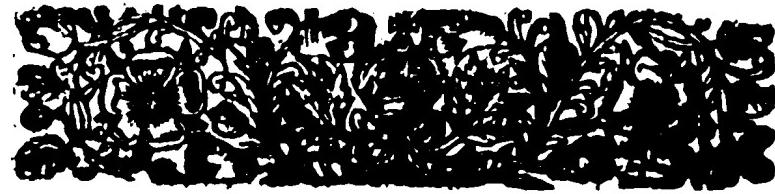
To the Reader.

where now it would be stale : For such are Affections now a dayes, that a Booke a sennight old, is scant worth the reading. Thus no injury is offered by dividing my Booke, but profit both to you and mee : Yours I have rehearsed, and mine is, that a little pause doth well in so long a labour; beside, this advantage would I take, that if my first Part deserved no liking, you should never be offended by me with the Second.

Yet herein I am encouraged, that what hath past with so great applyance in divers Languages, can hardly merite to be despised in England, being matter altogether of delight, and no way offensive : For Noble and Gentle minds, are farre from iniuring the Historic, that hath so highly pleased the Emperours, Kings, and mighty Potentates, if then the Inferior sort mislike, it is because they are not capable of so especiall deserving it.

And yet I am perswaded, that both one and other will friendly entertaine Palmerin D'Oliva ; because his History is so plentifully stored with choyse conteit, variety of matter and exquisite conveyance : as nothing can bee reproved but my simple Translation, yet that I hope will be pardoned too, in that to translate, allows little occasion of fine Pen-worke.

THE



THE FIRST PART  
OF THE ANCIENT  
and honourable Historic of the  
valiant Prince Palmerin D'Oliva,  
Emperour of Constantinople;

Sonne to King FLORENDOS of Macedonia,  
and the Faire GRIANA, Daughter to Remigius,  
Emperour of Constantinople :  
a History full of singular and  
Courtly recreation.

CHAP. I.

Of the secret Love that the Prince Tarisius bare to the young Princelle Griana, and the arrivall of the Prince Florendos of Constantinople.

The ancient Histories of the famous Emperours of Constantinople doe record, that the eighth Emperour succeeding Constantine, the Founder of that ancient and famous Cittie, was named Remigius, who governed so justly, and with such exceeding honour, as not onely his Subjects inti rely loved him, but of the Kingdomes about him he

## The History of Palmerin D'Ohva,

he was so feared and reverenced, that his Empire increased more large then in the time of his Predecessors. This Rennius was of such a Princeely and magnificient mind that no Knight whatsoeuer came into his Court, without very honourable respect and bountifull rewards : expressing the god nature of a virtuous Prince, whose deeds were held of no small reckoning amongst his very Enemies. He married with th: King of Hungariais Daughter, a Princesse soz wit and beauty, equal with any of her time, which caused her to be so especially loued of her Lord the Emperour, as he altogether gaue over the exercize of Armes : notwithstanding, his Court did not di:niish one tote of the former glory for god and hardy Knights, but daily increased in such sort, as that he tooke great delight to haue young Princes, Knights and Gentlemen, nurtered and educated from their Infancie in his Pallace, especially after the Empresse had brought him a Sonne, which was named Caniano, at whose Birth was no little rejoicing through the whole Empire.

Within two yeares after, she was likewise deliuered of a godly Daughter named Griana, who growing to fourteene yeares of age, was of such rare beauty and singular god grace, as those that beheld her, esteemed her for the chiefe st picce of workmanship that ever Nature framed.

Hereupon it chanced, that Tarisius Sonne to the King of Hungaria (who had bene brought vp in company with the young Prince Caniano) fell into such amorous conceit of the young Princesse, as he devoted himselfe onely to her service, being unable to concle the obiect of his affections, but that time made her acquainted with the cause of his alteration. Many meanes he found to entice her god opinion towards him, but sh: carrying a religions zeale to loue in some other Chancie, made no reckoning of his importunate and diligent seruice, which was to a Hell of tormenting thoughts upon Tarisius, setting his herte and Regardes so deepe-ly despised.

Neurthe-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART, I.

Neurthelesse (to compasse his intent) he desired his Couzin Caniano, to cause a Triumph be published whereto all Knights might be summoned, as well Strangers as others : not doubting, but he should sped so well in deedes of Armes, as thereby he might deserve the loue of the sayze Griona, and so afterwards make meanes by the Empresse to demand her in mariage, all which he concealed from his Couzin Caniano : who verp gladdly did consent to what Tarisius had requested, watching opportunity to finde the Emperour his Father at leasure, when he made his Higbnesse acquainted with the whole enterprize, of himselfe and his Couzin Tarisius, desiring him that all Knights might haue warning for preparation, against a day the next moneth appointed for the purpose. The Emperour was very well pleased with his Sonnes request, accounting himselfe highly honoured by his demand : whereupon he caused Heraldes of Armes presently to be dispatch'd, to signifie his intended Tournement throughout all Countries farre and neare.

In the meane while Tarisius could not rest day nor night, but still endeuoured to doe what he judged might please the Princesse Griana, to whom as yet had not vicered the effect of his longing desires, albeit, by extremer actions he daily made shew sufficient of his tormenting passions. But it so fell out not long after, that one day in her walking he had sojnted her alone from all the other Ladys and Gentlewomen, in a place convenient for a Lovers discourse, where falling from one argument to another, the fury of his oppositions intoldened him so farre, that at length he brake with her in manner following :

Madamme, you are not ignorant of the honourable assembly, that is appointed at the Feast ensuing, when I hope to receive the order of Knighthood, and if it shall like you to thinke so well of me, as to grant me one request, eough for you to afford me, perhaue your selfe that I shall imagine

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

imagine my sorteine equall with the happiest Knights that ever lived, in that it may be the onely meane, wherby I shall enjoy the prize and honour of the Tryumph.

Griana knowing assuredly that Tarisius bare her great affection, as he haue before rehearsed, returned him this answere. In sooth Couzin, it would please me merriculously to be the meane of so good sorteine as you promise your selfe: Neuerthelesse, I haue not learned so little modesty as to grant any thing before I know what is desired.

When Tarisius vnderstod her modest excuse, he perswaded himselfe that he shold obtaine that of her, whereof vntill that instant he had liued in despaire: whereupon the teares standing in his eyes, he began in this manner. I humbly beseech you god spadane, to take in worth what I am to acquaint you with: soz when I determined to know ther my griefe in secret, the extremities of my affection grew to such a surplusage, as it brake the strings of my thoughts, almost woveyn for euer silent, to reueale that to you which my selfe dare but reverently thinke, such is my scarre to displease you, otherwise, I know no meane can warrant me from sodaine and cruell death: so settled is the vnspotted loue I beare you, which when I strue to overcomme and my selfe also, the more I would decrease it, the more it augmenteth, and that so strongly, as while you are in presence, my spirit forsaketh every part of me, to live in you onely. For which cause I haue determined (if you thinke it good) to request you of the Emperour your Father for my wife, and if he regard me with so much honour, the Realmes of Hungaria may well challenge, and my selfe likewise, the highest come in earthly felicity, having a mistresse of such unspeakable quality. In the meane time, if you please to bestow on me any Jewell or favour, commanding me to weare it as your knight and seruant: you shall well perceive how aduenturous loue will be in defence of my right, by the advantage I shall recover in the vertue of a guest so acceptable.

Griana,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 1.

Griana, who made but slender account of his passions, and being not well pleased that he held her with such vain discourses: modestly returned him this answere. If you had such regard of me as I well deserue, you wold not attempt me with speeches so vnsueting my hearing: for if your desire be such as you give me to understand, you ought to make it knowne to the Emperour or Empresse, who haue greater authority ouer me then I haue my selfe. Therefore I desire you henceforth not to aduenture the like on perill of your life, otherwise I shall let you know how highly you offend me: on which condition I am content for this time to pardon your want of discretion, in that I perceve my selfe to be the onely cause thereof, granting you time and leasure thus priuately to assaile me, for which over-sight, I repent me at the very heart. With which words shee flung away and left him alone, declaring by her Countenance to be offended with his request in that she desired rather to dye then accept him for her husband, or to allow him the name of a friend.

If then Tarisius was driven into a quandarie, we need not maruaile: wherefore troubled as he was, and not caring greatly whither he went, he entred the Empresse chamber, where she and her Sonne Caniano stood conserning together: without saluting the one or other, he late downe in a Chaire, and gaue such bitter sighes, as the Empresse hearing, was somewhat moued therewith, doubting he had eyther receiu'd some great iniury, or else could not prouide himselfe so sufficiently as hee wold for the Tryumph, whereupon she leſt her Sonne, and calling Tarisius aside, this began with him:

Nephew, I see you very melancholy, which makes me to iudge, that you want some needfull thing for the Countement, which my Sonne hath caused to be published. With which words she beheld Tarisius moze wistly then she had done before, and perceiued the teares to trickle downe his cheekeſ,

The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

cheekes, which made her more desirous to know the cause of his griefe, but his heart was so confounded and shut vp in anguish, as he could not speake one word vnto her. Neuer thelesse, the Empresse who loued him as her owne Sonne, found so many meaneſ to perſwade him, as in the end hee disclosed the loue he bare to Criana, and the anſwerlikeſe which ſhe made him: whereby I am assured (quoth he) that nothing but death can ceaſe my torments. The Empresse who of her ſelue did many times determine to make that mariage, (perceiving now how fitly the occation offered it ſelue) began to reſolute on the conſideration therof: and to content her Nephew, in excusing the Princeſſe Criana, ſpake as followeth: Doe you Nephew miſlike the anſwere of my Daughter? Belieue me, therein ſhe did but her duty: for ſhe cannot diſpoſe of her ſelue, being young, and vnder conſtroll, but by conſent of the Empereour and I, whom you ought first to make acquainted with your riqeſt. But ſince I perceiue how you are affected, I promife you I will conſerue neſte in following her intent.

As they continued theſe diſcourses, they were given to low, ſhe deſirous he ſhould ſmoothly couering the baſte he was deſirous he ſhould ſwallow, ſhe deſirous him to grant her one riqeſt, whereof ſhe underſtand by a messenger, that the Prince Florendos the Kinge ſonne of Maccodon, was newly arriued with a braſe company of knyghtis. But his coming to the Empereour was not as his Claſſaile or ſubiect, becauſe the Kingdome of ſped, thus ſhe began. Maccodon was at that time no way beholding to the Empire

How the Emprefſe conſered with the Emperour, as concerning the Marriage of their Daughter Criana with Turifius, Sonne to the King of Hungaria; whereof they both determined, and of that which happened in the meane time.



He Emprefſe was not forgetfull of her promise made to her Nephew Tarifius, but endeauoured by all meaneſ poſſible to finde the Emperour at ſuch leſure, as ſhe might impart the whole vnto him: and because ſhe had ſo hardily taken the matter vpon her, ſhee would gladly it ſhould ſort to effect, as commonly Women are couetous of their owne deſireſ: Therefore no maruell if ſhe were earnest in following her intent.

Sooone after, walking alone with the Emperour, and ſmoothly couering the baſte he was deſirous he ſhould ſwallow, ſhe deſirous him to grant her one riqeſt, whereof ſhe would not willingly be denied. The Emperour neuer before hearing her ſo importunate, conſented at the firſt to whatſoever ſhe demanded: Now perſwading her ſelue, to

My Lord, haſing often conſidered with my ſelue, that but onely to ſee the faire young Princeſſe Criana; the reour Daughter Criana is of yeares and diſcretion able for a nowne of whose Beuty and vertues had ſo pierced hiſ husband, I am the moze deſirous to ſee her honourably bethoughts, as before he ſaw her, he loued and honoured her lowed. And for that the young Prince Tarifius hath bene ſo that for this cauſe onely he journeyed to Constantinople ſtained vp in your Court, and (which I little thought) ſome Where he was very honourably entertained, both of the Emperour and his Sonne Caniano, as also of the Emprefſe anſot amisse to unio them in marriage together: for hardly faire Criana, who oftentimes heard him reckoned and eſteymall we finde (in mine opinion) a Lord of greater blood med amongst the moze honourable and gracieous Princeſſe and birththen haſe, being haſe apparent to the Crowne and

King-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Kingdome of Hungaria : besides, they haue beene so long time conuersant together in their young yeares, will enterteine a more speciall regard of loue betwene them, then can be in any other that may moue the question to her. Madame (answered the Emperour) shee is your Child, and I doe not thinke but you woulde her good : therfore I like the motion well, for that indeed I esteeme so well of Tarisius, as of mine owne Sonne, and since we haue so happily fallen into these discourses, we will soothwith certifie the King his Father by our Ambassadours, that wee may understand his opinion herein. The Empresse gratified her Lord with very hearty thankes, being not a little glad she had so well preuailed, wherefore shee immediately aduertised Tarisius. But for Griana, her affection was else-where, for she bare a certaine secret good liking to Florendos, so soone as she beheld him, fearing so great report of his Knightly bountie and prowesse, so that beholding them together, and their eyes deluering the good content of each other, one might easily iudge, that Loue had so mightily mastered her thoughts, as if hee consented, shee had set downe her rest for her choyse, and hee on the other side was drawne into the same compasse, notwithstanding each of them (soz the time) concealed what they rather desired should be knowne betwene them. Yet this hidden fire stroue to gaine place of issye ; for diuers times the Princesse Griana being amongst her Ladys, talking of such Knights as woulde shew themselves at the Tournament, the Prince Florendos was comonly first spoken of, and so highly would the Ladys commend him beyond all the other, as Griana could not reaine from changing colour, so that the alteration hee found in her Sp'rit myght be evidently perceiued, howbeit none of the Ladys as then noted it : and thus she continued till the Feast of Saint Maria d'Augusta, whch was the Day appointed for the Tournament, on which day the Emperour knighted his Sonne Caniano, and Tarisius, Nephew to

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

the Empresse, In honour whereof, hee held a greater and more magnificent Court, then besoys times he had done : for he suffered the Ladies to accompany the Knights at the Table : Albeit they were not wont to doe so often till that time, yet full well it pleased the Prince Florendos, who sate opposite to the Princesse Griana ; During whiche time of dinner, though many piercing Looks, and smothered Sighes were sent from each other, as messengers of their semblable opinions, yet cunningly they shadowed all from being discovered, and after the Tables were withdrawne, and each ones preparing for the Journey, Florendos so well behaved himselfe, as hee founde the meane to speake privately with his new Friend : and thus he began :

Madame, the Heavens haue not a little fadoured me, in sorting vs so commodiously together : That I may shew before I enter the Lyt's Royall, the occasion why I left the Realme of Macedon, to visite my Lord the Emperour. I swears to you vpon my Knightly faith, that your Gracions selfe was the onely cause of my Journey : and while I live, I shall ebermore aduenture my selfe, in ought that may stand with your labour and Uking ; And the first argument of my happinelle, I shoulde account, if you woulde Command me this day to Arme my selfe for your Knight : Otherwise, I must be content to absent my selfe, being assaied, that without your regard, it is vnpossible for me to doe any thing that can returne me estimation and Honour. And albeit I haue not as yet done any seruice to you, whereby I shoulde deserue to be accepted : Yet such is the hope I repose in your vertuous nature, as you will not refuse my honest request, being the first I ever desired of you, and not the last (I trust) shall doe your Honour. Now as you haue heard before, Griana earnestly affected Florendos : Nevertheless, as a modest and well advised Princesse, doubting least hee signid those Speeches of course, dissembling her selfe to be somewhat displeased, returned this Answer :

B

I did

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

I did not thinke y<sup>e</sup> Lord Florendos, that you would so faire forget your selfe, to hold me with speches not besyning the Daughter of so great an Emperour as I am; Her vertheleſſe, knowing you are a ſtranger, and Ignorant (it may be) of the modeſteſe which ſhould defend Knights, debiting with Ladys, I will not be ſuch rigour towards you as I ought, yet muſt I tell you, that I finde my ſelfe offendēd. You deſire that as my Knight you may enter the Courteyn: for that I grant y<sup>e</sup>, to the end I may perceive the effect of the p<sup>r</sup>owesse, which each one ſo much commendeſt in you, the reſt, it is my pleasure that you forbearē.

Madame (quoth he) if I haue uſed any ſuch ſpeches as agree not with your patience, ſo<sup>r</sup> Gods sake (in my excuse) accufe my ſmall coniappe of libertie, which remaineth ſtill at your diſpoſition. What quoth ſhe, thinke you, that I will loke any but he that muſt and ought to be my Husband & Ah ſweet Lady, ſaid Florendos, that iſ iſ that I ſo earnestly deſire: and thinke not that I ſollicite you with any other kind of love, but onely to make you the p<sup>r</sup>efette of my ſelfe, and altogether to diſpoſe of me and mine: ſo<sup>r</sup> profeſe whereof, I will hereafter implō my ſelfe in the Emperours ſervice, in ſuch ſort (as if you like it) I hope to purchase his conſent. Truly Sir, quoth ſhe, that onely appertaines to the Emperour and not to me, to whom you are to make knowne what you intend: For he hath Authority to command, and I am bound by duty to obey. At which wordes the Emprefte caſted her away; when Florendos making her courteous reverencē, departed to his Chamber to Arme himſelfe, ſo<sup>r</sup> many Knights were entred the Lyſtee, and he in ſhort ſpace came thither ſo<sup>r</sup> company: where he behaved himſelfe with ſuch valour, as he not onely got the Honour of the firſt day, but of the fourre daies following, while the Courteyn endurēd, and wonne the p<sup>r</sup>ize, which Caniano had prepared for him that best deserved it, which made him be greatly esteemed of the Emperour, and of the whole Court in generall, especially

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

especially of the ſayne Grians, whose heart by little and litte, Love brought to ſubjection, to the no ſmall content of Florendos, which doubtleſſe had the Prince Tarisius beheld, I imagine he would haue hardly liked it.

But now during the time of thole great feaſts and Tymþes, Fortune the ſwoyne Enemy to all quietneſſe, preſented the Emperour with other occaſions, to cut off the P<sup>r</sup>anknes and Courtly deſiſes: For after many of the Knights assembled at his Court, had taken leaue to returne into their Countreyes, Gamezio Donne to the Soldane of Babylon, who was on the Deas with a mighty Armie, in tending to conquer Alexandria, was by extremitie of windes and weather, diuen into the Straights before Constantinople. Which when the Pilots and Sparmers perceiued, not one amonſt them but greatly rejoiced at this great good fortune, but chiefly Gamezio, who perſtraded himſelfe that his Gods had ſent him thither, that the moſt noble and flouriſhing Cittie of the world might fall into his hands: Whereupon the windes ſomewhat appeaſed, and the Deas calmed, hee assembled the cheſte and principall Captaines of his Armie, and thus he began to ſpeak:

My god Friends, I beliue be assuredly, that our great gods would not ſuffer vs to arrive in Alexandria, because we went againſt them of our owne Law and Religion, but rather it liketh them better, that we ſhould abyde our ſelues to this Countrey of Christians, egher to ruinate it altogether, or at leaſt to bring it under our obeyance. Wherefore I am determined at this time, to deferr the revenge of the Injuſts, whiche the King Calameno did to the Soldane, and as much as in me lyes, implō my forces in Conqueſt of this Countrey: For which cauſe, I deſire that each of you would particularly incourage your people, auſting them (if we can conqueſt this Cittie) the Kitchens thereof will counterualle their paine and trabaile.

The Captaines failed not to accomplish their Charge to

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

the uttermost, summoning every one presently to Armes : So providing their Shipe, their Ensignes, and all things else needfull for their defence, they hysed their sayles, making towards the shoare, where with such provision as they had they tooke Landing, making such a noyse with their Drums, Trumpets, and clameurs, as was heard with no small seare in every part of the Cittie. Neverthesesse, they were received with better resistance then they looked for, as following the Discourse, you shall at large understand.

### CHAP. III.

Of the Battell fought before the Cittie of Constantinople, betweene the Emperours power, and the Armie of Gamezio.



Scorne as this huge Armie on the sea was discovered by the Sentinels of the Cittie of Constantinople, the rumour arose so great, as the people ranne on heapes to defend the Haven, whers the Moores thought to have made their first entry. In the meane while, Caniano, Tarissius, and the other princi-pall Knights with their men at Armes, put themselves in Equipage, ordaining their Army in such warlike manner, as now they marched forth of the Cittie, to succour those places whers the Moores gans most eager Assault. The Prince Florendos being left behinde, mads no little hast to gather his Company : And as hee galloped with them by the Emperours Pallace, he espred the Princesse Criana, standing at her Chamber window, casting many a ruefull looke towards the Gates of the Cittie, which so deeplye pierced the gentle Princes heart, as immedately he sain within himselfe, By Heaven (Sweet Lady) egher will I dye this day

## Emperour of Constan[n]ople | PART. I.

day, as remoues the grise that semeth so neare to touch you. And with this resolution hee parling spares to his Horse ; it was not vey long before he got among the thickest of the Moores, where he beheld the Enemy so strong, and the Christians so weake, as the day was like to prove dangerous and dismall. For the Prince Gamezio was esteemed one of the best Knights through all Asia, and that day he behaved himselfe so roughlye amongst the Christians, as sooth to say, they were enforced to retyre towards the Cittie.

Whylle wher the Emperour beheld, who remained with no great strength to defend the Cittie, he was not a little grieved to see his men turne their backs on their Enemies, and dispose themselves in such fearefull and dismaying sorte. But Florendos and the Prince Caniano used such meanes, as they got them scorne in Array againe, and returned on the Enemy with a steele and hardy charge. Tarissius beheld himselfe very valiant, and adventurous, striking by all the meanes he could to equall the Prince Florendos, whis that day gaue testimony of most rare exploits : So these three noble Gentlemen past from rank to rank, sending all to the earth that durst withstand them. Gamezio seeing his men so bloodyly slaughtered on every side, meeting with Tarissius, would take revenges on him, delivering him such a steele stroke on the head with his Sword, as vpon he fell to the ground so astonisched, as his Enemy might even then haue slaine him : And so he had done but for the Prince Florendos, who seeing the Moore advancing himselfe on his Spyros, to reche a full stroke at Tarissius on the ground, lustred him quite out of his Saddle with his Lance, and bare him so ready therewith to the Earth, as breaking his neck with the fall, he gaue vp the ghost.

When the Moores beheld Gamezio their Generall slaine, and the Christians make such hancke of them, their helmes falling them to make farther resist, fled so fast as they could

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

towards their Ships, when had not the night too soone p̄se, wented them, not one had escaped death or taken Prisoner, notwithstanding, the greatest part were put to the sword, others making hast to get away by Boates, were drawned in the sea, and many of chise accompt brought backe prisoners; Thus with a stroie returned the Emperour power backe to the City.

So many of the Moores as escarpd to their Ships, being not a little glad they were so farre from their Enemies: set sayle and returned towards the Soltane, to whom they declared the summe of their Misfortune, as also the Death of h̄r sonne Gamezio; which tydings made him wel ne mad with rage and anger. But being old and crazed with sicknesse, he could not goe in person to revenge his death, which made him boore and sweare, that so soone as his other Son came to yeares to beare Arms, he would send him with such a paissant Strength, as easly he shoulde destroy the Emperour and his Countrey: in the meane time he sent the Ransome to redeme them that were taken prisoners: wheres we will leave the Soltane, and returne to Caniano, and the other Princes, who being now come agayne to the Cittie, the Emperour having heard the worthy service Florendos had done that same day (and how he has receaved some few dangerous wounds in the Battell) sent for him in all hast that night be to his Pallace, because his owne Chyurrgions and Physcians shoulde haue care of him. So was Florendos brought very honourably to the Pallace, and conducted to a Chamber besyming his estate, where the Empresse and Grianas came presently to visite hym: to whom the Prince Caniano did declare, how Tarisius had bene slaine by Gamezio, but that Florendos stepped betwene his death and him, but (quoth he,) the Moore excused Tarisius; so in my presence he gave his last farewell to this world, so that now we may say the Malozie is ours, albeit before it hung in hard suspence.

While

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

While Caniano continued these and such like speches, Grianas cast many a swete looke on the Prince Florendos, and he answered his object with the selfe same messengers of his heart. Thus contented they their severall passions with modest and vertuous regard, as none present could suspect their secret meaning. The Empresse and her Daugther courteously taking their leaue, Florendos and his Chyurrgions leaue a while together, they to apply medicines to his wounds, and he the remembrance of his Mistresse to his hart. On the morrow, the Emperour with his Mortality rode forth of the Cittie, to sic the slaughtered budyes, among whom they found Gamezio, who was easly knowne by the richnesse of his Armour, which Caniano caused to be taken from the dead Body, and brought to Florendos, as the desart of his trubell; when the Emperour himselfe (the moxe to honour hym) made present thereso to Florendos at his retурne, with these speches:

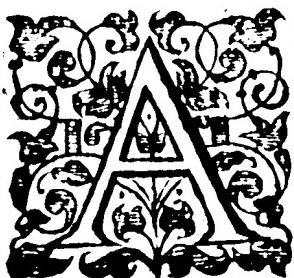
My noble Couzin, by your Valour and Knightly prouesse, have I had the upperhand of mine Enemies: may I but live to requite thy good deserts, I shall account my selfe happie and fortunate: Notwithstanding, account of mee as thy Kinsman and continuall Friend, and bee there ought in my power shall like thee to demand, on the faith of a King I vow to give it thee.

Florendos most humbly thanked the Emperour, as well for the great Honour he did him, as also for his large and bountifull promise, wheron he builded so assaredly, as he almost accounted sayre Grianas for his owne: who with the Empresse her Mother, came daily to visite him, by which meansas their mutuall Loue increased moxe and moxe, and Florendos recovered his health in the shorster time, which when he had obtained, he sollicited the Emperour with this late following.

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

## CHAP. IIII.

How Florendos intreated the Emperour, to give him in Marriage his Daughter *Griana*, and what answer the Emperour made him.



After that Florendos was thoroughly healed of his wounds which he had received in fight against the Moores: finding the Emperour one day at leisure, and alone in his Chamber, he began to salute him, as hereafter followeth:

M Olt dread and soveraigne Lord, so Princely and gracious have your favours beene towards mee, since first I entred your royll Court, as the King my Father and I shall never answer such exceeding courtesie. And to the end this kindnesse may rather increase then any way diminish, I beseech your Highnesse not to deny me one request, which among the infinite number of your Princely graces towards mee, I shall account it to exceed all other. In briefe, it is the Princesse *Griana* your Daughter, whose love and honourable Faine, made me forsake the Realme of *Macedon*, onely to desire her in Marriage, if either any desert in mee, or your owne Princely good conceit, might repute me worthy of so high a favour. And for I would not your Highnesse should any way misconceive of me, as that the motion proceedeth from a youthfull and unadvised head, or that I have enterprized it without the good liking of the King my Father: I humbly desire your Majestie to rest satisfied, both in these and all other opinions, in that my Fathers consent, brought me with no little speed hither, and the hope of yours during my abode here,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

heere, hath taught me to place my Love with discretion, and continue it with hono.able loyaltie. With this addition ( under your Highnesse correction ) that were shee mine, as I am wholly hers, the faithfull service of a thankfull Son, would answere the gentlenesse of so good a Father, and the irrevocable vowes of holy Love, assure *Griana* of her *Florendos*.

Right darelly did the Emperour loue the Prince Florendos, as had hee been his owne Sonne Caniano: his knightly valour and manifold other Virtues justly inducing him thereto: and gladly he would haue consented to his Request if his promise made unto Tarilius did not binde him to the contrary, wherupon hee returned him this answer.

Beleeve me good Couzen, I am not a little a-grieved, that I cannot satisfie your gentle Request, for that *Tarilius*, Nephew to the Empresse hath already prevented mee: to him haue I past my promise for my Daughter, and daily I expect the Ambassadours comming from *Hungaria*, to finish the Marriage, so that I had rather loose the best of my Cities, then it should be said I falsified my word. Notwithstanding, of one thing I can assure you, that you are farre higher in my grace and favour then hee: yet necessitie is without Law, and the regard of mine Honour must intreat you to hold me excused.

Greatly abashed was the Prince Florendos, seeing in one instant that hope stricken dead, that had maintained his life, since his coming to Constantinople: and so nipt in the head was hee with the Emperours answer, as hee stood a good while in a Lady, not speaking one word; at last he began thns. God forbid, that so great a Prince shoulde breake his promise by my occasion: Neuertheles, my truth and loyaltie to your Highnesse shall not any way diminish, but I shall remaine the most forward in Duty, of any that owe Service or Allegiance to your Majestie. Neither will I (said the Emperour) imagine the worse of you, but lone

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

loue you rather better then I did before. Then entered others **P**oplemen and **G**entlemen, which made them breake off from further speeches, and Florendos taking his leave, went to his Chamber, so full of griefe and extreme heauiselle, as easly he could haue boene induced to commit some violence vpon himselfe: but casting himselfe vpon his bed, he thus began to breake forth the storie of his passions, to ease the heable burthen of his oppresseo **S**pirit:

Unhappy wretch that I am beyond all other, what hope of life canst thou flater thy selfe withall, seeing the manes that shoulde maintaine the continuance thereof, saydes the (fond man) to hope any longer. What angry **P**lanet governed thy Malicie, that he to whom thou gauest life, shoud this day be the caute to end thine owne. Welcom me Tarisius, had I made tryall of this inconuenience before, hardly shold I haue put my person in such danger amonge the Moores, to sheld my life: but in desending the Sword out of thy shrowde, I haue deservedly shak it in mine owne, so that by lengthning thy dayes, I haue expred vaine owne hate, and that with a death so miserable and cruell, as no **E**nemy whatsoeuer would wish to another. But were it not that my Duty to the god **C**omperour commandeth me, thou couldst not with such ease exher out-brave me in my loue, or thus vurpe the gracious favor of my **M**istresse Griana, were affection ballanced with desire, or loue measured by vertue, as it is by opinion. Yet with standing, to dye for her loue I shall account my selfe happy, in that she cannot but prieke my vnluckie death, and my spirit shold passe with greater quiet to his end, if shold with what content I take my destinie: but sayde Griana, would God I hadde yher not sene: bee at all, or Fozendos had boene favourable to me in chioise. At which wordes, the extremesse of his passions tooke away the liberty of his speech, so that he could not finish what he would gladly haue spoken, but falling from his bed to the ground in a swoone,

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

amazed one of his **E**quires that was in the next Chamber, who hearing the fall, ranne in immediately, where seeing his **M**ister lying dead (in his judgement) ranne and callid Frenato, who was Couzin to Florendos, and one that knew most of his private astaires, notwithstanding, he was ignorant in the cause of this accident, who taking him by in his armes, with cold water and Vinegar cast to his face, at length he got life into him agayne: when Florendos opening his Eyes, and seeing his Couzin so busse about him, catching forth two or thre bitter Ughes, said:

My deare friend and Couzin, I beseech you hinder not the end and issue of my life, for being out of all hope to recover my Lady Griana, there is no meane left to maintaine my life. When Frenato heard these wordes, he doubted that the Prince had received some contrary answer from the **C**omperour, as concerning the Marriage betweene him and his Daughter, for whose loue onely hee left the Kingdome of Macedon: Wherefore, he perceiving that she must be the onely meane to ease his torment, he began thus roundly to answer the Prince. And what of this? Haue you therefore dispaire? Alas said Florendos, what would ye haue me doe? The **C**omperour hath long since past his power to her to Tarisius, as his Highnesse assured me by his owne wordes. Very well Sir (answered Frenato) but doe you know if she haue given her consent? I promise you I am perswaded that she loues him not, but that her labourable regard is much more towards you then him: and for you say so much, to morrow will I sound the bottome of this matter, so that (if I can) I will frustrate the **C**omperours intent towaards Tarisius. Doe you in the meane time but learne to dilemble your griefe, and shew not your selfe male-content for anything that hath boene said: but be of good cheare, and reserue your solitans in this case to the successe of mine endeavours. These and such like persuasions Frenato bid to the Prince, whom he thus left in his Chamber, and returned to the Pallace as was his manner.

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

All this while the Emperour bethought himselfe on the speches that had passed between him and Florendos, which made him the night following to discouer thereon with the Empresse, persuading her, that hee could maze willingly accept of him for his Sonne then Tarilius. But shē who highly fauoured her Nephew, reprooned his opinion with many answers, so that by impoztunate intreaties, teares, and other subtill fetches, which Women are wont to use to accomplish their deales, she so farre dissuaded the Emperour, as he promised her againe not to giue her to any other, then to him to whom she first falle his word. Of which words, the Empresse was not a little glad, and therefore all that night she deuised, by what meanes she might from that time forward so much as in her lay, to hinder Florendos from speaking to her Daughter : whereupon the daily kept her Chamber of presence, and held a more stricte looke on Griana then befor shē had done : whicch greatly increased the passions of Florendos, and brought him into so weake estate, as the learned Physicians could not delivere the cause of his Sicknesse, to the no small griefe of the Emperour, but especially of Caniano his Sonne.

Yet for all this, would not the Empresse at any time visite him ; because shē would hinder the occasion of her Daughters seeing him, remembraunce what Speches had past betweene him and the Emperour. And albeit, Griana made no outward shew therof, yet in her heart shē was greatly displeased at her Brothers dealings, so that one day when her Brother Caniano came to see her, to recount unto her in what extremity he had left his friendly compantion, and what griefe it woulde be to him if he dyed, as he greatly doubted : What my Lord (quoth she) it is not so I hope : Yea certayne (quoth he) and I feare he will very hardly escape this day. At which wordes the water stood in her eyes, yet so well as shē could she dissemble her passions : nevertheless, he could not hold it in, but said, I meruail

my ch

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

much that the Empresse my Mother makes so slender account of him, as since his Sicknesse she would not vouchsafe once to visite him : I feare shē hath forgotten what godd hee is to vs, that day when he valiantly slew the Turke Gamezio. Bela be me (my good Lord and Brother) I am heartily sorry for his Sicknesse, for if he dye (as God forbid, quoth shē secretly) the Emperour my Father shall loose more then he thinketh on : the great service he hath done for him already, may give instance of my wedes, and he being the Sonne of so great a Prince as he is. By this time had such extreme griefe overburthened her heart, as she was constrained (felingyn to goe to the Empresse Chamber) to leave her Brother, that she might alone by her selfe besoane her friends hard fortune.

### Chap. V.

How Griana sent a Ring to the Prince Florendos, by Cardina her Mayd, desiring him (as he loved her) to comfort himselfe ; And of the Anwer hee sent her.

 Riana thus leaving her Brother, went unto her Chamber, where moze and moze shē lamented for the Sicknesse of Florendos, and with her teares she coupled these discoules. May it be, that any living Creature can deserve so griesous punishment as I doe, that endangers the life of the worthiest Knight in the world ? Unhappy that I am, that Love, yea, the love he beares to me, shoulde bring so brave a Gentleman to so hard an erigent : But if he dye, such just vengeance will I take upon my selfe, as that I will not remaine one houre alane after him, and let our Ghosts haue their owne quiet in Death, that Fortune woulde not afford vs in Life. Yet will I thus farre fust ad: cuture, and that before any sleepe enter these Eyes of mine , try if it consiste in

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

in my power to easc his extremity, that bayes my Loue at  
too deere a price. And in anguish of mindes, he called one of  
her Damosels, the Daughter of her Nurse Cardina, whom  
above the rest she trusted most, and to her he began to speake  
in manner following :

Cardina, thou knowest the loue I alwayes bare thy Mo-  
ther, and for her sake how well I have thought of thee, I  
have knowne thee a long time a true and faithfull Servant :  
but now Cardina, is a time beyond all other, to make tryall  
of thy truth, and to witnesse thy loualtie to mee, onely as  
thou art sure, so to be secret, and so secret as I must put my  
Life and Honour into thy secrete. Cardina, who was wise,  
and of good government, hearing Griana vse such earnest  
Spachess, imagined that she would commit no common mat-  
ter to her with such Conjuration, whereupon she modestly  
returned this answer : Madame, rather had I be loyng  
pece meale in sunder, then any thing you command for se-  
cret, shoulde by me be revealed without your licence : and so  
assure your selfe, that while I live, you shall finde me as  
faithfull in ded, as I promise in word. I never hitherto  
(quoth the Princesse) had any other opinion of the : listen  
now therfore what I shall command the.

I haue vnderstod for certaine Cardina, that the grieuous  
sicknesse of the Prince Florendos, is caused by very earnest  
Loue which he beares to mee, and for I account it great pi-  
tie to lose so good a Knight ; doe so much as take the paines  
to goe to him from mee : and say, I desire him to be of good  
chere, and if there be any thing in my power may doe him  
good, I will gladly accomplish it, as she that loues him as  
her owne selfe, and to assure him thereof, say, I send him this  
Ring, which I will him to keepe as a pledge of my Loue.

Madame, answered Cardina, Fortune sped me so well, as  
my paines may gine ease to both your Passions : and might  
my sentence like you Madame, I know no Knight so worthy  
of your Loue as Florendos. See then, said Griana, and re-

turne

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

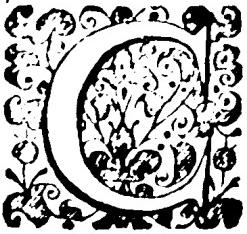
turne againe so soone as thou canst. She went Cardina  
straight to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, at the en-  
trance she met the Prince Caniano so hearie and penitue as  
micht be, because he perceived his friend to consume away  
every day more and more. But Cardina, who had welllear-  
ned her lesson, kept aside, and would not be soone of Cania-  
no : who being gone, she went vp to the Chamber, where  
when she was ready to enter, she heard the Prince complain  
in this sorte. Ah poore wretch, must thou needs dye without  
any hope of remedy ? And as he would haue proceeded on,  
Cardina lepped to him, and after she had saluted him, said  
to him secretly, What the Princesse Griana had sent her to  
him, to understand of his health: And belike me good Prince  
quoth she, I never saw Lady so sorowfull for your sicknesse  
as she is. She commendeth her selfe to your Honour most  
heartily, and hath sent you this Ring, as an earnest of the  
Loue she beares you, desiring you to bee of good chere and  
comfort your selfe, because she desires to see you, to conserue  
with you of matters that concerne you both nearely. These  
words so ravished the spirit of Florendos, as a god while he  
doubted, whether he dreamed, or that he might give credite  
to what he heard : for albeit he knew the Messenger so well  
as any in the Court, yet could hee not persuade himselfe  
that he was so fortunate. At length, betwene hope and  
dispaire hee tooke the Ring, which hee entertained with ma-  
ny devout kissses, and embracing Cardina so well as hee  
could, thus answered : Alas my sweet Friend, may it bee  
possible that my Lady hath such regard of him, who never  
was able to doe her any Service; Doubt not therfore my  
Lord, answered Cardina, and if you will declare your  
Loue answerable to hers in vertue, you must give testimo-  
ny thereof, by comforting your person, that she may see you  
so soone as may be. Ah sayre Virgin, quoth he, let my whole  
life be imployed, in what shall like her divine nature to com-  
mand me : and I assure you, that these tydings hath brea-  
thed

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

shed such new life into my very soule, as already I finde my selfe wonderfully changed, yea, and that in such sort, as before thre dages be past, I shall attend her Gracious will with serviceable diligence. In the meane while, I shall desir you faire Friend, to let my sevaigne Mistresse understand, that I kisse her Highnesse hand in humble dutye, and had ere this given farewell to this life, had not her sweet regard called me againe from Death. This parted Cardina from the Prince, taking her way speedily towards Griania, who longed not a little to heare from Florendos, whom she had made Lord of her gentle affections.

### CHAP. VI.

How *Cardina* recited to the Princesse *Griana*, what Speeches had passed betweene her and *Florendos*; And of the Countell shew gave her Mistresse, to conferre with him in the Garden, so soone as hee was recovered.

  
Cardina thus dispatched from Florendos, made no little hast towards the Princesse, who remained all this while silent in her Chamber: and no sooner perceived Cardina to enter, but she demanded if Florendos received her Token in good part or no. Welcome me Madame, answered Cardina, I thinke you never did any thing in all your life, whereby you could obtaine more Honour and applause, then by that you vouchsafed to doe at this instant; so in my judgement you haue performed a miracle, in giving him Life that was in the very lawes of Death. Then from point to point she recounted the talke passed betweene them: first, how she found him in the middest of his regrets; and lastly, what Message he had sent her.

Thus whils Cardina continued her discourse, every word twise

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

ooke hold on the gentle heart of the Princesse, and wounded her with such pitifull regard of the Prince his torment: as what she desired inwardly, she shadowed with meditac, as loath to receive shame in her love, having carried her selfe with such honour all her life, quoth she to Cardina. Who might I (good Servant) ease this weightie oppression? Very well (said Cardina) when Fortune alloweth opportunity. But thou knowest (quoth Griania) a Princesse as I am, to be stns secret with vs brabe a Gallant, doth greatly hazard my life and honour. As soz that Madame, (said Cardina) my Sister can better advise you then I, concerning that I know: By her meanes may you speake with your Knight, the bravest Gentleman in the world, and one whom I know to be so faire devoted yours, as he will rather loose his life, then impeach your honour any way: and otherwise then in loyalty to make you his Lady and wife, I am well assured he loveth not, which loue (Madame) you may well entertaine. Returne then Cardina (quoth the Princesse) to my Lord Florendos, and assure him that so soone as he is recovered, I will come and speake with him, in such a place where he may well aduenture: And desire him as he loveth me, that it may be with all convenient sped.

Cardina without any further delay, went with this message to the Prince Florendos: Who heartened himselfe so well upon these speeches, as within sixe dayes he found himselfe thorowly amended, whereof the Emperour and Caniano his Sonne, was not a little glad: But Tarisius was scane well pleased therat, so he had conceivd a secret jealousy, because he was so earnest in affection towards Griania, who by her Mayd Cardina had warned Florendos, that the night following he shold come into the Garden, where into her Chamber had a secret entrance, and there shold he and she conserre of their love, without suspition of any.

Florendos seeing these affaires soz to so good an end, purposed what ever happened, not to fail the time and place:

## The Hitory of Palmerin D'Olva,

which made him thinke this day a rare in length, so long he looked and desired for the night. But now the wished is come, when Florendos with his Cozen Frenato (who was privie to the Princesse secret loves) departed from their Luggings, and coming to the Garden, they saw the wall was very high and hard to climb, notwithstanding greater things are possiblie to Lobers, chiefly when a cause of such weight is in hand, so that in shorte time Florendos had got to the top of the Wall. and afterward went to the place where Criana stayed his comming, who had no body with her but Lerina, Sister to Cardina, to whom likewise she thorowly bewayed her secrets. He having espred them, came and fell on his knee before the Princesse, but she took him vp in her armes, embracing him so sweetly: as Lerina withdrew her selfe amongst the Trees, not with any intent of feare to displease them, but with a certaine kinde of griefe whch overcame her, that she wanted a Friend to participate with her in Love, as her Mistris had, before whom Florendos being on his knee, said: Madame, by vertue of your commandement, I am thus bold to enter your presence, yielding my whole ability to you, as to the divine Goddess that hath shalded me from Death, whch Grace saving your Princely nature hath afforded me, my life for ever hereafter remaines at your soveraigne pleasure: The unsworne promise whereto, I binde to you by irrevocable bolves, but especially by my Faith, the onely ornamant of a true knight, that I desire no longer to breath this ayre, then to Honour your Name with my continuall service, for life without your grace and favour, is more yokesone to me then a thousand deaths. But by your favour my Lord (answering Criana) how or from whence hath this hot Love sprung, let me know I desire you & Madame (quoth he) as I have heretofore, so at this time I assure you, that in my native Country of Macedon, I heard the renowne of your excellling Beauty, at which very instant I dedicated my selfe onely yours:

and

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

and ever since continuing in this religions Service, I have so confidently set downe my self, in gracious regard of your sweet selfe, as being yours in service, I live: If otherwise, I dye. In sooth saith the Princesse, I see then you have given your selfe wholly mine, and so I am well contented to accept you. Then Madame (quoth he) to seale the assurance of this divine favour you have vens me, let me intreat to kisse those sweet Lippes that delivred the sentence I have long looked for. Which to grant, though for modestie sake, at first she seemed dainty, yet at length Love had so surprised her, as he needed not strive when no resistance was offered. Thus with teares and slemme kisses, they breathed into each others souls the mite arguments of their Love, and faire Cynthia, amably favouring this delicate encounter, added such courage to the minde of this louely Champion, as breaking his Lance in the face of Venus, he bereaved the successe of his devoire to the gracious Aspect of that Planet. And among a number of soft and sweet love Speeches, he discoursed to her his talkie with the Emperour her Father, how he had requested her in Marriage, and how he excused his consent, by the promise he had made before to Tarisius, through the daily and earnest perswallons of the Empresse. Notwithstanding (quoth he) in respect you haue not consented therunto, I hope they shall finde themselves faire beyond their reckoning. Now for the Princesse, she never knew that Tarisius had laboured to haue her to his wife, because she made so light account of him, as she would rather dye then consent thereto: Whereupon she returned Florendos this answer. The Emperour my Father hath reason to thinke hardly of my Spother, and great discredit will it be to her, to pracie my Marriage against my will, so never shall I consent thereto: and therefore my Lord I desire your advice, how I may prevent this insuling danger: Madame, answered Florendos, my device is laid already, to please you to accept thereto, I will conveigh you hence secretly

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

cretly, and before the Emperour or any one knots of it, into my Countrey of Macedon, where I and mine shall entaine you with great reverence and Honour, and you shall be our gracious Lady and Princesse. Welues me, said she, it is doublly in such a Journey what dangers may happen, notwithstanding, having vowed my selfe only yours, be it to the liking or disliking of my Father and Mother, I had rather briske through the Straights of a greater hazard, then be forced to Marrie him, whom while I live I cannot like: Therefore doe you expect the advantage of the time, and I will aduenture with you whither you please. Madame (answered Florendos) continue you this resolution, and referre the rest to my charge, which you shall see effected ere thys dayes be past: In the meane while I intend to take my leave of the Emperour your Father, with this excuse, that the King my Father commandeth my returne home: soz which cause I will send my trayne before, reserving only but tenne of my best Knights to accompany me. Soz that (quoth Griana) doe what you thinke best, and without any further expecting me in this place, certifie me how things happen, by your Cousyn Frenato, or my Mayo Cardina. But now you see the day begins to breake, wherefore let me desire you to depart, that no scandall or suspition arise of our meeting. Florendos kissed the Princesse hand, though longer he would haue stayed, humbly took his leave, and by the helpe of Lerina, he got over the Wall againe, where Frenato stayed his coming, to whom when he was entered his Lodging, he imparted the appointment betweene him and the Princesse, desiring hym to discharge his trayne, except ten of his best approued Knights, to helpe him if any hinderance preuented his intent: As soz the rest, they shold be going on before, and stay his coming at an appointed place, thys dayes journey from Constantinople.

In the morning he awaited the Emperours comming abroad, to whom he said, that he had receaved Letters from

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

as he woulde not obey his Fathers command: but so sorne as he was indifferently amende, he intreated the Emperour to pardon his Daughter, accusing his owne men, who un-discreetly had raised this false rumour of her and Florendos. By this meanes, the Empresse and her Ladys obtained libertie daily to accompany Griana; but all the night-time he caused her to be locked up as closely as before, committing her to the charge of an aged Gentlewoman named Tolomestra, whom he commanded upon paine of Death, not to be a minute of anhour forth of her company.

### Chap. VIII.

How Florendos arriving on the Frontiers of Macedonia, made many sorrowfull Complaints, for not bringing away Griana, according to his Enterprise.

**N**o sooner had Florendos and Frenato overtane their Company, but they ride on in such haste (fearing to be followed) as at length they got the Frontiers of Macedonia. And because Florendos imagined himselfe without life, notwithstanding any tydings from his Mistresse Griana, he concluded to rest at the first Towne he came unto, there to expect the returne of the Esquire he sent to Constantinople: who returned towards his Master sooner then he looked for, by reason of the little abode he made in the Emperours Court; Soz he stayed not when he heard that Griana was Imprisoned, and that Tarisius was not slaine, as his Master was perswaded. These newes did wonderfully afflicte the Prince, as well soz the hard usage of his sweet Friend, as that he had failed in killing him, by whose Death he well hoped to recover his losse: all the whole day would he receive no sustinance, but locked himselfe close in his Chamber, and tamblid on his Bed as a man halfe desperat. But Frenato,

The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

who would not be long absent from him, fearing least his Farte would cause him to doe some violence on himselfe, made such meane's that he got into the Chamber, at what time the Prince was thus lamenting.

Alas sweet Madame, toas I borne in such an unhappy hours, that without desir you must endure imprisonment for me? What satisfaction may your Florendos have to make, in requitall of this injurie? When did you eber merit to be so hardly intreated for him? Believe me, could you be discharged so soone as I could with it, Wolts, Lockes, nor Walles, could hold you a thought while: yet willing is not action, every thing is contrary to me, all helps refuse me, and death likelewe denpos me: but by my Sword (and therewith he started vp) in spight of whatevver, I will deliver you. Frenato seeing hym rys in such a furie, came and tooke hym by the arme, demanding what he would have. Death (quod hoc) if I could, for it graves me to live any longer. You speake very wisely (quoth he in mickle rage) all this is for the imprisonment of Griana: Is it not better she should be there, then in the custodie of Tarisius? Her Captivitie you know can not long endure, but were she married, she could never be recovered. Therefore, let god hope perswade you, and now send another messenger, with speed to Constantinople, to know what accidents have hapened since, and to practise the meane's to speake with Cardina, who will certifie you from Griana, what ioy may be done in these affaires. This Councell liked well Florendos, whereupon he presently despatched a Gentleman of trust, who with all diligence did execute the command of his Master. Soone god time he arrived at Constantinople, when Griana had liberty to speake with her Gentlewoman: which when he heard, he was not a little glad: whereupon he searched earnestly, till he hit found Cardina, to whom he delivered his Masters minde, as also in what god and humble plight he left him, desiring her with all speed to certifie

the Princesse thereof, and what service she would command him to his Master. Cardina knowing how gladly the Princesse would bee to hear these synges from Florendos, went to take her Master Lerina, to whom she imparted what you haue heard, and she, well advised of the tyme and place, discoursed the same to the Princesse, beseeching, and not suspected of old Tolomestra. How sofull she was of this message, I cannot utter, nor you conceyue, but she was resolved, never to haue any Husband but Florendos: And therefore to comfort her, she desyred to write unto him: that she might haue as well as she did: But well she knew not how to accomplish her intent, by reason she wanted Penne, Inke, and Paper, and she was forbidden to haue any. Notwithstanding, she so well perswaded her woman Tolomestra, (as feigning to write to the Emperour her Father) she recovered the meane to execute her desire. Then withdrawning her selfe apart, first she wrote a letter to the Emperour, and afterwards one to Florendos, wherein she desired him not to be offended, albeit things fell not out to his liking: for (with the labours of Fortune) the end would be as pleasant to him, as the beginning had borne unhapple to them both: withall, that as he d. stred to prolong her life, he shuld do nothing to the prejudice of his owne person.

These two Letters thus written and sealed, she called Tolomestra, and gaue her that she had written to the Emperour, desyring her to carry it presently to his Majestie: by whose departing, she had opportunity to conference with Lerina: In these, she desired her to goe seeke the Esquire, that he might returne to his Master, with the Letter she sent him: which he did: ff actually, and the gentle Esquire made no little hant his Master. Who receyving the Letter from his Mistresse Griana, was not content alone to reade it, but kill, and rekele it a hundred times, saying e Ah swet Letter, written with the hand of the onely fairest Princesse

# The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

this day living : And (for her sake will I kepe this) as the best token a true Knight can receive from his Mistress.

## Chap. IX.

How the Emperour promised Tarisius that hee should Marry Griana, whether shee would or no : and how shee was delivered of a faire Sonne, without the knowledge of any, but old Tolomestra, who had her in guard.



When the Emperour had received the Letter, which Tolomestra presented him from his Daughter, although hee found nothing therein might provoke him to anger, saving that hee earnestly desired him to pitte her estate, being innocent of anything was layd to her charge : yet hee shewed himselfe more discontented then before, sending Tolomestra backe with this answer :

Say to Griana, that seeing hee was so abbenstorous to incurre my displeasure, shee shall well know, that I will not spare to punish her offence : And let her assure her selfe, that I will never looke on her while I live, if shee match not with Tarisius, to whom I haue given her. All this Tolomestra tol to Griana : which rather then to obey, hee desired to dye.

Wherefore when any came to visite her, shee would shew her selfe more pleasant in their company then shee had done in respect of unexpected heaviness that secretly touched her steling her selfe so farre conceaved with Child, as shee knew no meanes to save it and her Honour, if it shoule happen to be perceived. One onely helpe shee had in this extremity, that being so weake and sickly, the Phryadians could not discerne his offence ; but reputed her likely to dye, whiche with all her heart desired, yet doe what injury to her selfe

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

shee could, shee had better health then shee desired to haue. In the end felling her selfe so grosse and unwealynge, shee durst not leaue her bed, but kept it dayly, till her time drew very neare at hand, when the Emperour (by the earnest importunity of the Empresse) happened to come and see her, bringing with him the Prince Tarisius : who being thus entred the Tower, they found her in such grievous and dangerous estate, as for all the anger the Emperour had against her, it moued the teares to stand in his eyes, whiche he shadowerd so well as hee could, framing his speches to her in this sort. Well daughter, it likes you to contrary me, in that whiche concernes your Horoz and profit, and without any feare (as is thy daety) thou hast boldly released thy Husband which I haue appointed thee : but (by mine honour) I will cause thee know that thou hast displeased mee, for wylt thou or not (before I leaue thee) I will gne thee to him whom I haue promised. Then taking her by the hand, and causing Tarisius to come neare, hee said. My Sonne, in regard of my word, whiche I will kepe immoably, I glue thys here Griana, from henceforth account of her as thy wife : And hold thys, here is the Key of the Tower, keepe her in thine owne custody, and hereafter thinke of her as thou vndest occasion. Well saw Griana that portes wher shee must obey her Fathers will : wherefore with great wisdome conering her secret thoughts, with extreme teares delivred this answere. Alas, my good Lord and Father, I never thought that your highnesse woulde such crueltie towards me : as to infors mee take a Husband contrary to my lking, nor (my good Lord) but that Tarisius hath much better deserved : but that whiche toucheth me most in opinion is, that our neers alliance in kindred, is sufficient to continue the loun betwene the King his Father and you, without any such nede seeking of new uniting. And moreover, good Father, his education in your Court with my Brother Canians and me, since our very

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

young. & ye ives to this present, had bene of such equal and familiar condition : as it seemes to me impossible to reuertence him with that liture duey, which women must and ought vs to their husbands. Wherefore my god Lord and Father, I perswade my selfe (under your correction) that you shold support me in this just request : the rather in respect of my present estate, which may induce you somewhat to conceiue, that the obsequies of my buriali is moze likely to be solemnized, then those holy ceremonys that shoud be vsed at my marriage. And with these words shee perwred forth such abundance of teares, as the Emperour knew not what to answere : but ouercome with pity, withdrew himselfe, leaving Tarisius with her : who hoping to haue better wodds of her, said Madame, I beseech you not to offend your selfe for any thing the Emperour hath said concerning me, for I will not doe any thing to your discontent, and rather would I suffer all my life, then cause the least doubt to incurre your dislike, hoping that in time to come, you will take such pity on mee, as boing perswaded of the loue I haue you, and the reverent deute I haue to doe you service, you will grant that with good will, which the Emperour shoues to gaine perswade, assuring you that nothing can bee moze grieuous to me, then the hard dealing which hitherto hath bene bid towards you. And to the end you may resolute your selfe of that I say, your Father having delivred me the Key of your Prison, and the guard of your person, I here commit both to your gentle pleasure. So kissing the Key, he laid it by her, and without expecting any answere, with great reverence bee departed, leaving her with Tolomestra, so rapt into a slumber of tranq as her deeper wrold not for pity trouble her. The Princesse in this silent passion, thought that shee saw a fierce Lyon before her, with open throte to devoure her, and neere at hand she espied an armed Knight, to whom shee laboured for defence, crying, that by Gods sake he would shewd her from

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

from the beast : but the Knight with ferne and angry countenance, thus answered. I will not defend thee, but with my sword will take thy life from thee. Thou hast so much offended the heavenly powers in disobedience to thy Father, as I ought rather to diuide thy heade from thy sholders, then to hinder this beast from devouring thee. Thinkest thou to contrary their divine pleasures ? Hast it not the fault thou hast committed with Florendos? content thee, and shewd the shame, in regard of the straffe in thy tombe, whose worshynesse thou shalt know moze of hereafter. If thou doest not, thou dyest an euerlasting death, from whiche thou canst haue no meanes to defend thee. The Knight did so alright Grana, as shes promised him to accomplish the Emperours commandement without faille : whereupon the Knight and the Lyon banished away, leaving her (as shes thought) by a sayre fountaine, entroned with trees and diversitie of flowers, the sweet sent wheresof was so pleasant and odiferous, as made the cheeresfull blood to revive againe in the Princesse, and with brenthing forth a vehement sigh shes awaked, trouing on shes powers to pardon her transgressions, and promising to obey the will of her Father, albeit shes could hardly forget Florendos so soone. Within two or three dayes after, the Prince Tarisius came to visite her, to whom shes shewed better countenance then shes had done : and as they were bousing together in amorous talke, shes said. Welceme me Sir Tarisius, you haue bid such honest and gentle courtesse towards me, as henceforth I will give my selfe wholly yours: therfore being sorry for my long disobedience to my Parents and you : Item. Now Tarisius in the honour of my loue. These wodds pleased Tarisius, it is not to be doubtyd : for joy whereof he went presently to the Emperour, and made him acquainted with these happy tidings : so that (to make shes) after many promises and solemn oathes to the Princesse, not onely to accept her as his spouse and

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

and wife, but as his Generalsne Lady and Princesse, he brought her with him to the Emperour, who hearing the resolution of his Daughter, intrusted her and took her into as good conceit as euer he had.

Notwithstanding, Tolomestra was conuainced to attend on her still: wherefore Griana knowing her time to draw neare, and hardly could she conceale her fortune: after many difficulte roubis and scares reharsed in her thoughts, at last she imparted the whole to Tolomestra. Whi old Gentlewoman after many motherly rebukes, soz the fault committed, as the danger emuent, thought better yet to couer this misadventure, then to publish that which would displease many, and profise none: so leauing to reprehend when care and comfort was moxe required, at that instant, the Princesse was delivred of a goodly man child. Thus in the ninth moneth, after the returne of Florendos towards Macedon, on Sunday at night about eight of the clockie, the Princesse had her houre of deliverance: When Tolomestra receyving the Child, saw it so beautifull and well sorimed, as it grieved her meruaillously to thinke what hard fortune it brought with the birth. For the honour of the Mother could not be defended, but by the price of the infants life: wherfore having wrapped it in swadling clothes whiche the Princesse had prepared of some value, she brought it to the sorrowfull Mother, saying. Trust me Madam, it much di'pleaseth me that we must thus los's this louely child, whovi I could haue esteemed happy, and the mother likewise, if it might live without displeasure: but he swet babe must suffer the punishment soz the offence, whereof he is not any way culpable.

Alas (said the Princesse) what shall we doe: Would God it were dead, or out of danger: then taking it in her armes, and washing his face with flouds of teares, after many sweet kisses, thus said: Ah my little dainty, and must I needs leane thee? Full the safetys of thy life remaigns in the mercy of a strange

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

strange woman, who not knowing the parents: may deale with the discerteously: Well, if thou dye, thy Mother will not be long after thee. And as she thus incurred over her Infant, she perceaved on his right cheeke a little marke in like-nesse of a Croesse: which made her call her viuen to remembrance, and the words of the Knight, that promised good seruice to the Child: which made her conceive a comfortable hope, whereupon, about his necke she tyed a faire Crucifix of Gold. Now was the night very larre spent, and Tolomestra feared they shold be preuenten, wherefore (quoth she) Madamme it is time to determine of somethynge, leabe me. Ong I pray you any longer on the Child, and let me goo carry it to Cardina to be boorne scorth of the Court. The weeping Mother seeing she counseled for the best, soz her last aduise sealed many sweet kisses on the face of the Infant, and so in great grieve delivred it to Tolomestra, who went and found Cardina, to whom she gaue it, and she without any faurance mounted on Horselbacke, and not knowing what way she tooke, rode on which way fortune guided her. Very doubtfull was she how to be discharged of her carriage, for she searede to let any woman in the neighbour Villages haue it, lesse the Princesse might be discovered: For that it was comonly blazed through the Empire, that the Princesse was impsoned soz the lous of Florendos. At length the day began to appear, when she perceaved her selfe on a high Spountaine, which was very thicke set with Palme and Olivetrees: Then she alighted from her Horsle, and made a littell bed of sweete Herbes, wherein she layd the Child, hoping some body woulde passe by, that woulde take some compassion on it. No committing the iender Infant to the protection of the powers aboue, she returned to the Cittie in very god time.

CHAP. X.

How Gerrard passing where Cardina had left the Childe heard it cry, and so brought it home with him to his Wife to nourish it.



He Mountaine where Cardina had left the Princesse young Henne, was about a dayes journey from Constantinople, and was commonly called the Mount of Olives, where neare at hand dwelt a wealthy Farmer, who having the occupation of the ground, grew very rich by gathering the fruits of the Palme, Olive, Date, and other Trees, and like a good Husband he daily followed his affaires, being named Gerrard. His wife the same morning likewise was delivered of a man childe, which being dead boorne, caused this good man to walke soorth into his Grounds in great heavynesse, for he had but one Daughter aged thre yeares, and his Henne would haue beene a great comfort to him. In these Melancholy passous, as he went neare the Tree, where Cardina had left the silly Infant, he heard it cry : Whereat he greatly marvelling, approached nearer, and saw the sweet Babie pitifully mourning, wanting the nurture that shold comfort it.

He tooke it very tenderly in his armes, and seeing it so swet and louely, was perswaded that God had sent it him, in recompence of his owne that was dead boorne : and so joyfully went home with it to his wife, who was named Marcella : and to her he beginneth in this manner : Behold sweet wife, in the place of your young dead Henne, God hath this day sent vs another, which I haue brought you home. Then recounted he to her, how he found it on the Mountaine uner an Olives Tree : And therefore (quoth he) I pray thee

nourish

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

nourish it in stead of thine owne, for a godlier Childe did I never behold. The good Woman tooke it, and unwrapping the swadling clothes, saw they wers rich and of god value, but chiesly the Crucifise which hng about his neck : whereupon he iudged it of some noble house, and mixt with pitty, thus sayd. I belue sweet Infant, that thy mother is in no small gret for the losse of thee, but seeing thy fortune hath brought thee to mee, I will foster thee as thou were mine owne Sonne. And from thence forward shee vsed it so louingly, as every one thought it to bee Gerrards owne childe : and bringing it to Baptisme, because he found it so among the Palme Trees, hee caused the Childe to be named Palmerin, who grew on in yeares, both in comely feature and gentle behavour. Not long after Marcella brought her husband another son whose name was Colmellio, and him did Palmerin leue as his owne brother, and companion, as hereafter you shall moze at large understand : but here I will craue leue to pause for a while, and following the intent of the Pilgrie, you shall understand how Grianagouerned her selfe, after shee had escaped this hard aduenture.

So soone as Cardina was returned to the Court, Giana sent for her, to know what shee had done with the Infant : to whom shee discoursed in what sort shee had left it : which grieved her as much as the weight of her offence.

Notwithstanding, considering how happily shee had escaped shame and disgrace, from thence forward shee dissembled her passions better, and shewed her selfe so well reclaymed, as the Empresse much rejoiced thereat, hoping now to end the matter for her Neptew Tarisius : whereupon one day finding her Daughter alone, she tooke occasion to conserue with her thus. Daughter will you now accomplish that, which your Father and I haue long bene importunate for, I pray you hold of no longer, least you vexe him into anger againe, which can no way returne you benefit.

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

When Griana heard her Mother speake so gently, and knowing well, (that whither he wold or no) it must soj to that conclusi: n, she answered : Madame, haue you thought good (will I, nill I) that I shoul match with your Nephew Tarisius, I must then by force doe that which willingly I cannot, nor while I live shall I conceiue better opinien : If then (Mother) hereafter our sortunes fall out so contrary, that any misadventure happen by this your wilfulness, you need not complains but of your selfe, being the inventer and procurer thereof.

All these speeches of Griana could not alter her opinion, but without regard of any danger, she went presently to the Emperour, desiring him (seeing Griana was recovered) to end the Marriage betwene her Nephew and her : Where- to he gaue such sodaine consent, as before a Schem-night was finished, Tarisius and she were married together, to her great griesse, as her Countenance declared ; soz when every one were at their Feasting, Dancing, and other delights, the twofull Princesse thought on the great iniurie she had done to Florendos, accounting her selfe the most unhappy on the Earth, and to her selfe thus sorrowed :

Ah my deare Friend, what wilt thou say, when thou hear-est these sydings, that I am become so false and disloyall to thee ? What excuse may plead soz me to the : By god res- son may I soz ever be excluded from their company who haue kept their Faith inviolable to their friends, and continue in possession of their unchangedable affections : soz never did Woman commit such treason as this that I haue done : and yet (my Lord) altogether against my will, as my wosfull heart may give evident witness, which shal be thine while it remaines in this miserable Body, which Tarisius must now haue, though in justice it be thine. And in this soj con- tinued her dolorous complaints till night appoached, when she malk yeld that honour to Tarisius, which with bet- ter will she could haue afforded Florendos.

After

## Emperour of Constançinople: PART. I.

After the Feasts and Triumphes of the Marriage were ended, Griana desirous to absent her selfe from her Fathers Court, because the remembrance of Florendos passions was so grievous to her : Desirred Tarisius to make soj his way, and set forward to Hungaria, whither the Emperour her Father caused her to be so honourably conveyed, as besidēd the Daughter of so great a Prince. But as she was taking her leave among the Ladies, the Empresse came to her soz owfully weeping : Which when Griana beheld, she said : Madame, I am abashed to see what heauynesse you shew soz the departure of your Daughter, to whom you alone haue borne so cruel, as by your meanes she is banished soz ever from you and your Countrey : Whereto lament you then, seeing it is your pleasure to make her unfortunatē while she liues ? I heartily desire the Heavens to pardon you, and that the first p̄. wes, hereafter you shall haere of me, may be the true report of my Death. This said, she mounted on Horse-backs, and without any shew of discontent took her leave of her Father : So being honourably accompanied, in soj time she arrived in Hungaria with Tarisius, whose love to her so vehemently increased, as he repudie himselfe the most fortunate Prince in Europe, having gained the Para- gen among all Ladies.

Soon after the aged King dyed, by which meanes Tarisius came to the Crowne. Griana highly esteeming all such as she had brought with her from Constantinople, to wit, Lerina and Cardina, but especially Tolomestra, to whom she very often imparted the whole secrets of her minde, leading so strict and constant a Life, as all the Court did wonder at her. But the remoules of Conscience, which daily touched her soz the issue of her honours, caused her to spend day and night in devout Prisons, that the heavens would forget her haynous offence.

CHAP. XI.

CHAP. XI.

How Florendos understood by the Esquire hee sent to Constantiople, the Marriage of Griana and Tarisius : Whereat hee conceived such inward griefe, as he had like to have dyed with extreame sorrow.



In this while continued Florendos on the frontiers betwix Constantinople and Macedon, till at length he heard that Griana was released of her imprisonment : whereof he was so glad, as now he thought to deale more surely then he did before : Whereupon he despatched Lyomenus one of his Esquires towards her, with a Letter of earnest and intire affection, wherein he desired to know, if he might compasse the means to come and see her, and he doubted not to bring her so secretly on her journey, and with so god prouision, as before they should be againe discovered, they woulde be safely arrived in Macedon. But this hope was soone frustrate, for Lyomenus, being come to Constantinople, found the Marriage betwene Tarisius and Griana consummated: which hee tolde displeasantly, as without giving the Letter, or speaking to the Princesse, he returned hastyng againe to his Lord and Father. Who being aduertised of his comming, sent for him immediately up into his Chamber, at whose entrance the Prince discerned the newes by his countenance : whereupon he demanded, if Griana were sick, or how shes fare ? My Lord (quod. he) happy had shes bene, if shee had dyed tennes yeares sinc : for I doubt (vaille leys you armes your selfe with wonderfull patience) that what is done will high endanger your person. Why (quoth Florendos) what hapened ? Erst me my Lord (quod. he) the very worse tha

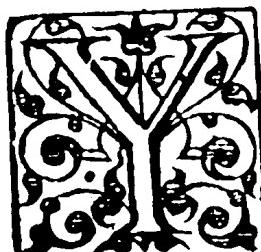
can be for you, Tarisius hath espoused her, and (despight of her) the Emperour caused it to be done. No sooner had Lyomenus spoken the word, but Florendos cast himselfe crually against the ground, saying. O my God, take pity on my soule, for my body must needs suffer misfortune. At whiche words he fell in a swoone, when Lyomenus thinking him dead, ran hastily and called Frenato : who knowing well the cause of his passion, laboured by all meanes he might to perswade him, but notwithstanding all the trautes he used, in foure and twentie houres he could not get one word of him, whereupon hee sent for an auncient Hermit neere at hand, whom Florendos made very much account of: who being come, and applying diuers sacerdotal verbes to his temples, whereof the old Father knew well the vertues, at length Florendos recovered his sensess, and opening his eyes, beheld the old Hermit, to whom with very feeble voice hee said. Ah good Father pray for me, for I feele my end nigh at hand. Not so my sonne, said the Hermit, what ? are you so unprovided of diuine persuasyon, as you will lose both body and soule for a matter of so meane consequence ? Hast thou liued so long, and yet ignorant of the inconstancy of Women which is no other then thou beholdest in Griana ? Knowest thou not, that as the sayle of the Ship is subject to all windes, so are their affections to continual mutability ? And knowest thou not, that what they purpose to execute irreuocably, in one moment they are suddenly diswaded from ? My Sonne, beeleeue my counsell, and with as much pleasure learnes to forget this folly, as with extreame paine thou diddest first imprint it in thy thoughts. Ah Father (quoth Florendos) never seeke in this sorte to perswade me, beeing assured if you knew how things haue past, you would not thus intearme disgrace my Lady ; for shes is mine, and Tarisius hath no right to her, to whom the Emperour hath married her persone, els wold shes never haue broken her faith to me : and while

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

while I live Father, none but she can be called the wife of Florendos, Sonne to the mighty King of Macedon. The wife of her Father seeing him in Choller, and being loth like wife to offend the Prince, would no longer crosse him in speeches, but fearing to vacue him too much, mildly thus spake : May be (my Sonne) she hath bane deare to you, and I would your consent in loue had answered your liking : But thus to dispaire, and indanger your owne life, trust me it is not well done ; therefore I desire you to perswade your selfe , and by your Constance condigne her lightnesse, taking patiently what hath happened. These and such like good wrods used the old father, but Florendos would take no sustenance, neither he removeth from his opinion, soz bad dapes while the Old man stayed with him : Neither would he looke chearefullly as he was wont, but continued evermore sad and melancholique, nor could the King his Father ease him like of any wife, but onely Griana, soz whom continually he never left Mourning.

### CHAP. XII.

How young Palmerin sleeping, had a strange Vision, which provoked him to know whose Sonne hee was : and of the talke which passed betweene him and Dyosenthe Daughter of Gerrard.



Thus Palmerin being now come to the age of fifteen yeares, nourished in the Mountaines as the Child of Gerrard, supposed Father, well belov'd of his wife Marcella his wife, as their sonne what was become of her. Whereupon raising himself, and grew in stature so tall, comely and well nurstured, as well might be knowne of noble parentage. So albeit he companyed with Gerrard's Children, who used him after their rustica :

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

capacities : yet he desired moze to passe the Mountaines with his long Bowe, to chase the Beares and Boars thowre thickke and thyme, and to keepe Hawkes and Dogges, rather then Sheeps and Cattell as the other Children did. In these spottes hee had such wonderfull delight, as often times he would come houres very late and soz wearied : but one time among the rest, he came home souerlaboured, as he was glad to lay him downe to rest, and he was no sooner fallen a sleepe, but he was solicited with a maruaillous vision, the effect whereof thus followeth. He thought (as he was pursuing a goodly Hart thowz a Forrest) hee mett with the sayzed Lady that euer eye beheld, who sate on the side of a goodly Mountaine, and called him vnto her saying :

We not abashed Palmerin, though I am come from the furthest parts to finde thee in this Country, soz I am well assured that ere many daies be past thy bountie and yowlesse shall make thee renowned through the world, soz one of the hardiest Knights that euer liued. Leane therefore this obscure & rustick kind of life, and henceforth lise thy mind to high occasions which are offered theo : and hereof beleue me, as she that smoth theo as her own life, being devoted onely thine at all times as nature may witnesse who hath marked me with the like Character. When shewing her arme, she said. Behold in this hand, and on this side of my heart, one like & self-same markie, as thou broughtest on thy face from the Mothers wombbe. To whiche wordes Palmerin wuld haue answered, but the Lady vanished awry so sodainly, as he coulde not perceiue what was become of her. Whereupon raising himself, and marvailing from whence this occasion shoulde proceed, he admittred the beauty of the Lady he saw in his sleepe, which was so lively in his remembrance, as he judged her present before his eyes. But persuading himselfe that such apparitions happened by idle thoughts, or by some vapour (s no exception made no account thereof, wherupon, the next night following

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

following the same Lady that appeared to him in the Forest, presented her selfe to him againe, holding in her hands a sumptuous Crowne of Gold, and thus spake. See here (my Lord) the honour which I hold, being given me onely for the loue of you.

In this sort continued this vision for sourete ne o; alld no rages following, till at length the Lady shewed her selfe angry, saying. I am ashamed Palmerin that you deserve so long to seeke me out: do you think the promises I have made you are fruulous? No, no, the time and trauaile thou takest (if thou giuest credit to my words) shal make thee know that thou art the Son of a King, and not of the Country swaine that hath fostered thee. From henceforth therefore expect me no more in this Mountaine, but if my beauty haue found place in thy heart, seeke then to conquer me, that then maie be the Lord and possessor of mee. Thus departed the Lady leaving a desire (more then accustomed) in the heart of Palmerin, who till that time made little reckoning of so bigg matters, for the Paste; all lise bee led with Gerrard and his family, seemed the most happiest to him in all the world, haing seene any person of greater calling then he. But some hane told him he is not your Sonne: so falling out to go seeke her, whom in sleepe he had beheld so often: (quoth he) if shes assurs mes to descend of a royll linage, may well presume she knowes me better then my Father Gerrard, else would she not so often induce me to follow her so much fortune, and the good that is provided for me: well might be accounted a scote, if I wold not adventure on so especia an occasion, therfore happen what will, I meane to seeke thjow the whole world till I haue found her, and no but shee shall ever be my Mistresse. But how can it be that I am descended from so high a place, seeing my Father such a simple Countryman? hath my Mother, beene so full of her reputation, that some Prince or great Lord shal become my Father? Well, I will know of her (if I can know, dombting the naerelle of our Consanguinitie, which I now perceve cannot hinder our mariage, if you

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

before I depart, and if she will not tell me, I will search for her that shall assure me. Thus was Palmerin confounded with remembrance of his Wilsons, as from that time he became marvailes pensus and solitarie: then bethought he, how he might know of his Mother Marcella, the end of his bretre, whereof Dyofena (who loved him dearely) partly adverised him.

You haue heard heretofore, how when Gerrard found Palmerin among the Olive-trees, he had a Daughter thre yeares old, named Dyofena, indifferent faire, who as she increased in yeares, became so amorous of her supposed bretre, that hardly she could discerne her affection: Not lech-landing, shame and regard locked vp her Lippes, but she durst not speake what she gladly wuld, but seeing Palmerin in like sadness as he was, shes imagined that one of her bretres had stricken them both, wherfore casting many doubts as she lay in her Bed, in the same Chamber her Parents were Palmerin (quoth her) how hearie and sadde he bath bene a long time: Dea truly hane I (quoth she) it may be that some hane told him he is not your Sonne: so falling out one matter into another, Dyofena heard them report the manner how they found him, which she desirous to let Palmerin understand, arose early the next Morning, and coming to Palmerin, thus conserued with him. Brother, if you be abashed: why god sicer (qd. he) I pray you let me understand the matter. In sooth (qd. he) I never thought till this time, that shad bin mine owne naturall Brother, but by chance ha-  
ng some talke betwene my Father and Mother this last night, I am no other then your Friend, and she that loves you dearely: Which I haue euermore bitherto feared to let know, doubting the naerelle of our Consanguinitie, which I now perceve cannot hinder our mariage, if you

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

will request me of my Father, who I am sure will not deny you. And so he rehearsed the manner of his Slading whiche so well liked Palmerin, as he gaue the moyst crede to the Willous he had seene, neverthelesse, he thus ballyzed with Dyofena. It may be Sister, you misanderstand our Parents, my selfe will demand the truth of our Mother, if she allure me as you haue done, then will I talk with thou concerning our Marraige. So shall you doe well (said Dyofena) to be thowly assured, yet nad you not report me to haue informed you, least thereby you byng me into my Parents displeasure. Palmerin thus leaving Dyofena, chanced to finde his Mother Marcella alone, to whom he said: Mother, I beseech you grant me one request that I shall demand of you. That will I my venne (quoth she) if it be in my power to doe. Understanthen god Mother (quoth he) That I haue often-times dreamed how I am not your Son, so that I know not what to say, valesse you please to allure me better. When Marcella heard these words, she was stricken in a syde: but Palmerin was ill so importunate, as at last she thus answere: In good faith (faire Friend) I never knew thine owne naturall Parents, yet haue I loued thee as it thou were mine owne Sonne: And so what words Dyofena had before reported, Marcella confirmed, taking him with her into her Chamber, where she shewed him the costly silvadling clothes that he was foun in, and the Crucifre likewise that hang about his necks, which he intreated her to be low upon him, to the end (quoth he) that for your sake I may kepe it while I liue. Marcella would not deny his request, but put it about his necke her selfe.

From which time forward, Palmerin shewed himselfe of more chearefull disposition, devising how he might compasse the meane to goe seeke his Fortune, whereto his sundry ap-  
paritions had so often incited him. And as none can shunne what is ordained hym by Divine prouidence, not many dayes after, as he was walking alons upon the Mountaine, he  
heard

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

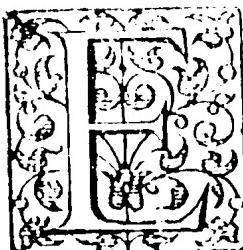
heard a voice cry very pitifully for helpe and succour: whereupon Palmerin ranne that way whiche he heard the voyce, where he beheld a Lyon greedily devouring a Hesse. Palmerin having no weapon to defend hymselfe withall but a stakke, very hardly set upon the beast, giveng hym such a stroake betweene the eyes, as he fell colene dead to the ground, then comynge to him, he heard one com-  
plaine, said: I haue my friend in some part revenged thy wrong. Alas, Sir (quoth he) and had you not boone, my life had perished, for as I travelled on my jorney, this Lyon furiously set upon me to devoure me: which the rest of my company perceyng, tooke themselves to flight, leaving me as you found me. The best is, (said Palmerin) that you haue escaped with life, and if you please to gos with me, ne  
farre hence where I haue beene nourished, you shall haue the best entretainment that I can make you. My friend (quoth the Stranger) you haue already done so much for me, as if you will gos with me into the Country where I dwel, I haue wherewithall to reward your travell richly. Is it farre hence Sir (said Palmerin?) In the City of Hermida (quoth he) in the Realme of Macedon I dwel, from whence I departed a moneth since with my merchan-  
dise, whiche I haue left at Constantinople: from whence re-  
turning homeward, this unlooked for mischance besell me, which had made an end of me without your responce. As  
vans came to looke hym, and finding hym so happily esca-  
ped, was not a little toyfull, reporting that he had lost his  
companions not far off. Returne then (said the Master) and  
will them to come to me to the next village, where I mean to  
haue my wounds ryzed, whiche the servant performed im-  
mediately, and all this while stood Palmerin indebatting with  
himselfe, if he shold thus leaue his Father Gerrard or not:  
at length, (after many opinions) fearing if he returned  
home agayne not to haue the like opportunity, concluded

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

to depart with the stranger. So was he set on a very good paliay, and setting forward to Macedo, that night they were entertained in a very good lodging, where the Stranger caused his wounds to be searched, reporting to everyone how by the arte of Palmerin his life was preserved, for which cause he accounted of him as his ewne Sonne. All this while Gerrard and his wife little thought of this mishap, but expected Palmerins returne till darke night, and seeing he came not as he was wont, both he and his wife the next day searched the mountaines, but they could not finde him, which made Gerrard to question in himself what euill he had offered him, that shoulde make him thus depart. How durst not his wife Marcella tell him, she tolde her and Palmerin, but accompanied her husband in search for their losse: especially Diofena and her brother Colmelio were most sorry, Diofena for losse (as she thought) of her husband, and Colmelio for the company of his supposed brother, whose absence went so neare his heart, as he intended never to give ouer search till he had found him.

### CHAP. XIII.

How Palmeris went with this Merchant named Euston to the Citie of Hermida, who afterward gave him Horse and Armour to be made Knight.



Stebon the Merchant thus conducting Palmerin on his way, at length arrived in the Citie of Hermida, where he was lovingly welcomed home by his wife, both young and beautifull as any in that Countrey, to whom he reported his dangerous assault by the Lyon, and without Palmerins helpe he had bin deuoured: but (quoth he) good fortune sent him at the very instant that

### Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

saw hym, for which I shall be beholding to him whiche I haue a day to live, therefore god & alle entertaine him in the best sorte you can deuise, for he hath well deserved it. This speach had the Merchant with his faire wife, who embracing Palmerin, sayd: What nature had omitted nothing in her workmanship, making him so nimble, and full of hardinesse. Palmerin seeing himselfe so fauoured of so beautifull a man, having before spent his time among syrgeards, vineheards, and locally swaines of the Countrey, with modesty began to blush, and was so well stured with ciuitie to make her this answere. I desire Mistersesse that my behaviour may be such, as may continue my Masters godliking and yours towards me. So from that time he followed Merchant, and profited so well in the course of traffique: as Euston committed all his affaires to Palmerins trust, yea rather gaue his mind to Martiall exercises, and followed knighthly dispositions so much, as very nature declared the noblenesse of his minde, for he delighted to manage great horses, to fight at all manner of weapons, to see dangerous Combates, to frequent the assembly of Knights, to talke of armes and honourable exploits, and in brefe, to exercise all the braveries of a noble Courteier.

Wherat Euston marvelled so much, as falling in talke with him, he sayd. He thinks it is strange Palmerin, that thou being the Sonne of a Judge, and nourished on the mountaine of Olives (as thy selfe hath often told me) disdainest the life of a Merchant, frequenting the company of hardy Knights, as though thou couldest take Lance and shield to enter the combate. Sir (said Palmerin) I know not if my Father be such as I haue told you, but I know well my heart so serues me, as I can thinke of nothing but actions of Honour and knighthood. The Merchant was contented to hear Palmerin in these termes, because he perceived that his wife fauoured him greatly, whereat he became a little jealous, and gladly would remoue the occaſion,

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

en, wherefore he said: Seeing it is so Palmerin, that thou hast no munde to follo w me Affayres, I am well content thou shalt exercise Chivalrie, being the thing thou naturally affectest, and wherby thou mayest attaine credit and account. For mine owne part, because I will not hinder so god sowardnesse, thou shalt haue of me Shoure, Horse, and Armeur, that thou mayst go to Macedon to the King, where, if thou request of the Prince Florendos his Sonne, he will not refuse to give thee thy Order. Palmerin returned him very hearty thankes, and hauing provided all things expedient for his journey, tooke his leave of the Merchant Ettchen and his wife, hoping to sped well in his adventurous enterprize.

### CHAP. X I I I.

How Palmerin arrived at the Court of Macedon, hoping to receive the Order of Knighthood, at the hand of the Prince Florendos, Sonne to the aged King Primilacion, by the favour of the Lady Arismena.



King departed from the Merchant, Palmerin made such sped, that on the fourth day following, riding by a River side, hee found a Dwarf sitting heavily weeping, of whom he demanded the cause of his mourning. Alas Sir ( said the Dwarf ) as I was riding by the commandement of my Master, to a Lady whom he dearely loueth, a Knight comen now to ke my Horse from me, and very villanously offend me out-rage, which yet doth not so much grieve me, ( as being thus en Scot ) I know not how to get ouer the River. Mount vp behind me ( said Palmerin ) and at the first towne we come unto, I will provide thee of another Horse.

Then

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

Then mounted the Dwarf vp behind him, and hauing past the river, desired to know of Palmerin whether he travailed: soz ( quoth he ) I never saw man whiche I had greater desire to see then you. Dwarf ( said Palmerin ) I now journed toward the Court of Macedon to the King, where I hope to finde the Prince Florendos, who is accounted one of the worthiest Knights in the world, and by his hand I desire to be knighted, if I may. And after you haue receiued your order ( said the Dwarf ) I hope you will not be so unwise to hazard the aduenture wherein so many haue sayled and lost their liues. What aduenture is that, quoth Palmerin? To goe to the Mountaine Artixaria ( said the Dwarf ) in hope to kill the Serpent, which hath beene the death of so many valiant Knights. And what occasion sayd Palmerin, moued them to fight with the Serpent? That I wil tell you answered the Dwarf. The King Primilacion Father to Prince Florendos whom you seeke, thre yeares since fell into a very strange Disease, soz which no remedy can yet be found, notwithstanding the diligent endeavours of the Kynge and Lady Arismena her Daughter, one of the fairest and most vertuous Princesses that ever was heard of, who seeing her Father in such dangerous estate, hath often assembled the best physicians in the whole world, who haue practised all possible meaures to recover his health: yet hitherto all hath bene to no purpose. Whereupon she sent to an ancient Knight, the most skilfull in the Art of Magromancy this day living, who returned this answere: That he should never be healed, except he be first washed with the water of a Fountaine, which standeth on the top of the Mountains Artixaria, whither soure times a yearre comyn three fliers, Magicians of the Isle Carderia, to gather vertuous Herbes whiche there they wash, and whereof they framme all their enchantments. This place is defended by the Sparker, wherof I tolde you, that no man as yet durst approach it. Which resses when the Princess Arismena

C 3

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

Arismena understand, hoping by strength of men to recover the water and vanquish the Beast, leaned a great number of Souldiers well appointed, who were no sooner entred the Mountaine, but the Serpent came furiously out of his Denne, thowring fire and smoake out of his mouth, and beating his wings together with such tressur, as the very hardiest durst passe no further, but were all glad to take themselves to flight, yet could they not depart with such expedition, but the greater part of them payd theyr lves for their bold attempt, the Mountaine was so stroyed with Lions, Beares, Wolves, Devils, Tygers, Dunces, and other wilde ravenous Beasts that devoured them.

Now at length many Knights had tryed themselves in this aduenture, thinking by their yoyelle to perishe more then the other: but all the worse, for not one of them returned backe alise. And why goes not the Prince Florendos himselfe said Palmerin, that is stamed the most valiant knight through all Greece? Alas Sir, sayd the Dwarfe, some other matter hath so dwonmed his minde in melancholy, as he liues like one that despiseth himselfe. While the dwarfe continued his discourse, the deare of honour and renowne did so lively touch the spirit of Palmerin, as he sayd to himselfe. It may be that Arismena was the Lady which in my sleeping thoughts visited me so often, if the Destinies haue vowed her mine, why shoulde I scare the Serpent, or all the other beasts wherewith this Dwarfe doth so terrible me? Haue not I slaine a Lyon alreadie with a flasse? Much the more danger is in the place, the more Honour depends vpon the victory. If I leave my life there, I am not the first: If I returne with conquest, I shall be beyond any yet in fortune: therefore fall out as it will, no portill shall dismay me from glorie the aduenture, whereupon he said to the Dwarfe. But tell me my friend, he that brings the water from the mountaine to the King, what advantage shall he deserue? By Lord (quoth he) it hath beene

many

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

many times published, that his reward shall be the best City in all this Realme. See then Dwarfe said Palmerin, one man more will hazard his life in this enterprise, albeit I shal receiue but thankes for my travell, wilt thou goe with me? That will I (answered the Dwarfe) if you please, and never will I for sake you while breath is in my body. Thus set they on till they came to the great City of Macedon, at what time Florendos was gone to the Temple in such haunisselle, as he seemed a man of another world, being accompanied with many Knights, and his sayle after the Lady Arismena, to whom Palmerin boldly addressed himselfe: and as though he had borne a Courtier all his life time, with seemly modesty he set his knee to the ground before her, and thus began. Madame, I humbly beseech you to vouchsafe me ons request, which well you may not deny me, in that I am a Stranger, as also in respect of the desire I haue to dos you sir vice. And trust me Sir (quoth he) you shall not be refusid, what is it you would haue me to doe for you? That at your request (said Palmerin) the Prince Florendos your Brother, will giue me my knighthood. Arismena seeing Palmerin so amiable, and well disposed of body, maruelled of whence he was, and sayd. In good swich Sir, such matter nothing appertayneth unto me, for (as I judge) such a mether should proceed from your selfe: yet taking him by the hand, she presented him to her Brother, saying. I pray you my Lord grant to this young Gentleman as yet not knighted, the thing he hath desired me to demand. Florendos hauid not as yet beheld him, looked vpon him, when an exceeding passion presenting the Princelle Grian to his thoughts suddenly touched him, and being rapt into more conceit of joychess he had beens accustomed, demanded of Palmerin if he would be made Knight. With right good will my Lord, quoth he, if it shall like you to doe me so much honor, for aboue all things else it is my onely desire. My friend,

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

said Florendos, it is necessary I shoulde first know, whither you be noble boynze or no. By Lord, quoth Palmerin, as yet I never knew my Father nor Mother, nor any of my kindred: notwithstanding, mine swyne heart makes me judge no less of my selfe, and moxe gladly would I dye, then doe any thing that were not vertuous, and well worthy the name of a Gentleman. And trust me, said Florendos, I am of the same opinion: this night therefore you must obserue the religous watch as is accustomed, and to morrow will I gue you your order, and put the Sporre on your heele my selfe. Palmerin on his knee humbly kissed the Princes hand, and continuing in talke togither, Florendos tolde a great delight in beholding him, so that he demanded his name and Countrey. By Lord, quoth he, they tolde me you were amongst the Palme Trees on the Mountaine of Olivies, not farre from Constantinople, haue given me the name of Palmerin. By mine Hondur, said Florendos, I ought well to know the Citle whereof you speake, as the place wherein my dearest affections tooke their first life, and not long since, are bequeathed to death, awaiting now but the hure to be discharged of the burden.

Thus haing in his company his unknowynge Bonne, begotten by him on the Princessse Griana, knew little what his loue had sorted to such effect: nevertheless, nature prouoked him to like so well of Palmerin, as none in the Court contented him more then he. And longer wold they haue continued their talker, but that sayze Arismena intetrupted them, asking Palmerin if he wold discharge her of the request he demanded. That doe I Madame (quoth he) and in requitall therof, dedicate the whole circuit of my life to your gracious service: and to begin my deuoire on your behalfe, so soone as I haue receaved my knighthood, I will take my journey towards the Serpent, in hope to bring the water that must recover the King your Fathers health. As las god hit, quoth she, God sojld that you shoulde fall in

such

## Emperour of Constantiopole. PART. I.

such danger by my meanes. I know well, answered Palmerin that I can die but once, and if it be now, then am I dispached, and if I escape I shall doe that wheresoevver man other haue failed, and this is my resolution faire Madame. Welnes me, said Florendos, me thinks you are as yet too young to finish an action wherin consisteth so great a danger, I pray you therefore reseire it vnto such, as haue moxe experiance in Armes then as yet you haue. By Lord, said Palmerin, in other matters I shal obey when you command, but this I woulde desire you not to diswade me from. Well then (quoth Florendos) seeing you will nades haue it so, I am content, you shal in the meane while keape me company: as for Sward and Armour, trouble not your selfe to provide any, because my selfe wll furnysh you sufficiently.

Thus all day Florendos accompanied Palmerin, demanding of hym what things he had done in Constantinople, and falling from one discourse to another, he asked hym what Esquire he had to attend on him. Then he shewed his Dwarfe named Vrbanillo, such a desformed and evill fandisched fellow, as every one that saw him laughed heartily: whereupon Palmerin saud to Florendos. By my faith my Lord, as unseemely as he is, I thinke so well of him, as I shoulde be displeased if he were any way injured. Assure your selfe, said Florendos, that he wll stand you in great stead when you haue no need of him, and tolde that you leue nothing behind you, that is needfull to fight against the Serpent, and trust it in his discretion to bring after you. When Vrbanillo perceaved every one set with him, he was halfe angry, and in some choller thus saud to the Prince. I can no way my Lord, better my shaps or proportion, but if I live, this little desformed body of mine shal give you to understand that I haue so good a minde, that where my master leaues his life, I meane to finish mine, and though in meane while I can doe him no other seruice, hee shal be assured of my stede and royalty. Be not offendyd (Dwarfe my good friend) said

Iayd Florendos, so I thinke well of the and of the behaviour. And so because the Tables were covered soz sayper, they braks of talke, Palmerin preparing himselfe to his watchfull deuoure in the Chappell.

C H A P . X V .

How Florendos gaue to Palmerin the Armour and Sword of Gamecio, whom he slew before Constantinople, and afterward Knighted him : and how a Damosell came to the Court, who presented him with a Helmet and a rich Shield,



He time being come, that Palmerin shold persone his deaout watch in the Chappel, before he received his knighthood, according to the auncient custome : Florendos gaue commandement, that the Armour of Gamecio shold be brought him, which the Emperour had gien him, after his conquest of the Soldanc of Babilons army on the Sea, as you haue heard before, and these he shewed to Palmerin, saying. My friend, this armour sometimes belonged to the best knight of his tyme, whom (nevershelesse) I conquered, being then more pleasant, joyfull, and at better consent, than I shall be, while I haue a day to live. And because I haue some speciall opinion of your proesse, and that these ornaments of deffense you will better imploy, then any other, on whom I shall bestow them : I pray you henceforth to weare them for my sake.

My Lord, said Palmerin, my desyre is, that my seruice towards your honour, may be witnessed in my good imployment of this gentle gift. Then Frenato and dierother Knights did helps to arme him, and afterward accompanied him to the Chappell, where all that night he spent

in solennes orisons, that God woulde endue him with strength to vanquish the Serpent, that so the King might againe receive his strength.

At the bzoake of day, as Florendos went to the Chappell to giue him his Order, there entred among them on the sudaine a comely Damosell, bearing a Helmet and a Shield of Azure, the godliest and moe beautifull that ever was seene, vpon his Shield being peirtrayed a Ladys armes, having her hands fast closed together : the Damosell comming before the Prince Florendos, began thus. I pray you my Lord to pause a while, till I haue conferred a little with Palmerin. Florendos was greatly amazed at this accident, in that he had never scene the Damosell before : notwithstanding he returned this answer. Sayre Damosell, and my friend, good leue haue you to say what you please. Then comming to Palmerin, and falling on her knes before him, she said. Sir Palmerin, a Knight that hath authority to command me, and whom as yet you doe not know, hath sent you by me this Helmet and Shield, where in you shall finde the very secrets of your heart. And if you desire to know whence this honour procedeth, it commeth from him who hath prouid the effect thereof, and that knowes more of your nearest assayres then you doe your selfe, albeit as yet he hath never scene your Damosell, said Palmerin, where may I finde the learned man that hath thus honoured me, whom I may remunerate with my chiefeſt endeouours hereafter ? You cannot as yet know him, said the Damosell. I pray you sayre Virgin, quoth Palmerin, that you will answere on my behalfe, how in any place I shall come hereafter, I remayne ready to doe what likes him to command me. It sufficeth (quoth she) looke that hereafter you remembre your promise : Then comming to the Prince Florendos, she said. My Lord, the same Man from whom I haue saluted Palmerin gaue me in charge to say, that you shouldest not feare of doubt to dubbe him Knight : but to per-

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliver,

Made your selfe, that both by Father and Mother he is so noble as he doth well deserve it, and him hereafter you will love beyond all other, so by him you shall enjoy the thing you most desirous and desire. Thus having no longer licence to stay with you. I humbly desire you to excuse my departure. Sweet mate, saith Florendos, may your words soote to so god end, as you haue promised. So departed the Damosell, leaing Palmerin on his knes before the Prince, who taking the swerd that sometimes belonged to Gamezio, knighted him saying: And make thou prouesse as fauoris and fortunate, as my hope perswades me thou wille. Then was he honourably conveyed to the Wallace, wheres the faire Arisimena unarmed hym and couered hym with a rich mantle of white Sattein, imbrodered all over with sumptuous floweres of gold: beside, no one in the troupe but highly reverenced hym, for the worthy report the Damosell made of hym. And albeit the Princesse Arisimena perswaded hym so well as she could, that he shold not endanger himselfe against the Serpent, because by him her Brother shold overcome his melancholy, and fearing his losse without hope of recovery: yet needs wold he be gone the same day, but that her importunate intreay perswaded hym to stay eight dayes longer. Palmerin being soone after alone by himselfe, he remembred the words of the Damosell, who promised hym to shew the secrets of his heart in his sheld: whereupon he well advised himselfe, and saw that the hand portrayed in his sheld, had the same marks whiche the Lady had, that appeared to him in his dreame, whereat not a little marvailing, he said within himself: It most needs bee without all doubt, that he whiche sent me this present, knoweth full well the scope of my fortune, for I am well assured that the Lady whiche spake to me in my dreame, when I abode in the house of my Father Geriard, shewed me her hand with the selfe same marks I see here placed, by whiche I may perswade my selfe, that she will not

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

not cease to followe and shewe me out, vntill such time as I might speake with her. Whereupon he found himselfe so soavily inforgled with her Love, as that he thus complained: Ah Palmerin, well mayest thou see that thou canst not resle this impeslau, but whence shoud this Honour proceed? To luse her thou never sawest, nor knowest where is her abiding? If it fall out that thou dyest in the pursuite, these wallowes wall sone have a small end, and I gaue the greatest felicitie that I can desire. By this tyme had he spent the Eight dayes, which he had promised Arisimena for Florendos his company, when as well to begin the search of her he lond so well: as to end the Aduenture he intended of the Serpent, he prepared to depart, providing himselfe a huge Pace of Iron, which did hym god service, as you shall read hereafter.

### CHAP. XVI.

How Palmerin fought with the horrible Serpent of the Mountaine Artixaria, and slew him, bringing the Glasse filled with the water of the Fountaine, whereby King Primaleon of Macdon recovered his health.



When the Eight dayes were fully expired which Palmerin had stayed with Florendos, and in company of the faire Princesse Arisimena, who fearing that he would never returns from the Mountaine Artixaria) was very penitue and sad: And oftentimes she intreated him, not to hazard himselfe against those cruell, rauenous and supernaturall Monsters, but rather to witnessse his valour againts Knights of account like himselfe, but all her speeches profited not, for he was resolute to depart. I shall yet desire you said the Princesse, that say my sake you will take with you

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

You thre Esquires which I will give you, which may send  
you succour if any inconuenience shoule besell you. Then  
he called the Esquires, and presented them unto him, with  
the Glasse that he shoud bring the water in from the Foun-  
taine, it fortun stod with you to fasil the adventure.  
Palmerin mounting on horseback, and Florendos accompan-  
ying him halle adayes fomme on the way, left him on his  
jorney towards the Mountaine Artilleria, where he arri-  
ved on the last day of Aprill. When he commanded the Es-  
quires and his Dame Vibanklo, to expect his retorne at  
the foot of the Mountaine, for he woulde suffer none of them  
to goe vp with him: so ascended he the hill by a little crachte  
sute path, with his greev Hace on his necke, and the Glasse  
so; the wister fastened to his girdle.

Hauing thus trauald vp till about noonday, he found  
the passage so thicke set with Wiues and brakes, as he  
was constrainted to alight from his Horse, whome he un-  
buckled and left there fesing: and much further had he not  
gone, but the night curstoke him, yet bid the spene shins  
bright and cleare, which made him still traualte onward,  
till he beheld the Rocke where the water was, and the  
Serpents denne, who was come sonelwhat lowre to re-  
create himselfe among the greene herbes, where he had  
closely couched himselfe. But when he heard Palmerin com-  
ming bee began to swell, and with his tayle together ve-  
ry strangely: all which could not dismay this aduenturous  
Knight, but commending himselfe to God, set dolye his  
Glasse, and with his Hace marched stoutly against his enemie,  
saying, Why Palmerin? Didst thou so ofter request  
of Florendos and the Princesse his sister, to try thy streng  
against this Diuell; and now thou art come in sight of him,  
wilt thou faint? Doth it not beseme the better to die  
with honour, then to live with shame? Let the iure encou-  
rage thee to follo the enterprise, and the other kill thee  
when thou offerest to retire. And with these words he ad-  
vanced

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

vanced him to the Serpent, and the Serpent fiercely be-  
gan to assaile him, and with his tayle he smote him downe,  
but that he nimblly preuented the stroke, deliuering the  
Serpent so soze a blow on the head with his Hace, as made  
him rale and stagger, and cry so terribly, as the whole  
Mountaine resounded with a maruaulous Echo, and to re-  
uenge himselfe, with his talentes he got hold on Palmerins  
Armour, which he rent violently in two or three places,  
wounding his body very dangerously. When Palmerin  
perceaved in what hard plighe he was, he tolke heart afresh,  
and watching his abuantage, stroke the Serpent with  
his Hace so strongly on the necke, as he fell to the ground  
in a manner dead, and Palmerin pleyed him with so many  
stroakes one after another, as he left him not while any  
life was in him. After this happy victorie, for whiche devout-  
ly he praised God, binding vp his woundes as well as he  
could, with extreme weartheuse he laid him downe and  
slept: when he seemed to see the thre sisters wherof we haue  
spoken before, who were the Daughters of a Knight, Lord  
of the Isle Carderia, to whome noise myght be compayed for  
knowledge in the Magicall sciente, and so well he had in-  
structed his Daughters, as after his death they alone excel-  
led in this Arte, so that the men of the Countrey commenly  
called them the Goddesses of Destiny, because they could  
douine before what shold follow after. And if any one did  
happen to iniury them, they would revenge themselves  
by their Inchantments, so that they were greatly feared  
and held in reverence. They vse divers times this Mountaine  
Artilleria, as well to gather Herbes for their neces-  
sary use, as also for the Water of the Fountaine, for  
the defence wherof they had left this Serpent, who  
was in time growen so huge and monstros, as he ra-  
ther seemed a Diuell then a naturall Beast. Notwithstan-  
ding how hideous souer he was, Palmerin as you haue  
heard, ouercame and overhim, finding the thre Sisters in  
the

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

the manner as I haue told you : who were not greatly discontented with him, but esteemed so well of him, as in his Army the eldest of them thus spake to him. *Wele us me Palmerin, thy beginning is so honourable, as great pity it were to let thee dyo here, chiefly for the want that all Greece shall haue of thee in time to come, the whole Empire whereof is predestinated thine : and therefore will I heale the wounds thou hast at this time received. I will thende somewhat more for him.* said the second Sister, *I will Enchant him so well for his amalle, as hereafter no Conjuration or Witchcraft shall haue any power to hurt him.* Truly said the thirs Sister, *for my part, I will gne him such fortune, as the first time he shal see his Lady Polinarda, (who so many times saluted him in his Dianies) he shall loue him so intrely, as no volouer torment shall make her forget whiche liure, the happiness she shall receire by his occasions.* Then the eldest Sister took a Golden Cup, and filled it with the water of the fountains and bringynge the joyce of certayne hearbes into it, washed therewith Palmerins wounds, so that they were immedately healed.

Now felte he very well all they did, but his slumber tooke away the liberty of his speach, untill such time as they were departed, but first the eldest of them thus spake. *Since this knyght hath had so good a beginnynge, and that his strength hath depuyed our guard of our Fountaine, I pray you let vs suffer him to haue a Glasse of our water, that by his meynys the King of Macedon may be healede, which a number of other knyghts haue failed of heretofore.* Wherein they all consented, and so it came to passe : then gathering their hearbes as they were wont, and washing them, they wroke thise way to the Isle Calderia.

Chap. XVII.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

### Chap. XVII.

How Palmerin discended from the Mountaine, with his glasse, full of the water of the enchanted Fountaine, and how joyfull Vrbanillo and the other Esquires were, seeing their Master returnde with so good fortune.



When these thre Sisters were departed, Palmerin awaked and arose, not a little maruellung at that he had heard & seen, but most of all when he felte his wounds healed, and saw his glasse full of the wafer he came for : so rendyng thanks to heauen for his god successe, he went by higher on the mountaine, thinking to see the Fountaine, but he could not, wherefore without any longer day he discended downe again, thus saying to himselfe. *How happy may I count my selfe, to find so good Fortune in this desolate mountaine : for now I know her name that is destined to be mine, hencelorth shall she not conceale her selfe from me, may I finde the place where she abideth, and this I baw by him that made me, that I will not cease to seeke her through the world, till I haue some tidings of her : and were it not for the promise I haue made the Prince Es Arismena, to bring her this water to recover the King her Father, this day would I begin this religious enterpise, in hope (if the Ladies speake trath that appeared to me in my sleepe) hereafter to be one of the happiest Knyghts in the world.* So walked he on till he camis where he left his horse whereon he mounted, and came to Vrbanillo and his other Esquires, who having heard the cry of the Serpent, when Palmerin gaue him his first stroke, perswaded themselves that their Master was slaine: but when they saw him coming,

ming, Vrbanillo above all the rest was most joyfull, and ran apace to meet him, desiring to know how he had sped. Truly well I thank God, said Palmerin, who gaue me strenght to kill the Monster, and to bring sufficient of the Water, I hope, to win the King Primaleon his health. Then haue I the thing. I most desire, said Vrbanillo, albeit I greatly feared, that you had accompanied all the other Knights in death, that aduentured before you, and could not sped so well. So mounted they all on Horseback, and made so gud journeys as they arrived at Macedon, whereof Florendos and sage Arismena were not a little joyfull, especially when they were assured, that Palmerin had brought with him the Kings health, by means whereof it is not to be demanded, if he were highly honoured and received at the Court.

C H A P. XVII.

How four Knights would have taken the glasse of fayall water from Vrbanillo, before Palmerin arrived at Macedon, and of the Combate betwene them.



You must here understand that the same day Palmerin, in company of his esquires departed from the mountaine, he sent Vrbanillo the Dwarfe before, towards Macedon with the glasse of water: when it so fortuned that four Knights mette with him, one of them saluting him in these hard termes: Deformed villain, give me that glasse, or I shall take thy head from thy shouulders. Palmerin, who came not farre behinde, seeing the Knights offer injury to his Dwarfe, gaue spurres to his horse, and thus answered: How now Gentlemen: are you not ashamed in my presence to abuse my servant? trust me, I neyther can nor will so put it vp: and so touching his Lance, he smouched one of them

(8)

so roughly, as he fell from his horse dead to the ground. When the other three saw their companion thus foiled, they altogether set upon Palmerin: but their fortune fell out so ill, as two of them were soon vanquished, and the third took himself to flight, very hardly escaping. Palmerin made no account of following him, but leaving them rode on his way, his Dwarfe thus comming to him: Welcome my Lord (quoth he) he is to be accounted over scollish hardy, that at the weapons point seekes to offend you: I dare boldly avow my wodds, by euidence of the fortune of these four Knights.

In that, said Palmerin, thou maist be deceived, but God is alwayes friend to justice and equity, and enemy to such as goe against them. But because you shall know the occasion why these four Knights would have taken the glasse from Vrbanillo, you must note that they were all Sounnes to a great Lord of a Cattie, which was a dayes journey of the mountaine Artaxaria, who having intelligence by Spyrs, Beards and other peultants, what good fortune had befallen Palmerin to kill the Serpent, and byng away the fayall water, repined greatly therat: for the Lord did highly malice the King of Macedon, because he had enforced him to surrender a Maner, which he againt all right held from one of his Sisters, and for this cause, knowing that by the vertue of that water the King should recover his health, he sent his four Sounnes to take it from Palmerin, whose success in their attempt fell out as you have heard. Now Palmerin by this time is come to Macedon to the King, whom with great reverence he saluted on his knie, when the King embracing him so well as he could, said. Trust me my good Friend, next to God I must esteeme you dearest, so that as he by his Godhead hath made me breath this ayre, though weake and sickly; by divins providence he hath sent you to restore my bodily health, from henceforth therefore I shall intreat you to command me and mine at

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

at your pleasure. By gracie Lord, said Palmerin, the heauens giue me successe to doe you service, for I know no Prince living this day; for whom I would more gladly aduenture my life. I thank you good Sir, quoth the King, but the grete I haue sustaine for the sorrow of my sonne Florendos, brought me into such a long and lingering extremity, as well may I blesse the time, that by your good successe am so happily deliuered: let me therefore entertaine you as my second Sonne, and perswade your selfe of such a Father, who will loue you as if you were his owen naturall childe, in that I, and the greater part of my Realme shall be at your disposition. Worshyp Sir, said Palmerin, wothily might I be reperced amonst the world in the world, refusing the honour you please to offer me, especially in such an extraordinarie kind of favour: for the rest, (being thus accepted in your princely grace) I haue sufficient being furnished with Horse and Armour to doe me service. With these wordes the King embrased him, and wherefore so caused the teares to tricke downe his cheakes: so that Palmerin stayed longer with him then he made account to doe, till the Duke of Durace sent for him, as you shall reade in the discourse following.

### CHAP. XIX.

How Duke Astor of Durace sent to the King of Macedon, desiring him to send him the Knight that had slaine the Serpent on the Mountaine Artifaria, to ayde him against the Count Passaco of Mezena, who layd siege to one of his Cities.

 The fame of this victory was so farre spread which Palmerin had against the Serpent, on the Mountaine Artifaria, as at length the Duke Astor of Durace heard thereof, against whom

## Emperour of Constantinople PART. I.

the Count Passaco of Mezena haged battaille, and seeing him selfe unable to resle his enimies, minded to send to the King of Macedon, requiring ayd of the Knight that slew the Serpent at the mountaine Artifaria: and hereupon he dispatched one of his Gentleman towards the King, who made good hast till he came thither: when doing his reverence, and delivering his Letters of credite to the King, he said. Dread Lord, the Duke of Durace my master most humbly salutes your Majestie by me. The King having read the Letters, and noting the contents, bid the messenger discharge the rest of his message. It is to Sir, said the Gentleman, that of Count Passaco. who in such evill sorte hath warred on him, as he hath well adre destroyed the whole Countrey, for he hath taken the City of Mizzara, and against all right doth challenge it for his owne. After this the Duke my master rayning his eyes to his bloud battaille, Fortune hath binne so contrary to my Lord, as his noble sonnes are slaine, and the greater part of his trusty Gentleman. yet not contented with all this, the Count pursues him still to his deere City of Durace, which he hath begin with force hath been a Knight, that lewe the serpent on the mountaine Artifaria, in whose valour my Lord reposeth such confidence, as would ren grant him licencie to come thither, my Lord will accompanie him with so many har- dy men at Armes, as heo doubteth not to enfece the Count to issue his Countrey: and for that the matter requireth ex- pedition, he desires your assistance with all possible sped. I am sorry, quoth the King, that the Duke my nephew is in such extremity, and I promise you I did not thinke as yet to part with Palmerin: but seeing the necessity is so urgent I will intreate him to goe with you, and so many appoynted Knights with him, as the Count shall perceiue

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

I am not well pleased with his hard dealing towards my nephew. Now was Palmerin present when the Gentleman delivered his message, which pleased him not a little, because he would gladly leave the King to settle his sonne, and was thus held from his desire by impotunate requests: but seeing the King had graunted to send him to the Duke, he fell on his knees, vying these speches. In respect of my good Lord, that the Duke your Nephew hath by gent occasion to imploy me, and in that his sonne is onely for me, without any other of your people, I beseech you suffer me, to goe alone to him, for my hope is se good, in a cause of truth and right, that we shall be sufficient there to endis the controuersie. Not so my good friend Palmerin, said the King, you shall not hazard your selfe alone, but take such company as I shall send with you. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, hee demands me without any other company, and therefore let me persuade you to satisfie your request: so turning to the Gentleman, he bade him prepare to set forward, for he was ready. Worthy Sir, answered the Messenger, with what expedition you please, for never was Knight expected with moare earnest longing for, then you are. This sudaine resolution of Palmerin displeased Florendos: wherefore taking him aside, he said. I see then my dore friend, you will nevirs be gone, albeit your company hath givn me greater solace and delight, then anything else since I lost my onely content: yet is my regard of your honour such, that I feare more to heare you in misseur, then I pity the necessity of my Cozin the Duke of Durace. Yet let me intreate you, that finishing your intent with fortunate successe, you make your present returne to the King my Father, whose loue, and whose liberality you made not doubt of. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) the King and you have so highly honoured me, as wheresoever I shall come hereafter, I tell yours in my very veray deuours.

These

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

These words did Prolome heare, the Sonne of Frenato, whom Florendos had kept since the time he was his Page, and was now old enough to receave the Knighthood: which made him desirous to purchase honour by some meanes, especially if the King would vouch Palmerin to take him with him, his request he perswaded himselfe wold not be denied, whereupon, knelling before the King, he beganne thus. If it please your Highnesse, that at your bands I might receive my order of Knighthood, before Palmerin departed from your Court, I am assured he wold not disdaine me for his companion, especially if your Majestie did moue the question on my behalfe. Welcom me, quoth the King, so good a motion shall not be hindred by me, and therefore to morrow will I givs you your order, and such Armes as shall weli besetme a Knight, prepare you in meane time to performe your watch. Highly contented was Prolome at these speches, and gaus order for his provision of needfull occasions, till euening camie, when he entered the Chappell, whero he spent the night in devout orisons, that heauen wold so further the whole course of his time, as might stand with the advancement of justice and his owne Honor. Early in the morning, the King accompanied with his Sonne Florendos and many other Knights, entered the Chappell, where finding Prolome on his knies, he gaus him his Knighthood, wishing his Fortune to proue such as might make him famous wheresoeuer he came: afterward he desired Palmerin, that this new Knight wight bear him company in his travayles, whereto Palmerin willingly consented, accepting so well of Prolomes behaviour, as he purposed thenceforward not to forsake so god a companion. Then they both tooke their leue of the King and Florendos, and departed with the Gentleman towards the Duke of Durace, making such god expedition in they journey, as having crost the Seas with a prosperous winde, they landed in the Countrey of Durace. Now because the City was

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

besieg'd on all sides, they were doubtfull how to get in  
vuscene of the enmy: which the Gentleman their guide,  
performed so well, as by private Agnes made to the  
Sentinel, at length they got in without any danger. The Duke  
hearing sydings of their arraial, left his Chamber and came  
to welcome Palmerin, whome he entertained with great  
honour, spending the most part of the night in familiar con-  
ference with him, till having brought him to his Chamber,  
he left them both to their good rest, till the next morning,  
when he came againe to visite them, thus saluting Palmerin.  
Your arraial, Sir Knight, doth arme me with such  
assured hope, as by the helpe I shall receve at your hand,  
mine enemy(I trust)shall not ouerbraue me as he hath done  
hitherto: and therfore you with your woxhise companion,  
are both so welcome as you can desire. By Loze, ( quoth  
Palmerin ) the King that sent me to you, hath bound me to  
him by so many courtesies; as so the love of him and Flo-  
rendos his Donne, you may assur your selfe of my bitter-  
most service, so long as I shall be able to hold my Sword.  
The Duke returned his noble offer many thanks, and  
walked into the Hall, where the Duchesse there expected the  
comming of Palmerin: so after many welcomes and courtly  
embraceings, the Tables being coverd, they sat downe to  
Dinner: all which time, Palmerins eyes were fixt on the  
Duchesses Daughter, who was one of the fairest Virgins  
that euer he saw, and so busied was his thoughts in behol-  
ding her, as he gave small regard to the Dukes boordes,  
who reported what shamefull injurys the Court had  
offered him from tyme to tyme, and how many skirmishes  
had passed betwixne them since the beginning of the wars.  
Thus spent they the Dinner tyme, till the Tables being  
withdrawne, the Duchesse with her Daughter were gone  
into their Chamber, and the Duke questioned with Palmerin  
as concerning Ptolome, who was very neare allied to  
the Duke: and so with discouering of newells of Macedon, as  
also

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

also the doubtfull affaires of the warres, they passed the  
whole day till night came: when Palmerin and Ptolome  
departing to their Chamber, Palmerin coulde take no rest,  
the beauty of the Duchesses Daughter so troubled his  
thoughts, which made him distracte knyght her name, if  
this were the the thre Sibylls Spake of in the prophetis,  
and was before promised him in his sleeping visions. Palme-  
rin was not alone thus passionate, but on the other syde the  
yong Lady became as amorous of him: but fortune would  
not permit their loue, as you shall here more hereafter.  
The Count hauing all this while maintained very straignt  
Rege, intending now to loose or gaine all, gaue fierce assault  
upon the City, first calling all the chiefe Lordes and  
Captaines of his Army, mouing them with earnest and  
Souldier-like persuasions, to forswake the aduantages, and  
to encounter their enemies with magnanimitie and reso-  
lute courage. When he had thus imbaldened his men to,  
the fight, with sound of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions  
they bad the City battaile: then myght they behold how  
they be sturdid themselves with Pagots to fill the Ditches,  
and Trenches, set scaling ladders to the walles, how the  
one were assaulted and the other defended, that many lost  
their life or departed matned: such harrocks did Palmerin  
and Ptolome with the Dukes power, make on theyr ene-  
mies, notwithstanding they were in number farre beyond  
them, and marvellous well provided of all necessaries. But  
then Palmerin remembred a sodaine politice to prevent a  
mischief, soz as the enemy retred to prepare for the second  
assault, he called the most part of the best Knights that  
the Duke had, willing each one to betake himselfe to his  
horse and follow him, leauing the rest well appointed for de-  
fense of the walles. The Counts power sounding the alarme  
and comming roughly agayne vpon the City, Palmerin  
with his company priuily issued forth at the Posterie gate,  
on the backs of their enemies, and gaue such a braue bat-  
tle,

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

as they were ensexed to forfake their scaling ladders to relit this encounter. There were many stroakes delivered on either side, the Count and most part of his Knights being on horsebacke, which made them hold the longer play with Palmerin and his men notwithstanding, the Count seeing such a hardy attempt given on a sabbath, and doubting stell supply would come from the City, with fears beganne to retire, and with one of his Brethren laboured to resist this wryte assault: but Palmerin and his company gave them small time to rest, laying on loads with marvellous fiercenesse, whereat the Count was so offended, as comming to Palmerin, he gave him such a cruel stroake on the helmet, as he fell therewith to the ground, yet did he quickly recover himselfe againe, and requited the Count with so sound a salutation, as he made him tumble from his saddle headlong to the earth, at what time on the other side Ptolome had so canbazed the Counts brother as he sealed him an acqaintance with his sword for his life. Then began the Counts houldours to disparte for their successe, and Palmerin with his traine to follow them so closely, as they were glad to take themselves to flight, leaving their master overthrowne in the Arme, where he was troden to death with the trampling of the horses. Thus did the victory remayne to the Duke, his enemies scattering in flight glad to save their lives, whom Palmerin commanded to follow no further, least gathering themselves together againe, and espyng advantage, they might so endanger them: so oftentimes the vanquished too narrowly pursued, recover courage and daunt the pride of the conquerors. For this cause he returned with his men into the City: the Duke understanding the sole of his enemie, which made him with a great number of worthy Citizens to goe meete Palmerin and Ptolome, whom imbracing he thus entreated. Ah good Knights, by you is my estate recovered, and the death of my Sones revenged on the murderer, there-

so

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

soe dispose of me and mine, what you thinke well: To which wordes Palmerin thus answered. My Lord, let heaven haue this honour of our victory: as soe we have done, and will hereafter what I can, for the great kindness of the King of Macedon your Uncle, who hath honoured me in sending me to you, and other recompence I never did see will seeke. As they thus parled together, the Duke perisched by the blood on Palmerins Arme, that he was wounde, wounded, let us make hale to our Wallace, wher a Lady attenant on the Duchesse, and well come in Chyngery, shall giue attouiance on you till you are recovered. So mounting on his backe they rode to the Wallace, where Palmerin was lodged. Being brought into his Chamber, the Duchesse and her Daugher helpt to brarme him, when the Lady dressed his wounds, persuading him ther was no danger in them to be feared. Then each one departing, Lautana and the Duchesse daughter called Vrbaino, the Dwarfe laying to him. My friend, before the knalle to make bold of anything he wante, and that for my sake he will disparte of nothing. Madam, said the Dwarfe, you haue good reason to wish my master well, as well for the god assistance he gaf the Duke your father, as also in respect of his deserts, whiche are as honorabile as any that ever came in this world. These wordes Palmerin very well heard, having his eye continually on her: wherefore when he and all the other were departed, he called Vrbaino, deniaured whiche he had with the Prince, whiche he reported, and his answere alio. Palmerin said Palmerin, I pray the and the knalle to let her know, that I am her servant and Knight, ready to accomplish any thing that she shall command me. Referre this master to me, Ile quench the Dwarfe, I know what Saint will prouide these knaves, and what offering must be laid on his Altar.

C H A P:

CHAP. XX.

How Palmerin became highly enamoured with the Beauty of the Princesse Laurana, thinking her to be the Lady that solicited him in his Visions.



Rbanillo the Dwarfe not forgetfull of his masters commandement, the next day when Laurana came with her mother to visit Palmerin, he tooke the Dwarfe aside, demanding what rest his master tooke the night past. Madam (quoth he) indifferent, I thanke God am I you, for in your two countes the disposition of my masters health. As how, quoth she; Thus Spadanie, said Urbanillo: The first day that he beheld you, he gaue the whole possession of himselfe so firmlye to you, as day and night he meditates on your diuine perfections, searchinge in reuall of his seruice to my Lord your Father and his Country, whose liues and yours he hath defended, himselfe shall be repaid with soraine and crusl death: for, has he not some for you safety, well had he escaped this dangerous extremitie. When I say (saide Spadanie) that his valour hath beene the meane of your deliuerance, does not he degenerate from gentle nature, as to kill him that gav you life. Why, my friend (quoth she) what needest thou haue me to doe? To leue him, saide Madam, quoth he, as he hath you. Alas, said she, thou wouldest assure thy selfe, that now can with thy Master better then I doe, being my deere and his dearest: with which waies the changed colour with such madnesse haueing, as it might be perceiued the comyng of her affections. Which, when the Dwarfe wiste, as one not to leave his lesson in this art, perswaded himselfe by the very lookes of Laurana, that his master

long

woold sorte to happy end, and therupon he followed the matter thus. I thinke Madam, that you with me Master as well as any, but that is not enough, unless you will agree with his in this point, that you grant your selfe his onely Lady and Mistresse, as he hath vowed himselfe your Knight, and Servant. If it may please you to wish this good to my Master, vouchsafe this labour as a present of your liking: that so soone as he shall finde himselfe better in health, you will bat consent to speake with him alone, in some such convenient and unsuspected place, as he may have libertie to acquaint you with the secrets of his thoughts. Alas, quoth she, how shold I so do, without offering too much impeach to mine owne honour. Madam, said the Dwarfe, the night gives labour to loves sweet enterprizes. By this time the Datchelle was ready to depart, which Laurana perceiving, said to the Dwarfe: Assure thy master from me, that I am v.ore his then mine owne, and I will doe so; his welfare, what I may with modesty.

By reason of Lauranas departure, the Dwarfe could not make her answer, but shadowing the matter as he had done before, went about his Masters busynesse, till he came and found him alone, when he discovered all that had passed between the Princesse and him, which so well contented Palmerin, as nothing could more: because he perswaded himselfe, as I habe said already, that this was she which the three Sisters promised him, by whom he shoulde receive the honour that Destiny allowed him. For this cause thenceforward he was very desirous to know her name, commanding Urbanillo, veray straile to enquire it, which he did, informing his Master that her name was Laurana: whereupon he well saw, that he was deceived, in that the three Sisters had named his Mistresse Polinarda, and therfore he resolved to withdraw his affection, and to depart thence so soone as he could be able to bare Arme: But it may be easly presumed, that when one hath so farre ventured

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

ventured in loue, that he perceives himselfe beloued as the Dwarf persuaded his Master, hardly can he giv over so faire a beginning: yet here it sell out contrary, as you shall well perceive, that the end was more foddane then the beginning. Palmerin now knowing the Princes name, beganne to vse other countenance to her then he was accustomed: but the godd Lady (in his excuse) conceaved better opinion then she had cause: yet as it euermoze falleth out in loue, then when Ladies see themselves but slenderly courted by their friends, they grow impostaunate in theyr amorous desies: so came it to passe with Laurana, who perceiving her self not solicited by Palmerin as he was wont, one night somewhat late she called the Dwarf and thus beganne. How comes it to passe my good friend, that thy Master is not of so pleasant disposition, as heretofore he bath been: it may be thou hast not let him understand my last salutation, or else feare withholdes him from following his determination: I pray thee doe the message of my earnest good will to him, and tell him that I long to impart our affections together, to the full resolution of our desired thoughts, which I haue found the way vsuspected to accomplish, so please him to come to my chamber to morrow at night, where I shall not fail to expect his presence. When the Dwarf heard Laurana vse these words, thinkeing his Master was still in his former cogitations, thus answered. Trust me, sayre Madam, within these few dages, my master to become so melancholike, as I haue many times feared his death, and I am sure he hath no other cause to torment him so, but onely the fury of the excreacie loue he beares you: yet seeing you haue promised him such great fauour, let me alone to change this unpleasant humour. Fayle not then (quoth she) to let him know my mind. I see presently sayd the Dwarf, to accouaint him with these long delrea tidinges. So taking his leave he went to his masters chamber whome he found

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

fall a sleepe, when not daring to awake him, let he say his message till the next morning, and so layd him downe to rest, at what time Sleepe had throughly possessed him, he began to cry and complaine so loude, as his Master hearing him, arose, and demanded of him the cause of his lament. Alas, my Lord (quoth he) never in all my life was I so alighted, me thought that one of the fayrest Ladies that ever eye looked on, held a naked sworde against my threate, saying, Vile, and villanous creature as thou art, darst thou presume so much to offend me, as to make thy Lord and master amorous of Lady Laurana, and to forsake me & fustly doest thou deserue to die on this weapon for thy paliardise, and if hereafter thou carry any message to preservise my right, assure thy selfe, that I will challice thee in such sort, as all deformed villaines shall receive example by thee. I tell thee Mayster, Palmerin his fortunes climbe higher then the name of Laurana, and where he is more loued for the royaltie of his lineage, then for his base and p. stonyall education. With which wordes she gaue me such a stroake on the head with her sworde, as I, (scarcfull of my life) cryed so loude as you say, you heard me. This motion made Palmerin easly perceave, that Polinarda had made this threatening to the Dwarf for Laurana: which concealing to himselfe, he said in laughter. I think then didst forget to drinke when thou camest to bed, and so thy heart beeing dry, conceaved this vision: I pray thee sleepe, and trouble me no moze with such idle passionis, the Dwarf betooke him to rest, but Palmerins thoughts were all night hanting on this dreame, so that he resolved to depart thence the next morning, and secke elsewhere his adventures, seeing he was aduertised by so many aduertisements, So at the day rising, he called the Dwarf, and commanded him to prepare his Armour, for he intended to take his leane of the Duke. Ptolome hearing this, and having noted besides all the Dwarf tolde his master in the night,

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

night, dissembling the matter, as was his manner, he came and bad Palmerin god morrow, who answered Ptolome in this manner. My deare friend, I haue concealed none of mine assayres from thee, since the time we received our Knighthood, and parted together from the Court of Macedon: new therefore will I impart to thee what I haue determined.

It is so, that urgent occasions constraine me presently to leue this Country, and henceforth to framme my course whiche way fortune will direct me, by which occasion I see we must be ensozed to leue each other: notwithstanding let me intreate that our absence may no way impaire our friendship, not doubting but in good time we shall meete together againe. In meane space, if you see the King, or Prince Florendos, forget not the humble duesy of their vowed Servants, I beseech you, who dedicates his life and honour in all attempts to their gracious fauours. By God sayd Ptolome, let who will doe the message for me, for neither death nor danger shall separe me from you: but I will beare you company while life and soule hold togather, if you be so resolute, said Palmerin, shamo were it for me to refuse you. Set forward then when you please ( quoth Ptolome ) for we neither must nor will depart, that's flat. So being both arm'd, they came to the Duke, who maruelled much to see them so prepared, and therfore demaunded whither they went. My god Lord ( answered Palmerin ) in that your Countrey is now quieted, we must intreate you soour departure, because weighty affaires in other places doe so command vs. Now happens it farrre Friends, ( said the Duke ) that you will soone leue me: My Lord ( quoth Palmerin ) we are so ensozed and thereso we humbly intreate you not to be offendid. If your affaires be such ( said the Duke ) loath I am to hiss you, comande of me and mine what you please, for all I may helpe at your disposition. Spake humble thanks did Palmerin, and

Ptolome

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Ptolome returne to the Duke, and ers they went to Horsback, they came to take thoir leave of the Duchesse and Laurana, who was well nigh dead, seeing her hope deceipted, for she expected the Night comming, when she and Palmerin shold conserre together of their loue: but seeing him now departing, she was out of all hope to see him againe, the extreme griefe whereof so overcame her, as gluting a great chakke she fell in a strokne.

The Ladies and Gentle-women in great amazement came about her, ignorant of her suill, but only Palmerin and the Dwarfe, whiche he like wife would not reveale to any, for the reason you heard discouered before: and rather would she entertayne her owne death, then make knowne a secret of such importance: Wherefore having somewhat recovered her selfe, and not able to conceal her anguylie, with an extreame sigh she thus breathed forth her sorrow: Ah Palmerin, easly hast thou kindled the fire, whiche with great flame thou loonest consuming unquenchid. Who would haue thought that such treason could harbour, where faire condicione and honourable balsur shined so brightly? Well may I condemne all men of disloyaltie, seeing thou hast failed resembling so excellent. Believe me Knight, thou hast done me great wrong, and thy selfe much more: for which, where ever thou commest, be thou named the most ungratefull Knight that euer dwelt abroade, staking her death so cruelly, who loves the dearer then her owne life.

These complaints made Laurana before the Duchesse, not sparing to discharge the whole burthen of her oppressed heart, her Mother not daring to gainsay her, but expected when she shold depart this life: wherefore perswading her selfe from despaire, she stocely promised to walke so with Palmerin, as he shold say, and enjoy her to his wife. But all this was in vaine, for he mounted on horsebacke, and accompanied Ptolome and Urbanillo, lest the City of Duracoe, no one knowing whiche way they were ridene; Palmerin

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

rin converted into such beauinesse, as nothing could torment him more, so earnest was his desire to see her, whom fate and fortune had appointed for him.

### CHAP. XXI.

How Palmerin and Ptolome met with a Damosell, who made great mone for a Casket which two Knights had forcibly taken from her, and what happened to them.



Sing thus departed from Duraco, these Knights rode along, thinking in what beauinesse they had left the Dukes Daughter: When Palmerin accusing himselfe as guilty of this mischance, within himselfe thus sadly discoursed. Unhappy man that euer thou camest into this Countrey, where thou hast lost so hard an opinion of thy selfe, as while thou liue<sup>st</sup> thou shalt be the worse esteemed: and well worthy, so justly mayst thou be accused of disloyalty, in making meanes to obtaine the loue of the faire Princeesse Liurana, and having conquered where thou desirdest, to make so little account of her as thou hast done. Had death preuented thee before, she had beene safesyed, thine honour defended, and thy unknowing Polinarda no way injured: Which spaches made the teares to tricke downe his cheeks: when Ptolome looking above espied him, and guessing the cause of his sicknes, said. Verily I never thought to see such womanish behaviour in you, nor that any grete or misfortune should haue teares so sorne at commandement. How will you hereafter withstand so many calamities, hard aduentures, and dangerous stratagements, with many and sundry narroby brants that you must passe through, when I see you unable to overcome your own selfe, being surpized by her teares, to whom you haue done honour

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

honour to afford a good countenance? If you had receyued of her the sweets of loue, reason might then pleade in your excuse: but having no way misprised her honour, or offered essence to modest chastite: what iniury may she say that you haue done her? Forget I pray you these vnseemely fashions, hardly agreeing with a knight of such report as you are: let vs finde something else to talke on: and tell me which way you intend to journey? By my life ( quoth Palmerin,) I knowe not, but let vs take which way fortune shall please to conduct vs. I thinke it best then ( said Ptolome ) that we shape our course towards Rome, where we shall find people of all nations, by whom we may be intrusted, as concerning Aduentures worthy our travell, and galding to honour. On then charely ( quoth Palmerin,) and so they trauelled eight dayes together, not meeting with any Aduenture worthy to bee spoken of, till at length they met with a Damosell heavily mourning, who said: Alas, what will she say, whose trust was onely in me, having lost the thing wherevpon consisted her hopes, to recover the highest of her noble desires & Palmerin hearing these words, and moved with compassion, rode to her, and demanded the cause of her mourning? My Knight ( quoth she) I was sent by a Lady with a Casket, wherin was one of the best swords in the whole world, which is so Enchaunted, as none can draw it out of the scabbard, but he that is esteemed the worthiest knight living: but before any be admitteth to make proofe of this Aduenture, hee must graunt a request that I am to aske him. With this saying I trauelled many strange Countreys, as France, Italle, Sclavonia, and divers others, whereof many haue tryed, but no one yet could finishe the Aduenture: whereupon I was this day traaveling towards the Emperours Count of Greece, and here by I met with two Knights, who having heard the cause of my long travell made proofe of their Captain, and after another and both failed, whereat they were so es-  
sended,

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

sended, as they tooke the Casket from me persone, and are gone therewith I know not whither : which doth so much grieue me in respect of her losse towards whome I am, as death would be more welcome to me then life.

Faire Virgin (saide Palmerin,) do no discomfort your selfe, but shew me whiche way they rode that dealt with you so discourteously. Gentle Knight (quoth she) If your hap be to rescioze my lorde againe, you see the most gracious acte that euer Knight did for a distressed Damozel. These Traytors to honour (wherof the one is in Crimson A micer, bearing in his shield thre Lyons heads) tooke this way by the West, and as yet I am sure they cannot be farre hence.

Then Palmerin clasped his Helmet, and taking his sword and Launce, directed Ptolome to guard the Damozell and follow him, galloping that way whiche he had shewed him; and by the time he had rid two miles, he espyed them he looked for, talking with another Knight they had met, and they thare together were assaying to open the Casket, unto whom Palmerin cryed, Treacherous villainies, that cannot mate with Ladies on the way, beth must offer them injury, deliver the Casket or ye die : Due of the two turned presently, and seeing him that thus threatened them to be alone, not moving a jote, began to laugh, and scounfully returned this answer. Softly, softly, good Sir, God pardon the hys soules whome you kill so easilly : but for all his wodds, Palmerin ranns against them, and they at him, so that he receyved a small wound on his shoulder: in recompence wherof, he gaue one of them a pasche-porc into another wold, and laid so lusily on the other, as he see him quickly besides his Saddle. When the third saw his compantons at so hard a reckoning, he saide to himselfe. By my faith he spake not vnadvisedly that said, A safe escape is better then a bad carrying: And alowing this sentence for currant in his owne opinion, gaue the sparses to his Woyse, making hast away with the Casket, so fast as he could: but Palmerin being

some

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

somewhat better mounted, got such adavantage of this knawaway, as with his sword he parred his right arme from his body, whereupon he fell to the ground and the Casket left him. Then Palmerin alighted, and tooke it up, and leauing the Knight there, returned whiche way he came: when opening the Casket, he tooke great pleasure in beholding the sword, which was maruellous costly: yet would he not proue to draw it forth, because he knew not her pleasure to whom it appertained. At length he espyed Ptolome coming, who came apace (if neede had bene) to haue assaid him: but when he knew how he had overcome the Knights, and recovered the thing was so desired, no man could be better contented, especially the Damozel, who leaping from her Mistray, came and kissed Palmerins feet, saying. And may all happiness repay this gentle knave, Faire knight, so; but by you, my deeth had bene best welcome to me.

Damozell (quoth he) se here the Casket according as I found it, I know not whether they that tooke it from you haue abused it or no. No, no, (said he) they could no way wrong it, the sword being hers that belongs to the best Knight. I pray you (quoth Ptolome) let me make tryall of my strengthe, albeit I know my selfe no such man as you speake of: so taking the Casket, offered to begin, when the Damozell desired him to lozeare, so (quoth she) you must first grant me one request, What ere it be, said Ptolome, I grant it: and so set all his might to his intent, but could not accomplitsh it. Wherefore quoth he, to the Damozell, believe me Lady, he hat wrought this Enchantment, no more by his Arte, then I can by my curring, and in my opinion you may travell long enough before you finde him that shall quit your expectation. The wose will be my trouble, (quoth the Damozell) being tyed by necessity to such a knights service. When Palmerin saw that his Companion had failed, he doubted whether he shoulde take it in hand or no: yet seeing he could spade no worse then others had done, he

¶ 3

said

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

said to the Damozell, will you anything with me before I aduenture my selfe, for my friend shall not be mal-content for a fellow. Gentle Knight ( quoth she ) I will nothing, but that you make the like promise your friend did, Of that doubt you not, said Palmerin : so laying hands valiantly on the Sword, without any great labour he drew it forth, being the richest and goodly Sword that ever was scene.

Ah good Knight, ( said the Damezell ) happy be the day of the Nativity, for thou hast delivered me from irretrievable labour. The Sword is yours, but by your promise you stand bound to goe with me where I shall conduct you, to doe that shall please my Lady to command you. Lead the way Damezell ( quoth Palmerin, ) and be sure we will not leave thy company. So mounted the Damezell on her Palfrey, and tooke the way towards Rome, where she that deliuered her Casket remained in dwotton, and with such sped they dispatched therre Trauaille, as they arrived at the Gate of a strong Castle, where the Damezell alighted, desiring Palmerin and Ptolome to expect her retурne a while. The Gate being opened, she went straight to her Mistresse and her Sister, who being glad of her coming, demanded if she had found out the man she went to seeke, dñe Ladies ( quoth she ) I haue, and hither he is come with me, but this I dare assure you before hand, that a more goodly and valiant Gentleman liues not this day: for in my presence he vanquished thre Knights, who perforce tooke the Casket from me, and for the sword he drew it forth so easly, as it had been that he wear eth by his side. Goe, said the Lady, and cause him come nere, and come Sister let vs goe to the gate to enter-taine him. Then was the drawbridge let downe. When Palmerin and Ptolome riding to the gate, met there the Ladies, whom they saluted with great reverence, and each Lady leading a Knight in by the hand, conducted them to their Chambers to be unarmes.

## C H A P. XXII.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

### C H A P. XXII.

How the Lady of the Castle declared to Palmerin, what moued the Giant Dartaco to take from her, her Daughter and her goods, whereupon Palmerin promised to enter Combate with the Giant : as much for pity, as to acquite his promise made to the Damezell that brought the Casket and the enchanted Sword.



At two Knights being thus entred the Castle and unarmes, the Ladies brought each of them a rich Mantle of Crimson Damask, inbrodered with Gold and Pearls to cover them, and so came with them into the Hall to meat, where wanted no chioce of dainty delicates : so after the Tables were withdrawen, and many other spedes passed betwene them, the Lady thus beganne to Palmerin.

Sir Knight, as now I am a poore and disherised Gentlewoman, that sometime was wife to one of the welliest Knights in this countrey, with whom I long time remained not having any Childe, till at length it pleased God to send me a Daughter, so faire a creature as ever Nature framed, who at my Husbands death was ioynt with me but five yeares aged. By Lord and Husband learned in the Art Magick, and for his skill renowned in this Countrey, the day before his death he call'd me to him, using these speeches. Dñe wife, let it suffice thee that I know what shall happen to thee after my death, and that one shall take perforce from thee not onely such Goods as I leau thee, but also thy faire Daughter : to helpe which extremity, I haue somewhat provided for thee before my departure.

Thou shalt finde in my Cabinet a Sword, which I haue  
selfe

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

scle haue enclosed in a Casket, and haue set so many Enchanted spells on that Sword, as no man shall be able to draw it out of the scabbard, unless he be the best appoynted Knight in the World, and he it is that must glue this succour, and helpe to reconvet againe thy losse. Now truce tell out my Husbanys spaches: How shortly after Darmaco the Gyant cam hither, and as his custome was to abuse whom he listed, so tooke he from me the best of my Castles, and in despite of me tooke my Daughter from me, saying: that he would glue her to one of his Sonnes in marriage, a villaine farre more vicious then his father, and so deformed, as Nature onnes abhaued at her owne knowledghe. Now in respect I wold not consent to this vnseemly Marriage, such goods as was left me he most violently tooke from me, this Sword onely excepted, whiche you haue woxthily conquered, and that had gone with them too, but that my Sister hid it very secretly. Now worthy Knight, if ever pitie tooke place in thy gentle heart, revenge me on this villaine, that hath thus robbid me of my goods and my Daughter, whose youth (being as yet but ten yeares olde) is the cause that the Gyant hath not consummated the Marriage. And if it shal like you to doe thus much for me, you shall not onely safull your promise to the Damosell that brought you hither, but you shall doe a dede acceptable to God, profitable to me, comfortable to my poore Childe, and honourable for ever unto your etens selfe. *Madam* (answered Palmerin) it is no marvel if Darmaco haue done you this wrong, in that Giants bee take a habit in trecherous dealings: wherefore did not my promise binde me to your Damosell, I wold not passe so lightly out of this Countrey; here I compelled him somewhat to recamponce this injury, and this shall I (God willing) doe to morrow, so please god I may be conducted to him. A gentle Knight, said the Lady, what I am not able, Heaven will no doubt repay this: And because it was now somwhat late, after they had spent a little moze time together

## Emperour of Constantinople PART. I.

together in conference, these Ladies accompanied him and Ptolome into their Chamber, and taking their leave, committed the Knights to their good rest for that night, whiche they passed with quiete repose, and on the next morning after they were armed, they demanded their guide of the Lady, that shold direct them the way towards the Count. Then she called the Damosell that carried the Casket, and two Knights of her owne, whom she commanded to goe with Palmerin: so committing him to God and good successe, they tooke their way straight to the Castle of Darmaco, where they arrived in the morning, when they espied a Squire on the walles, who was appointed there to kepe the watch, to whom Palmerin sayd. My friend, I pray thee if Darmaco be hether, cause him to come forth, for I wold speake with him. And what wold you with him, answered the Squire: I wold intreat him, said Palmerin, to vs himselfe, more courtesly then he hath done heretofore, and that he shold doe right to a good Lady whom he hath disherised, namely to send her her goods and her Daughter againe: and if my intreaty may not pacquise with him, tolde him, if he dare come to the Combate, wherein I will make him confess his swerd, that his actions haue bene villainous, trayterous, and disloyall. In good sooth Sir, answered the Squire in perision, you may say so bothe reason, and they that sent you likewise, but your journey I feare me wyl me amount to so much: therefore, if you wyl be ruled by me, get you going, wileste you are willing to leave your heads so; a signe to our Gates. My head, said Palmerin, my Swerd holds too good an edge, and mine armes too sound strenght, to leave a Jewell of such price so easly: goe therfore when I bid the, then wyl he: otherwise allis thy fault if I hanquish the knoller, than that with the rest shall surely dy the death, for soone, tolde the Squire, sholl I doe your message: and if any harme happen to you, say my good friends you were

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

These contyned before : but as for my Master Darmas, he bath not bene within for this hure and moze, yet is his Sonne Mordano here, who can bid you welcome as well as his Father. So departed the Squire, and in short tyme Mordano the Giants Sonne came vpon the walles, demandyng of Palmerin what he sought for : I tolde the Squire, answered Palmerin : but tell me, art thou the Son of the Giant, that delightest in efferring villainy to La-  
vicia ? And how then, said Mordano, what if I am ? I pray thee, said Palmerin, bid thy Father that without any fur-  
ther quarrell he deliuer the Lady that he detaines violent-  
ly, otherwise I shall cause him to do it whether he will or  
no. I shall make thys answere, said Mordano, if thou da-  
rest carrie but till I arm my selfe : and so presently depar-  
ting, in short tyme he came forth very well appoynted, with  
a meruallous strong Lancis in his hand, and mounted on  
a very lilly Coursier, so prauincing towards Palmerin, he  
said. Wrytch, art thou come to seeke thy swine death ? I  
pitty thee : yet if thou wylle thy selfe to my mercie, I  
will spare thy life, and suffer thee to waste thy time in one  
of the base Dungeons in this Castle. From looging thereto,  
God shewide me, quoth Palmerin : and being moved with  
these rough wordes of his enemys, he encouerted Mordano  
with such courage, as their Lancis being broken, both  
of them were dismounted, Palmerin not hure, but Mordano  
was wounded on the right Ave, the tranchion of Palmerins  
Lancis being left in his body. Notwithstanding he recov-  
ered himselfe quickly, and camis farriously towards Pal-  
merin, and gaue him such a cruell stroke on his head, as the  
blood begane to trickle downe his face : which when he  
perceytes, and how it stede him in hand now to be ver-  
furous, he reuited Mordano with so sound a greeting, as  
he parted one of his armes quite from his body, and astro-  
nded hym likewise that he fell to the ground: but recovering  
himselfe, he ranne towards the Castle, and Palmerin after  
him.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 1

Him. The Servantes of the Castle, seeing their Loyall  
Dame in such danger, with Janellis and other weapons  
came against Palmerin, whom they had marred, if Pro-  
lome and the two Knights that were sent with him, had  
not speedily come from their close arbusle to defend him :  
and so manfully did they behaue themselves, as they drave  
them into the base Court, where Mordano fell dead at Pro-  
lomes feet, who desertyng his fife, presently with his  
Sword tooke his head from his sholders. The seruantes this  
seeing, dispersed themselves and laune into cochers, so that  
Palmerin and his company had no body left to rebite them,  
some lyng were wounded to the death, and other escaping  
forth at a vack Gate, whiche they made fast after them, least  
they shold be followed. When Palmerin sawe all things  
fall out so effectually, he called for the Damosell and the  
Knights that came with him, who being not a little glad  
of this great good fortune, desired first to seeke for Elmerinda  
their Ladys Daugter, so they were well assured that  
she was in the Castle. Search in euery place, quoth he :  
and because the night brewe on, the Gates were made fast,  
and there they determined to leuge for that night. In the  
mean while, the Damosell went about the Castle, and thare  
the Giants Chamber she seachid Elmerinda, who immediat-  
ly knowinge her, came running and caught her by the nelly about  
the necke : so before, (not knowinge that her enemy had  
conquered the Castle) (He sayd there is her companie that  
kept her company, were greatly feareful, but in the Damosell  
gave her perfecte assurance, that all was done to her selfe,  
never and by the worthy Knight for procelas, so she myght  
inham her. Darnelis had shud therer, as they remem-  
bered this knyght, Palmerin shud so hym before he had the  
young Gentlewoman Elmerinda blembed her selfe on her  
knees: but he taking her vp, embracid her with these wordes  
proffesse lawle, your Lady mother hath greate desire to see you,  
will not you goe with us to her: Oe dragger, habeth yo: I ha-  
uer

# The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

her in my life desired any thing more, then to see my Mother: but I greatly doubt, that the false Darmaco will make us by the way, so he went this morning to the funerall of one of his Siblers, and it will be to morrow before his returne, when if he hap to mete us, we are but dead. Let me deale for that godly Lady, said Palmerin: I have already killed the boane, I doubt not but this haill practise will make me do as much to the father. Whille Palmerin and Ptolome thus disciised with Esmirinda, the Damocell and Urbanillo had provided dinner, which being ended they went to rest, excepting the morrow, when they prepared the woman to her backe: and having taken what they best liked out of the Castle, they set fire on the rest, and so tooke their way to waues the sojournyng Tiddow: who expecting good tidings, continued to eatmess and delecte Olivas, that the good Knight myght overcomme her blood-thirsty enemys, and returne with victory, and her Daughter Esmirinda.

## CHAP. X X I I .

How Palmerin running with his company to the Ladies Castle, happened to meeete with the Giant Darmaco, who lost his life in Combat with Palmerin.



This rode Palmerin and his company very joyfull of their good fortune, especially Esmirinda, above al the rest: but this pleasant boonepast lasted not long, for she had espied Darmaco comynge forth of a wood, haning with him his wife and sonne well appoynted Knights: whereat the young Lady was so affrighted, al the cryed out, saying: O God, now are we all cast away. At which woordes the other women began to discourage them selmes, and seeing the Giant so neare, knew not whither they were best to goo forward or backs againe: wherupon

## Emperoar of Constançiope. PART. I.

on Palmerin said to Ptolome. I pray that good friend, while I fight with Darmaco, doe you and these two knyghtis deale with the rest: in the meane while, I bide it good that my Dwarfe Urbanillo convey these knyghtis into the thickest of the wood. He had no sooner thus said, but they beheld the Giant make apace towards them, wpo not thinking what had happened, yet seeing faire Esmirinda so belovred, in wonderfull rage, not taking either swerd or swerd with him, hee prounced towards Palmerin, who entertained him so soundly on the head with his faulchion, as this Giant tumbled sooth of his saddle, hanging by his stirrop by the left stote, and was no way able to recover himselfe.

The Horse feling his Master from his backe, and his burthen to weigh ouer heavy on his ske, the Giants fruste likewise tickling him in the flank, began to coulde abste, and to beate his Master with his stote every way he could reach him, when Palmerin on the other ske lade him on such strokis, as at length he sent his soule to the dicte, the penitence of his villainous life. Now thought Palmerin he had no moore to doe, but gote helpe his compaynions against the other knyghtis, wherin he was deceived, for the Giantesse to revenge her husbands death, gane so cruell strokis to Palmerin with her husbands swerde, as had he the shande alio she had alio hys, and so continued strokis wyllyng then a Woman, nondyabling strokis after strokis: which sayed Palmerin so wyllyng regard of his selfe, seyng no meane of persuasyon could prevaille with her, to sent her packyngh after her husband, Ptolome and his knyghtis had dealt so wel with the rest, as on the contynng of Palmerin they had dispached them alio, of fresh supply had redosome to thenselues: you shall heare more anon.

The Lady of the Castle Mother to Esmirinda, so soon as Palmerin departed thence towarde the Giantes lande, took a young Gentleman named Crispino, to take up the promise-

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

promised her Daughter in marriage, if so be she could recover her gaine out of the Giants power : who staying not long after this meanege, made hasty to the Castle, the Lady entertaining him in this manner. Not long since, my good friend, there departed hence a Knight, who intends to reuenge my wrongs on the Giant Darinaco, and because I knowe not to what end this enterprise will soote, I pray you Armie you, and take tenne of your hardiest men with you, to helpe the said Knight if he shalbe distressed. Crispino sone consented to this motion, and in his way towards the Castle, it was his chaunce to mette with the Dame and the Ladies that fled into the wood. It is not to de maund how pleasing this sight was to him, beholdeing Esmerinda whom he loued as himselfe : of whom he demaunded where thair company was, and she reported to what daies they left thair at time of their flight. Whereupon he commaundered sone of his men to guide the Ladies to a kyrmans house of his that was nere at hand, and he with the rest of his traine galloped to the place, where Palmerin, Ptolome, and the Ladies two Knights entred with the fresh supply that came to Darinacos men. He was no sooner arrived, but he beheld Palmerin and Ptolome wounded very soze, and one of the Ladies Knights gaine among the rest, which caused him and his men to be stire themselves: so that (short tale to make) the Giants men were all vanquished in the end, and then Crispino declared to Palmerin, how he had sent Esmerinda and the Ladies to his Cousins house not farre off, whither if it pleased him to walke, he shoulde receve what courtesie could be performed on so suddena warning, in respect of the happy forswaid the whole Countrey shoulde stede by him, bring thair welwishes of Darinaco and his sonnes, but above all; for the sake of his best beloved Esmerinda. Wherupon they togather with Crispino whose Cousin made them very geacious welcome, rejoicing greatly at this happy sight: and afterward

## Emperour of Constanople. PART. I.

terward they set forward to the goddesse Minerva, Crispino by the way reporting to Palmerin his loue to Esmerinda, and how her Mother had promised him her in mariage, desiring him to assit the matter that it might be finished: which he promised to doe, and so at length they came to the Castle, wheres when the Lady saw her Daughter, and heard how her thieself enemites were slaine, it is hard to expresse her exceeding joy, whitch her charefull countenance somewhat made manifest, welcomming Palmerin with these wordes. Ah gentle Knight, how might I be able while I live to recompence this inestimable fauour? The comfort of mine age, and my opprested soule haue you brought me, may never harmes besall so good a Knight. Lady, quoth he, give the prays to God, as sooz me, Judge if I haue beene as good as my promise to your Damosell or no: and if there be any thing else to doe, Lady I am ready now to performe it. You haue done so much for me, said she, as nothing remaineth moze to be desired, vnlesse of your bounety you will cause me to receve what the Giant tooke from me by force: sooz seeing he is dead, they that with held it from me, will now willingly restore it againe. That shall be likewise accomplished, quoth Palmerin: but because he and Ptolome were soze wounded, as you heard, they stayed to be cured, and sent Crispino with his Cousin and a god suffisent traine, to demand the Ladies Castle and her goods. They that held it of the Giant, understanding his death, made present deliverance thereof, and committed themselves to the Ladies mercy: whither she sent her Daughter, so sone as Palmerin and Ptolome were healed, to whom the Soubzars vowed their fatch and alleageance, and with great triumphes honoured the mariage of Crispino and Esmerinda. On the morrow, as the Knight sat at meate, there entred the Hall a Squire, who said to Palmerin, that a Damosell stayed without to speake with him. Let her come in, quoth he, and say her pleasure. The Squire bringing

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

bringing her into the Hall. She fell on her knes before Palmerin, saying. Sir Knight, doe you not know me? So in god sooth, answered Palmerin; Believe me (quoth the Damosell) then hath my service beene still employed which sometime I did you, and whereto I am sure you haue heard god account. Then Palmerin knew her (she bringing the Shold and the Helmet when Florendos knighted him) whereupon he rose from the Table, and embracing her, said. Fairre Damosell and my Friend, I pray you pardon me, for the length of time since I first saw you, did quite exempt you from my remembrance: please it you to command me any service? Sir Knight, said the Damosell, when I presented you the Helmet and Shold, wherewith you tooke your oder of knighthod, you promised mee (if you remember) that you would use it with right good will; in any assaires the Knight had that sent it you, and when he shold require such performance: now is the tyme to command your deare with your word; so he hath sent me to you with humble intreatie, that without any stay you goo whereso I shall conduct you, otherwise you are the onely cause of his death. God sheld me from such missonysne, said Palmerin, rather would I goo with you presently from the Table, so doe I pray you (quoth she) for I haue haste. Then he calld for his Armour, and the Table withdrawone, he went into his Chamber to Arme himselfe, and so did Ptolome also: returning, they tooke their leau of the Ladies and mounted on horsebacke, the whole company being so sorrie for their departure, as Esmerrinda came to the Damosell, saying. I promise you Damosell, you haue done vs wrong in mine opinion, to hinder vs of the presence of so good a Knight. Nay, answered the Damosell, thinke you he was borne for you onely: content your selfe with the good you haue received by him, and suffer such as haue neede of his powesse, to receive his assistance as you haue done. And good reason, said Esmerrinda, if it be to so good an end, that no resistance be offered when

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

whon helpe is required. So departed the two Knights with the Damosell which way she guided them, and very dearely was Palmerin to be with the Knight that sent to take him: because he wold gladly know, of whence he had that shold him so well, as his message declared by the Damosell the same day he was knighted.

### Chap. XII.

How Palmerin and Ptolome arriued at the Court of the King of Bohemia, where they entred Combat against the Count of Ormeque and his two Couzins, who accused the Knight and his Sonne of treason, that sent to seek Palmerin.



Two miles had these Knights rid with the Damosell, when Palmerin at length tolde her to tell him, what he was that sent him the Helmet and the Shold: whereunto she answered, that sining he was so deare to know, listen, quoth she, and I shall report the whole unto you. The Knight then spake, whiche personed of very regall blood, being uncle to the King of Bohemia that entred at this present, as also to the Chaplains of Allemaigne, the very best sainc in Regramondis this day living. This noble man is named Prince Adran, whiche never liked to live in the Court of the King his Brother, but contented with what pattemning his Father left him, as heath married with a very faire tressell lady, of whom in time he had a sonne named Dyardo, whiche barne his Father the King of Bohemia, enriched by in his Court with his alone Sonne. The matynly in loue agred these two young Princes, as after the death of the aged King, the young Dyardo shoulde shortly ride with his Cousin the King; whereto as wile the Daughters

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

to the Duke of Loyraire ; bringing her with him into this Countrey, in company of her Sister, a Princesse so wise and vertuous as euer lived. It so came to passe, that Dyardo my Lord's most noble Sonne, framing his thoughts to the Inspiration of loue, affected so highly the other Sister, as he determined never to have any other, to h's wifte, if he might compasse what he intended. For her good Lady, he could not be decclued, in his amorous desires, he found her loue so equall with his, yet did they shadown their affections so discreetly, as none could perceve them, but Domarto the traytorous Count of Ormeque, one of the best Knights in all that Countrey, were he as familiar with vertue and honestie, as he is with malice and dissoluty. This Traytor enterpised to match with the Queens Sister, beloved as you haue heard by my Lords worthy Sonne, and therupon after many sollicitings, made knowne his intent vnto her, whereof she made so vndear account, as she forbad him any more to trouble her. Domarto seeing my Lord Dyardo his onely blasterance in loue, intended a malicious willisme, and on a sabbath accusid the Myghtre, that he intended to persen the King, to obtaine a Crown, as descended of a nearer consanguinity. And as it often falleth out in such cases, when one seekes to crole another's honestie, there is no time slackid in following such vrake's euill. So this Traytor, vning the yong King alone, began his matter in this voldurabile sorte. By gracie of God, the faith and alleageance I bbe to your Highnesse, bindes me to make your Princely cares acquainted with such newes, as, God is my witnessse, sayd the Traytor (listing his espes and handis to behauen) mine owne death were thoso welcom to me, such is the loue I bear them both in concordes, being all so neare allied to you in birth, as loyce am I they shoulde be detected : but in your regard my gracious Lord, the action touching you in such sorte as to both, let me die rather then spare any living creature, so mett by the grace of God, had Nature givyn me

any.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

any. This needless exordium haue I made to so sonle an occasion, albeit truth nedes no colours or eloquent figures : and therfore in beseeche my Lord, this is the summe, I am credibly enformed, that your Highnesse Couzin the Prince Dyardo, and Madamie Cardonia Suster of the Queens, haue laid the platorme to persen your Majestye, and this haue they attempted, by the procurement of olde Adrian your Uncle, who pretends that the Crown of Bohemia to his. I know not whether it be for want of discretion or no : but howsoevr it be my Lord, you shoulde not leue such a vllanie unpunished. The King began greatly to marchale at these newes, and knew not well what to thinkie : whereupon he answered the Count, that he could not belieue this accusation. But the Traytor set so smoothe a countenance on the matter, and did auerst it still with such stout protestations, as he induced the King to belieue him : so that a day or two after, the King being walking in his Garden, seeing Dyardo and Cardonia at the Queens Chamber window, secretly consering of their amorous affections, commanded them both to be carried to prison. The Count glad therof, pronounced the King still with such anger against them, as immediatly he would haue them both put to death : but that the Queens and the Lords of his Counsell, found meanes to qualifie his displeasures, declaring what discredit his Highnesse shoulde receve, if he did not suffer them to be openly convicted of their offences. All this while good Princes, were they ignorant of this detection, till at length the King discoursed the whole matter to them and likewise who was their accuser : no, by the Count selfe to maintaine his wrong openly, offering to make it good in law, against any that dyrd say the contrary: and because he had two Cousins, hardie and valiant Knights, conspirators likewise in this factyon, there could be none found that would enter the Chamber against them. Whiche when the noble Prince Adrian hearedd, veriglye had well

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

nare slaine him, in respect he had no Childe, but this Dyardo as also soz that he was accused with that he never thought. Whereupon he went presently to the King his Nephew, and pacuailed so well with him, as he obtained the space of two Moneths, to bring with him one or two that might maintaine the innocente of him, his Sonne Dyardo, and the Princeesse Cardonia, against the Traytore Domarto and his Cousins. And this is the cause he sent me to seeke you forth, in hope that you are as much his friend as he is yours, whiche you may somewhat perceiue, by the friendly presents he sent you by me to Macedon. So helps me God, said Palmerin, you haue reported a molt strange discourse, and never did I thinke, that such treason could enter the thoughts of any knyght, or other infernall person. All this is true, quoth the Damosel, and it is appointed that the Prince Dyardo, with his aged and crazed Father, shall defend their owne causes, without seeking helpe of any other: but he never as yet receaved the order of knighthod, & therfore is constrained to desir your assistance. And that shall I doe withall my heart, said Palmerin, would God we were there where he expecteth vs, for the desire I haue to see him, as also to understand what he knowes of my following sortenes. Those matters are hid from me, quoth he, yet this haue I heard him say divers tyme, being intake of you, that he accounted you the most honorablie knyght in the wold: and that if ever chanced to see you, he wold aduise you to goe to the Emperour of Allemaignes Court, to be the knyghtly Servant to the Princeesse Polinarda, when Palmerin heard the name of Polinarda, he remembred that it was her name, wherof he had so knyghtly tyme scene in his traunces, for which cause he alstrof the Damosel, what the Lady was of whom she spake? My Lord, quoth he, Polinarda is Daughter to the Emperour, and Suster unto my Lord Adrian, the most beautifull Princeesse that euer eye beheld. By my fath, said Palmerin, the mo<sup>e</sup> easilie

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

safely may I be induced to grant her my service, and thither intend I to travaille, when I haue finished your Lords busynesse. We rode they with much more hastie then before, till at length they came to the City of Almedyz, where the King remained, and the Prince Adrian expecting Palmerins comming: whiche when he heard, he came to meete him, each embracing other with mernalous courtesie, and the god olde man with the teares in his eyes, thus said. Ah good knyght, what may counternall this your exceeding patnes, to maintaine the right of my Sonne and me, who are falsely accused of such villanous treason, as (in the perill of my soule) we never did imagine? Thereof am I certaintly perswaded, answered Palmerin, and therfore am I come to enter the Combate with him, that dare assyeme otherwise. Mine olde age, quoth Adrian, might excuse me henceforth from bearing Armes, but being unable to endure so viles a scandale, so long as life and sonle will holde together, shall I doe my deuours: so please your companion to make the second, as soone as I am I will be the third, for the trayturous Count hath two of his Cozins that take part with him. And if my sorteane so fall out as I dye in this tryall, I shall receiue my lot very contentedly, if mine eyes might first behold mins iniury reuenged. I pray you, said Palmerin, goe presently to the King, to the end that his Highnesse may graunt vs the field, for my friend and I thinks long till we haue made your accuser know his treachery. Adrian immediatly went to the King, and on his huges thus began. My Lord, you know that the Count of Ormeque hath accused me, my Sonne Dyardo, and Dame Cardonya, of the crime of Lesse Majestatis, and in that we all are innocent, I am ready to maintaine that he hath falsely and maliciofally belyed vs, whiche I my selfe will approue upon him, & two meze with me, agaist him and his Cousins, if they dare enter the field with him in this quarrell, where we will either make kne way their vllanie,

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

line, or receve the reward belongs to disloyall Traytors. As soþ the wrong which you (my Lord) hane done me; beþing your Uncle, and my Sonne Dyardo your Cousin germaine, that I reserte to God to recchipence, and to the better knowledge you shall receive of me hereafter, being now too olde to be a Traytor, and my Sonne too louing to proue disloyall. The King was abashed to heare his Uncle speake so audaciously, doubting now whether he shold gine credite to what had þeretoþ reported, especially agaist him, so nare his Hightesse in blood, who so liberally offered to enter the Combat: notwithstanding his white head and aged body made him brift for such actions, wherefore he thus answered. Good Uncle, impute not me any thing faulþy in your accusation, and that the þrofe shall maintayn that must be made. The Count being present, was strucken in a quandary at these wordes, and gladly he wold haue denied this former lauder, but he could find no way clearely to doe it: wherefore seeing of soþce he must needs enter the Combat, he boldly fel on his knes before the King with these wordes. My Lord, what I haue said is very certayne, and most true it is, that by the Counsell of Prince Alain here present, his Sonne practised with Lady Cardonia, to poison you, that he might be King, which to make good, there is my gage, on the behalfe of my selfe and my Cousins. Thou liest Traytor in thy throat, said old Adrian, I take thine offer: and as he wold haue gone on with further speeches, Palmerin kept before the King, saying. Worshy Lord, seeing the effect of the wordes must be put in execution, which haue þere hene spoken on both sides before your Graceþy: may it please you the Prince Dyardo and Lady Cardonia may be sent for, to take with vs their oathes as in such cases is required, and in meane tyme let each one goe put hym selfe in equipage for the Combat. Good reason said the King, and presently he commanded the Princes to be brought, who being come, Palmerin demanded

## Emperour of Constanſiople. PART. I.

manded where they were that tooke part with the Count: whereupon he presented his Cenzins, the one named Edron, proud and arrogante, and the other Edward, of lesse fame qualitþ. These two tooke their oathes with the Count that the Princes accused, conspired the Kings death, in such sort as hath þerne before declared: and olde Adrian, Dyardo, and faire Cardonia sware the contrary. But it is true, and I will not denyt (said the Prince Dyardo) that I haue and doe loue Lady Cardonia, as much or rather more then mine owneselue, yet never did I carry any other intent but to request her in holy wedlocke, so pleased the King and Queen to like so well thereof as we could. But that euer I intended treason or villany, it is most false, and Count thou liest in thy throat, and thy copartners that hane sworne with thee. It is sufficient, said Palmerin: but my good Lord, quoth he to the King, if we be conquerors, the accused shall be deliuered, and the accusers hanged: What say you Count, said the King: Good reason Sir, the like doe we request if we be victors. Will you (said Palmerin) that each shall helpe his fellow as he finds it conuenient? What else said the Count that is expedient. While this talke endured, Edron regarded so well Palmerin, that he espied the Sword which the Damosell carried in the Casket, and brought to that Court as he did to others, which shewing the Count, he said out aloud. Where did the diuels find this Knight to give him this Sword? Welike they gave him strength to draw it out, else he might haue failed as many other did: the Damosell was unwise to bestow it in such bad sort. At which wordes Palmerin being angry, returned Edon this round answere. I see (Knight) there is in þe moþe braþand scotish glory then manly action, þonblamest me before thou knowest me, but ere you and I part, Ile find better reason to bestow on you, and beate better government into your pate with this sword that likes you not. This caused every one wylly to behold

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

beheld Palmerin, the King rememb'ring that he had seen the Sword, which none in his Court could deserve to conquer: whereupon he esteemed so well of Palmerin, as he commanded Edron to Alence, and all to goe Armes themselves, because he intended that day to see the Combat fought.

### CHAP. XXV.

How Palmerin, Adrian, and Ptolome entred the Combat, against the Count of Ormeque and his Cousins, whom they honourably vanquished.



After the King had commanded the Knights to goe arme themselues, hee gaue charge to soure of his ancientest Knights to see the Field provided, and there to place the Judges, according to þ wanted encomie in Bohemia: the Knights being carefull of the Kings commandement had sone prepared all things in readinesse, wherfore the King, his Lodes, Ladies and Gentlewomen, went to see the issue of this valiant enterpise. Then was the Prince Dyardo and faire Cardonya brought into the field, before whom was made a very great fire, wherin they shold be turned, if the Count conquered. Sone after came the sixe Combatants, who entred at two places appointed one against the other, the Challengers being conducted by two of the Judges to their place, and the defendants by the other two where they were appointed: so the Judges being placed, the Marshall summoned the field, and the Heralds bid the Champions doe their enterprize.

Palmerin had good regard to Edron, whose wrods sticking on his Somacke, called now for revenge, wherfore couching his Lanace, hee encountered him with such a full cariere, as his Lanace passed through his body, and Edron tumbled

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

tumbled dead to the ground. In the meane while the Count and Prince Adrian had unhoised each other, Adrian so sore wounded as he could hardly helpe himselfe: as soz Ptolome and Edward, they had affonied each other with salles from their Horses, but they recovered themselves quickly, and with sharpe strokis begann to charge each other valiantly. Greatly ashamed was the Count to bee unhoised, and therfore to recover his honour, he came with great furie towards his enemie: which Palmerin perceiving, kept betwix them, saying. To me Count, to me, who will bid moze for thy head then any in the field. With which words he reached him such a sure stroke on the head, as made the fire flye forth of his eyes: notwithstanding, as a man of good courage, he kept aside, and thrusting his Sword into Palmerins Thoate, enforced him quickly to take him to his latter: but all the wrode soz him as it fell out afterward, soz Palmerin having beaten him out of bzeath, he flung away his weapon, and caught him about the middis, where they tugged so long together, that Palmerin getting him downe, and his knes on his belly, with his Sword swone towke his head from his shoulders. All this while Ptolome had good play with his enemie, and after many dangerous wounds received on either side, at length he had the better of the day by killing his adversary. Then he and Palmerin went to the Judges, who gaiving them sentence of honourable victory, they towke off their Helments, and came to see in what estate the Prince Adrian was. Quill enough (quoth he) my noble good frrends, but the leste account doth make of my life, in that mine eyes have sene due vengeance on mine enemie. Then was he nobly bezno for'd of the field, the King commaunding to lodge him in his owne Pallace, and the Chirurgions sarebing his wounds, sound them mostall, which newes did grieve the whole Court in generall: the good olde Prince yet being of some courage, was joyfull to dye in so good sorte, having defensid his owne

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

owne honour and his Sonnes, whom he sent for, and in the presence of all the standers by, said. By Sonne, seeing it hath pleased God thus to send for me, good reason is that his will be fulfill d, but ere I depart, this I command thee, that (next God) thou truely serue and loue my Lord and King, bearing towards him a heart so faithfull, as I haue done to the hours of my death : and concevve no essence at what hath passed betweene thee and me: having come to passe (as I Judge) moe by euill counsel, then any settled perwestion against vs. For the rest, to the uttermost remember the god thou hast this day received by that noble Knight, it ho is called Palmerin: then calling Palmerin to him, he said. Sir Palmerin, Death seized so surely on me, as I cannot let you know a number of things that concerne you verely: I counseil you therfore to travell to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, where you shall haue trydings of that you seeke so earnestly. With which words he deliuered vp his ghost. And because it semeth good, eie I passe any further, to let you knowe how the Prince Adrian came by the knowledge of Palmerin, thus it is;

I haue heretofore reported, that he was a notable Cabalist or Magician: by meanes whereof few secrets were concealed from him: so calling his Kalender of most honourable Wyths, he happened on Palmerin: and perceyuing the high Forune he was borne to, chiefly, that he should prove a most notable Knight, and the greatest Lord in Europe: he was desirous to contract a Marriage betwene him and his Niece Polinarda, presenting her to him in his Willons, as hath bene declared. He thus deceasing, the King highly discontented at his Uncles hard sorte, caused him to be buried in most sumptuous manner: making him a Tombe in forme of a Pyramides, y most excellent and stately that ever was in Bohemia, and ouer against him were hanged the boordes of the Count & his two Couzins for his Trophes. Thus every thing quieted, and the funerals of the Prince Adrian solemnized

## Emperour of Constançiopte. PART. 1.

solemnized, Palmerin would presently haue departed toward Allemaigne: but Ptolomes Wounds were so dangerous, as he was constrained to stay longer then he intended, In the mean space the King did them althe honoꝝ that could be deuised, in hope to stay them still in his Court, but it was impossible, for Palmerin told him he must needs go to the Emperor, about assayres of very great impoſtance. I knowe your meaning well enough ( said the King, ) you intend to goe combate with the Enchanted Knight: and in so doing you shall lose both your paines and your life, as many others haue done before you.

What Enchaunted Knight is it ( said Palmerin ? on my fath(my Lord) I never heard any one talke of him but you. Then will I tell you, (qd. the King) Since I haue begun the matter. Not long since in the Countrey of the Emperor my Uncle, in the Cittie of Ymanes, dwelled a wealthy Knight, who had a faire Daughtter, amorous of a Gentleman: and thereroule kept so secret as none knew it but themselves. It so fell out, that her Father married her to another Gentleman in his house, but for any good acceptation, or chearful countenance of the Gentlewoman, the Wible-grooms could haue none, so highly esteemed she his first Leue: and continued in opinion towards him so firme, as shes graunted him entrance into her Chamber, at an appointed tyme, whero he murdered her Husband, and carayd the Lady with him whether he pleased. The bruit hereof was so sconspred abroad, as the Mother of the murdered Gentleman heard thereof: Whereupon she made her complaint to the Emperour, who immedately sent to summon the other before him: but they refusing to come, and hauing betaken themselves to a very strong Castle, were in the end so straightly besieged, as the Lady with her louer, at length were taken, and hauing confessed the truch of their essence, sentence was given on them, that they shold both be burned. The Father of this Knight offender so grieved hereat, as he went to one of his

Sister,

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Soldiers intending report to see the Emperour and his Court againe. His Soister seeing him in this extremity, (as no malice or bad intention is comparable to a Woman's) devised to Enchant one of her Spoores, a good & hardy Knight, in such sorte, as hee shoulde never be overcome in fight, but with an Enchaunting of greater force. Besides, he gaue him a Bow, and a great compang of empoysoned Arrowes, wherewith he shoulde kill the Emperour and his Children, or any other whiche himselfe pleased: which hee had not failed to haue done, but mine Wacky Adriaen vnderhanding therof, did take such carefull regard to the matter, as he could not hurt them, but many of his people: so that the Countrey is wonderfully perplexed. For he is mounted on a Wyse Enchaunted as himselfe, the swiftest in pace that euer was seene, wherewith he spes into many cut places of the Countrye, committing a thousand harmes, and cannot be stayed, for who soever comes to him Armed, Knight, or Peasant, all dyes the death, and none escapes him. And that which is worst of all, it is commonly reported, that if mine Uncle will not give him his eldest Sonne Trineus and faire Polinarda his Daugther, so doe with them what shall like his humour, hee will never depart the Countrey, till he haue thorooughly ruined it. Wy my Sworde (my Leid) I say Palmerin, in all my life I never heard so strange a tale, were I sure to dye a thousand deaths, I will fight with this Devil, and deliver the Countrey, if my strengthe will compasse it. Alas my god Friend (said the King) it would much displease me that you shoulde hazard your sole. In such a dangerous aduenture: so where such diuellish Enchantments are, & strength of man (how great soever it be) doth not preuall: & therfore so my sake I pray you saybears. Let come what please God (sayd Palmerin) so if I dye now, I shall be excused so, evor haunter. Well saw the King that hee could not change his minde, therfore he left off any further to intreate him: and too long he thought he carried his Ptolomes

## Emperour of Constanctople. PART. I.

mics health, so diuellous way he to be with the Emperour, hoping that his Combat with the enchanted Knight, would graunt him meanes to set him tales with faire Polinarda. Therfore when his companion had gotten a little Strength they took their leave of the King and the Ladies, chieffly of the Prince Dyardo, and sayde Cardonia: who after theyr departure had such successe in their Lear, as with the Kings consent the Marraige was solemnized. Now are Palmerin and Ptolome on the way to Gaunt, whete the Emperour made his continuall abode: the Enchaunted Knight so persecuting him, as he durst at no time come forth of his Castle.

### CHAP. XXVI.

How Palmerin and Ptolome arrived at the Cittie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne kept his Court: and of the Combate between Palmerin and the Enchaunted Knight.



God sypposition made these Knights in their Journey, till at length they gaured at the Cittie of Gaunt, whete the Emperour of Allemaigne their souernay, not knowing how to depart thence, because the Enchaunted Knight warred hym at all houres: and Knights being thys come thither, lodged in the house of a wealthy Bargesse, where they were entretained in very honourable maner. They were no sooner distempered from their Travles, but the whole Cittie was on a Sabbath day, and the people ranne on heaves from one place to another: which made hym remember what the King of Bohemia had told him, and presently he imagined what affet followed, for his men in great feare, remouing hym selfe by night, to another place, the next day morning, he wakened the Knight which gotten

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

gotten the gates of the Cittie, and in despight of the Guard he is entred : Wherevfull is the harme that he will now do . If the Prince Trioces and sayre Polinarda be not rescued . God defend such hard Fortune (said Palmerin,) rather will I fight with him, and if I dye, I shall accompany many others in unforinate successe . With these words he took his Lanice, and galloped that way where he heard the tumult, which was at the Emperours Castle, where the Enchaunted Knight was, shooting his poisoned Arrows at the windowes he spyped open . Joyfull was Palmerin to finde him in such a place , where the Lady Polinarda might giue judgement of his valour, which opinion did so renew his courage, as presently he marched towards his Enemis, who held in his hand a Persian Bow, with an Arrow in it ready to sherte, having a great soft moze at his backe, in his Arayner: he was of unreasonable nature, yet with a countenance both ferme and courageous, all which could not dismay Palmerin, but called to him in this manner . Prouide Knight, that by the ayde of Duols and euill Spirites, hast committed monstrous cruelties : It is now tyme that he whom thou seruest should haue his ppe, whiche is thy soule into endelle perdition . And so without stayng for an answere, he rann valiantly against hym : but the Enchaunted Knight taking his advantage, shot an Arrow at hym so violently, as it pierceth through his Armeour to the bare flesh . Palmerin having broken his Lanice, with an Iron Space he had, he reached such a stroake to the Knight, as he brake his Bowe in two pieces, and the blosme falling on the head of his Morale, made hym therewithall dead to the ground . The Knight durst not recover himselfe took a Space that hong at his Saddle bowe, and caste against Palmerin, who was howe on feste likewise : So layde they on leade terrible, with theyz Spaces, that the Emperour and his Nobles, Lords and Ladys, hearing the stroakes, came to the windowes, to see the Combat, little thinking that one of them selfe, or mo-

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

ble with his enemys : yet all this while the Knights menoy breasted, although their Shields and Armours were very much mangled, and theyz booyes wounded in many places . And because Palmerin sawe the fight endure so long with the Space, he threw it downe, and tooke him to his sword, wherwith he did so vambhise hym about the head, as he could scant tell wheres to strike agayne : but the Knight on a sudden lifting uppe his Space, gane Palmerin such a stroake between the head and the sholders, as made hym stagger, and reele so drafte anizely, yet coming to himselfe, and feeing the Knight faire, with his great effusion of blood, closed with him, and casting his legge behinde him, threw hym to the ground, when setting his foote on his brest to kepe hym downe, with his sword he parted his head from his body .

What question were it whether the Emperour rejoiced hereat or no ? who so hys whole Empire would not he were aline againe, being so well delivred from his onely enemy in the world, hat could so molest hym and his Countrey with such mischievous cruelty . And so to say sooth, the Enchaunted Knight was altogether invincible : noz could Palmerin haue thus preualted against his wonderful Enchantments, but that the three sisters of the Mountaine Arcisaxia highly favoured hym : as you heard before what pointe to they made hym .

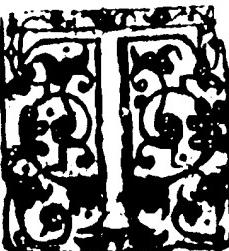
The Combat being thus ended, and the Enchaunted Knight dead, the Emperour (giving thanks to God for his victorie) set open the gates of the Castle, and came forth himselfe to welcome Palmerin . Wher kneeling on his knee before the Emperour, thus spake Righteyn Paine, such no man haue I heard, shapen the worke of thy crediting honoz and bountye, as I haue tranched many straungeres, to come offer you my seruice : desiring your Highnesse (if my sorte may seeme reasonable) to accept my helpeforth amost your Knighthly seruants . Sir knyght, (answered the Emperour) it is for me to knowe of you, how

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

I may remunerate this unspeakable courtesie, so; but by you same enemys haue triumped in my spoile; so much then is my selfe, my Children and Countrey bounden to you, as no satisfaction is sufficient to regratiate. So taking him by the hand and perceiving his body wounded in many places, he conducted him into one of the faire Chambers in his Castle, where he was unarmed, commaunding his Chirurgions to take diligent care of him, because in truth they much pouered his life, therfore getting him into his bed, all needfull things so; his health were applied to him, and no cost was spared to save his life that preserved the whole Countrey.

### C H A P . X X V I I .

How the Empresse came to visite Palmerin, who kept his Chamber, because he had received such dangerous wounds in the Combat with the enchanted Knight, and of the speech he had with the faire Princesse Polinarda.



He Empresse with her faire Daughter Polinarda, glas of the benth of the enchaunted Knight, came to Palmerins chamber to visite him, who hearing of their coming, cast a night mantle about him, which the Empressour had sent him, and came with great reverence to welcome them: so destrous was he to see her, so whom he had travayled so many strange Regions. In this place it is necessary that you remember, what gracious gifts the thid faire dillers bestowed on him, in the Mountaine Artiferia, one of them granting him this special favour, that he shold be highly esteemed of her to whom he was deffended, so soone as she beheld him, whiche came to passe as here shall be declared.

### Emperour of Constantinople PART. I.

red. Palmerin regarding the extrems of the Empresse and her daughter in his chamber, meeting them at he doxe falling on his knes, did with great humility kisse their hands: but the Empresse taking him vp in her armes, saluted him with these speches. Gentle Knight, right happy may we count our selues by your comynge hither, the Realme being more desolate then it hath bene sene heretofore, and not without cause, in respect of the great injury the Knight did us, wherin you haue saue, he having sworne the death of my childdren that never offended him: but God be thanked the lot hath fallen on himselfe, whiche he determined to inflict on other: so; which great grace they stand so depply bound to you as to chett gather that first gane them life, which by your pwoerfull you haue happily pdeserved: this second gift being of no lesse account then the first, worthily may you be called their second Father. Palmerin gluing care to the Empresse Salutations, had his minde more balked in beholding Polinarda, whose walnes regard to maiestred his opinions, as head, heart, thoughts and all were now set to worke: yet somerly he shad this answere to the Empresse. Madame, what I haue done to you and yours, is nothing in respect of my great good will: for since the time I first had knowlage of my selfe, and before I receaved the oder of knighthood, under swarding of my wox the Empresse, and what honourable entretainment was in her Court, I dedicated my seruice to him only, and for this cause Madame came I hither. But how is it possible Sir, said she, that you can content your selfe to be onl of his knighthood, your defforts being so great? Very well Madam, quod he, also you selfe, to please your Highnesse to a swydene fach taundre, with all my heart Sir, said she, shall I entertaine you towards the Empressour, and on minne wchis wchis will provide better for you then I will specke of: whid did it like you, I would adcep you to, as with this Knight done, and none other. And therupon she calleth her Daugher Polinarda; saying

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Faire Daughter, this knyght as yet hath little acquaintance in the Court, I pray you see his entertainment may be godes, because his desire is to make stay with vs, and soz your owne part, Ieke that you intreate him well, with this request, that you accept him for your servant, and he shall be your knyght. And are you both agrēd Ladies, said Palmerin? Heauen soz take me if I refuse honour of so high accound. And as they wold haue proceeded on, the Emperour came in and brake of their talkes, and commynge to the Empresse, said Padame, I beseech you haue god regard to the health of this knyght, and let our chirurgions not trifle the tyme with him, for I perswade my selfe, that the enchaunted knyght with his venomous arrowes, hath wounded him with great danger inwardly, and hath bothe soze bruised his body with the weight of his space. But Palmerin hauing Polinarda so neare him, neither minded his wounds, or what the Emperour had spoken, his object moze delighted, then his wendys greetid him; then the Emperour taking him by the hand, said, I pray you my dere Friend to be of god comfort, dispayre not for any thing I beseech you, and be advised by them that haue care of your health, for you shall want nothing if my Crowne will purchase it. So departed he and the Empresse, with their Daughter Polinarda, whom loue had already so infligled, that she being yet but tender of yeres, found her selfe so restrained of her liberty, as she scant knew how to discernible this subvaine affection: and from that tyme forward she became so sad and penitue, as one of her Ladies, the most favoured and familiar with her, named Brionella, Daugher to the Duke of Saxon, well perceaved it, yet durst she not presume to demand, whence procceded this strange alteration, but so circumspechyng did she regard the Prince, as she well noted the ground of her grieves. Whereupon it happoned, that one tyme amongst other, they two being alone together, Brionella judging that her

Lady

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Lady delighted to haire speech of Palmerin, wold to hit the nalle on the head, she thus began. What say you Padame, (by your fauour) of the new-come knyght? did you euer see a brauer and moze accomplit Gentlemen? Upon my lachy Padame, in mine opinion I thinkes that nature hath wrought all perfections in him, and fawoured him above all other knyghtis in manhood and Chivalry. Ah Brionella, answered the Prince, thou art not alone of this opinion, for I never thought as much though I kept it in silence: would God I had as great authority over him, as he already hath gotten over me. Is the matter so with you, said Brionella? it shoulde seeme you are in loue with him then. To tell thee the truthe Brionella (quoth she) I am, and did I not doubt some other hath pراجentid me, I wold aduenture to make him mine. In good sooth Padame, said Brionella, you two being united together in one reclycall league of loue, well might it be reported the most honourable match, and of the two noblest young Princes through the whole world: and seeing you haue made a choyse so worthy, dismay not good Padame, but proceede in your determination. That devised the two Ladies together on Palmerin, who was no lesse in affection for the loue of Polinarda, whom he had searched with so great paine and trouaile, and had now found with so high god fortune. If loise was so earnest with him before in his sleeping viltons hauing not seene her, much moze verement was the impression now hauing her in presence. Whereupon the day following he called for his garments and as he was making himselfe ready, the Emperour by one of his Gentlemen sent him his good morrow, desirous to understand in what plight he left himselfe. Good Sir, answered Palmerin to the Gentleman, I beseech you do my humble dutie to the Emperour for this great courtesie, and you may thus assure him, that (heauen be prayked) I stelle my selfe in so god estate as euer I did. Whiche the Emperour hearing

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oriva,

ring was highly contented, and sent to deliver his company to the Chappell, where Palmerin (never before so suddenly touched with the sorrible assaults of love) glances so many stert looks on the Princesse Polinarda, and breseth so many sighes, the secret troubadours of his heart, as it was a heauen to him to be in these passions. Wherfore and all the traues returned from the Chappell, they went to meane, and Palmerin being placed right against Polinarda, was in such fits as he knew not what countenance to shew: for his colour went and came in such manner, as the Princesse might easly judge the cause of his honour, whereupon she presently prestmed, that she had no ze interest in his thoughts then ere she looked so. The like opinion conceived he of her, yet was no other testimony delivred on either side, then sad countenances, the revealers of a tormentous spirit. Thus continued these two leutes, till the Tables were withdrawne, and then the Lords and Ladys fell to banqueting, in which delight and divers other, the whole day was spent, till the Empresse and her Ladys departing to their Chambers, the good night on all sides was conueniently gartered: when Palmerin went to his bed, lying in such anguish, as moxily to dye then lie, he thought himselfe in his bed, wheres having righed and suffered long time getwodly, at length he brake swich into these lynes. Ah Palmerin, unhappy, wretched and most miserable, who art thou exced into such a Labyrynth, as impossible for it for thow to get ou againe with life, but what should mowen this to go highe an enterprise, being no way able to equall her that is second to none? Alas, unto god I plainly see the small excede is to be reposed in Djeames, and that the wylles of fate in my father Gerrards house, on the spacie Asturias and elsewher, are stridous illusione, and of no account, with them may I sygne the promise made me by old Adrian, who bookest to knowe so much of my fortunes, for love is not of such power on my behalfe,

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

behalfe, that faire Polinarda either can or will make any reckoning of me. Then Palmerin resolute thy selfe suddainly to dye, that this iuytible and consuming st. c., whiche by little and little melts the away, may be extinguished, and thy selfe eased. With these words he breasted forth such an extreme sigh, as Vrbanillo the Dwarke (being neare) heard him, who doubting least any new mischance had happened by the priue wounds the enchanted Archer gaue him, made hast to knowe the cause of this euill. Ah Vrbanillo, quoth Palmerin, I haue my selfe faire worse then dead. Whil it my Lord, said the Dwarke, now you ought to be of best of position. Will you deceiue vs with this alteration? The Empereur never gaue you bad countenance since your comming, whence then shold procede this strange conceit? No, no Vrbanillo, quoth he, It is not the Empereur, but a knyd of greater power then his maiestie. It is loue my Lord, the knyd comandurer of the Scottish myndes, he hath conquered me, and will I haue I shall die, if thou doe not finde the meane to helpe me. By my faith my Lord (quoth the Dwarke) so please you to tell me how and wherein I may helpe you, let me die a thousand dears if I doo it not. My selfe and then my god Vrbanillo, saith Palmerin, that this strange alteration, procedes from the diuine lookes of my preueesse P. S. Polinarda, whose stery beanes haue searched me vpon every corner of my thoughts, as I must die before I haue too deedly. But couldst thou make knowne to her the least part of my insupportable vexations, may be she would haue some pitifull remoue of my maistydome: for well may it be judged, that a Lady accomplished with so many vertuous perfections, must needs be storid with faytues, fauour and pittie. Not vnlite my god Lord sayd Vrbanillo, but ooe you not remember how I was punished, when in the like case I ventured to sollicite your loue to Luana, Daughter to the Duke of Durace? by my faith my Lord, I shall not forget it while I haue a day to live, and

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

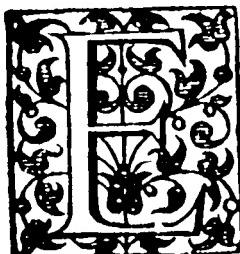
am afraid to fall agayne into the like danger. And this spake Vrbanillo with such grace, as that Palmerin could not but laugh, noting with what feare the deformed fellow gaue it forth, whereupon he said. Thou needest not be dismayed, if this that smote thee in thy steps be that Polinarda, for whose loue I am thus tormenteth, and soz whom I was boorne, as many haue enfeigned me : I pray thee therefore speake to her, and dred no colours. It is god, said Vrbanillo, that you would haue me moze hardy then you are your selfe : speake to her your selfe if you dare, for I dare not aduenture it soz fears of my life. If thou darest not (quoth Palmerin) assure thy selfe thou shalt never henceforth serue me. Say then (quoth the Dwarfe) I will rather put my selfe in jeopardy to be better beaten then I was the last time, before I will loose so god a Master. I pray thee doe, said Palmerin, in respect thou seest the earnestnesse of mine affections. Feare not (quoth the Dwarfe) albesit you were a great deal moze fit to break the matter then I : but I will gage my life to gaine you the Lady, and heroupon they rellid till the next morning.

## Chap. XXVIII.

## Emperour of Constanſiople: PART. I.

### Chap. XXVIII.

How Polinarda desired Palmerin to give her his Dwarfe, and of the Speech which shee and Vrbanillo had afterward together.



Early the next morning Palmerin arose, and having walked abroad to contemplate his distress, returned into the chamber of presence, where he found Trineus the Emperours Sonne conſerring with the Ladys : at which very instant the Dwarfe entred, whose bad shapen body and face, made them all fall a laughing, so that Trineus came to his Sister Polinarda, saying. Sister, did you ever behold a more proper Page to attend on Ladys, then this gaunt Squire that serues my Lord Palmerin ? In god sooth Warther, quoth she, he is farre unlike his noble Master, yet would I like well enough if he were mine. I beseeche you Sir Palmerin, said Trineus, bestow your Servant on my Sister Polinarda. Madame, quoth Palmerin, were he better, he is yours, and his Master likewise. Then called he Vrbanillo, who knelling to understand his Masters pleasure, he saide : Vrbanillo, I haue given you to my Lady Polinarda as her man, will you not serue her honourably and truely above all other ? Yea my Lord, quoth he, next after you, but you will I not leave while I live, although you would disdaine my service. Good reason hast thou, said the Princesse, and well may I please it should be so : yet during the time of his stay here, you shall forsake him and abide with me. For that Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, I am well contented. Then looks you faire not, said the Princesse, henceforth to gaine your attendance. These speeches were thus used as it were for pastime, that she might thereby deceiue the judgement of other :

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

ther: but her whole intent was, to know of Vibanillo, if his Master were affraid to any other Lady, by whose meanes her loue might be frustrate. For as you have heard, a little before, that loue had brought her vnder such obsequie, as disnot the regard of honour with-holde her, her selfe would first breake the ice of her vexations, rather then stay too long and not be elicited. Many other deuises had the Ladies with Vibanillo, who knew so well how to behauie hymselfe, as from thence forward he grew so familiarie amongst them: as he wold enter their Chambers when himselfe pleased, vnder colour of attendance on the Princesse Polinarda, from time to time to moue his Masters messages. But at length he preuented him in this sorte, for being alone at a windowe in the presence Chamber, he called the Dwarf, and making her entraunce by oþer occasions, he asked her whiche Palmerin was. God knowes Madame, quoth he, þis I do not, nor himselfe neither: but of this I can assure you, that never was knightly Chivalrie better employed by any then by him, þis since the time of my knowledge, he hath donee suuourable acts, as it is not remembred that ever loue in this age did the like. And then from point to point he discouered all that Palmerin had done since his comming to him: And can you think þen god madam(quoth the Dwarf) that he is descended of spoule lineage? Eust me Lady, I haue my selfe heard by many learned Magicians, and others, that theys Divinations were no lesse then I say.

Polinarda heard the Dwarf thus speake on his Masters behalfe, if before his loue had kindled vre likynge, no manuell of heart and spirit were now enclimed: so that now she could not longer conceale what she had hitherto couered, and therfore said to the Dwarf, I vouch the Vibanillo, by the faith and duty thou bearest to thy Master, Tell me one thing that I desire to know of him, which shall tend to nothing but to his honour and advantage. You haue so Conjured me, faire Madams

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I:

Madame(quoth the Dwarf) as death shall not compell me to haue whaþer you shall please to command, if it lyg in me to resolute you. Know then Vibanillo, said the Princesse, that I loue my Master as dearely as my Brother Trineus: and am desirous to know of þee, what Lady it is he esteems aboue all other: because when I know her, I may loue her the better for his sake: & withall, that I may commend the Ladys happynesse, whose fortune is to be loued of so þane a Gallant? & ell perceived the Dwarf, that eyther now or never was the time to bethirre hymselfe, according to the promise he had made to his Master: wherefore he answereid the Princesse in this manner: Belieue me Madame, were it to any other, I wold not reueale such secrets of my Lord as you desire to know: but to you that are hiȝ Lady & Princesse, I am content to belyay the whole. Sufficieth then þabam, that he loued in such sorte, that if the Heauens send him not remedy the sooner, vnapossible it is that his life shold long endure: for I see him so farre v. seþ himselfe, and tormentid with so many passions, as every houre his death is expected. What will þis Lady that I say? He complaines, he sighes, and day by day is in such dispaire for his Ladys loue: As happy might I haue counted him, had he never lane her oþer that his dayes were as short as his desires. If then Polinarda were in doubt (not judging her selfe to be þee) it may easily be imagined, and þis surely was she brought into such a perplexite, as the Vermillion colour in her cheeks vrgaine to change, þich suddennes passtred her minde, & so many sundry varietys of opinion thwarroþ her conceyt, as farr she shold haue spoken, but could not of long time, whereby the Dwarf discerned the cause of her alteration, yet he discouered what he saw, and thus continued onward his discourse.

Now considering (Fa re Madame) the high deserts of my Lord and Master, may he be esteemed happy (as you say) that shall cause the losse of the best Knight living this day?

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

By Pittresse, if he dyg (as God sozbid) farewell the onely  
flower of all true Noblenesse, and the most asured friend  
to distressed Ladys. Wherefore I beseech you pardon me,  
I shall name her unto you : and let me intreat you to deale  
with her so farre, that the courtesie wherin she is indebted to  
so good a Knight as my Lord and Master is, may be shewed  
effectually, as that she would loue and honour him, as he doth  
and hath very well deserved. Trust me Vrbanillo, answered  
the Princesse, when I know the Lady I will, and beside, if  
she doe not regard his passions as she ought, I will intreat  
her at my request to be moze pittisall. These wozds pprocured  
a sudden jealousie in her, that she shold promise to ano-  
ther what she nesciit desired herselle : yet somewhat earnest  
to be resolved, she vowed to scfull her promise, and theresoone  
desired him to tell her Name. So you will glorie your  
wzrd Madame (quoth the Dwarfe) not to take in ill part  
what I shall say, I will satisfie your request ppresently. Be-  
lite. e me sayd the Princesse, I will neit, rather perswade  
thy selfs, that herein thou doest me great pleasure. Ah faire  
Princesse (quoth the Dwarfe) it is for you and no other, that  
my Lord is thus tormentid, it is for you that he liues, and  
dyes an hundred times a day : Sweet Lady haue pitty on  
him, and sake not the losse of so god a Knight, who loues you  
dearer then his owne life. At which answere she was sur-  
prized with incredible pleasure, for selgynge the contrary, he  
sayd : Is it I ? And how long I pray you ? By my faith  
Madame (quoth he) that can I not tell you : But I haue  
heard him say of a long time : moze then soure yeares before  
he was knighted, he vowed himselfe yours : Since which  
time, all his honourable Actions hath he onely dedicated to  
your praise. So that for to finde you, he left the King of  
Macedon, and his sonne Florendos, with whom he was in  
such estimation, as no man the like : yet that honour he for-  
sake to doe you service : and for your loue he yielded himselfe  
as vassall to the Emperour your Father, and gaue himselfe

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

your Knight, if you deigne to accept him. When Polinarda  
had well heard the Dwarfe (albeit her heart flouted in joyes)  
yet could she so well command her thoughts, as she seemed  
to make small account of his words : Notwithstanding,  
returned him this answer. I promised this Vrbanillo, not to  
conctue ill of ought thou shouldest tell me, nor doe I : yet  
would I haue thee to regard my calling, being Daughter to  
so high and mighty a Prince as is the Emperour : But if it  
be so, that Palmerin thy Lord and Master beares me such  
spectall affection, I will let him know by thys, that it would  
haue been farr more seruely, himselfe to haue told me, then  
to make this Ambassadeur in such secret affaires : Never-  
thelesse, I mislike not of his honourable loue and goodwill,  
whereof I shall think better, when I know the effect is con-  
formable to thy protestations. Madame (quoth the Dwarfe)  
so you would please to vouchsafe him time and place, he will  
make you acquainted with strange matter, concerning both  
your Deffines : which courtesie can no way impeach your  
honour. Why tell him (said the Princesse) he shall haue me  
dally here in the Chamber of presence, where he may say  
his pleasure with safety : In meane space I accept him as  
my Knight, charging him that he doe not depart the Court  
without any licence, if he deele to doe me pleasure.

The Dwarfe well pleased with so god an answer, on his  
knee kylling the Princesse hand, tooke leave of her to returne  
towards Palmerin : who meeting him by the way, in place  
conuenient, said :

How now Vrbanillo ? what newes haft thou brought me ?  
Life or death ? Master (answered the Dwarfe) as you haue  
good occasion to repulse your selfs the most fortunat Knight  
that ever bare Armes. Then Palmerin embracing him, said :  
Ah tell me what they are : Haft thou spoken with divins  
Polinarda ? Takes he any pitty on my consuming cares ?  
What doth he (my Lord (quoth the Dwarfe) and commands  
you by me, if you be so volded hers as I haue perhanded) that  
hence,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

henceforth you depart not the Emperours Court, without her leave. Then recited he the whole talkie betwene them; and lastly, the pleasure she conceiued in so good tidings: so that she accepted him onely for her Knight. Whiles the Dwarfe continued this discouer, Palmerin was rauished with such inward sor, as with a great sigh, he said: O heavens, how do you fauour me? Now see I well that my seuerall apparitions on the mountes of Olives and Atilaria, are metellinations, ordained to me by your Gracius presence: I beseech you theretore humbly, that what you haue promisid may soone come to effect, for the regard of incomparabile Pollinarda. Then demanded he, by what meanes he might attaine to speake with the Princesse: She saith ( quoth he) that you shall haue her daylie in the Prelence, or in the Empresse Chamber, and there may you safely imparte your whole mindes unto her. But I haue other newes to tell you, for I understand certaintly, that the Emperour intends a matter greatly for your aduantage: he mündes to morrow to visite one of his Castles neare at hand, and there also, to passe the tyme, in honour of the Ladys will haue a Tourney. So that there (better then any where else) may you and Pollinarda conserre togither: theresoze courage your selfe, and bee keepe compante with my Lord the Emperour, it may be himselfe will acquaint you with this Enterprise.

Now credite me Vibambo, ( said Palmerin ) thou hast done so much for me, as I shall never recompence thee while I live; but I pray thee tell me, did she not at the first take my message strangely? What did she ( quoth the Dwarfe) when I perswaded her that you loued a Lady in such sort as hardly could you liue without her fauourable regard: then she thinkeing it was somer other and not herselfe, changed her colour maruellous passionately, but let it suffice you, that she is as depe in loue as you are or can bee.

So went Palmerin to the Emperour, who calling him to him, said: My noble friend, I shall make knowne to you what

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

what hath bene concluded in your absence. The Ladys of our Court haue been so long lockt in so faire of the Enchanted Knight whom you haue slaine, as they haue desired to pregresse a little: for which cause, and to pleasure them I am thus determined; Two leagues hence haue I a goodly Castle, enclened with Woods and pleasant Meadowes, there may we haue the wilde Part and Boxe, with other pastures: but now haue I caused Scaffles and other provision to be made there for a Tourney, and forty Knights will I appoint in this Nation, tenne against tenne, and the King Conquerours shall keepe the field against tenne other, that shall renge the tenne banqueth: So having all ready, they shall fight at Battayres, with rebated Swords, and the brashest Champion shall haue a rich Jewell, which the Empresse hath promised for that purpose. Now would I haue you one of the ten Challengers, and my nephewe Gardnerino, on the Defensants side: for him do I esteeme one of the best Knights of my Courts: Will you not do thus much at my request? God forbidde ( said Palmerin ) that I shoulde refuse any thing you please to command. These newes were immedately published thorough the Court, which made every Knight speedily to prepare himselfe, hoping to be of that number of the forty, that shoulde percomme the Tourney: and thus they privatly imparted to their Ladys, how they wold breake both Sword and Lance for their Loue. Among whom Prolome was not the last, for he so affected the young Princesse Brionella, as he had made her sole spittelle of his hart, yet could he not find the means to acquaint her therewith: But the next day, as she rode among the Ladys, they had good leisure to conserre togither & before they arrived at the Castle, they discouered thoroughly unto each other their Affections, promising mutually such a just consent in Loue, as the one shoulde bygag of the others uppethesse.

Whiles they thus continued their lonely amorous discourse,

## The History of Palmer in D'Oliva,

discourse, Palmerin who had but newly presented hymselfe to Polinarda, was much discontented, because so soone as he came to her, the Empresse called her, and left not talking with her till they alighted from Horselbacke: Notwith-standing, before night, he gained recomponce soz that it shauantage: for after Supper, the Emperour and the Ladys went a walking, by a goodly Rivers side, there to disport themselves, in the eole of the evening. Now was it the merrie May moneth, when the feldes were richly decked with Natures Tapistry, and Cupid gaue good opportunity to his subiects, to contemnple their sweet and affable desires, and well came it to passe soz Palmerin, while Trineus and Ptolome were conuersing with the Empresse, that he taking his Lady and Mistresse by the Arms, walked with her amonge the faire flowers, and setting the time & place serue him so well, trembling, (as surpized with a vehement passion) thus begonne. Madam, your gracious nature will not count it strange, but rather take it in good part, that I a knight Errant, and as yet unknowne among Courtly assemblies, shoule presume to make knowne a secret to you, which my selfe dare not imagine without reverence, & death can cause me declare to none: nor may I proceed without some assurance of my uncertaine hope, by her blutne pity that giues me life. And although þ words of my Dwarfe haue acquainted me with your Princely fauour, sufficient to expell all feare and suspition of reprooke: yet such is the height whereto I aspire, as the greatest Monarch in the world can scarcely deserve, then well may I esteeme my selfe unworthy. But doubting whether your words were such, or that my Dwarfe (perhaps as he often may doe) hath reported more then he had giuen him in charge: I am destrous, (trusting on your benignity and speciall fauour above all other) to understand if your good pleasure be so highly to honour me, as henceforth to accept me soz your Knight and servant. And if such well deserved fauour and grace may haply fall to my lot, I shall

## Emperour of Constanstople. PART. I.

not only acknowledge, that Foxstone hath directed my course, to the onely place of honour, but shall haue good occasion beside, to make knowne by my knighthood, that I am the fauourite of the most faire Princesse. herein good Madame, you shall not dissent from reason, if I having lost my liberty (by being onely yours) want the modesty that shoule shield me in your high regard: Thereforo why you sweet Lady, in mine excuse, accuse lene, and your celestiall beauty: both stronger to command me, then I to gainsay. My Dwarfe hath let you know (as he told me) part of the paine I endure for your sake, which you cannot but think well of, in that my Dekinie so commanded me, long tyme before I saw or knew you, not alone in Wilione, but by manifest solicitings, so that in search of you, I haue suffered such trouall, as maruell it is, that Nature could make me able to safain. Notwithstanding, I account all right happily bestowed, if I might but gain fauour in your gracious eyes, without which, it is impossible soz me to live: for there is no part possessing either life or spirit in me, that is not towed to your only seruice. These words were dipt in seares, and deliuered with many a bitter sigh, which mournd Polinarda to such compassion, as taking him by the right hand, she began to play with his fingers, her trembling testifying her secret affections: and then breaking off Palmerins discourse, as he thought to haue continued longer, thus answered. My Knight, it seemeth by your countenance that you despaire of somethng, or else haue more fortitude then I can conceve.

Entere you me of simple judgement, that knowing your valour and knighthly perfections, I shoulde not account my selfe happy to haue so braue a Champion: Let it suffice you that what Urbanillo told you is true: and in regard of the paine you suffer for my loue, and fancyng me so firmly as you doe: Believe me good Knight, you feele no griefe, but it is as familiar with me, so that what thought you haue of me,

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

me, the like have I of you, as time and the unspotted lense I  
bear: you shall witnessse: in meane time promise me not to  
depart my Fathers Court without any consent. And be-  
cause I see the Ladys approaching, referre we the rest unill  
some other time, when we shall haue more leasure to con-  
sere together. And tell me now, if you bee determined to  
foul to morrow: Tha: will I Madame, (quoth he) If it  
shall please you to command me. In sooth(said she) I will  
not hinder you, because I know the honour of the Tourney  
will be yours: For my sake therefore shall you weare this  
Bracelet, as a signe of my favour, and pledge of my loue.  
So taking off her Bracelet, she gane it to Palmerin, who re-  
ceyved it with no little content: And so concluding their fa-  
miliar talke, because many Knights and Ladys came about  
them, they walked where the Emperour and the Empresse  
were deuyling with Ptolome and Trineus. Now because  
darkes night dyew on, and the Evening dew was dangerous,  
they returned to the Castle, entending the next day after  
dinner to begin the Tournament.

### C H A P. X X I X.

How Palmerin gained the honour of the Tourney, and of  
that which happened afterward.



After the order of the Tourney was set  
downe by the Emperour, as you haue  
heard, Palmerin did but expect the houre  
to goe to it, not doubting to peresone  
such chivalrie, as his Ladys fauer  
should be worthily honord: Wherefore  
hauling prepared all his necessaries rea-  
die immediatly after Dinner, accompanied with other  
Knights brauely arm'd, whereof Ptolome was one, be-  
tred the lists royll. And espyng his Mestre Polinarda in  
the

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

the window with the Empresse, after he had done her houres  
of reverence, he began to manage his horse with such braue  
carriers, as every one delighted to behelde him, but especially  
the Princeesse, whose heart Loue had thorowly conquerred, so  
that she gloked to be belov'd of a Knight so worthy & com-  
mendable, as that her eye was never from the object of her  
swete desires. And marking his shield, she behelde in a hole of  
Hable, a silver hand fass closed, the impost whereof caused  
her to murmur, in respect what had passed between them  
before, and gladly wold she haue knowne the meaning, but  
the place would afford no such countenance: wherefore per-  
swading herselfe so the time, she was content in seeing her  
Bracelet, whiche her Knight wroze upon his arme. And  
after many courses and losy points won by Palmerin and  
other Knights before their Ladys, among whom Ptolome  
shewed so correspondent, as the presence of his Lady Bryon-  
ell highly prouoked him. Then entered the Prince Ganareno,  
Nephew to the Emperour a Knight of no small rec-  
koning among the Allmaignes, and with him nine other, in  
most sumptuous armour: and their bannieres likeliste ten-  
ded to their Ladys ( yet nothing comparable to Palmerin  
and his companye) they went to their tent, and while the  
Trumpets and Clarions summonned the field, every Knight  
prepared himselfe in readines. Palmerin, not so much to win  
common applause, as her loue who had the somerigne pow-  
er over him, seeing Ganareno videring himselfe to run first,  
took a strong Launce, & encountered him with such puissance,  
as Moyses and men more bath overthroned and very soore bru-  
ised: notwithstanding he was soon recovered by his compa-  
nyes, and in a Chatre earied forth of the field. One of his thir-  
ty Knights would needs revenge his misfortune, & was him-  
selfe in like sorte servid: in briefe, the other eight had all one  
payment, not one of them being able to moue Palmerin from  
his saddle. Palmerin sayfull of his god successe, was separ-  
ating away with his company, when one of them thus spake  
unto

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

unto him. Sir Palmerin, you haue sau'd our labour, and get  
the honoꝝ that we desirē. The time will come (quoth Pal-  
merin) when you may do as much for me: but soꝝ this time  
(if you please) you haue excuse me. All that were present, as  
well Loꝝds as Ladies, maruailed at the valour of Palmerin,  
and among the rest the Emperour, who said aloud, that he  
neuer knew g̃ more valiant Gentleman. Polinarda being so  
nere as she heard her fathers words, and had her selfe be-  
held his high god fortune, was sodainely sollicitid with such  
affectionate pleasure, as forgettig her selfe, and where she  
was, she thus spake to Brionella Indifferent land. What say  
you faire friend? doth not Palmerin worthily deserve to be  
loued? By my faith Madame, answered she, I never saw  
knight gl̃ue such rough encounters with the Launce, as he did  
to Ganareno and the rest of his compantone. Polinarda would  
haue prochded further, but there entred ten other Knights,  
the fōrmost being Ptolome, not content (as it seemed) that  
he ran not at the first: and then entred sen Knights more, of  
whom the fōrmost was Cormedes an Allemaigne Knight.  
They rānging then selues in oder, Ptolome and Corme-  
des branely encountered, but neither were vñhorsed: which  
greued Ptolome to doe no better in presence of his Lady:  
wherefore taking another Launce, at the second course  
Cormedes was cast qũte out of his saddle, and thre more  
of his felowes after him for company. Whilid when the  
Duke of Lorraines Brother perclued, a Knight well ac-  
counted of in the Countrey, desirous to recover the honour  
his foregoers had lost, spake thus to Ptolome. It semes  
that these Grecian Knights are come to rob vs of the honoꝝ  
that is ours by inheritance, in an b̃ckapple houre were the  
Allemaignes boȝne if they futter it: and so couching his  
Launce, met Ptolome with so full a carriere, as loosing sad-  
dle and stirrups he fell to the ground, and four moꝝ of his  
Knights after him had like entertainment, but a hardy  
Knight of the Emperors named Menadus, met the Duke's  
brother

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

brother so rudely, as downe he fell to the ground with  
his saddle betweene his legges. There were many brāus  
encounters with the Launce, to vanquish one another, and  
all for the loue of their Ladys, who delighted to see their  
Knights so branely behauē themselves. The Just kniȝt,  
each one alighted, and with their blunt Swords fell to  
the Warriors, and so cruelly they laid on each other, as they  
would not suffer one another to take b̃reath: especially Pto-  
lome, who buckled with the Duke of Lorraines Brother,  
to winne the honour he lost in the Jousting. And new astly  
entred noble Palmerin, who was the onely man to whom  
Love and Fortune were favourable, ranged among the  
chickeſt, and with his sword made way among them va-  
lantly: at length he came to the Duke of Lorraines Bro-  
ther, and so canuyed him about the pales with his blunt  
Gauchon, as he fell to the ground greatly affoaled, charging  
him to speake no moꝝ in disgrace of the Grecian Knights. All  
the sport ended, the Knights withdrew themselves into their  
Chambers to be unarmed, and each Knight wrappynge him-  
selfe in his Mantle, Palmerin was in his Ladies livery, for  
she had sent him a very rich one, and so commynge into the  
Chamber of presence, the Emperour welcomed him in this  
manner. Wellene me my Lord, I account the Dukes happy  
thathath you for his friend. As I am, my gracious Sou-  
veraigne, answered Palmerin, I am your humble and obedient  
servant during life, ready to accomplish what shall please you  
to command me. The Emperour highly thanked him, and  
presently came the Empresse, and one of the Ladies bringynge  
with her a rich Cloak, and couered with pearles and Stones  
of great value, whiche she presented to Palmerin, as the prize  
and honour he had wonne in the Tournay, and said to Poli-  
narda; Faire Daughter, I am sure you will bestow some  
gift on Sir Palmerin, In that he hath so worthily deser-  
ved.

These words raised a sweet blushing in the Princess

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

coontenance, not a little rejoicing that he whom she loued had carried away the prize from all the other Knights; so with a pretty modest smile, She took a chayn of Gold from about her neck, saying; *Hie here Sir Palmerin what I gibe you, this gift is to tye and chayne you in such sorte, as you may never depart from the Emperours seruice.* Palmerin with exceeding contentment received the chayne, and on his knes humbly thanked the Empresse and the Princesse, to whom he spake as followeth. *Madamme, I am well contented to abide in such a p[er]son; and never will I desire any other liberty, but still will be his vassall that hath power to command me.* This answer pleased the Emperour exceeding-ly, in that he desired to haue Palmerin alabide in his Court. Wherefore he sayd to Polinarda, *you haue done well Daunger thyng to bindre Palmerin, for now he cannot escape away when he list.* So the Labels being couered, the Emperour and all the Knights of the Tournement sat downe to meat, where whiche talk was spent as concreting the successe on all Qves, but Palmerin and Polinarda had enough to doe to view each other, their eyes doing their office, and carrying betwix them the message of their passions, yet so discretely shadowed, as none could perceve them. Supper ended, the Knights and Ladies went to dancing, and afterwards to their Chambers, because the Emperour comandement the next day another Tournement: a b[ea]tife report whereof was very well serues, in that you can imagine there wanted no b[ea]tiful Chivalry. What Palmerin did that day, it were in vain to tell, because the somer day makes known his wortynesse, and Peolome behaued himselfe in so good sorte, that Bryonella was as proud of him as the Princesse of her Knight, and therefore presented him with a very rich Diamond, as a token of his deserte and leues. Thus whille the Joutes endured, the Duke of Lorrayne had great familiaritie with Palmerin, because he had deliuered his sister Cardonya, from the false treason of the Count of Ormecque.

All

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

All pastures thus finished, the Emperour returned to Gaunt, wheres Palmerin intreated his Sisters to appoint him time and place, wheres they might more privately discouer on their loue, the which she promised, and alwaied opportunity.

### CHAP. XXX

How Polinarda discoursed her secrets to Bryonella, and of the talke she had with Palmerin.



Polinarda not forgetting the promis she made her friend, to mete him in some place wheres they might argue on their loue, determined to discouer her affectiōns to Bryonella, the beloved of Peolome: well perceiving, that without her help, she could not attaine the end of her deare, wherefore without any longer stay, she thus began with her. *My chosen friend, I would make knowne one thing unto the, which death can compell me to discouer to no other, wherefore thou must haue care to keepe secret my speches, in respect of my calling, not doubting but in time to recompence any payne thou takest for me.* H[er]e Princesse, said Bryonella in that you doe me such honour, as to impart your thoughts to me, rather will I dye then sayle one syot of your commandement, and thereso[ne] assure your selfe, that what you declare shall never be discovered. Then Polinarda revealed to her the loue she bare Palmerin, what passions had tormentid her, and in what extremity her deares had driven her: and thereso[ne] sweete friend ( quoth she with a deep sigh ) finde thou the meane that I may privatly talk with him. Bryonella admiring the earnest loue of the Princesse, knew not readly what to answer, but seeing that by this meanes she might more easly conferre with Peolome, whom she likewise intirely loued, thus spake.

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

spake. It is no wonder Madame, few being so incomparable, as I know no Prince living of whom you are not worthy, if you haue resolved your leuen noble Palmerin, in that there is no knyght in the world better deserves you, his rare Chivalry being such, as it cannot otherwise be, but that he is descended of a royall lineage, being accompted with so many spectall perfections. Wherefore Madame, to like you, I haue devised well for your purpose, as thus. You know my Chamber window stands so commodious, as you may with safety conserue with him at pleasure, which you may let him underhand by his Princesse, and appoynt him time as you shall think convenient. This counsell did not a little content the Princesse, because she longed to talk with her Lover, and thereforee concluded at his departure to appoint Palmerin his time. Now was the Chamber of Bryonella joyning to the City wall, and had a goodly prospect into the fields, and Palmerins lodging was nere unto it, facing the wall as the other did, so that one might easily passe betwene the lodgings, nothing being betwene them but a little Garden, beautifuly decked with flowers, and goodly fruit Trees. The time appoynted, Polinarda called the Dwarfe to her, saying. Urbanillo, when shall go to thy Master from me, and after thou hast saluted him with my manifold well wishings, will him this night to come secretly to my Lady Bryonella's Chamber, where at the window we may safely talke together: and bid him not misabuse my Lady Bryonella, for I haue made her acquainted with all my secrets. And because thy selfe might conduct him to the place, come, and I will presently shew it thee. So went the Dwarfe with Polinarda to Bryonella's Chamber, where having seen the window, and glad to carry such tidings to his Master, being well assured how they would content him: he deparctes, and tarried not long on his Message, because Palmerin thought each hour a yere to haue from his Spouse: wherefore he beholding the

Dwarfe

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I

Dwarfe comming, tooke him in his armes, and demanded what newes he had brought him? The Dwarfe with a chearefull countenance thus answered. My Lord. Fortune sped you so lucky, as the newes that I bring you doth well deserve. By this beginnynge Palmerin perceved that he brought such tidings as he long looked for, which was how he might speake with the Princesse: wherefore embrasing him againe, he commanded him to make report of that his sweete Spouse had given him in charge. Then the Dwarfe delivred how the Princesse had great desire to see him, and where she did intend to speake with him. Whiche when Palmerin heard, filled with unspeakable joyes, he recoured the words to himselfe with many repetitions, and the more often he spake the words, the more his delights increased. What tell me (quoth he to the Dwarfe) doth thou markes the place well where I must talke with my goddesse? Thereof doubt you not my Lord, said the Dwarfe, for I shall not faille to bring you thither, if it be your pleasure I shall go with you, because the Princesse her selfe, in company of Lady Bryonella shewed it me. How am I beholding to her, said Palmerin, for this high favour, whiche else were my death if I should be deuyed? Upon this he called Ptolome, to whom he imparted every circumstance, whiche Ptolome reported for his great qualite: thus offering the meane for him to kiss Bryonella, and thereforee they concluden to goe together the night ensuing, to the place appoynted for this louting encounter. The houre of rett being come, and every one in their Chambers as well belaymed, Palmerin, Ptolome and the Dwarfe, remained together, and setting the time ready to countenance their enterprise, tooke each of them a rich Mantle, and with their swords under their armes, went out at a window upon the walles: and albeit the passage was somewhat dangerous: yet Rane had so encouraged them, as without regard of danger or feare, they came to the window

B 4  
which

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

which the Dwarse had shewed them, not seene by any. Polinarda who was most attentive, hearing the trampling of his feet, said to Bryonella. Is not this Palmerin? So opening the Casements, she saw Palmerin and Ptolome attending like diligent Servants. If then both parties were pleased, it is not to be doubted, nothing in the world more contenting them then the sight of each other. And truly Palmerin and the Princelle had great reason, so to see that their fatall destiny did so prouche them, their equall natures were so commendable and correspondent, as though they had never seene, yet were they boone to loun together. Now was Polinarda very bravely accouerted in a gloriouse night mantle, and such soft white silks, as shewed brighter then the morning Starre, her very pointed lookes so wounding Palmerin, as rapt vp as it were into a second heauen, he remained silent a long time, not able to speake a word. The Princelle was likewise in the same conceyt, and so overcome with regard of her Paramour, as she continued mute, and loth to gaine the on-set. Palmerin ashamed to accompanie his Lady with such silence, began thus mildly to Coart his Spouse,

I did never think, ( saye Madam ) that Fortune would honour me with such extraordinary fauours, directing my course to your noble Fathers Court, to be thus entertained into your gracious seruice, having no reserues in me to induce you to your choyse: but it may be in respect of some good report by such, to whom I account my selfe highly beholding, having thus found the place where I was preordinate to loue. my Starre hath thus appointed it, and withdrawe, to make me the happiest man living. And it may bee Madam, that such as envy not my happiness, have acquainted you with some of my extrevisor actions, which God (not I) hath broughte to passe: but they, ignorant of the entirre and somwhat loue I bearre you, could make no just report thereof to you, being a secret so speciall, and not to be compreheended: Wellnes, the

depth

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

depth and wonderfull nature therof not to be measured, therefore to be buried in your heavenly opinion, which how ample so ever you please to grant me, the more I am bound both in duty and affection, which in despight of envy and his confederates, shall remayne invicuable, and plead the continuall loyalty of your knight and Servant.

And if I should report how many times your diuine person hath been presented me in sleepe, I would therewithall discourse infinite passions, which I endured, seeing my selfe frustrate of that I now beholde. How many Countreyes and Cittyes? What perils and dangers haue I past to find you, prouoked on all with never changing loue? If this then were sufficient to make me run through a world of dangers, I leane it to your iudgement ( Sweet Madam ) what it may doe now, saing with mine eyes what I dreamed on before, and now my with safety say (incomparable Madam). Here hence then procedeth, that these my extreme affections haue overcome all other parts in me, not once able to imagine how many reverend opiniions I haue of you: which must intreat you on my behalfe, that your accustomed clemency, will pardon my preuentate conceite, because being not mine awne, but yours onely, I may easilys offend. These speeches moistened with the teares of his eyes, and luke-warme Blood of his heart, delivered manisell evidence how truely he loued the Princelle, who bearing him company in all arguments of Loue, thus answered. I doubt not Sir Palmerin, but that the loue you beare me is exceeding great, noting your earnest Affection, and the great trauell you haue sustaineid in search of me, and no other certainte doe I request to be perswaded by, being as vehement in affection towards you, as you are to me: For proose whereof, this present attempt may suffice, that against my duty I should be seen thus secretly, in a place so suspicous, and the tyme so unecessary. But yet if I haue offended herein, then accuse those seculair perfections whch I haue obserued in you,

and

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

and the confidence I repese in your good Concept, coupled with the honourable estimation that is generally reputed in your vertues. Parden me ( sweet Latic ) said Palmerin, it by my longing desire to speake and conserue with you. I haue in any thing displeased, for earnest good will to doe you ser-vice, constrained me to be thus impozante. The matter is far from any deseru of offence (quoth the Princesse) for hither are you come only by my commandement, to the end that we might see one another, and talk of such things as no rest con-serue vs : and therfore re-solve your selfe good Knight, that I chuse you aboue all other, and promise you by the faith of a Prince, & a loyall friend, to die, rather then any other shall be Lord of me. Which very wordes, so taunched his sen-tes, as very hardly he could sustaine himiselle : Whereupon Polinard put forth her hand out at the Window, which bee in often kissing well marking, beheld the Character thereon as you haue heard before. Ah (sweet Madame, quoth he) this is the token that makes me the happiest man this day living. As how I pray you (said she) what knouin you here-of? Then Palmerin discoursed all his Dreames and visions, and blythe ran through repetition of his whole life, how the wise Adrian had sent him the Shielde of Sable, wherein was figured a Hand fast closed together, Agynsting the same hand I hold at this present, because this haib the same marke the other had in figure. In truth ( said the Princesse ) I was desirous to know the meaning of that Shielde, where- in I saw a bluer hand closed, which you bare the first day of the Tournament, being now a little glad in that you haue so satisfied me. Afterwards Palmerin made knowne unto her the marke himselfe had on his face, which agreed with hers in perfect likelihood. O God (quoth he) happy be the time of this meeting: Blame me not my Lord to be thus surprized with your loue, seeing our fatall Destinies haue so appoynted: This will cause me to live in moxe hope of good success, than before I did, and that our amity will so

such

## Emperour of Constantynople: PART. I.

such end, as our two hearts shall both be combined in one: and yet let me see I beseech you, the mark on your face, how耐ie it resembles this on my hand. She fetching a Taper which burned in her Chamber, listed by his comely lock of haire, and saw them both shaped in one forme, wherfore suddenly setting away the light, she embrased Palmerins head in her armes, and sealed many sweet kisses on his amiable Character. The like loving kinde salutations passed betwene Ptolome and Bryonella, at another Casement of the Window, with soleinne Towes and Protestations, neuer to saile each other in their loue, and this to be the fittest place for conuersing on their desires, till Fortune afforded them better opportunity: and longer would they haue there continued, but that the Dwarse came to his Master in this manner. My Lord, I think you can never finde time to make an end: Will you haue the day-light preuent you, and so dis-credite you all? Insomuch it is time you were in your Chamber. Palmerin who was loath to depart from the pleasure of his thoughts, made small account of the Dwarses words, and continued on in amozons deuises: But the Princesse, a little more fearefull then he, remembred the Dwarse said true, and loath to be so ne suspitionously, sayd: My Lord, it is time to breake of, but I pray you sayle not of your promise: Let us visit one another, now you know the way and place. So Palmerin and Ptolome tooke leauue of their Ladys, and passing to their Chambers without suspition: The successe of their Leus you shall understand hereafter, as time and place shall fit for the purpose: but now to satisfie you with choyce of de- lights, we will retorne a while to another discourse.

CHAP. XXXI.

CHAP. XXXI.

How the King of France kept a Royall and magnificent Court: And how his Sonne Lewes became charmed of the Duchesse of Burgandy.



At the time that the Emperour of Almaine lind in this happiness, accompanied (as you have heard) with many hardy Knights: there raigned in France a mighty Prince named Agaricell, valiant, wise, and virtuous, who had three Sons, whereof the second was the hardest Knight at Armes, being named Lewes.

This King Agaricel, the moze to honour his Knights and noble Gentlemen abiding in his Realme, determined to keepe open Court for all comers, as none of his predecessours ever did the like before him, and therfore sent abroad his Herald, Gentlemen of his Escutry, and others, to summon his Lords, and Barons of France, that on a day appoynted, they would all met at the Court.

And because none shold be ignorant what he intended, he requested that all Gentlemen professing Armes, at the Feast of Easter following, shold repaire to Paris, being the head and chisell City of the whole Kingdome. The Duke likewise aduertised all Ladys and Gentlewoman at whose command every one obeyed, so that in few dayes, the Court was well furnished with Lords and Ladys: nothing now intended, but delights and Courtly Pastimes, which made the Duke of Burgundy likewise repaire thither. Now was the Duke aged, a man of greate prudence, and a tryed Knight, having matched in Marriage with the King of Denmarks Sister, a young beautifull Lady, and of vertuous education: the Duke hoping to haue issue by her,

because

Emperour of Constanople: PART. I.

because by his first wife he could not haue any. The King aduertised of the Dukes coming, commanded his Sonne Lewes with an honourable traine to go entertain him, whiche be did, so that many solemnre receences passed between the Duke and him, as also to the Duchesse, whom as he welcomed with many salutations, so did he earnestly contemplate her excellent Beauty, regarding her faire fairer then the sayrest, and on a sudden became amorous of her: Such a violent breach made loun into his heart at the very first sight of her. In this great and unlooked for vexation, he conducted her to the lodging which was prepared for the Duke, dissembling so well as he could his new destru: But so vehement was his oppression, as without returning againe to the King, he went to his Chamber. Prince Lewes being thus alone by himselfe, (Lane) not a little triumphing of his new poynt, tormenteth his thoughts with so many conceits. as all the night he spent in sighs and dolozous lamentes, his minde still trauelleng by what meanes he might compasse his intent. Sometimes, he thought it unpossible in respect of the Duke, then againes as easie, because of his age, a contrary too yonge somwe in his eyes, for the sweet flourishing yonth of the Duchesse: all which imaginations brought so desirous in him, as his spirit forsaking countenanc and reason, made him break forth into these exclamaynes. Ah Heavens, haue you forsworne Beauty with such Excellency, as to cause me endure a torment moze then mortall: Ah mine Eyes, so lauth were you in beholding her, who cannot chuse but bitterly disdain thee, thou hast an acquaintance with her, and therfore let thy death chastise thy boldnesse. Yet mayst thou be decluced in thine alone opinion scoldish man: perhaps in offering her thy service she may chance to accept it, for the Duke is olde, and likely to dye: how happy were it for that to be his Executour for his Lady: Despayre not then man, for things though impossible are easely oftentimes in performance. In these and such like tears he spent the night, & saing the fair morning

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

ning salute him at his Chamber windowe, he arose, inter-  
ding that day to bewray his p[ro]p[ri]et[ies] to the Dutchesse: and  
knowing that the Duke wold goe visit the Queen, accom-  
panied with many knyghtes, he came to bid him god mor-  
row. Whiche the Duke taking very kindly, re-quited him  
with many thanks, ignorant that se[re] the faire Clise, he  
was so courteous to the oþre Husband.

The Duke having taken his way to the Queen Lewes  
kept company with the Dutchesse very maimly, wayning  
opportunity to discouer his aff[ection], and renewing her beau-  
ty so perfect and rare, not able longer to holde, began thus. It  
is manuellly Madamme, if faire beauty shalbe so bitter, as a  
marcambe flise belt he must needs dye. The Dutchesse  
not knowing by whom the Prince spake, nor as yet regar-  
ding that he was in Love, answered. Isayd my Lord, the  
Lady hath small reason, that she shalbe use you so hardly, if  
you meane it of your selfe. I telle you Madamme (quoth he) it  
is you that wormed me, and none but you can ease my af-  
flictions: if then (Sweet Lucy) you retaine such pity, as  
all your other Excellencies shew you to have, you will not  
desaigne to give me remedy, whiche if you doe, soz euer I re-  
maine your knyght and lowall friend. And in milne opin-  
ion Madam, you cannot well refuse my suit, for hard for-  
tune hath been such an enemy to you in Matrimony, the Duke  
being olde and full of melancholy, you young, tender, fresh,  
and dauntly as may be: He moze wreke to kepe company  
with Antropos the mortall goddes, then live with a sainte of  
so rare perfections. But had my luck been such, before you  
were espoused to haue knowonne you, I wold with valour  
have hindred your Briding so, or Fortune shuld have fow-  
ly dented me: For such is my religion in Love, as better  
death then discontent, and had I bene K[ing] of Europe, you  
had ben Lucy. Notwithstanding Madamme, so like it you,  
I may be your friend and knyghtly seruant: for love wante  
no wiles to compasse desire, and my sute is nobest. If you  
count

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

count it not vnsimly. The Dutchesse whom sweet lobe  
could easly intice to folly, hardly might refle a present con-  
quest: Wherefore changing her countenance, and not daring  
to revele what she gladly wold, said. Trust me ( my  
Lord) your speeches are not comely, to violate chaste Mede-  
lack is so monstrosus, as you can haue no privilege to aske,  
nor I to grant, and therfore content you.

This answer, albeit it was sharp, and scant pleasing to  
the Prince, yet labe so perswaded him, that the Dutchesse  
had another meaning then she bewayed: For noting her  
countenance so full of change, he guessed that some sparkis  
had fallen among her affections, wherefore he began again. I  
beseech you Madam accuse love, if I haue spoken to your  
d[omi]n[an]ting, yet hope I to see the time, when I shall make  
knowne how great my affection is to doe you service: and  
continuning this talk, he brought her to the Queens lodgings,  
Love following them both so narrowly at the heels, as the  
Dutchesse was no lesse affecionate, then Lewes was most  
passionate. Whiche when he had gotten some light of, in hope  
to purchase his desir, he sollicited her in more secret manner  
then he was wont: so that being one day in a place where  
they might familiarly talk, Lewes perfebering in his enter-  
prise, declared what tormentis he suffered for her love: wher-  
upon the Dutchesse not only by the Princes reasons, which  
were perswade, but as well to mitigate her owne appre[n]tions,  
thus answered: Great is the soote of your perswaltions  
(my Lord) but greater is that of love, whiche hath made me  
poore: So that what you require I chalnot denie, & althoough  
it stand not with my honest, yet such is my fortune. Let  
this intreat you therfore to conceale this love so discreetly,  
as none may know it, especially my Lord the Prince, and ex-  
pect the day that shall yeld me content, & make me happy.

This answer so highly liked the Prince, as never man  
thought himselfe in greater sollicit[ie], and tendering her an  
agayn mansold thanks, he sayd

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

I swewe to you Madams, by the divine force of Love that governs vs both, to haue so; ever your Knights, and never shall any other desyre abide in me, then you shall like and well allow of: so; otherwise I were not worthy of this speciall favour. The Duchesse thanking him, departed: and thenceforth so secretly shadowed their Love, as none suspected that the Prince loued the Duchesse.

### C H A P. X X I I.

Of the enterprise of Lewes the Prince of France, for the Duchesse of Burgundy.



King continued the King of France this State in all Magnificence, there meeting many noble personages, as well Strangers as of the Realme, that it was marvellous to behold, as also the Ladys and Damoisels that accompanied the Queen: who on a day in the presence Chamber among many Knights, confestred of the beauty and prowelte of the flourishing braue young Courtyers: among whom the Prince Lewes making one, each one spake in behalfe of his Ladys beauty, yet concealing their names to themselves, till better occasions might caue them deservedly to be knowne. All this talk the Prince well marking, who so; the Duchesse lone was deprivid of liberty, shew many secret glances at the Mistresse of his affections, persuading himselfe, that nature never made a more perfect creature, and not able to make her like againe, barke her mould, whereupon he sayd, Ladys and Ladys, who with such advantage haue chatled on beauty, understand that such as you haue yet spoken of, as generally in your shrowd thoughts shall thinke upon, may not be equall with one that I knowe, even she that is Lady and commander of my heart, whose beauty is so farre beyond

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

beyond all other, as bright Cinchia from the godlyest Starre in the firmament. And because that none shall imagine, how (being carried away with private opinion) I vse these speeches, I will make good my words by deedes of Armes, against any Knights whatsoeuer that dare say the contrary. Now in regard that none shall plead ignorance, I will aduertise all Knights, how the first day of May next ensuing, and seauen dayes more immediately following, I will be in open field in my Tent, wheres I will erect a stately monument, on the toppe whereof shall be her figure whose Knight I am: and there will I defend it in this honourable quarrell, against such Knights as will Combat for the beauty of their Ladys, I affirming mine to excell all other in perfections. This condition must be obserued by such as enter the field, that they bring the Ladys figure with them whom they honour most: and if Roystans stroake on them in such sorte as they be vanquished, there shall they leaue their Ladys Image, to be placed under my Mistresse as her subject. Now if my unhappy Starre so crooke me, as I lose the credit I would be loth, the conqueror shall enter in my Tent, and in my Ladys place shall his Mistresse bee mounted, if he meane to maintayne her with such condicions as I doe mine. And he that last shall accomplish these eight dayes, shall bear away the honour with the portraiture of the Ladys, which by him or any other all the sayd time haue bene gayned. And this libertie shall be granted, that he which receiueth the losse with the Launce, shall Combat with the sword ( if he pleasd ) before he yield. Now that this vniue enterprise might be openly knowne, and put in execution as the vertue requireth: I will send Horsemen through all the prouincies of Christendome, that all Knights willing thus to aduenture, shall be here received. His speeches ended, the Gentleman present could not meruell sufficiently, at this great and high enterprise of the Prince Lewes, and the danger whereto he threat him selfe

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

selfe, yet not knowing who was the Lady he would thus aduenture for: but she being present, perceiued that the Prince in honour of her loue, took in hand this perillous hazard, wherein she conceiued such secret content, as the passions of loue having penetratid her heart, made her feare his misforune, whiche she would not for her life. In this assembly was present the Duke of Savoy, a young Prince, faire, hardy and courageous as might bee, and claming so well of himself, as he thought no Knight in the world could vanquish him, who to answer the Prince Lewes, arose and thus spake. My Lord, I wold not willingly haue entred the Combat against you, but that I heard you so farre outreach your selfe, as she whose beauty you maintaine; is more perfect then all other Ladys, but she that is the commander of my heart, is such a beraus accomplished Ladie, as ( in truth ) her beauty may not be matched through the whole world. And to affirme what I say, I sweare by the cred of my Knighthood, that the morrow after you haue finished your eight dares enterpise, I will enter the same field, and auerre against all Knights, that the Goddesse to whom I am dedicated, excells all other Ladys in her heauenly gifts: and he that dares maintayne the contrary, vnder my swerd I will make him consecre it. All such therefore as will make proofe of their valour, shall find me there in my Tent at my appoynted day, and nine dayes after to sustaine the same quartail in playne Combat, either at the Lance, the Space, the Sword, on horsebacke or on fote, at his choyse. And though I vanquish one Knight, it shall not be lawfull for me to rell a minute space, but presently take him in hand that shall follow: and besy it my fortune to be soyld by him, he shall kepe the field in manner as you my Lord deised. And to the end all may be the better executed, please you that in such places where your intelligences shall come, my enterpise may likewise be declared, in respect I hope to behaue my selfe so well, as my

Lady

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

Lady will make speciall account of me. The Lady for whom the Duke of Savoy thus attempted, was Daughter to the King, and Sister to Lewes named Lucemania, whom he loued intirely, and aboue all things desired in Marriage: whiche to compasse, and to honour his Lady, he thus offered the Combat against all Knights. These Princes, intending to go thoroþ with their intent, concluded betwene them, that the Duke of Savoy shold breake it to the King, to gaue his good will: whereupon the Duke departing towards the Dukes Chamber to finde the King, espied him at very good leasure walking in his Garden, to whom he went in all hasto, and on his knie thus began. So please it your Highnesse to grant me one boone, I shall bee bound to continue the loue I haue borne your Majestie, which is to prolong my life in your seruice, as the most forward Knight in your roiall Court. The King who had long time fauoured the Duke, taking him by the hand, thus answered. Demand my god Cozyn what you please, and it shall bee granted. Then the Duke deliberately discoursed, what the Prince Lewes and he had intended for the loue of their Ladys: wherewith the King scant content, and maruellung at his hasty enterpise, said. Vnde Cozyn, doe you imagine your selues able to maintayne so hardy a taske, in rellance of so many hardy Knights, wherewith the world is now plentifully stroyed? Believe me, in many Countries are Ladys of greater Beauty ( I doubt ) then is at this tyme in our Realme of France. I promise you, I hardly like what my Sonne and you attempt, but seeing my sword is past, you shall not now bee hindred: doe therefore what your selues thinke expedient, with this consideration alwayes, that the ending of matters is greater then the beginning. The Duke humbly thanking the King, answered. I doubt not my Lord, but by the helpe of God and fauour of our Ladys, to end our affayres with fortunate successe: but if now we shold give ouer, and not go forward with our promise.

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Olva,

promise, we might worthily be reproved of shame and cowards, the most villainous reproches that can be to a noble heart.

The King perceiving the earnest affection of these two young Princes, & that to deny their request would be more hurtfull then to grant: commanded him againe to proceed with their intent, with such strecte against all strange knights, as what losse or victory hapned to them, they must be content with all that fell out. The Duke not a little joyfull, hissing his highnes hand departed, and immedately acquainted Prince Lewes therewith, but notwithstanding the Queen understanding her Sons enterprize, sent for him, and with sad countenance thus spake. I wold (my Son) that the intent of you and the Duke of Savoy, were either awhile deferred, or utterly forgotten, because I greatly doubt, that the end will bring a surerer consequence then you expect. For thinke you, that by all your forces and Chivalry, the beauty of your Ladies shall be any way increased: no helpe me: but if they loue you as logall Friends ought to doe, as greatly will they dislike your enterprise, as fear the danger wherinto you may fall, a master eueng other desire then you think on, and noȝe offensive (perhaps) to them, then any honour you can win can please them. Lewes, who by no means would be disswaded from his concerte, answered. Good Mother, if soȝ no other scarre, this warre shall not be revoked, in regard of the shame, and never dying dishonour I shall gain thereby, which makes my desire a thousand deaths, rather then not to be so good as my wold: therefore perswade your selfe good Mother, that albeit her beauty for whom I enter the Combat, cannot bee more perfect hereby, in that it is without imperfection, yet such is my resolution in a matter so certaine, as her swart looks shall deliver me strength enough to end my taske, without dread of any inconuenience that may happen. The Duchesse ( enflamed with loue ) hearing these words on her behalfe, must needs speake, and thus began. I know not

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

not (my Lord) who is the Lady you loue, nor what are her vertues, but hereof I can assure you, that shes highly beholding to you, and (except great reason to the contrary) ought to loue you, considering what perill you thrust your selfe into for her beauty. Madame (quoth the Prince) he trauell I will take, and the bad fortunes may befall me, are little and of no account in respect of her gracious deserts, theresoȝ for her honour I will bear my inward paines with secret content, and attempt these outward actions with the greatest courage I can possible, bring me other recompence then her sauourable conceit, whereof once assayed, nothing can seeme difficult to me, as, were it to dye in her diuine seruice. And as he wold haue continued longer, the King (not yet throughly content with his promise past to the Duke of Savoy) entred the Chamber, by whose countenance, Lewes well knew he was male-content with him, wherefore falling on his knee, he said. My Lord, no one is ignorant, how all my well-sare and reputation consisteth onely to your Majestie, as a Prince and a Father, the most vertuous that I know: which great good in some part to recompence: I haue enterprised a matter unworþy of diuile, so please your Highnesse (of your accustomed boundynesse) to excuse and accept it in god part, in respect that such as are bound to the highest place of dignity, ought to be more prompt and ready to all magnanimous actions, then their instrumentours, chiefly in prowess, Chivalry, and deeds of estimation. What brought such renowne to Horatius, Mutius Scævola, Marcus Curtius, Manlius Torquatus, and a number moȝe of Romane Knights, if not the courageous following of occasions offered? What made soȝ ever immortall the fame of Marius the Romane Citizens, Hanniball the Carthaginian, and Agesilaus the Greeke, if not the undaunted valour of their mindes, declared in their deedes of kingly consequence? Allegedly I believe, that their Fathers, Uncles, and ancient progenitors never made them noble

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

so ought renowned : what then ? onely vertue, the very  
soverainest of all nobility. For this cause my good Lord  
and Father, having now opportunity, as my Cousin the  
Duke of Savoy hat his soverain, may it please your Grace  
to permit my endeavours with saviour, to the end I may de-  
liver perfect testimony, that I no whit degenerate from your  
heropcall and kingly vertues. The King soarewhat made-  
raiting his former opinion, answered. Trust me donne, full  
well you knwo how to disguise and couer your folly with  
vertues colours, God send it to fall out so well : artle, and  
hat as your Cousin and you haue requested. As it means  
time that you prouide all needfull occasions, that when the  
day comes nothing be wanting. Lewes humbly thanking  
his Father, arose, every one present not a little rejoicing,  
because they feared all wold be squandered. Then began  
the Lords and Ladies to conserue together, and the Da-  
chelle departing to her Lodging, being manned by the  
Prince, did not ( as I thinke ) repent herselue of her leue, as  
a number of you (marching under the same Ensigne) would  
doe the like in such a case. In fine, the Dachelle searesfull of  
the thwars of Fortune, that she shold wozke her disgrace  
by some bad conjectures or wounding reporte, said. I knew  
well (my Lord) the god will you bears me, without any  
further helpes or confirmations by actions so dangerous,  
which I had rather dye then behold, and therefore whatso-  
ever you shall performe, will condemne me as unwarthy  
of so god deserts : in this respect you shall therfore grant  
me ony thing, which is, that above all you haue a care of  
your self, else will perpetually discontent cutte my date, be-  
ing bereaved of the honour of my grene desires. Now  
Madame (quoth the Prince) may I boast of my fortune,  
not doubting to follow the deute of a Lady so vertuous, for  
your frount two;ds prolong my life, else ere this had death  
rob'd you of your knight. The Dachelle hateth with an am-  
iable smile, answered. I wylt not lose you yet good Prince,

103

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

so may I lengthen your life, it shal be for ever. Many solemnite  
thankes the Prince returned, and by this time had brought  
her to her Chamber, where hauing baile lamain, departed.

### Chap. XXXIII.

How the Prince Lewes and the Duke of Savoy, sent their  
Heralds and horsemen into all parts, to make knowne to  
all Knights their enterprises, and the conditions of their  
Combats.



He Prince Lewes sofull of the King his  
fathers consent, but of the gracious an-  
swer of the Duchesse most stell, dispatched  
immediately his Heralds into all the Pro-  
vinces of Europe, who executed their  
charge with such diligence, as there was  
no Court of Emperour, King, or Prince,  
but they declared the enterprise of these two young Princes.  
So that one of the Princes Heralds, accompanied with the  
King of Armes belonging to the Duke of Savoy, came to the  
Emperours Court of Almaine, which then was furnished  
with a great number of Lords and Knights, being there to  
solemnize the day of his birth, but especially Palmerin aboue  
all the rest, triumphing in the loue of his spittress Polinar-  
da. The Heralds being entred the great Hall, found the Em-  
perour sitting in his chayre of state, with many Princes,  
Barons and noble personages about him : who granting  
them liberty of speche, the Herald of France began thus in  
this manner.

Illustrous and most redoubted Emperour, the cause why  
we thus presume before your Majestie, is by the coman-  
dement of the vertuous young Prince Lewes, son to our deare  
Lord Agarie King of France, as also of the Duke of Savoy

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

his Cousin, so good a Knight as may well command : what our message is, so please your highnes to call all your knights in p[re]se[n]ce, because it chiefly concerneth them, we with d[omi]nity will deliver it. The Emperour presently called for all Knights and Gentlemen of his Court, who de Grous of the newes, were not long in coming, before whom he said. Dread Lord, the Prince Lewes of France my master, commends him to your P[ro]fessy with this Letter, may it please your Grace to command it to be read, and you shall sone see the effect of our Embassage. The Emperour caused his Secretary to read it openly, and because it contained what you have heard already, it shal be needless to waste longer time in talks thererof: but the letter being read, the Herald thus proceeded. The Prince my Master ( worthy Emperour ) gives the Knights of your Court ( as else where ) to understand, that he intende to proue by deeds of Armes, how no Lady in the world is comparable in beauty to the Lady he loues, which he will be ready to maintaine in Combat the first of May next, and seven dayes following, in his Tent before the Gates of Paris, there will he verifie it against all comers that dare abrore the contrary. Afterward he rehearsed all the conditions to be obserued in this Combat, and the King of Armes to the Duke of Savoy, made knowne his Masters challenge likewise as you haue heard. The Emperour maruelling at this message, said. Without doubt the Ladys had need to be faire, and my Cousins your Masters valiant and hardy, else it is doubtfull how such an enterprize will fall out, for the affections of persons are diuers, and their foyntunes dangerous, neuerthelesse I desir the issue may sort to their honours. The Lords and Knights haue heard your Message, and I judge some of them will proue to be there, because they prize the beauty of their Ladys at as high a rate, as your Masters doe esteem their faire Friends: yet let them do what they thinke most expedient, because they are old enough to make you answer, As for

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

me, you may salte ( on my behalfe ) the King, my Brother, and my Cousins, to whom I send thanks with all my heart, that they thus acquainted me with their honourable endeavours. All this while the Knights conserred together, with divers iudgements of their pretended Combats : Some of them were either fearefull or too forward: others well advised and prouoked with discrete courage. Among whem repute we noble Palmerin, all penitue, his eyes fixed on the ground, and not a word, having in his spirit discoursed how bitter the diuorce would be of the Eye from his stately object: in the end concluded the Combat, persuading himselfe, not in Christendome, nor in the other thre habitable parts of the Earth, either Emp[er]or, Queen, or Lady, was more accomplished with perfections then his gracious Mistresse Polinarda. And in respect of this Embassage, it semeth to him vituperous, and a dishonour not sufferable, if he shoulde not justifie the truth, and haue so god occasion: wheresupon he desired a thousand deaths, rather then he wold deserre so braue a voyage: and so on his knie before the Emperour, he thus began: Gracious Lord, and my most worthy Patron, I intend ( with your liking and leave ) to depart with all sped possible, to see the Jousts and Combats of France and Savoy: Let it not therefore displease ( for the honour of Chivalry ) that I leue your noble Court a while, but may commit my selfe to this journey, with your fauourable opinion. The Emperour very loth to let Palmerin goe, answered: In god sooth Sir Palmerin, I greatly doubted ( so soone as I heard these newes from France ) that it wold not passe without your presence, which displeaseith me not so much for their folly, as your absence, which is and wll be to me greater griefe then you judge, but let me intreat that thy returne may be sped, and stay no longer then thou hast god occasion. I woulde gladly knowe, wouldest thou grant it me: what Lady she is, for whom you thus adventure: you haue not Palmerin hid it from me.

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

My Lord (quod de) be Dame for whom I enter the Combatt is such, as none may, or ought compare with his singular, rare, and (above all) vertuous, as never would I thinke my selfe worthy to beare Armes, if fears of danger, misfortune, or death it selfe shoulde haue power to pinch me from my duty. And for my Day (the Joules once ended) withiu one moneth or sooner, I intende my retarne to your Majestie: and let me intreat you not to feare any thing in my journey, because I goe for your Honour, and my Sworid Wall ring on the West croast, the ever continuing honours of the Emperour of Almaine. The Emperour unwilling to saye him, and loth to hinder knyghtly Chivalry, said, Without question Palmerin, the Lady is indebted to you, and you declin hastable loue, that for her Beauty you deliuer your selfe to such great hazard; but as for your intent to my honour, I rather delight to haue it by your presence, then thise after such a purpose with your absence. But seeing that you will needs to France, happy Fortune go with you, and make you victorous in all your attempts: which I doubt not, but by your valour and the vertues of your Mistris, the French will not brane so much on the seventeenth of May, as perhaps they will on the first. Provide that before your depart, you demand and haue all things for your journey, as well for such as go in your company, as for your stowre necessary provision: and some will I appoynt to attend on you, that may prevente any treacherous inconuenience. Palmerin not refusing this bountifull offer, with great obaysance thanked the Emperour: and taking his leave for that night, returned to his Chamber, determining to depart with all expedition, because the day of the Joules were at hand. Now was Trincus the Emperours Sonne a young Prince, who had not yet receaved his order of knyghtheod, his hearing of Palmerins departure, was maruellous desirous to haire him compaines: whereupon he knedes before his Father intreating him not to deny him one request. Demand what thou wile

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

my Sonne (quoth he) I grant it thy. When I beseech you good Father, saythe, to suffer me for France with noble Palmerin, that I may be acquainted with the courtisie and celerity of that Nation, not doubting but soone to deserue my Knyghtheod. And yet if before I receive my order, I see these high and worthy deeds of Armes, happily may they enclite me to follow their vertues: besise, if now I lose so god an occasion offered, I know not when I shall compass the like commodity, therfore (good Father) let me not be denyeid. The Emperour offendid for his rash promise to his Sonne, laboured to change his minds, yet all would not serue, for the Prince prouised to go so couertly, as none shold know him. Wherefore he called Palmerin, who as yet was not departed the Hall, saying. If sir Palmerin, you shall not go alone in your voyage, for my Son Trincus desires to be your companion: for which cause I command him to you, and desire you to conceiue so well of him, as at your returne we may be all merry together. Which Palmerin promised, whereupon the Emperour called for the master of his house, commanding hym that all things might be in readinesse against thir departure: all which was done with such diligence, as the third day following all things prepared, they took their leue of the Emperour and the Ladies, who at their departure shed many teares (a common matter with them) wishing the victory and honour to Palmerin. Thus with Trincus and twenty other knyghtes, a great number of Squires and servants in good chulpage, they journeyed towards Paris without any hinderance, by the way, of matter of memoij.

Now before we passe any further, you shall understand, that after the Veralds of the Prince of France and Duke of Savoy were departed, and that Palmerin had obtained leue of the Emperour, the Princesse Polinarda aduertised hereof, was greatly displeased with his sudden departure, wherefore calling Vibanillo the Dwarfe to her, she said:

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

said: Vrbanillo, thou must go to thy Master, and will him this night to met me at our appointed place, that I may conferre with him, of a secret rarely concerning me.

Which when Palmerin heard, the earth being couered with her black mantle, and every one in their dead sleep, hee called Ptolome and Vrbanillo, who were all well acquainted with this lone walk, and being there in presence of their Ladies, the Princesse with a great sigh thus began.

Alas my Lord, what minde is this in you, thus to boyage towards France, and to leue me alone sad and solitary? Alas, not content to hazard so long a journey, but also a dangerous Combat besy for my Beauty, which is a thing of so slender estimation, as may not Parragon with the Ladies of France, being Paretelle (as I haue heard) among those of highest perfection. Ah my Lord, moze comsoyt and content it is for me to haue your company, then to be crowned Queen of any Realme conquered by your woxthe vertues and pwoer. Thereforse (sweet Friend) I intreat you with all my heart, and by the unsained lous you beare me, to leane such dangerous Enterprizes, where death is commonly moze frequent then life.

These words came with such amiable consernation from the Princesse, as Palmerin, (though loath to be dissuaded) answered. Let me prunile with you so farre good Madame, as not to mislike my Enterprize for your gracious Loue, for the honour you haue done me, in making me your Knight, I prize at no lesse value than my deare blood, and shold I be held from these French exploits, unwoxthe were I to be your Servant: in that (as you well know) no Knight but carreyes the honour of his Lady in such account, as he preferres that before his owne life. If then Madame, in religion of this office, I absint my selfe for a while, I shal accomplish nothing but my duty, whereto your selfe bound me, and I hope to exectate with such successe, as you shall beare the prize of Beauty, not onely from the faire Ladies

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

of France and Almaine, but from all Chyssendome, yea, the whole world, may I live to traualle it.

Doenot then ( sweet Mistresse ) mislike, if I absent my selfe, soz a cause so reasonable, and continue me still in your fauourable conceit, as he that was besy to doe you service, And albeit I cannot depart without exceeding griefe and anguish, yet perswaded of your rare arguments, I came my selfe with patience to yeld to reason, being present with you alwayes, in that I carry your diuine image in my soule, and leue heart, life, and all, till I come.

These words were sealed with many devout kisses, and Ptolome had like paynfull perswading Bryonella, yet this contented them in the end, that the honour of their tranell was the renowme of their Beauty: and so with forced content they most loyally departed.

The next morning, the Princesse sent palmerin an Arming-coat of greene Velvet, embroidered all ouer with great Orientall Pearles, and very thicke beset with Starres of gold, and in the midle of each Starre a costly Emerald: and he had caused her Picture to be most curiously drawne in the purest Arabian gold: her face and hand formed wonderfull were the liso, and all her Linaments very singularly shapen, and this her portraite caused to be set in a saphir Lister covered ouer with Crimsen Velvet, which he had purpos'd exely for the purpose, and so set sojward.

CHAP. XXXIII.

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

### C H A P. XXX I I I.

How the Prince Lewes came to see the Duchesse of Burgundy: And what hapned.



S

o loons as the Heralds and Horsemen of Lewes of France and the Duke of Savoy had dispatched their Charge, these Loyds gaue direction to prepare all things in readines so soon as might be; but yet the Princes affection to the Duchesse did so torment him, as he dayly compassed new meanes to conserue both her, that she might know y passions he endured for her sake.

At length it camc to passe, that the King and the Duke of Burgundy, and divers other Princes, rode sooth on pleasure together, and returned not againe for two dages space, which made him thys begyrne with the Duchesse. I wad not tell you Madame, soz you know it well enough, how continually I languish in remediate affections, till now this oþer: whiche pats me in some hope of confort, that you performing so solenm promise, will deliuer me out of this extremity.

Wherfore faire Duchesse, since tyme and occasion hath peyned it, and Fortune (by Nature froward and inconstant) fauours it: Let me intreat you to take the benefit of boty, least hereafter we compasse not the like agayne.

My Lord (quoth the Duchesse) you must thinke I am more yours then mine own, and make that reckoning of you, as no Lady can the like: how is it possible then soz nice (loving as I lons) to flye from that which lons commandys me to fulfill? Let it suffise you then, that the regard of mine honoȝ refinded, I am ready to do ought may agree with your liking. What hapned afterwarus I leau to your opinions, but by the halfe the whole may be discorne: notwithstanding,

### Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

Planting, vertuous Ladyses haue power to resist such mortis, though time, occasion, and such amorous sollicitings did offer it them: but such may bee accounted moze vaine then humane, and to them may worthily be erected a Trophée, in disgrace of the Empresse Venus. But this little discourse not much dissenting from the matter, is written in reproach of such young dayng Mantons, that so vainely attend on their ouer-fond and vachaste dessres: And may likewise be a warning to undiscerte old men, that they choose their Pantos, ne fit soz their wifes.

But now is come the first of May, the day to begin the Enterpryses of the Princes of France, and Savoy: Lewes to entayn the Duchesses Loge, begun with such abbantage, had greater desire now to execute his intent then before. Wherfore this day was his Pavillion erected neare the City Gates, being beautifull and very sumptuous: and at the entrance thereof was placed a goodly monumēnt of black Marble, curiously set forth with columns of white Marble, very thick embossed with gold and pearls. At the side of his Pavillion was placed another monumēnt of grēne Jaspe, adorned with many Bases, Pillars, and antique Imagery of Gold, whercon he intended the Strange Knights that came should place the figures of their Ladyses. On the other side was appoynted a stately place for the Judges of the Field, who were the Dukes of Orleance and Burgundy: Princes highly esteemed for their nobility, and in their tyme had been hardy and aduenturous Knights. Many other Tents and Pavillions were that day there set vp, as well for Strange Knights that came, as for Noble men and Gentlemen of the Realme. And now comes in the Prince hauily mounted to the Field, accompanied with many young Princes, Knights, and Gentlemen: the Heralds and Kings of Armes riding before, Drumes, Pibises, Trumpets and Clarions sounding so gallantly as made the Ayre deliuer a most sweete Echo. We cloze him in a very sumptuous

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

tuous Coach, was carried the curious counterfeit of the Duchesse, so superficially set forth, and with such perfection of Art, as though it had been the Duchesse herself.

After followed Prince Lewes, in rich and glorious guyle Armour, all over grauen with most artificiall floweris, and mounted on a courser of Spaine, esteemed one of the best runnerys of Europe, which made way with brayne and lesy voltages, as did not a little delight the beholders: one of the chiche Princes of the Court bearing his Helmet, and another his Gaunce. What need I make further report of the Princes triumph? He comming to the field with such Equy-page, as well besmeid the house from whence he descended, and as besmeid a louely Knight in presence of his Lady: who as her fauour had sent him that morning, a coully Cradle garnished with Rubrys, Diamonds, great Emeralds, and other unvaluable rich Stones, with a Bow; so good as euer Knight wore, and therewith rode he girded to the Field. Besoore he went, the King his Father thus spake to him.

My Sonne, this day and all the erher following, Fortune spred the so well, as thou mayst winne the honest my heart both with the. My most need, ( answered the Prince) I hope before y sennight be finished, to accomplish your desirs effectually, so fauour me she that may command me. So leaving the King, he came to the place appornted for the Combat, the Judges placing themselves where they shoud, and the Prince himselfe in his Tent, where having his Spouse picture set on the appornted place, he commanded the trumpets to sound, and a Herald to proclaimme, that no Knight bearing Armes, shold be so hardy as to enter his Tent, except he first granted his Lady to be the most fairest creature in all the world: and if any were so stubborne not to confessse it, by knightly provis he woud force him to doe it.

The Herald having done his charge, and the Judges caused the Conditions to be scrent man, and the People diuided themselves in convenient places, and the Lords, Ladys, and Gentle-

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

Gentlewomen betook them to their Tents and Stalles. The first that entred the field against the Prince, was the Count Durcell of Aragon, his fourt Squires, conducting before him in a great gorgeous Litter, the Statu of his Milde Dame Daughter to the King of Aragon, the fairest Lady in all Spayne, and for whose Beauty he tooke in hand this quarrell. After him came fourt other Squires, the foremost leading his Courser, the second bearing his Helmet, the third his Shielde, and the fourth his Gantlets and Lance: and coming to the monument appornted for Strange Ladies, caused the portrait of his Lady to be placed thereon: then comming to the Princes Tent, said. I know not Lord Lewes, if overcome with glory, presumption of your Strenght, or overwonting your selfe, you haue made this large enterprize, to Combat with the best appornted Knights in the whole world, in judging no fairest Lady, to bid this day iuring then your swone: so mine owne part, I am not troublid in conceit as you are, to quarell so such a fabulos matter, yet dare I tell you that my Lady is much more beaultifull then yours, which if you will bryng, I am ready by the strenght of mine armes to make you confessse it. Lewes falling himselfe grieved with these injurous speches of the Count, answered. Your Knight, I am ashamed to heare the judgement so simple, as to thinks I am come hither for a matter of so light moment, as though I would not jalkide against the and all other what I haue promised: but let that passe, besoore we depart he will cause the know thy folly, by that time thy pate and thy body is thjowly bumbassen, looke to thy selfe, so I intende to see it. So mounting on baysebacke, and prepared as it had been to a warre mortall, encountring each other with such fury, as their Lances flying in shivers up into the ayre, they met together so terriblely with their bodies, their Shieldes, their Spoxes and their heames, as they were both dismanted to the ground. But earnest desire to vanquish, they being beside, strong

and

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

and well disposed Knights, made them begin quickly the second assault with their Swords, which was so dangerous, and handled with such dexteritie, as it was hard to saye who would have the honour of the Combat. But Lewes by holding the representation of his Lady, and considering her so excellent and fauourable to him, took heart alread, and (as it were inspired with new biseur) so laid on the Count Durcell, as in the meane while he brought him under the mercy of his Sword, when holding it against his thoate; her said, Peremptory Knight, is now I have conseille not my Lady to crenell thine in beauty, thy hoolseter head shall ratifie the folly. The Count ( for all this ) would not answer one word, by reason of the debility he felte himselfe in, having lost so much of his bloud, as soz the grise he conceirde to bee thus vanquished: whereat Prince Lewes not content, would haue taken his head from his shoulders, but the Engages of the Field came to him, saying. My Lord, you ought to forbeare, having brought your enemy beyond his owne defence, your licey being sufficient to content you, forbids his death. The Prince perswaded, entred his Pavillion, and joyfull of his conquest, commanded two Gallants of the Field to take the figure of the Princesse of Aragon, and place it at the feete of the Duchesse countessit: which was done immedately, and the Count Durcell brought into his owne Tent, where the Chirurgions tooke diligent care for the curing of his woundes. Soon after came a Knight of Myllaine, who gluing farr distanc as the other did, was in the end constrained with great shame, to contynue under the conquering Sward of Lewes, the imperfections of his Lady, and her statute placed by the Princesse of Aragon. The same day were the great Lords of Italy brought in like subjection, and so the triumph ended till the next day, when the first that came into the field was a brawe Gallant of Spaine, a Knight of good estimation, and specially reputed, who after a valvnglorious battayn made

( 48 )

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

(as the nature of the people is that way affected) put his fortune to the tryall of his Lance: where he sped so ill, as he was unhoised, and in the following Combat likewise received the soule. After him seauen other Knights of Castile perished as unforunates, their Ladys Pictures all reme- ronning the Duchesse, who being not a little prouide of her Knight, and the memorizable renoume he binnesed of her beauty, I leave to your considerations, both for her conceit that way, as also to loue towards the Prince, who seeing no man ready to enter this quarrell, returned thence to the Wallace, to conserue with his sweet Pittys of his high good fortunes.

### C H A P. XXXV.

Of the Combat betweene Prince Lewes of France, and Crenus the Duke of Gaule.



Great pleasure did the King conceire, and all the nobilitie of the Court, at the gotten victories of Prince Lewes, against so many worthy Knights, so that they altogether accounted him most fortunate. And now the third day where he was entred his Tent, an English Knight ( no lesse brawe in armes then the other ) deffed the Prince, and betweene them begann a dangerous conflic, in the middest whereof, the King with many Princes, Barons, and Lords, as also the Queen and the Duchesse of Burgundy, came to their standynge, and unhappy beheld the soule of the English Knight, the Duchesse hearing him conseille her beauty, and beheld his Ladys portrait placed under hers. But now the courageous Duke of Gaule named Crenus, came brawely mounted into the field, doing his duty to the King. Queen, and Ladys,

( 49 )

who

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

who not knowing him, by his Armes judged him some great Lord, in that no Knight before caused so good opinion generally, nor came with brawer countenance into the field, he being indeed a Prince of wonderfull possessions, and a Knight at Armes worthily provided. The Duke (as all the other had done) caused his Ladys counterfet to be placed where it ought by his Squires, to the no little admiration of all the beholders, noting what rare and excellent beauty it was adorneed withall, the workman having perfized such exquisite perfections, as it had bene the Lady her selfe naturally living: while the Squires were thus placing it on the monument, the Duke advanced himselfe to Lewes, in this manner. The overmuch selfe conceit (Lord Lewes) of mirthes but easly acquatated with matters of difficulty, hath often borne, and yet is the cause to plucke great personages moore lobe then they expect: so that men haue seen them deceived of their intents, and rewarded with ridiculous shame and confusion. This speake I to you, having here begun a busynesse, the end whereof will be more hard to you, then as yet the beginning hath binne: for Europe is sufficently stoked with hardy Knights to asswage your presumptuous opinion, and Ladies much moare faire and excellent, then she whom you contend so. And this (by the fauour of Fortune, gracious regard of my Lady and Mistresse, and helpe of my good Sword) will I enforcze you to confess, that incomparable Agriola, daughter to the King of England, for vertue, for beauty, and all divine perfections, exceedeth yours whatsoeuer she be. Besoyle such a leasing (quoth the Prince) shall passe the lippes of a Monyne of France, either will I consent to her peacemeale tones in sandre, and before faire Phoebus haue paced one hours journey, I doubt not to make thee repent thy pride and arrogancy. By the soule of King Arthur, said the Duke, look thou guard thy selfe well, for I haue / with my courtesie, abate the pride of a better man then thy selfe, anders-

## Emperour of Constantinopie. PART. I

we two part, I meane to try if I can doe it againe, therfore resolve thy selfe to thy best defensio[n], for (by my life) I will not saveur thee. Without any further speches they encountring with such violence together, as Prince Lewes was thowne bewene his horses late, and he for England lost his stirrups, but recovered himselfe well enough by the mane of his Horse: then he seeing his enemy got vp againe: cast himselfe out of the Saddle to haue taken his advantage, but Lewes prevented him, and came marching against the Duke with his sword drawne, who stayed him thus. He thinks Prince of France besyze any worse besyze thee, thou wert best to yeld thy selfe, and remember that our Combat beginnes for the excellency of Beauty. By God man of England, answered Lewes, thou canst not perswade me to a thing so farre from my thought, therfore goe too, and he that hath the fayrest friend shall sone bee knowne. In this great choller he reached the Duke such a stroake on the head, as made him set one knee to the ground, but recovering himselfe quickly, and both thowzonly angry, they laydon each other so cruelly, as the very hardiest of the beholders feared the successe. Thus fought they for matter of spectall value, the defence of their owne reputations, and honour of their Ladys, whose lobe was moare precious in their hearts then their owne lives. So long these eager charges continued on both sides, as Prince Lewes having receivid moare then twenty wounds on his body, setting himselfe faint, fell downe before his enemy, saying. O noble heart of France, the true succeder of thy famous predecessors. The victorous Englishman setting his foote vpon him, said; Lord Lewes, if now thou declare not my Lady to excell thine in beauty, it coste thee thy life, a master nothing pleasing to me, in respect of the chivalry and singular prouesse I haue found in thee, as also this magnanimoous enterprize of thine, which in despight of thy soyle, and death it selfe, shall make thee live for ever. But Lewes made

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

No answer, either for his weaknesse, or sorrowfull conceit of his misfortune, wherefore the Judges came, who granting the Duke victory, desired him to proceed no further, which he honourably grantinge, was as joyfull of the conquest, as the Duchesse sad and penisue, thinking Prince Lewes had beene slaine cutright: wherefore she flung away to her lodgynge, not tarrying for the King or any of the Ladies, who likewise departed the field in matuillous sorrow, seeing their Son so pitifully wounded: but above all, the Duchesse made moze lamentation, then she wold haue done for the death of her husband, yet fearing what shes thought secretly, shold by her griesse be openly suspected, remeited her selfe so well as she could: and being by her selfe, with one of her trusty Gentlewomen, she thus breaþed forth her moanes. Ah trecherous Fortune, enemy to all actions of regard, why haſt thou suffered the man that I most lauoured, thus to be vanquished? and (which is most to be pitied) without hope of life? Ah deceiptfull tromperesse, laſing thou haſt offered him so much wyng, doſ me the fauour to beare him company in deth, that liued and dyed so honourably for my loue. Ah death, let it suffice thee that loue hath wounded him, and make not thou expertent of thine ineuitable stroake, unlesſe thou wilt doe as much for me. Ah falle and flattering Bonne of Venus, is this the guerdon thou rewardest them withall that serue thee faithfully? So ceasing her complaint a while, in great impatience she thus began agayne. Alas, neither the one nor other arte cause hereof, but my moſt unhappy ſelfe, when (pronoked by my beauty) he tooke in hand this enterprize, but if it be ſo (deers friend) that envious fate deale to haſt with thee, ſong mayſt thou be revenged on her that caused it. And with these wordes ſhee ſell betweens the armes of one of her Ladys present, whom ſhe ſpecially truſted, who thus ſpake to her. Why how now Madame? will you perſwade your ſelfe no otherwise? believe me there is no remedy but you

MIC

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I

muſt change your conceit. What wile you forget your ſelfe: it is no time if you remember your ſelfe well, ſo if haſt whom you loue and endure thole paines for, ſhould underſtand hereof, in stead of ſaking his health, you will ſpend ten bladages, if (as you ſay) he live not without your wellfare. O! what requisite is it that you go comfort him with your chearefull preſence, then thus to be the argumēt of both your deaths. Well Madame, if my Lord ſuruiue, as no doubt he ſhall, what may be presumed & truly we matter ſufficient (if you gouerne not your ſelfe better) that you ſeke to diſcouer, what moſt of all beſemeſ you to conceale. Alas (my friend) answered the Duchelle, I know you ſpeaketh the truth: but howis it poſſible for me to content my ſelfe, ſaying what estate he is in, only for my loue? But if he dye, ſmall reckoning will I make of my life: ſo let my honour be blamed or otherwise, let all adverſities and misfortunes go together. Yet will I ſomewhat be aduised by theſe, and I will goe ſee if my preſence will any thing comfort him. To breakes off this talke, came an Esquire from the Queens, to intreat her come to her Spayre: which ſhe did, and went with the Queen to the Prince Lodging, who beholding the Duchelle ſo pale and full of griesse: and with this conceit his wounds opened and bled afresh, ſo which cauſe the Chirurgons, who imagined the occation to proceed by shame the Prince conceived, that any one ſhould ſee what wounds he tooke by the Duke of Gaule, wherefore they forbad any to enter his Chamber, until the perill of death were better paſſed over, which was withiout ſhort time, when the Duchelle by her often viſiting him, conuerteſt his ſorowes into many joyfull conceits. But because our history appertaines not onely to hiſtories, or the loue of the Duchelle, we will returne to the Duke of Gaule, who after he had thus conuerced Prince Lewes, followed the conditions of the field, taking the portrait of his Lady Agriola, and placed it where the Duchelle Picture stood, ſetting

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

setting it among the other conquered Ladies. That day divers other Knights came on behalfe of their Ladys, whom the valiant Englishman entertained with such valour, as all his paines turned to the honour of his Mistresse Agiola, who now was seated as paragon of the field.

### C H A P. XXXVI.

Of the Combat betwene Palmerin and the Duke of Gaule, and of the successe thereof.



¶ the same day that the Prince of Fiance was vanquished by the Duke of Gaule, and their traine, but the Combat was first ended, wherfore they commanded their Squires to prepares their Tent. Palmerin understanding that the Duke was conquer'd, grieved not a little, in that he cens no sooner to win the honour of the Prince: yet knowing, if now he could conquer the Duke, moze honour shold arise to him then by the Prince Lewes, he contented himselfe, passing that night in his Tent with the Prince Trineus, in divers arguments of the Combat betwene Lewes of Fiance and the Duke: yet w<sup>s</sup> Lewes highly commended of Palmerin though he were overcome, because he had so bravely done the two former daies against all the Knights that came. All this night could not Palmerin sleepe, thinking on the day ensuing, but rising early in the morning, and commanding himselfe to God in his prayers, he put on the Coate of Armes his Lady Polinarda gave him before his departure, and tooke the counterfeit of his Lady in his armes, not thinking any of his Knights or Squires worthy to beare it, and thus accompanied with Trineus and other Almaine Lords, en'red the Rys with so brave

a

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

a gessure and countenance, as every man commended him self a god Knight. And having placed the Picture on the accustomed shewement, as it had bene to the lively creature her selfe, he thus regat. Oh perfect myght of all beauty, vertue, and excellency, resolve thy selfe this day, to beare the Palme of honour from all Ladys in the World, in that your Knight craves a thousand deaths, before he gives consent to the contrary: and persuades himselfe so assidely of your present favour, as he durst ven int on a whole Armie, to keep his religion in your divine service. These words were spoken so loud, as the Duke of Gaule heard him, whereupon not contented, he answered. What now Knight, remandest thou (onge) of a Lady to delect her Beauty? I'll causeth thee persone what thou speakes, if then be no better provided. Her all that Sir, said Palmerin, I hope to r'ake you graunt what I say, and that there is not a sarrax Lady living, then she whose figure thou here beholdest, otherwise I shall constraine thee to verifie it, whether thou fult or no.

What shall we sone sa (quoth the Duke:) So departing into their Tents to be arm'd, and ready to fente, they met so valiantly together, as both of them brake their lances bravely without meeting each other, and taking new Shabees, encountered againe, where the Duke was unhez'd, and Palmerin very soze wounded: So betaking them to their good Swords, continued a dangerous and doubtful Combat, till in the end Palmerin overcame the Duke, and holding his Sword ready to cut off his head, said, Looke to me dead, if then graunt not my Lady to excell Nine in beauty. Oh Sir, (said the Duke) unhappy be the houre that you tooke in hand this voyage, to deprive me of that which made me the most happy Knight of the World, with what countenance may I present myselfe before her, saing Ffoune hath been so adverse to me? Thus filling the ayre with his regrets, the Judges came desiring Palmerin to save his life, whereupon he consented; which words were moze bitter to the Duke then death

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

death, who in these complaints was led into his Tent by his Squires. Palmerin not forgetting the honour to do to his Lady, tooke downe the Image of Agrioli, and set his Ladys in the same, saying: Now are you in the place Spadane, whiche is your owne by right. His victory was not a little pleasant to þ French-men, but specially to the Prince Lewes, when he heard thereof: who the better to make his joy knolne to Palmerin, sent him two of the best Horses in his Stable, as glad of the revenge on the Duke, as that Palmerin remained Conqueror. Palmerin sent hearty thanks to the Prince, as well for the present as his good will, and so continued in his deuote to his Ladys beauty, as that day he honoured her with the conquest of fourt Fierch knyghts, and the submision of their Ladys portraatures: yet above all, Palmerin commended to Trineus, the valour of the Englishman, concerning the Duke for a chosen Knight at Arms, and neither French man, Italian, Spanyard, English man, Romane, or Grecce, that attempted against Palmerin, in the following daies: but still he bare alwaþ the victory, and Polinardes Picture their Ladys obeylance: The last of the eight daies, came into the field the Lord of Albert, greatly exceded for Doywesse and Chivalry, and he wold defend the Beawry of his French Lady: but Palmerin after a long and tedious fight, brought him and his Squire among the vanquished, and so concluded the French Princes enterprize, to his owne immortall honour. Afterwards came the King Agariel, with the Princes and Lords of his Court to Palmerins Tent, making him the greatest entertainment could be devised, whereof Trineus, and the other Almaine Lords were higly contented, and after his Wounds were healed, caused him and his company to be lodged in his owne Palace, where the Queen and her Ladys would often visite him, and the Prince Lewes likewise, who by many intreates with Trineus, understood ver Name for whom Palmerin thus aduentured. But when the King understood, that

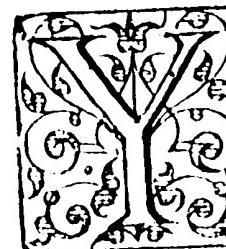
Trineus

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Trineus was the Emperour of Almaine Sonne, and at this honourable Company came from his Fathers Court, their Welcome cannot be sufficiently set downe, nor Palmerins prases effectually rehearsed: whom the Prince Lewes thus entertained. In god sooth Sir Palmerin, the Prince may imagine himselfe happy, that is honoured with your Knighthly service, above all, the Noble Emperour of Almaine. My Lord (q.d. Palmerin) it likes you to speake your pleasure of me, yet did I never know Knights moze worshippe in fighþ then your Countrey men, among whom your deserts may not escape unreported, no more then the deeds of Scipio can among the Romanes. Many other honourable and familiar speeches passed betwene the Prince and Palmerin, about the Ladys Figures, that we brought to the Quells. Polinarda, onely triumphing beyond all the rest, having no second but faire Agriola of England, the goddesse and Mistresse of the Duke of Gaule.

### CHAP. XXXVII.

Of the Combate which the Dukes of Savoy and Lorrayne had together, for the beauty of their Ladys: and what was the issue thereof.



þa haue here before heard, the Enterprise of the Duke of Savoy, for the beauty of his Lady, and how after Prince Lewes his daies of Combat were finished, he shold maintaine nine others in the like quarrell: Wherefore the day after Palmerins victory, he puts himselfe in order as he tyme required, and having in the field erected two Pillars of Porphyre, displacing them that belonged to the Prince Lewes, his Tent was there set up all of Crimson vellat, very curiously embrodered with Gold and pearle, and

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliver,

And round about within, were Inscriptions of many brave sentences of Lobo, extacted from Historiographers and Poets, as well in Greek, as in Latine, in praise of the Mistresse of his debated affections. In the morning he went to give the good myrrh to the Princessse Lucemania, Daughter to the King of France, whom he had chosen for his Spouse and wife. After many solemnise courtesies passed betweene them, scarling the Queen shoulde finde them togeher, he take his leave of her, the giving him from her arme a sumptuous Bracelet, garnished with sixe great Diamonds, and sixe faire Rubies: which gife much encouraged him to follow his Enterprise. Being come into the Field, the Judges appered were the eldest Senne of France, and the Count of Armigra: base Princes and valiant Knights at Armes, and standing in the Gate of the Tent unarmed, because he saw none ready to offer him Battell, the Duke of Lorraine at length entred the Field, attendeden by a brave company of Knights and Squires, who brought the portrait of his Lady, being a Dame of great Beauty, and having a Crorne on her head, where over was written in great Letters of Gold, This is Polimudi, exceeding in Beauty all Ladys in the world: Which was read by many, who could not satisfie their eyes in beholding so brave a spectacle, and being late on the Pillar appoynted, he came to the Duke of Savoy, saying: Blasphemous Knight, detractor of the Beauty of Ladys, here may thine owne eyes witness how thou hast beliede Beauty, in presuming to think any moze faire then t is incomparable Creature, to whom thy Lady may not worthily be hand-maid. And if thou wilt not presently confess what I command thee, shield thy head from my weapon, which I meane to knock well for thy great indiscretion. The Duke of Savoy engaged with these words, Armed himselfe presently without any answer, and mounting on Horseback, with a strong Launce in his hand, encountered his enemy so couragiously, as breaking both their

Staves

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. II.

Staves brisly in shivers, to their very Gannetts, passed on without any further harme. The Duke of Savoy sayng that he had not dismounted his enemy, with his sword drawne returned furcely upon him, and laid on such strokes as the fire sparkled from his Helmet: yet the Duke of Lorraine, like a god and hardy Knight, defended himselfe most valiantly, and reached the Duke of Savoy many sharped Wounds, so that both of them (being thoroughly mettled) rent each others Armes, in such sorte with their Swords, and mangled their flesh so unmercifully, as the Judges could not knowe who had the better vantage. The Duke of Savoy wondering to see the Duke of Lorrayne hale out so long, began to stowme moze like a fiend then a man, rayling on fortune, that (in respect of his Ladies beauty) he aldermy no better, and being at the very point of despaire, took horse astrewe, and redoubling his stroaks vpon his adversary, at length threw his horse vnder him, who falling downe, and his Master with him, by reason that he was soze wearied, and valed, and beide, had broken his thigh in the fall, could not recover himselfe, before the Duke of Savoy (being alighted) set foot vpon him, & in fury would haue parted his head from off his shoulders, but onely that the Judges ranne quickly and stayed him. Then was the Duke of Lorrayne halfe dead carried into his Tent, and the Duke of Savoy caused Polimudis Pictures to be set at Lucemania's feet: a thing very strange in respect of their great difference. Afterwards he was unarmed to haue his Wounds bound vp: which were so dangerous, as gladly he would haue bene excused from the Combat with any other Knight for that day, did not shame, and the Lawe he had made himselfe prouoke him to the contrary. But within an houre after, was dealed by a Knight of Scicilia, who would Combate on foot, with the battell Axe, in which confit the Duke was very nare enesome, he had lost so much blood before: but yet in battle, the

Stici-

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

Sicilian Knight lost the day, his Ladies Picture was yel-  
des conquered, and the Duke of Savoy went to kill him in  
his Tent.

### C H A P. XXXVIII.

How the Duke of Savoy entered the Combat against Pto-  
lome, and how he sped.

**P**ALMERIN not as yet in perfect health, was aduertised how the Duke of Savoy had conquered the Duke of Lorrain, fighting for the Beauty of the Princesse Polinarda; the conceit whereof so grieved him as nothing could moore, to see her honour so badly defended whom aboue all other he esteemed dearest, which made him in great choller, say before the Prince Trineus. By God (my Lord) I have made a slender choyce of the Duke of Lorrain for his knyght, and Madame Polinarda seemed to be scant wise to choose him for her Chamption, in respect of the excellente Beauty Nature hath bestowed on her. And yet it could not be imagined, how the Duke of Lorrain shold gains the victory without shame, in seeking honour beyond his deserte, because he is unworthy of such exzynary favour, which makes me repute it rather of a faint heart, then any want of just quarrell. Trineus hearing Palmerin so affectionate in his speches, in a mery laughter, said. In god sword Sir Palmerin, the Duke of Lorraine was but ill counseled, to enter the Combat for my Sisters beauty without her licencie, in that he once learned, how you could defend it much better then he. Palmerin fearing he had spoken moore then he might, because he discoursed his loue too openly, excused the matter thus. If it were not (my Lord) that I doubt to offer wrong to a Lady, on whom dependeth my life,

### Emperour of Constantiople. PART. I.

life, and whom I lob: moore daire then my selfe: I would cause the Frenchman well to understand, how Madam Polinarda your Sister, surpasseth in all perfections, eyther of grace or beauty, all the Ladies of the Countrey: yea, I dare say of the whole World; therfore one may easily conjecture, that the Duke of Lorrain in the Combat, had his mind fixed on baser occasions. Then Trineus smiling to Sir Palmerin so diligent to shadow his loue, said: It is no strange matter (friend Palmerin) to see presuming knyghts pavois with selfe-same Coyne, as the Duke is: and yet I cannot marv. It enough, that my Sister Polinarda would not commit this matter to my charge, she having had le gud knowledge of your Valour and Provocac. These speeches pleased not Palmerin a little; and did in such sort encourage him, as so the injury done his Lady by the Duke of Savoy, in setting her Figure at the feet of Lucemania, had not Trineus perswaded him with faire speches, all sick and soze as he was, he would have gone to revenge this evill neare. notwithstanding, he called Peolomie secretly, saying: Thou knowest (my deere friend) what shame is offered her, to whom I was destinatene before my birth, by the presumpcion of an overbold Knyght, and what grefe it is to me, that I cannot at this present revenge the wrong my selfe. I pray thee therefore supply my infirmitie, and enter the Combat with that batne glazious Duke, of whom thou mayest gaine honour and yeld me content, in gibing easse to my affalons, which are insupportable. I promise you (my Lord) answered Ptolome, before you made the motion I intended it, and I will accomplish it with such good will, as I make no doute to overcome the Duke of Savoy. And so my Knyght Brionella, will I enter the Field, whose beauty is sufficient to enrich me with the victorie, for surely in my conceit, she farre surpasseth Lucemania. Therfore my Lord let me request one courtesie, which I am loath you should deny me; that if you shall be able to morrow bat to

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

accompany me with your presence in the field. If the Ayrs will suffer me, (quoth Palmerin) I will, in meane while, I will pray, that thy Fortune may fall out to my harts desire.

Thus Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolomie, were passing the time, conserning with other noblemen, of the batur of the Duke of Savoy, against all strange Knights: & how he had soyled the Duke of Lorrain, had not his Horse falleon him, and mainned him: otherwise, he brought the Combat to a godd a Judgement, as he had wonne the hono<sup>r</sup> of the Field. Therent Palmerin was mo<sup>r</sup>e offendid then before, because himselfe was not able to revenge this misfortune: Herefullall he conceyved a kyns of Jealousie of th<sup>e</sup> Duke of Lorraine, because he had chosen his Lady Polinarda for his Mistresse, and on her behalfe he had entred the Combat: and how he durst place her picture on the Pillar with her name, without he had recevید some commandement from her: Which conceit so grieved him, as his wounds began to be as dangerous as at the first, continually lauozing in his thoughts; Now with the lightnesse, then againe with the inconstancy of Women, nevertheless he could no<sup>t</sup> judge, (affecting earnestly the vertues of his Lady) that we would be of such a double lking: and in this doubtfull estate, sayd.

Ah God, I see that Women bin lightly, and loose again mo<sup>r</sup>e easily. Then repenting his words, follows en thus: O heavens, and what shall I say? It is impossible that she (meauing Polinarda) shold be so forgetfull, and never will I beleve, that a Princesse so wise and vertuous would reward me with such Treason, which may not, nay I dare sware cannot once enter her thoughts. Yet would not all opinions serue to allay this new jealousy, but still it had power to confound reason: and all the night continued he in this variably conceit, til the next morning, wh<sup>e</sup> Ptolomie (so sauo as the sun arose) accompanied with Trineus, went to his Tent, wh<sup>e</sup> being armed, all saving his Helmet, hauing

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I

hauing his Lance and Shielde, he came to the Duke, saying, Thou knowest right the cause of my comming, Stand vpon the guard, for I fight for beauty. The Duke subdenly at these wordes mounted on horseback, and ranne against his enemy with such strenght, as Ptolome cast the Duke soff of his Saddle. and suddenly alighted with his sword drawne: but the Duke reconering himselfe, enterained him in sharper soff than he expected. Now began betwene them a cruell and pittous Combat, as their Armo<sup>r</sup>, Shields and Swords, fletw about in pieces, and the bloddruckling downe their badges in many places, so that it was generally reputed, how the fight could not end without the losse of both their liues. Yet in the end, the Duke being of stronger constitution then Ptolome, and gredy of victory over his enemy, ran so violently upon hym as he got hym on the ground, and he being overmost, offered to take the advantage of his life: but the Judges so bidding it, caused Ptolome to be carried into his Tent, where the Prince Trineus stayed, not a little; sorry for this great misfortune. The Duke likewise soff wounded was carried into his Pavillion, but first he saw the portrait of Brionella set in the rank of the conquered. The same day did the Duke fight with a knyght of Scotland at the space, who not nimble enough in usyn that weapon, in the end had the sole, and three other knyghts afterwards at severall wepons, so that it was admirable to behold the exploits of Armes the Duke did, in that no knyght as yet medled with hym, but departed with shame, and their Ladys plagues placed as vanquished. And now was Palmerins Combat against the Duke of Gaulc not talkid on: for the Duke of Savoy was accounted the onely knyght in the world, to the no small joy of the Princesse Lucemania, who perswaded herselfe now, that her beauty was most excellent. But she was not so pleasant as Palmerin was penitue, and enraged out of measure: notwithstanding his weakness, and the o-

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

ten intreates of Trineus, he wold needs to the field, saying, Good my Lord perswade me not, so I reckon not my life, so I may take vengeance of the dishonour done to my Lady your Mistresse: the manifold courtesies of the Emperour your Father, have so bound me to her and you, as excused my life sake, and therfore I beseech you not to hinder me. Trineus yet overcame him by perswaltions, assuring him to have time sufficient for his redenge, wherat greatly displeased, he seigned himselfe to be whole sooner then he was indeed, so the great desirs he had to drake with the Duke. And Prince Lewes angry, to see the Duke hold the field longer then he did, not able to be overcome by any Knight, came to Palmerin, saying. I know not my Lord, whether you understand the Duke of Savoies victories against so many hardy Knights, but belike his strength is much better then mine was, or Fortune allawes him more labour then she did to me. In my conceite, if you enter not the Combat, you do me wrong and your selfe too: and if yo depart hence with victory, then shall I have cause to complaine of you: In that his successe hath made him so braue and pseumptionous, as though no Knight is able to answer him in the field: let me intreate you Mr Palmerin to abate his pride, and (as well he deserves) make him know his folly. Palmerin having greater desire to execute this malice, then thus to be intreated, returned the Prince this answer, My Lord, God gives honour and victory to whom he pleases, without either regard of the cause of the persons. If according to bounty or nobility of minde he distributed such gifts, then had you been among the better sort, as furnished suffiently with valour and magnanimitie; yet if your enterprise habe not sojourn to your desire, account this so certaine, that it is for your god, and so other reasons then are to you known, for such matters are his secrets, and he doth ballance them by his divine wisewome. Notwithstanding, as well to satisfie your request, as easemente  
owne

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I

owne minde, to morrow morning will I enter my Tent, albeit my present estate wold have me stay a while: there will I Combat with the Duke, not certaine how fortune meane to deal with me. What happen what shall, I go both a minde to conquer, and doubt not but the issue will be such, as shall yeld you content, and me the victory: so shall your labours and mine be converted into pleasure. With this answer the Prince satisfied, departed, yet was he ignorant of Palmerins intent, which was far otherwise then he imagined: but pleased as he was, he went into the presence Chamber, where many Knights were conserning of bards of Armes past, to whom he opened the囊ake of Palmerin, which caused a generall sounding of the Duke, setting him downe so vanquished, except Palmerins weaknesse were his greater friend.

## CHAP. XXXIX.

Of the perillous Combat betwene Palmerin and the Duke of Savoy, and the issue thereof.



3<sup>r</sup> days together had the Duke of Savoy maintained this quarrell, so the headyness of his knyght Lucemania, and no Knight as yet could get any advantage of him, untill the seaventh day, when Palmerin prepared himselfe to the field, and entered his Tent, accompanied with Prince Lewes of France, Trineus, and many other Princes. The King with all his traine taking their standing to behold the Combat, Palmerin came armed forth of his Tent, saving his Helmet, which was carried before him by two Knights with his shield and spacie, and next to them came two Princes, who bare the portraiture of

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

his Lady Polinarda, which being set on the pillar, had clasp'd on his Helmet, and taking his Mace in his hand, march'd to the Duke's Tent, and thus summon'd him. Knight, thou hast long enough defended the field, and to my great griefe that it hath been so long, my tyme is now to come, and it is good reason I shuld keepe it the rest of the time: for the Lady whom I loue, is not onely much more beautifull then thine, but beside, excellenth all other whatsoever, and if thou wilst not confess the same, I will not leau thee with this Mace till I haue forced thee to do it. I know not said the Duke, what thou canst do, but I am of the minde, that I shall swong quallifie thy ouer-bold braying.

At these wordes the Duke taking his Mace, delivered'd Palmerin so sound a stroak on the head, as made him to stagge, but Palmerin requited him well againe for it, and long had they fought together, and battell'd each other very pittifully, till at length Palmerin gaue the Duke such a cruell stroak betwene the head and the shoulders, as he fell to the ground cleane bereft of sence: when Palmerin taking off his Helmet, would not offer him any further violence, but setting his Sword against his brest, sayd. Now am I suffisiently revenged on him, that so ill intreated the figure of the most fairest among Ladys. The Judges of the field, thinking Palmerin would haue slaine the Duke, came running to him with these wordes. Content you Sir, he is vanquished, and hath no power to defend himself. Whereupon Palmerin put by his Sword againe, and leaving the Duke, went presently to the pillar where his Ladys papaer-clad brest, which embracing in his armes, he placed highe Dame to pardon your Knight, in that he did no sooner repell the famous injury offered you, and impuse it not to scars, or want of courage, but debility of body, which once a little recovered, I came to maintaine your honour, and here comminge you for the most beautifull Lady living. While Palmerin

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART, I

merin thus contemplated his spittelle figure, the Judges command'd the Duke to be carried into his pavillion, where, with somraigne dyaks life was got into him again, but when he knew himselfe to be vanquished, and that in one houre he lost the greatest honour of all his life-time, very conceit of griefe had well-nere slaine him. So it was the sorrow of Madame Lucemania, but he and her Knight were got so much discontented, as Palmerin, Tri-neus, and Ptolome were joyfull: but above all other, Prince Lewes of France, moe pleauant then is himselfe had triumphed in victory, thinking he could not sufficiently extoll the renowne of Palmerin, calling him the onely poller downe of the poud. That day did Palmerin encounter with seauen other Knights, and in his conquests shewed himselfe not onely magnanimes, but mercifull, saving their lives, and honouring his spittelle with the humilitie of theirs. The next day likewise after many brayne explayns, being ready to leaue the field because none came to resell him, on a sudden there entered a Knight in black Armour, armed all over with Gold, and bearing in his shield of Ayres the Golden Manne, whose brayne order of entrance declered him to be a hardy Knight at Armes, who assuming himselfe to Palmerin, said. My intent of commyngh hither (Sir Knight) is to let this understand, that I am the Servant and beloued of a Lady, who may not be equalled with any other, & because I am enformed, that thou maiestaine st thy freind, to excellall Ladys whatsoever. I offer to proue the contrary, and will make thee confesse it. I never speake wordes more true, answered Palmerin, and here abide to fultill them: but this place is spaimed to no other end, then to make thise and thy like knowe, what vnaudited enterpryses you take in hand. And one thing is required of thise, that before you begin the Combat, thou set upon this pillar the counterafet of her, whom thou perswadest thy selfe to excell my Lady in beauty, according to the condicions of this

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oriva,

this field published through all Europe. What canst I do, answered the Knight of the Sunne, for I have no other picture of her then is imprinted in my heart, where lone hath so lucly figured her person, as she is dably presented to me by her incomparable beauty, which cannot be taken from me but only by death. And if love follow the soule, (as alwaies hold opinion) whole world cannot separate me from her. And therfore are all men unworthy to receve falcion (by their regard) of a thing so precious, which makes me iugme, none but my selfe worthy to luke on her divine figure. Prepare thee therfore to day, parte, and defend thy selfe. Palmerin d'Oriva to know the name of this large Lady, said I to Sir Knight that thou art in a vellens proud and surly, whiche makes me rather desire to Combat with thee than any other to abate this hore humour; albeit this is contrary to his conditions, who was the principall authour of this enterprise: whiche is, that thou shouldest set on this Pillar her portrait whom thou so estimest; yet this exception shall be granted thee, for the knyghte hangeth to know what thou consideris, as also her name, if thou daile reueale it. To tell this her name (answering the Knight of the Sunne) I will not sticke with thee, and because in concealing it, I shall offend her wyng, nature having in her set downe the onely wark of beauty: I know therfore that her name is Polinada, Daugter to the mighty Emperour of Allouigne. These wordes were so relatione to Palmerin, and troubled his thoughts in such sort, that he knew not ready what to answer: nochich unking in miste of his choller, thus spake. By this knyght, thou hast made a godly chose, so against her beauty well no: I command, having this greater estimation & reverence then thou canst haue: but I am ready to prane, that thou deservest not to be named her knyght, in not somuch as her meanes & her name. But shall I worthy saye the knyght of the sunne, before we part? and alwaies her excellencye hath big latte greater

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART, I

set service then mine, yet so it is, that for the loue I bear her, and the affection I haue is obry her by some agreeable seruice: I may by god reason name my selfe hers. At thise speeches Palmerin conceaved such fearefeste, as without attending any farther matter, monites in great triste on horseback, and met the knyght of the Sunne & loyally: al both of them were sent to the ground: where upon they drew their Swords, and charged each other with such fury, as their Armour and Shyldes were cracked in pieces, and the grounde sonred with their expence of blode. So veray blonck bleything was stffered betwix them, but viceroy and death earnestly vexed enyther part, so that the King, the Lords and the Thuges, reputed this for the strange & Coulur that euer syde law, now could they say who was likeli to winne the field, but ryght one dyed; the other coulde not escape, so that the King intoued with compunction caused them to be scoured, and commanded them to enter their Tent. Whiche maner liked well the knyght of the Sunne, so long he perswayed himselfe he could abyde but where as he thought on horseback so well as he coulde and with vewes of himselfe. Palmerin being wonderfullly displeased, that he could not obtaine the victory of this knyght. Hone after, the King and the Prince Lwes came into his Tent, and leving hym verylike wounded, would not let hym cleare hymselfe, but said, Welde me (Syr Palmerin) you haue great need of rest, and your wounds I see are very dangerous, you shall therfore be conuierced to my Wallace, where all helpe that may be desirid shall be givene, assuring you, that great honour comd nedir knyght a tchase, when you haue done. And though us all to dolay were dede boundyd therd not be displeased, the istme therde imposyd for deuty of the one or the other, and the dñeys of both, which I would not haue seyn for the sake of the ffe populationes sume Realme! And this knyghte had no maner concept with him, passing feres, And this knyghte had no maner concept with him, passing feres, and before such bondut over to make Loxes and knyghtes of

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

name: come you thereso[re] with me, and Lord Trineus beare  
vs company. Great thankis received the King of them s[ic]:  
thys honourable courtesie, and Palmerin went with him to  
the Pallace, where the Kings Chirurgions tooke care for  
his w[ounds], he being lodg'd in the most stately Chamber  
in the Court. Now the Prince Lewes began to joyous  
Palmerin so dearely, as he could not be an heure sooth of his  
company, desiring his health as his owne welfare: where-  
soe all things that he imagined Palmerin took pleasure in,  
would he perclips with his bittermost endeavours, and  
would suffer none to hold hem talk, but onely of that which  
night yeld pleasure and delight. Notwithstanding, divers  
Knights consering with him that evening, as concerning  
the Knight of the Sunne: Palmerin answered them, that  
his minde shoulde never be thorowly quiet, hatis, such tyme  
as he sought with him againe. The Prince who full en-  
deavourred to kepp him from sadness, sayd, I believe (my lord),  
that he will not easly be induced to deale with you againe,  
soz you brought him into such estate; as he will kepp him  
selfe hereafter out of your hands: and well I am assured  
that had you contyned but a little longer, the victory had  
been yours, soz the Knight was so weake[ned], that he did  
nothing but defend your blowes. It please[n]t you (my Lord),  
to say so, quoth Palmerin, but had he seth such valour in me,  
as such courage as deserveth a vertuous Combataint, hardly  
could he escape as he hath done; newis thelette, I hope  
(with the faveur of Faucon) to mett him once more, and  
then we will try who is the Strongest. Much o[ther] talkes  
they had, but Palmerin intreated the Prince, that all the  
portraites of the conquerred Ladys might be brought him,  
whiche were aboue an hundred, of divers beauties and molt  
strange fashions, And among them all could be seene none  
second to Pulinarda, but (as we have said already) that of  
Agriola the Princesse of Englaund: whiche (by the report of a  
Gentleman present that had seen her) was much more  
beautifull

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

beautifullly then her figure presented. Such speeches they continued so long of the English Virgin, as Trinacus, (albeit he never saw her) became amorous of her, and at that instant he solemnly vowed himself hers, as thence forward he swore never to love any but her, so that for her sake he threw himself into many perillous adventures, as in the following discourse of the History you shall read more at large. From whom let vs returne to the Prince Lewes, who seeing so many portraittures of Princes and Ladies, would dayly congratulate Palmerins good fortune, and embracing him, said, Ho God help me, my noble companion, I would never desire greater riches in the World, then to resemble you, especially in chivalry, which in you is so surpassing all other, as you have ended to your honour, what a number have I seen in. Oh how happy may the Lady account herself, that bath such a knight! and were not the condition so cruell towards my selfe, I could wish I were a woman in her place, to have so high rule and command over you. At which words all present began to smile, yet shewing good countenance to Palmerin, for the affection they saw the Prince bare him, which is yet to this day a common blage and practise among Courtiers: but Palmerin somewhat ashamed of such superstitious prayer, answered Trust me my Lord, I account my happynesse the greater that I have done service to so high a personage and so good a knight as you are, resuming to make you in such place hereafter, where you may perceive the good will I bear you, not onely for this high entertainment, which is more then I can deserve, as for the pleasure I have to honour so good a Prince, which if the occasion happen, you shall perceive the experience.

I have spoken nothing ( quoth the Prince) but what is more acquainted to others then my selfe, and if I would revele them, then woulde they be most openly knowne, because vertue hath apperantly shone in them. Many other sythes  
passed betwene them, and longer had continued, but I had many

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Orion,

many Knights which came to see the Feastes, were now upon departing, and therfore would take their leave of the King; whereupon they were constrained to breake off, the Prince going to his Chamber of presence, where he gaue thanks to a knight that honoured the Court with thys presence, and so one after another all departed, the Duke of Savoy being one of the last, ashamed (God knowes) to be so conquer'd by Palmerin, and not abiding his Ladys Iurament farewell. But Lewes did not serue the Duchesse so, for her lies continued as resolute as before; and she leade him as well conquer'd (as he had been conquerour), whereof she assur'd him by many a stroonge meeting, by which meanes the Prince layed the Duke at the Court, iengest then himselfe would haue tolde Lewes that losynge Palmerin as you haue heard, threatned the Duchesse to come and bate him, which she accouplid the day following, when Palmerin speake many olfourses with her; rather of her than entring into religion, for he perceaved by her countenance that she had no will to be a Nun; where we wylle leape them together, and tell you who the Knight of the Sunne was, that fought the last Combat with Palmerin.

### CHAP. XL,

Who the Knight of the Sunne was, and of his strange ad-  
ventures.



The King of Hungaria, Father to the Prince Tatius; that married the Empresse Gruene Brother to Palmerin, had in his latter yeres a Son named Neerides, and after he had long liued in rest and prosperity, he dyed, leauing the young Prince Neerides, Thallus. Now Neerides growing in good constitution

of

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

of body and behaviour, being well bolde generally, so gracieous, gentle, and wellcourtezed he was, as the Lord, Knights, Gentlewen, and people of Hungaria, esteemed him more then their King Tatius, who being Crowned after his Fathers decease, took Neerides as Brother, had notice, till firstme (unions of this Concord) not killing that the vertue of this young Prince should be there extinguisched, changed his loue and affection into exceeding hatred, by any occasion hereafter following. One day the King Tatius walking in his Gardon to take the airre, left his Brother Neerides in the Chamber, accompanied with the Queen, who without imagination of any harme, nor that his satall Barres wanted for him any misfortune, sate downe in the Kings Chayre, as he talked with the Queen, and continued there so long, till Tatius came up and found him there sitting, which he took in such ill part, as in a great rage he thus began.

Why made thee so audacious and presumptuous to staine my Roialme, against thy duty and my likynge? By mine honour thou shall done more then thou warest; and if I see the like againe, or may I but heare thereof, the Head shal lyde the price of thy folly. Neerides, who of his owne Nature was humble and gentle, fell downe on his knee, intreating the King his Brother to pardon him, for what he had done was not with any intent or meaning to displeas his Highnesse: but an occyght, and that so he would present it to passe.

The King made him no answer, because he took Neerides reason for no payment, but contring a secret hatred in his minde by the occasion of so sonder incident, that it increased thermost word, as he woulde practisid a secret Plot to tholle the life of his brother Thallus for which, as he woulde not once lypake to him, nor affere him to god at any tyme.

Then callid he to minime before the face of his people his Brother, and fforbidding him to come into their knowledge (as he shoulde be called) the kyngme dide his habell place

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

place him, and make Netrides King. For which cause he intended to have him slaine, & the execution thereof he committed to one of his Archers, vnt God (who is evermore the preserver of the innocent) would not suffer such a damnacion or doome of Paradise to take effect. Whiche Tarilus perceiving, and finding one day his Brother alone, exclaimed with this discontented humour, said, Netrides, thou hast offend me more then I will now stand to argue on, I therefore banne thee my Court and Kingdome: and look that within thys dayes thou get the hewe, and on thy lise not to discover it to any man, or take any one with them to beare the company.

The young Prince obedient to his Brother, made answer, that he would accomplish his charge, and so withdrew himselfe into his Chamber, not declaringe to any one his cause of beauerage. Then willing to see his Squires to saddle his stede, departed away as close as he could, forbidding any of his Servants to follow him: and such expedition he made, as not reyng but one night in any Lodging he left his Brothers Kingdome, wandering without any care of himselfe, or whiche way he went; but went here and there, as fortune pleased to guide him.

Having not long time travellled in Almaine, his Money fayled him, in that at his departure he was but badly provided: yet could not his princely minde base it selfe to Beg, so that being without meat and drinke, or any place to refel himselfe in, ashamed of himselfe, he sought the means to shew himselfe where none might descry him, and so entring a great Forrest, very thick and set with trees, shrubs, and bushes, he esteemed that a convenient place so layed him to rest in, wherefore alighting from his horse, and turnd him tost, laid himselfe downe at the roote of a tree, and thus began to breath forth his Complaints. Ah unconstant fooyne, and to me most of all inconstant: that thou exerest me so high, and reject me now thys low? well then may I say, that moore iuryous thon doest a man in our houre, then right

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

right in all his life time: for if heretofore thou didst lend me pleasure and delight, that now thou makest me pay for it: (and that with Mury too rigozous) not leaving any hope in comfort me. Ah czariness King, czarill, and czarmanlike King, thou hast with shame banished me, and brought me into this poore estate wherin I must die: Oh happy is I might, rather then to live in the vile estate of Beggarie.

Sayng, he layd him downe among the heares, and was surprised with such extreme stedenes, as he fell into his lamentations again, thus. Ah my Lord & Father, how soon diest thou leave me, would God I had then boorne this company, or else at this instant I might come to thee.

Ah men of Hungaria, I am well assaid (knowing the lobe you ever bare me), that you will pitie when you hearde my afflictions and calamites: alas, I never described this unhappy end. And being vnable to continuall speech, he there determined to finish his life. But better fortun besell hym then he expected, by the meanes of an Apelent Knight named Lombardo, who being neare, heard all his dolorous complaints. The Knight being rich and of noble blood, had neare that forrest a strong, delighfull, and sumptuous Castle, and delighted to walk among the woods for his recreation, as good hap it was for Netrides, that he wonkeed this Evening. He heard these sad and sorrowfull regrets, pitifully touching his heart, as the teares bedewed his cheeks: yet wold he not trouble him, while he continued his meanes, but afterwards came and took hym by the hand, saying: Arise my friend and take courage, for you are in the place where god shall finde you to benefit you, then harme to offend you, wherefore the rich by your spirit, and seyget th's your heabiness, whiche may endanger you beyond recovery. Netrides sayng this honourable Gentleman, with his beard so white as snow, bearing his courteous attire, and for him now so necessary, with joy, stearne, and bath, salutelle, all coupleled together, accepted it, & humbly thanked hym,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

him, albeit (quoth he) a contented death is better to me, then a miserable and despised life. The Knight comforting him, answered him thus, that it was not in his power to chuse life or death, but the Founder of the Heavens rescued that curiositie in his owne hands. With these words he tooke him by the hand, and conducted him to his Castle, where he was worthily entertained by the Knight himselfe, his Lady, and her Daughter, one of the fairest Virgins in all that Country.

Lombardo having heard all his misfortunes, and hard Adventures, in the Knight discoursed all the whole to his Lady: wherefore god wife (quoth he) entertain him so well as may be, so I assure you he is descended of high degree: and if his manners and vertues be correspondent to his Birth, we will give him our Daughter in Marriage, if so himselfe accept our Offer. The god Lady mislikid not her Husbands opinion, wherefore the next Morning she went to entertaine her Guest, saying: My Lord, your coming hither hath well contented my Lord and Husband, and so please it you to stay here, we will be very glad and saine of your god company, which gentle offer Netrides accepted, thanking God and the Lady for his happy fortune. Thus remained he with this ancient Knight Lombardo, who afterwards remembred him of his miseries in the Forest, but intreated him so well, as though he had been his owne Sonne. Netrides taking the Knights Daughter so faire, and so well conditioned, and she regarding not only the vertues of his minde, but also his comely and well-favoured Body, they begyn amorously to affect each other secretly, but Love invented the means to revele it openly: so Lombardo well noting the great discretion of this young Gentleman, and knowing him to be descended of blood Royall, resolved to cause him marry his Daughter, demanding the question of Netrides, among many other spaches, if so helpe to marry his Daughter. My dear Lord (quoth he) it is

## Emperour of Constanctinople. PART. 1.

the summe of my desire, & greater hono; cannot you bestow on me, so please her to concide the same opinion I haue. The marriage was solemnized with all expedition, with the presence of many Gentles, neighbours therabout, who maruelled the Knight helde his Daughter so, in that they esteemed Netrides but a poore Knight errant. It continued afterward that the ancient Knight and his Lady deceased, leaving their Daughter great with Childe, to the no little content of Netrides, that after all his sorowes he would become a Father. This dayes before this Lady fell in Tragedy, she dreamt that she was shut up in a very darke Chamber, whereout she could by no means get, and therfore called for helps to one of her Gentlewomen. Then was she advised to take her Child in her armes, and to stay there still, whereupon shes beheld her Infant, and saw that his face somewhat resembled the beautes of the Sonne, the brightness whereof chased away the darknesse, so that she might behold the place as cleare as any other, saying. My Lord, forget this heaviness, and you shall rejoyce by this Instant, so this is he shall reestablish you in the place you have lost, and shall seat you in the Chayre with Honour, so which you were exiled thence, giving you his Crowne, that traiterously chased you from his Kingdome. He comforted with these wordes, took the Child in his armes, and said. Little soule, I pray God the Mother speake truth, and that than mayest be able to execute it. So saying, he espoyed a furious man, who snatched the Infant forth of his armes, and notwithstanding all his intreaties and supplications carried it away with him.

This sorrow for Netrides made her give a loud shriek, when he calling his WIFE, demanded the cause of this sudden affrighte wherepon she rehearsed to him the whole manner of her Dreame, and rejoicing therat, said: I hope (my Lord) that it will so happen to you as I haue dreamed, and therfore comfort your selfe without feare of misfortunes: notwithstanding he remained in many doubtfull varieties of

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

of opinion , till they understood by effects the pretended certainty of this Dreame. Also was come the time of the Ladres deliverance, which was a goodly Man-child, so sayes and well-saboured as one could lightly behold , being named Frysol , and he would suffer none to purse it but her own selfe, for the certain hope she reposed in him. The childe growing in time to such comely stature , as each one tooke great pleasure in beholding him , whereat the Mother was so glad , that albeit she had afterwards two other Sonnes , yet shewed she no such speciall love towards them as unto Frysol , which procured some hatred betwene his brethren and him. This young Lord growing to fourteene yeres of Age , was in stature very tall , delighting himselfe in riding a great Horses shooting in the Long-Bow , casting the Bar , and others other Gentleman-like exercises , as also to chace in the Forrest , where old Lombardo met with his Father . So that on a day after leng and weary chacing of the Hare , babling sweated very soore , and growne marvellous dry for want of drinke , fadling a little by the scote of a Tre , he lay downe and dranke , but afterwards he became so ill and sickly , as he trembled , shivering very soore : So that one of his Squires could hardly lead him againe to the Castle . Netrides seeing him so exceeding ill , was maruellous sorry , commanding his Phisitians to sake some present helpe so to him , who plied him with such wholome potions , as his feuer left him , but his Face and all his Body were so painted as he had ben a Lepper , which made him to be mocked of his other Brethren , and scolded of all the Servants , except onely of his Father & Mother , which was such a griesse to him , as he would haue dyed with fretting at them , but his Father rebuked them , and comforted him in this manner .

I did hope (my Sonne) by the means to be restored again to the Kingdome of my deceased Father : but now , how long it will be before , God knowes , if this crang malady of thine be never holpen . Frysol amazed at his Fathers words , de-

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

red him earnestly to report the whole circumstance : which Netrides at length did , rehearsing how he was brother to the King of Hungaria , the hard entreatance he had used towards him , and lastly , he told him the Dreame of his Mother . Frysol standing a long space on his Fathers words , at length answered . O my Lord , you are not ignorant of the soueraigne power of the Highest , who by his divine judgement hath sent me this disease , that thus tormenteth me : Wherefore , when pleaseth him , he will take it from me againe , and giue me health and strength much more then ever I had before , with means sufficient to give you aid and succour , according to the matter whereon you haue binclined . And albeit I feele such extreme anguish , as death may not be like-  
ned to it , yet with this hope comfort me in such sorte , that me thinks already I am become moe healthfull : therfore my Lord dismay of nothing but perswade your selfe there is comfort behinde . These words were so pleasing to Netrides , as mites joy caused the teares to trickle downe his cheekes , marvelling at the wonderfull courage of his Sonne , endur-  
ing such terrible paines as he did : wherefore what he thought he could not revele , but withdrawe himselfe into his Chamber .

## CHAP. XLI.

How Frysol persecuted with his disease , and the mockery of his brethren determined to go seek strange adventures .



Frysol having heard the original of his birth , as also the vision that appeared to his Mother , was thence forward moe penitent then he haue been before , and perceiving his Brethren continued their bad dispositi-  
on , and day by day mocked him moe and  
moe , he determined to forsake his Fathers houle , and

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

to scke adventures, and remedy soz his sicknesse, if any were to be found. And being one day in the forest moze melancholyke then accustomed, he espide a Knight vexed with Leprose come by the high way, mounted on a poore palfrey, to whom he said. My friend, I am infected with the same disease thou art, wherefore wilt thou suffer me to heare thys company, and I will be ready to do what thou shalt command me. The Knight perceiving he might gainsome benefit by Frysol, was well contented, and so bad hym mount up behinde him.

So was he glad to do what was contrary to his nature, and in this life continued two yeres, travelling many Countries, bearing continually the wallet, and what profit came he delivred his Paller, reseruing nothing soz himselfe but what he gaus him, and bearing a mindes so noble and vertuous, as he desired rather death, then to enrich himselfe by any villanous or dishoneste act. So many Countries and Provinces had they travelled, as at last they came into the Realme of Hungaria, when Frysol remembred that he was in his Uncles Land, who led a life so base and ignominious: he was ouercome with exceeding heauynesse whiche ill agreed with his dangerous disease, so that his companion desired to know the cause of his sadness: but Frysol prayed him to content himselfe, saying that death was moze agreeable to him, then a life so dolorous and misera ble. At which wordes the Knight grooving in choller, shoulde him beside his horse, and rode away, leaving poore Frysol there, having no other comfort then to fill the arme with his teares and complaints, till at length he received succour by a young maid named Leonarda, the Daughter of a rich Countryman that dwelt on a mountaine neare at hand. This maiden leading her fathers Beasts and Cattell to pasture, took great delight in gathering herbs and roots, wherewith to make aygments for all wounds and offenses: and this day (by the divine permission) shes chanceod

that

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

that way where she heard the mournfull lamentations of Frysol, whom when she beheld, overcome with pity and compassion, aid. Alas my friend, how came you into this desert and comfortlesse place, being oppressed with such a bad and dangerous sicknesse. In god scath Allress (quoth he) by no other meanes then the misfortune and displeasure of my life: Oh how happier were my death at this instant, then to live any longer in this monstrous languishing. Friend, answered the maid, you ought not thus to despayre in sicknesse, but consider that the Lord and Governor of the heauen and earth, both by these meanes try and prove his people, whom he perceives thankfull and patient in their afflictions, of reprobate enemites, he makes them his Friends and Chlyzen, onely by the ransome of his beloued Sonne paid, if then you will put your whole confidence in him, I am perswaded you shall soon finde remedy.

So causing him to rise, she conducted him to her fathers house, where soz certaine dayes she bathed him with wholesome Herbs, and anointed him with such precious oyments, as in that time his disease soooke him, and he was as cleane as at the time he dranke the water: soz which he humbly thanking the maiden, said. God make me able (sayze Virgin) to repaire this wonderfull kindeste received at your hands, accounting my selfe moze indebted to you, then to my parents that gaus me first life: and this perswade your selfe, that wheresoever my body be separated from this place, my heart shall remaine ready to do you any service. That is my will and intent (quoth Leonarda) but thank him chiefly that made me able to help you, and in so doing shall I account my labour well bestowed. Frysol soz this unexpected good fortune, was hencward bery dutifull and loving towards Leonardas Father and her Brethren, as the readiest seruante he had in his house: but the goodman esteemed so well of him, as by no meanes he would suffer him to be so painfull, but with such fare as God

sent

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

sent him, entertained and welcomed him, not suffering him to depart thence in the space of a yere and moze. Frysol of Len accompanying Leonarda to the field, she seeing him so faire and comely in personage, began secretly to affect him, yet would she not acquaint him therewith, fearing moze to offend then to be refused. So sone as Frysol had thus received his strenght, he determined to stay no longer there, wherefore finding Leonarda at leasure convenient, he sayd. I knowe very well (saire Sparben) how much I am beholding to you, for the speciall grace and god I have received by you, which induceth me to make you this promise, that you shall not command any thing, but I will gladly accomplish it. And because I am desirous to travell after strange aduentures, I would request that it might be with your willing consent, promising you to stay no longer hence then the term of three yers, in which time I will not sayle to visite you againe: and if my fortune so fall out as I am perswaded, I doubt not to recompence what you did for me: That which I alway feared (saire Frysol) quoth he, is now come to passe: notwithstanding, it is convenient I shoulde loue honour moze then mine owne pleasure, I am content you shall go take your aduancement so well begunne: but I pray you cast not your promise in oblivion.

I will not to the death (quoth he) do any thing that may dislike you, or against your will, and since you haue so freely granted me liberty, perswade your selfe my word shall be my ded. So taking his leave of his Father and Wretcheden, he travuelled towards Almaigne, where he heard that Chivalry was moze maintained then in any other place, and so rode he seure dayes together without any aduenture: till passing through a Forrest heare (as it were) a great noyse of people fighting, wherfore making haste that way, he espied an ancient Knight assaulted by sixtillillaines that sought to murther him, whom he resuled so well as he could, albeit he had nothing but his sword to defend

## Emperour of Constantiople. PART. I

send him. The Knight espying Frysol, called to him for help, when he suddenly finding a young Erre, pluckt up by the roots, came therewith to the villaines, thus saying. Why trayterous varlets, what provoketh you to offer such shame to a Knight? wherewith he took one of them so suddenly on the pate with his Erre, as he never rose, to tell who hurt him. The Knight and he together, so behated themselves, as that of those villaines were laid dead before them, which the other thare perceiving, took themselves to flight: whereupon the old Knight seeing himselfe so well delivred, came and embracing Frysol with these words. Now may I say god friend, that my life had perished without your assistance, be thinke your selfe therefore how I may gratifie this gentlemanne: in meane time, I have a houle not far hence, let me treat you to lode with me this night, and I will make you the best entertainment the Country will afford.

Whereto Frysol agreed, promising to leave him in safety before he departed: so whiche the old Knight thanked him, and as they went he discoursed to him, how the villaines assailed him, because he had enforced them to surrender certaine heritages, which unjusly they obtained from poore Diphans, and so that cauld set spyes to watch him, that they might set upon him and kill him: which surely they had done (quoth he) without your succour. In the continuallance of these spches, they arrived at his Castle, where many of his Squires marvilled to see him so loye bounded, but especially his Lady and his two Daunes, to whom he rehearsed the summe of his aduentures, and the great labour and helpe he found by Frysol, for which caused him to be entertained with exceeding honour. And so long abode Frysol there with the Knight, till being desirous to receive the oder of Knighthood, he came to the Knight in this manner. May it please you Sir to be fellowe an knyght and armes, I will goo to the Emperours Court of Almaigne, he being the most renowned knyght in the world.

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

world. The good Knight syng him so syward in Chivalry, gave him hors e, armour, and money for his journey, whereupon he set syward, and the thrid day after he arrived at the Emperours Court, from whence (a little before) Trineus and Palmerin were departed towards France : which newes made Frysol earnestly desirous his knighthood, because he intended with all sped to travell thither likewise, in respect of the honour was there to be wvens. Frysol vnderstanding the Emperour was in the Chappel hearing divine service, went thither, where beholding the Princeesse Polinarda, he repudie her the onely faire Lady of the world, thinking he could never glas his eyes with regarding her: whereon, service being ended, he fell on his knye before the Emperour in this manner. Because I knowinge (invincible Lord) that you are renowned beyond all other Potentates whatsoever, and that you make no small account of Knights aduenturus: I desire that by your hand I may be numbered among them. The Emperour syng him so young and yet valiantly given, answered. I would be loth my friend to deny a request so reasonable, but I will first know if you be Gentle boyme, or no. My Lord (quoth he) I swaure by the faith I owe to God and your Majestie, that I am noble boyme, and of the blood royall by my Fathers side.

Godforbid then (said the Emperour) but you shalbe Knight, and Fortune shal you sy well in Chivalry, as she haue indaud you with comely shape and beauty. Then was the Spurre put upon his right herte, and the Emperour bad him rise a Knight, commanding his Daughter Polinarda to geyre his swerd to him, whiche he did, saying. Go thy way and with happynesse (Sir Knight) may you imploy the order you haue received. Madams (quoth Frysol) if hereafter any vertue or valour abide in me, it shall be imployed onely for you, having thus bencreasid me with my swerd, wherwith I hope to accomplish such deeds of Armes, as shall renowne her name that gave me my wepon:

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

pon: but Polinarda made him no answer, because Palmerin was the onely Image of her thoughts. After Frysol was thus knighted, taking his leave of the Emperour and his Daughter, he departed, making no small tasse till he arriued at the Tounes of Paris, where he determined for his selfe of Chivalry, to enter the Combat for the beauty of Polinarda. But he could not get thither so soone as he intended, so he was hindred by the way with an unexpeted aduenture, which was, in a faire Forest, where he behold faire Knights carry away a Lady persone, who seeing him, cryed: Ah good Knight, for Gods sake succour me: whereupon Frysol couching his Lance, sent one of the Knights headlong to the ground, and in short time wounded another in such sorte, as now he had but two left to resell hym, on whom Frysol made tryall, how well he could imploy the gift of Polinarda. The Knights syng the hard foxnes of their two other fellowes, the one haning broken his neck in the fall, and the other wounded past hope of recovery, leake the wisedome for themselves, passing thence so fast as they could ride, but Frysol would not follow, least they had some other company in ambly that might haue intrapped him. wherefore he conducted the Lady to her mothers Castle, where he remained that night. and the next day set syward to Paris, where it arrived at the time he fought with Palmerin, according as he hath bens before rehearsed.

After the Knight of the Sunne, (who herceloth shall passe by the name of Frysol) had left Palmerin, and was departed the field, the night was so obscure as he knew not which way he rode, so that the myghture of the evening dew did great harme to his wounds, as if God had not armed him with the better strength, he was in danger not to escape with life. The very same day was the Duke of Gaule departed from Paris, to goe ayd the King of England against the King of Scots, and Norway, who was ne-

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

phew to the Emperour of Almaine, soz that they molested him with troublisome warres: and the Duke being benignited, was glad to p.ck his Tent in a faire field, through which it fortuned Frysol to passe, cimplaining of the danger he felte himselfe in. The Duke of Gaule being abzard forth of his Tent to recreate himselfe, heard this lorzowfull noyse, which made him send his men to see who it was, and to bring him with them to the Tent: wherther when they had brought him, the Duke pitizing his estate, demanded whence he came, and who had wounded him in that sorte. Then discoursed he the whole matter, how he had fought with the Knight that overcame the Duke of Savoy, and so long the fight endures, that the darke night and the King caused them to be parted, neither of them as yet conquered, and because he would not returne into the City, sought some village where he might contentently lodge.

The Duke of Gaul hearing the weyds of Frysol, esteemed him so a worthy and valiant Knight, having so long endured against Palmerin unvanquished, wherefore he said. Sir Knight, you are very welcomme to me: all the aide and succour I can give you, you shall be sure to finde with hearty god will: assuring you, that there is no Knight living to whom I wot more evill, then him whom you have this day sought withall. So causing him to be bawured, bussed him to rest himselfe vpon his owne bed, and made his weyds to dredd, abyding there eight dages for the health of Frysol. In which time the Duke had imparted to him the warres of the King of England, which made him make more haste to be gone, oz else he wold haue kept him company longer. By Lord (quoth Frysol) so please you to accept my company, I hope to kehave my selfe so wel, as you shall not be disconterted with me. The Duke thanked hym, and rejoiced that by his means so good a Knight was preferred, and did him all the honour he could deuise, taking him with him late England, where he found the Country

## Emperour of Constançinople. PART. II.

Country very much desolated with warres to his no little griefe: but leue we them, and returne to Palmerin.

### CHAP. XLII.

Of the great courtesie the King of France used to Trineus and to Palmerin: And of their returne into Almaine.



Diligently wero Palmerins weyds attended, whiche he had received by the hand of Frysol, as not long after he recovered his health, wheresof the King & the Prince Lewes were highly glad, and much more Trineus, unto whom the King desired to give his Daughter Lucemania in Marriage: which to compasse, he intended a sumptuous Banquet, whereto he wold invite those twaine: yet stille he would acquaint the Queene therewith, and therfore began the master with her thus.

I se M. name, that our Daughter Lucemania is of years sufficient for a Husband, and because I nevermore desired her highest preserment, and soz that I would know if the Prince Trineus to whom I could wot she were espoused, were any thing in lode that way affected, soz hardly in my judgement shal we find a greater Lord, being heire to the famous Emperour of Almaine: for this intent (I say) will Jordaine a Banquet, whereto both he and Noble Palmerin shall be invited, and our Daughter to bear their company in the best sorte you can devise. The Queene, who more desirid this Marriage then the King her Husband, answered. You doubt not (my Lord) that I request her chieflie advantage, whereso let it be as you haue determined, and we shall be present as you haue appoynted. This master thus pro-

ceeding

The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

cting, two dayes after were Trineus and Palmerin called to this Banquet, and to honour them the more, the King caused his Daunce Lewes, with a braue company of Knights and Gentlemen, to conduct them to the stately Hallace, where they were royally received by the King and Queen, so led vp into the Chamber appointed for the Banquet.

After they had washed, the King caused Trineus to sit by and Palmerin agaynst him, above whom sat faire Lucemania his Daughter, being placed full opposite to the Prince Trineus, the Duke to furnish the Table, sat downe by the King. And albeit Nature had bestowed on the Prince the most exquisite Beuty, yet her sumptuous Accourements made her appeare most amayable: but all could not move the heart of Trineus, to forgether, to whose Shyns he was dedicated. The Banquet ended, and the Tables withdrawne, Trineus daunced with the faire young Princeesse, Courting her with many honest and deceipt speches, which made Lucemania suppose he loued her: but the Prince noted it well enough, albeit his affections were bound to English Agriola.

In this time the other Ladys were conferring of Palmerins Knightly valour, when the Count of Armignac his Son, Intreating the Duke of Oleans Daunce to daunce, was thus stayed by her speches to the other Ladys.

You see faire Ladys (quoth she) that Palmerin hath killid our Dautes, to revenge our Injury, let us fall upon him, and shut him in some place, wheres he may never come swyft: Soz if he escape vs, the Almaigne Ladys shall bearre the honour from the French, which will be to vs perpetuall disgrace. These words he uttered with such a pleasant countenance, as incouded all the other Ladys to smile, whereupon the Duchesse of Burgundy answered. In swyft it is necessary we shoulde dooze, and let vs not suffer him to get out of our hands so easly, as he did from the Knights that came to the Combat. All the company liked this motion well, but the King said. Ladys, I will not con-

sent

sent that Palmerin shal have any wrong, because I haue taken him into my Guard. And who shal make recompence (quoth another Lady) for the wryng he hath done? You ought to suffer swyft satisfaction ( said the King ) and be glad that you had the meane to see the best Knight in the World, for mine owne part I promise you, I rest so contented. Palmerin hearing the King so command him, baschfully answered. Alas my Lord, there is no such matter in me as pleaseþ your Majestie to report, but what my ability is, it remaineth to doo you service: accounting my selfe now then happy, by coming to your Higheste Court, to haue knowledge of a Prince so noble, and vertuous, and no man living (next my dñe Lord the Emperour) that may command me more then your Higheste. Among other speeches, the King braks the matter of his Daughters mariage to Palmerin, desiring him to labour in the cause to Trineus, whiche he promised, but all in batne: soz after they had taken their leave to returns towards Almaign, thogh Palmerin was earnest in the matter, in respect of the Beauty and Noblenesse of the Princeesse, as soz the support he might haue by matching with the Daughter of France, yet Trineus thus answered. I thank you my Lord, soz the god you wil me, as also the honoþ the King afforðs me: but another beyond her (whose renoun hath conquered me) is Lady and Mistresse of my affections. And because you are he from whom I will not hide or conceale my most secret thoughts, know that it is Agriola, Daughter to the King of England, to whom though my Father be an enemy, yet by your ayd, and mine owne good endeavours, I doe not doubt to compasse my Loue Peul lew my Lord (quoth Palmerin) hat I wil as well to you, as mine own heart, and when occasion serues, tryall shall make manifest. And seeing you haue fixed your loue on faire Agriola of England, in pariting likewise the same so confidently to me: I am perswaded you could never make a better choyse, therfore let nothing change your opinion.

Thus

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Thus rose they on with many sundry speeches, not a little glad they were returning to the Emperour, but Palmerin, much more then was Trineus, for the great drise he had to see his Lady Polinarda: wherefore with the consent of the Prince, he sent a Squire before to adverteize the Emperour of their comming: Before whom he had no sooner done reverence, but he was presently knokked, and demanded in what estate his Sonne Trineus and Palmerin were, where he had left them, and what accidents there hapned in France: Then the Squire rehersed the Combats and victories of his Master against the Knights of France, and the Dukes of Gaule and Savoy, and their royall entertainment by the King and his Son, how many portraits of Ladys Palmerin had conquered, with the whole circumstance of every action. Whereof the Emperour, the Empresse, and all the Lords and Ladys were marvellous glad, yet was not their joy comparable to the Princesse Polinardas, hearing the Squire reveale the honourable acts of her Love: so that her conceit might be discerued by her countenance, and needs must she thus demand of the Squire. I pray thee tell me my Friend, how fares my Lord & Brother, with his noble Companion Sir Palmerin? The Squire well advised, because he knew the Love between her and his Master, set his knox to the ground againe, with this answer.

I left the Prince your Brother, accompanied with my Lord Palmerin, well and in good health: but chiefly my Lord who since you saw him, hath wonne the greatest honour that ever Knight did. Afterward he reported the manner of the Combats to her, and what griefe his Master suffered in his backes, when he could not be revenged on the Knight that lost her Counterfeite, which the Duke of Savoy placed at the fort of Luceimania: and last of all, the perillous Combat betwix his Master, and the Knight of the Sunne. Which she took such delight to hear, as she made him repeat one thing many times, and could not satisfie herself suffi-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

ciently with these worthy reports. Which the Squire perceyving, delighted as much to iterate every thing, and said, Be lieve me Madame, the Leue my Master beares to her, is whose Beauty he entred the Combat, in my opiniones in credible: for he is more hers then his owne, and I have seene him in such a pensiuе loſt thinking on her, as one could hardly judge whether he were aliue or dead: fearing least any other should rob him of his Leue: such is the Jealousie of his unspotted affection, albeit my Master reputes his Lady unmeetable. Polinarda changing countenance oftentimes at the Squires words, answered. The Lady shold be very ill concelled, being honoored with the Leue also god a Knight as Palmerin, to make reſuall of his weſthy ſervice: and I prouife thow, by the Faith of a Princesſe, that if I knew her, for the unwillingeſſe I haue to heare him ſo complainſe, I woulde endeauour to cauſe her like noſe but him, and therēin to thinke her ſelfe the moſt happy among Ladys. Wherefore (if thou mayſt be ſo bold) tell thy Master at his returne, and I will be a meane to aide him towards her he Leues: and therewithall, prefent him my labourable Salutations, in that I euermore deſired the fortunate ſuccesse of his Enterprize: not ſo much for the liking of his Lady, being belovid of the beſt, as for the renowned Chivalry that harbourſ in his heart. These ſpeeches ended, the Squire returned to meet the Prince Trineus and his Master, to whom he reported his talk with Polinarda: which Palmerin ſtoyng at, let fall Jealousie, esteeming her now the truce Lady living. The men of Gaunt, for joy of his returne, that ſo worthily had deliuered them from the oppreſſions of the Enchaunted Knight, went forth in ſeverall companies, according as honour, yeate, and office directed them, to met him, and to congreped him with Agnes of joy to the Wallace, wheres the Emperour ſo much abaled himſelfe, as he came downe into the open Court to entertaine him, and glad likewife, to ſee the ſafe returne of his Sonne Trineus, ſaying. By Sonne, right

## The Hitory of Palmerin D'Olva,

right happy is thy retурne; and you Sir Palmerin, perswade your selfe so welcome as heart can devise, assuring you that your successe hath not a little pleased me. And needs must I account that Lady especially bounden unto you, for whose sake you haue past so many dangerous Combates, good reason hath she to loue you, in respect of your trauels for her, resoluynge her so much by your knyghtly chivalry, so that if she make you not recompence according to your merits, wretched may she be condemned of Ingratitude. Alas my Lord (quoth he) her Beauty commandeth higher matters then all my Labours. Polinarda being in presence remembred well her Fathers words, and therfore she intended to shew that condemnation, saying to her selfe, He that winneth honour, ought to weare it. And he that commandeth the soule, may easly ouer rule the Passions of the mende: Let my Knight then be rewarded as he hath righly deserved.

All this whille, the Eyes of these two Louers so well discharged their office, as Palmerin wished that Juno had granted him so much, as she did somtyme to Argus her Shepheard, that he might haue more ease in his affliction: for he thought it not enough, onely to behold the Beauty of so rare and excellent perfection. Againe, he was not a little tormented, because Polinarda (to couer what she would gladly none should discern) cast her looks on the ground, which sometimes she likewise compelled him to doo: but her Presence whom he esteemed aboue all other earthly things, would not allow him that consideration. The Emperour at length comanded, that all the Figures of the Ladys which he had wonne in Combat, shold be brought before him: but when he saw so many, and also contrary qualities, he could not but commend Sirs Palmerins victory. Then were divers judgments given of the beauties of the portraites, each one of the beholders after their severall opinions. Prolome made description of whom they were, and who did enter combat on their behalves, omitting at no time the honour of Palmerin:

whereat

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

whereat they all admired: some of them commending their Complexions, others, their swete young yeares, and all together the valour and powerte of him that brought the conquerour with him, wherepon the Emperour said. In good faith Sir Palmerin, I blesse the lime that Godme sent me so good a knyght, and thinke not to carry away all the glory of your victory, your selfe, for I meane to haue part, because you gaue your selfe mine. And would the Lady you loue were in this Court, or in my Empire, to the end that I might so affit you in your herte, as ye might be both mine. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) the victory is wholly yours, being gotten by your knyght, and if the Lady I loue were not under your Regement, then shold I complaine of a greater matter then abiding with you, being obedient to your Highnes, as your humble Subject and Servant. Whereto which answer the Emperour seemed highly contented: and Trineus coming to his sister Polinarda, said:

Truse me faire Sister, you are more indebted to Palmerin, then to any other knyght in the world beside, and rather accept of him, then of the Duke of Lorrain, who maintaining your Beauty, was overcome by the Duke of Savoy, and your Picture placed at the feste of Lucemania, where yet it had remained, but that Palmerin Conquering the Duke, remoued the figure of the French Princesse in obeynance to you. Polinarda not content with the vndiscreet enterprise of the Duke of Lorrayne, answered. In sooth good Brother the Duke of Lorrayne is none of my knyght, and I repete Palmerin, to haue moze bounty and valour then the Duke can haue of wit or courage: therefore great maruell that he was not slaine. The Emperour hearing Polinarda was offended with the Duke of Lorrayne, answered, you cannot (Daughter) sayd men to execute their owne pleasure, and if the Duke liked to enter the Combat for your Beauty, it was for the honourable god will he bare you, and albeit he could not reach his desce, yet haue you no cause to thynke the wo

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

worse of him. Polinarda being a Princesse of so rare a wit and judgement, as any of her time, would multiply no more words, but continued silent: Nevertheless, Palmerin rememb'ring the answer he made to Trincus, intreated her to keep all the Portraits of all the Ladies, determining to send them to whom they belonged, according to their degrés in Birth and honour. Which she thankfully accepted, and spending this whole day in divers delights, Palmerin being in the Evening in his Chamber, accompanied with Ptolome, sent his Dwarf to the Princesse, to appoynt the time of their next meeting: and he seeing the Dwarf, caught him about the necks, demanding of him what newes he had brought her:

None but good, Madame (answered the Dwarf) my Master hath sent you the Bon-voir, and therewithall, his humble duty to your Highnesse: for, being your Knight, and living only to do you service: he hath good hope that your vertuous Nature will not forget, how many dangers he hath past for your sake: and now both loue appeale for his desired reward.

Wheresoever (good Madame,) as you are heart-saft, unte your selbes hand-saft, give my Master life, your selfe comfort, and make me happy, by carrying of this message: for I know by the reverend faith I bearre you both, that I will not depart without some gracious answer.

Polinarda smiling to hearre Urbanillo speake so earnestly, said. The assurance thou givest me of th' truly affection thou bearest my Master, doth not a little content me: and pitty it were so good a Knight shoulde labour all this while in vaine: Wheresoever swade thy Master, that to morrow at night I will meet him where we were wont, and there will I resolve him to his owne content.

## CHAP. XLII.

## Emperour of Constantiople. PART. I.

### CHAP. XLIII.

How Palmerin went in the Night to the appointed place, to conferre with his Lady Polinarda, and the amorous communication they had together.



Urbanillo with chearefull countenance returned to his Master, declaring to him his talke with Polinarda, her sweet looks, her gracious answers, how choyfully she loued him, and lastly her promise to met him in the accustomed place: yet is not this all, for before you depart with her, she hath assured me to resigne you to your owne content. And that is it I want (quhe) for might I once receiu my content then should I thinke my troubles rehorded. And doubt you not thereof said the Dwarf, if she be a woman of her word. Then Ptolome being present, asked the Dwarf, if he saw Bryonella. So in sooth (quhe) she was not in the Princesse Chamber, nor (to my knowledge) was she acquainted with my comming, yet dare I thinke she will be there with my Lady. The time being come, the Ladies were at the place with devotion, answerable to those silent hours, and their Knights not sayling their appointment, what pleasure on each side was conceiu'd, is not to be enquired, for all things are nothing in respect of their contentments. Polinarda having her friendly Knight before her, so blust'ry blushing eclipsed her Countenance, as would drise Nature into a study to frame the like, and thus she began. Alas my sweet friend, in what paine, anguish, and heauiness of heart, bath your absence brought me? What teares haue fallen from mine eyes, and drops of blood from my heart, by renting shipes and ceaselesse acclamations, rememb'ring our pleasures past, and present comfort, and the hope of better happe

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Hap to come? What dolorous conceit hath often wounded me, thinking on so many hazards and perils as might hinder me from saving you againe? and not without a cause belie me, for had you miscarried, never Lady sustained such a losse, in respect of your knightly valour, and the unfaulnes labours I bente you, wherof (before you depart) I means assuredly to resolve you, in requitall of your honourable travells & maintenance of my Beauty. And hereof persuades your selfe good knight, that to have you, I refuse all other good fortunes whatsoever: and therefore I care not though it were openly known, how especially I prize you: deare, love, and esteem you. Palmerin confoarded with this long expected comfort, and not able to endure with silence, interrupted her in this manner. By the faith of your sworne Servant, sweete Madame, the perills, mishaps, and dangers I habe pass since my departure, never deserved the very least of your complaints, nor could my endeboor ymagine such, as your incomparable perfections merited, the easie remembrance whereof, was sufficient to make me insensible: wherefore sweete Mistresse, if I have wonne any honour, your labour was the meane, and your beauty gave me the vertue, streaming so plentifullly from your chaste eyes, as the water from the fountains. To little purpose were it now to rehearse, the strange attaints, mauldring thoughts, and violent flames, wherein I habe burned and continuallly beene crucified, Once the houre it pleased you to let me see France: Undoubtedly the very meane of my sufferings was able to destroy me, without the resolute assurance of your divine labour, which triumphing over death, shall make me: continually. So that the desire to let you know how assuredly I am yours, and the continuall wishing to see you againe, gave me victory over your enemys, and brought me safe thowt all extremities, to honour you as I do at this present. It now remaines Madame, that you regard the truth of my love, the permanence thereof, and the

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART, I.

the instant passions worse then death to me, yet with this promise, that I presume not of any action meritorious but your grace, which is able to strengthen me in greatest debilitie. And we where know I to seek for pity and support of my cares, if not only by her who hath the soueraigne power to chase hence the cruell and other threatening menaces of death. Forbore god Lord, quoth she, thus to talk of death, considering I cann't live one houre without you, or hold any comfort of my life, but only in loving you, to enjoy you: so that what you endure, I suffer, and no passion tormenteth you, but I have a share therein, so devoutly is my spirit confuted with yours. And therefore think not your opprestions greater then mine, for if you do, it procedeth by want of experience of feminines passions, the extremitie whereof faire sarmoun, seth your sexe.

For which cause to give some rest to our long and other travellled delasses, I give you here my hand, and therewithall a chaste heart, accepting you only for my Lord and husband, and to my promise call heaven and earth to witness. Whereas is the wit so daintie, the tongue so flourishing, or the pens diligent, as can concilie, report, or set downe in perfect colours, the joyes of these Lovers? You faire Lordings, and you likewise sweete Ladys, that long haue travelled in amorous affections, and in the end received the reward of your passions, by your swome conceits can imagine the content of those twains: for Palmerin was of this opinion, that Jupiter had not the like pleasure with sayre Alcmena, for whom he caused one night to endure the space of three dayes, as he had with his gracious Mistresse Polinarda. For now the manifold stroaks he gave for beauty, were here remembred, his dangerous travells in all places recounted, his absence with kinds gratulations welcomed, his faires, sighs, complaints, and feares resolved, and lastly, his long, unchangeable and most faithfull love, friendly rewarded. Let us not here forget, that Ptolome and Brionella

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Brionella were in the same ypredicament, soz he knowing her to be of the noble and ancient ligny, beside, sole heire to the house of Saxon, might count himselfe highly honoured with such a wife: and therefore the like confrancion was made betweene them, so that now these knyghtes and Ladys were espoused before God, there wanted nothing but the ceremony of the Church to confirme it. But now comes Vianillo, and he breaks off this pleasure, because the time was so farrre spent, as they must needs depart: whiche with much adoe they did, leaving their Ladys examining their content, the Virginelle soon after, thus conserning with Brionella. Alas sayes Friend, it is doubtfull what danger may arise, because you have contracted your selfe to Ptolome without the Emperours consent: how will you answer when you are charged with the fault? Brionella who feared nothing but the preuening of her love, answered. In sooth Madame, you speake with great reason, you now give councell when the ded is done, and cannot be revoked till it be dispatched: would you habe all the good fortune your selfe, and suffer your Friend to enjoy no part with you: trust me that is unconscionable dealling, soz he that made you to love, frazed me to the selfe same mettall.

But I see you make the occasion to me, to lernre how to answer your owne ded: let vs reserue all to him Madame, that appoynted your choyce by deßeng, and misse by mine owne liking. Many other pleasant speches passed betweene them, undivers times their knyghtes came to visit them, till Fortune who will never suffer things long in one estate, sent an occasion to hinder this delight of their love, soz there was a messenger come to the Court from the King of Norway, Nephew to the Emperour, who being admitted audience, thus delivred his message. My Lord, the King of Norway my Master, requires your assistance in his great vicerie, against the King of England, who with a mighty and prouant Army is entred

his

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

his Dominiuns, where he hath made great wast and slaughter of his people in divers skirmishes and combats pastote, thence them, so that he never had like need as at this instant. Teach me (quoth the Emperour) I will assit him with right good will, and his misfortunes shal not a little grieve me, but I will take order for it immedately, and his power shall be with him so soone as possible may be: with whiche answere the messenger departed. Now as concerning the cause of these warres, betwene the warres of Norway and England, it was procured by displeasure of succour that the King of Norway gaue to the King of Scots his brother, who held warre with England, about the taking of certaine shippes: the Emperour likewise his heire Oneym, and for that cause he promised helpe so soone to the King his Nephew, which when Trineus understand, that his Father declared himselfe displeased with the Father of his beloued Agriola, (whose Loue no occasion could alter) he was greatly discontented, yet distempering his conceit, determined rather to ayde the King of England, then his Cousyn, and therefore intreated Palmerin to accompany him to his Chamber, where he would acquaint him with some part of the sorrow he conceiued, by the succour his Father would send to the King of Norway, against her Father whose servant he had dwelled himselfe, and therefore (quoth he) let me desire you to concreate a request I shall make to you.

You know my Lord, (said Palmerin,) that I will no less obey you then the Emperour your Father, command therefore what you please, and be it in my power, it shall be executed. So it is, quoth Trineus, that I would haue you not accompanay the power my Father sends by sea, but so much for me, that you, Ptolome and my selfe (unknowid to any) may allie the King of England in his warres, by whiche meanes I doubt not to compasse the thing I most of all desire. And this I dare tell you, that my life is onely dedicated to her service, and so well doe I hope to imploy my

paines

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

paines, that he shall have cause to loue me, and regard the paine I suffer for her sake: but I gaine the softnes to pursue my loue, right soone and sudden shall you heare of my death. Men that haue felt the like torment can censure of mine, which I dare not impart to the Emperour my Father, because of the hatred he bears the King of England: advise me therefore god friend what I shall doe.

These speeches were nothing pleasing to Palmerin, seeing he must now agayne depart from his Lady: but because he earnestly affected Trineus, and knew how well he might helpe him in his loue, answered. Assure your selfe my Lord, that I will labour diligently for your good, and shall assist you to my uttermost, in that you bears such loue to the Princesse. And I am of the opinion that having received the order of knighthood, which the Emperour your Father will not denie, it would availe you much to tell your Father how you drake (unknowing) to axd the King of Norway.

For my part, if he demand my advice, I will like it so wel, as because the Army cannot be ready so soone, your honour, Ptolome, and my selfe, will ride before towards the King, and so may we accomplish what we so earnestly desire. This counsell pleased so well Trineus, as he intended on the morrow to request his order of the Emperour: as also how gladly he would assist the King of Norway, and how necessary it was for him to bee before the Army, as Palmerin and he had devised together.

## Chap. XLIII.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

### Chap. XLIV.

How Trineus was Knighted, and what hapned to him afterward.



The morrow this young Prince seeing that to accomplish his intent, it was necessary he shold be knighted, he gaue attendance to find the Emperour at leasure, when he might sollicite his Highnesse with his suit: and understanding that he was walking in his gallery, he went to him, and on his knee thus began. Dear Lord and Father, so pleaseth your Majestie, it is now time I shold receive the order of knighthood, and moze necessary now then at any other time, in respect of my earnest desire to axd the King of Norway my cozyn in his wars. The Emperour maruellung whence this humour shold proceed, answered. Why, Trineus do you thinke your selfe able to take so weighty a charge in hand? truly such honour is soon receaved, but to maintaine it as it ought to be, and prevent the dangers incident thereto, is moze hard then you thinke, and maketh prooofe of the most courageous stomack, in that neither paine, feare of danger can binder, what matter of so great consequence both command. And perswade your selfe, that such as couelled you there-to, know scant themselves their duty in those affaires, wherefore for a time haue patience, and deferre it till better ability: for I will send godesse of other Knights in this expedition, who shall well excuse you to the King my nephew.

Trineus not contented with this answer, replied. In truth my Lord, if I were not desirous to fulfill what is required in chivalry, I woulde not so boldly haue made this demand,

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

therefore for such exceptions as you admitted, let me not I beseech you be denied at this time : and let this induce you, that such as are born to governe Kingdemes, if they giue themselves only to pleasure, without passing through the pikes of some dangerous hazard, they are not worthy to be lifted to such Honour. The Emperour hearing the bokes intide of his Sonne, and that his wodds favoured of courage, conceiting well thereof, answered : Since your desir is so earnest to be made Knight, I am well contented, but I would have it done honorably, and before a greater assembly than now is in our Court. Alas my Lord, said Trineus, there is no need of triumph before Victoie : let such pompe come in I pray you, till I haue wonne honour and account for my deeds. The Emperour full of the Princess woddy-pinten, perswaded himself he shold prove fortunate, wherefore he granted his request, so that Palmerin might accompanie him in his voyage. Of which condition Trineus was not seyry, because in hit confest all his hope of successe : So his Father commanded him to prepare himselfe for his oþer, wherupon Trineus made himselfe a celly Armour, and another for Palmerin, the vestis being changed, because they intended to passe unknowynge. Now had the Emperour leuyed an Army of tenne thousand god Shoulders, the conduct whereof was appointed to the Count Tolano, a Knight valiant and hardy, hanting had like charge in sondry occasions of Warre : therfore so soone as all things were in readinesse, they were imbarkeid, and sayled with such bendynge of wylde and weather, as soone after they tooke landyng in England. Where a while we will leaue returning to Polinarda, greatly discontent with her Wþotheres departure, because of Palmerin, and Brionella no lesse troubled for her friend Ptolome : but the Princess steling new assitacions for the absence of her Loue, came to her Wþother, saying : I know not (Wþother) who hath adised you to venture so dangerously, our Cunyn having assistance suffici-

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

ent without hazarding your person, let me then intreat you (good Wþether) to affect occasions that promise better security. Better occasions Hister (quoth he) It is impossible, if it be a thing allowable and veracious to succour a Stranger, how much more then is it to our owne Landsman, especially such a one as is our Cunyn of Norway; therfore I pray you be of god comfort till my returns. And if it so happen that my Father in my absence intend your Marriage, looke that you consent not till I come home againe : for my not beyng here will serue you for a sufficient excuse. Which Polinarda promised : and her word so pale, stod her in no small stead afterward, as you shall finde in the discourse following.

So soone as Trineus was provided of all thyrts fit for his knighthood, he caure to the Emperour in this manner. I desire you (my Lord) to accomplish your promise, having done my duty as you commanded me. With right good will my Sonne, said the Emperour, gae armes your selfe. Then went he, Palmerin, and Ptolome, Armed to the Chappell, Trineus bringynge Arme, figured all over with heareys of Gold, and in his Shyfild was pouztrayed a Knight unarmyd, holding in his hand a Bow bent, with an Arrow ready to shot against a great Eagle, he can hung a Scrole, whiche had beitten in it in Letters of Gold. This Motto : Madame, quand Mourray-je ? Wherby he meant, that the Loue that made him enterprisse this Wayage, shold haue hym company till death. Palmerins Arme was all black, declaring his mourning for his absence from his Lady, and in his Shyfild for his Devise, was figured a goodly Eagle, shewyng a little Bird uner his wings : declaring therby the fauour he had receyved of his Maestre. Soone after came the Emperour to the Chappell, where he knighted his Sonne, put his Spurce on his heale, and gyued his Swerd about him : Afterward they went to Dinner, and spent the whole day in many pleasures, for joy of this new Knight. Palmerin and Ptolome to comfert their Ladys before their depar-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Departure according as they were wont, when the Princesse Polinarda thus began. Alas my Lord, what griesse will your departure be to me? with what patience do you think I am able to endure it? — perswade your selfe, the very conceit of your absence wil be my death, or at least a curse of such danger as I shall never recover. We well advised therefore how you dealt with me, for the intent of my Brother might be broken, if you would labour in it: but if it may not be, then save my life by your sped & returne. These words were delivred with such teates and raking sighes, as Palmerin might well perceve the vehemency of her grieses, and anstirring her heauiness with as earnest opposition, said: Sweete Lady be perswaded, and temper your sorrows with patience, considering the union of our spirits makes a sympathy of affilations: If thensa; my sake you will not pacifie your selfe, yet to shield your owne perill, let me intreate you to be resolute, in that day returns shall be with such expedition as you will command. But if you continue thus in Melancholy, you will too soone bewray what as yet shoulde be concealed, and so may great harme ensue to vs both. Wherefore I desire you to moderate your impatience, and to thinke well of my departure, which is chiefly to sake out a knight, against whom I haue fought in France so; your Beauty: as so; any other matter you may believe me.

Whereupon he reported his Combat with the Knight of the Sunne, which made the Princesse (as well so; Palmerins promise, as the account he made of Fyrol) somewhat better quieted to answer. If it be so my Lord, that your returns will be with such sped, I shall then enforc my selfe to beare the burthen of my Care with as much patience as I can, and see you siall not your appointed time: but tell me I pray you, what Armes beares the Knight of the Sunne, you speake oft: whiche Palmerin deservinge, Polinarda remembred him, saying: My Lord, I know now very well what he is. So eight dayes after your departure towards France,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Fiance, the Emperour my Father knighted him, commanding me to gyrd him with his sworde, which I could not but obey: wherein the Knight gloriing, solicited me with affations not liking me, whether I pray you revenge, being the man whom the matter触者concerneth. After many other amiable conferences, the Knights humbly tooke their leave of their Ladys, and in the morning betimes, the Warriers called on Trincus and his company to hastes aboard, because the wylde seruid well so; England, which they performed with all sped, having first taken their farewell of the Emperour and the Court, so hoyling sayle, they set on to sea, and in good time camis within the boundynge of England: where we will sojake them a while, and returne to the Emperours Army, which he sent to the King of Norway his Neophyte.

### CHAP. XLV.

How the Army of the Emperour of Allmaigne arrived in England under the conduct of the Count Tolano: and how they were discomfited.

It hailest it hath been already, he to the Emperour of Allmaigne, promised the messenger of Norway, to send his Walter the R. Garde of ionne thousand men at Armes, of whom the Count Tolano was made General, and they attiued in England, without any resistance. The Count understanding by his Auant-coureurs, the Order of the Gencives Army, and where the King of Norway was Campped, ranged his men in god order, and marched toward their fooy, whiche the King haue made in the Duchy of Gaule, and whiche he had destroyed during the tyme the Duke was in France, hauing theroy fortifiid the Strongest Cittie

## The History of Palmerin D'Olifa,

City, and the Ymen that stood attest for their countrie. Crenus at his returne with Frysol, as you have heard, understanding the spoyle of his Countrey, assembled his people together, and with the aid of the King of England, came within a dayes journey from his Enemies. Who Count Tolano, hearing therers, apperid his men in seuerall compaines, and the next day he gane such sharp skirmishes to the Gauls, as they were constrained to kepe within their defences. Hereupon the Duke determined to bid them battell, and to helpe him in his attempt, he caused an Ambush of a thousand Ryal Hostemen, to place themselves in a Forrest neare adjoyning, of which company Frysol was the Leader: and to provoke the Norwyses to the Field, he sent out certayne men at Armes well provided, who scowled here and there, to the end the Allmaignes, who had bene so hot the day before, shold be compassed with the secret ambush, which fell out according to Crenus his expectation. For so soone as the Allmaignes saw the Englishmen so scowled, they dislodged themselves, and followed them, with the whole Army of the King of Norway, because they were perswaded that they betooke themselves to flight: but the Gauls not dismayed with their coming, being but foure thousand Hostemen, and tenne thousand footmen, came valiantly against the Allmaignes Ensignes, and then began a very fierce Encounter, but the Englishmen wise and politique, fearing misfortune, came on with their Regard towards the Forrest where the Ambush lay. When the King of Norway ignorant of their intent, suddenly made after them with the greatest part of his Power, but they had a boose welcome then they expected, for the Englishmen aduertised what they shold doe, gathered upon the Forrest side, charging their Enemies with such a sharpe assault, as in lesse space then an houre, two thousand of them were slaine. Frysol perceiving that the time was come to shew himselfe, calling his squadson together, cryed: Upon them valiantly my Friends,

the

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

the spoyle is ours. So they entred pell-mell among the Allmaignes, making such slaughter of them, as was wonderfull to behold: so albeit they thought not of this deceipt, they were so overweareld with dalliance, as when they came to the exploit they could doe nothing, but were slaine downe right, such valour shewed Frysol, and his fresh supply, forcing them to flight, and they following them, being glad to take the City of Tomar, which was st.ongly fortid. Which when the King of Norway perceived, he stayed not long after them, because he saw it was not well for him, and therefore flew after them for company at the hard hailes, and got the City in good time, or else they had all perisched. Thus remained Crenus Walle of the Field, and following his successe, the next day begayt the City of Tomar with Siege, swearing never to depart from thence, till he saw the Citizens either thorugh the Gates or the Wallies. Yet had this courage of his borne win coaled, if Frysol (like a good Captaine) had not cherisched vp his men, when Crenus at one Sally of the enemy lost two thousand men, and therefore said. Why how now my loving Friends and Companions? will you flye or faint at the hōne of good Fortune? desire you not to purchase the vertur so highly esteemed? Know you not that you deal with people halfe conquerid, and altogether disengaged? Courage then my Brethren, courage, and let vs not exchange our Reputation with their scare and fainting; you give me double strength good Friends, if but with your good countenance you will make them knew what cowardly crabons they are. Follow me (yabe Englishmen) and this very day will we give them punishment, as their Treason and Rebellion hath well deserved. These words renewed each others courage marvellously, so that the Duke with a fresh supply begayne agayne thus to animate them. You know my good Friends, that although we are but a handfull in respect of them, what successe we habe already had in these our encounters, so that with greater egle may we now con-

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Conquer, weakening them so dightly as we habe done: Let vs not dismay thyn, but wenes that tho woyse man among vs, is moze valiant and hardy in Armes, then the greatest Lord that is in their Compang, each man therefore cheris his hope, and beard our Enemites to their very teeth. The day following our Englysshe caues forth at the Posterne-Gate, & held the Dukes power very good play, and the Norwyses being very well appoyned with Bowes and Arrows, gauled the Hysle so cruelly, as they were glad to take their Campo: Whereupon the Count Tolano in hope of the day, followed upon them with his Allmaigne Courtailes, which Frysol perceiving, met him in the face with his English Swardayson, and giving the spurs to his Hoysse, ran with his Lante quite through his booy: Whereat the Allmaignes much amazed, when they saw their Generall fall dead from his Hoysse, determined valiantly to revenge his death, but Frysol and his men dealt with them so roundly, as the Count of them were glad and faine to make them way.

Pet had the 2 heid in Frysol, with such a troupe, as if the Duke had not spedily come with rescue, they had taken him: and then beganne the Sharpest bickering: For the Duke of Gaule and Frysol with their men, so bewirred them, as the Allmaignes cleane discauged, beganne to disorder themselves, and with the Norwyses fled to the City, so fast as they could, where Frysol and his men had entred, but that the King of Norway not daring to come into the field, was there with men sufficient to resist his entry. Thus remained the victory of the Duke of Gaule, by the brave pollicies of Frysol and his men, he being generally commended of the whole Army: and thus retrayd the Allmaignes and Norwyses, to thier shame and dishonour. After the Retraut saundred by the King of Norway, he sent to the Duke to demand twice so fourre and twenty houres, to the end they myght bury the dead, among whom was the Count Tolano: whiche being granted hym, he caused the Countes body to be embalmed:

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

balmed: who by the Counsell of his Leedes and Captaines, was sent home into his Country. The King and his Company secretly in the night embargued themselves, to joyne with the King of Scots, who expected his coming, and then did the Citizens send word to the Duke, that by the breakes of day they wold yeld vp the keyes of their Gates to him: whereupon Frysol was Lieutenant Generall for the Duke of Gaule, and entered hencurably the City of Tamar, whero the Englishmen refreshed themselves for two or thre daies, to remeince their paines with profit and pleasure. The Enemy was no sooner departed vnder Gayle, but there arose such a terrible Tempest, as the most part of their Vessels perillid in the sea, and the other were so scattred, as they had lost the sight of one another: yet was some small number remaining with the King, as well of Allmaignes, as of his owne Countreymen: So getting safe to shore in his Kingdome he determined a revenge for his great overthrow, but he could not compasse his intent, as you shall read hereafter.

## C H A P. XLVI.

How after the Prince Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, were arrived in England they went to the Court, and what tormentis the Prince endured for his Love to the faire Lady Agriola.



Rineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, being lanched within fourre daies journey of the Kings Campe, which was prouidid against the King of Scots, were aduertised that the King staled but the comming of the Duke of Tamar, and then he went to bid the enemy Battell, for that he had boldy presumed upon part of his Realme. The Garders of the Post where they lanted, setting

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

ing they were strangers, would suffer them passe no farther, till they knew their names, whither they went, and what they came soz? Palmerin answering on the behalfe of them all, said:

Good friends, we are Grecian Knights and straibl Strange Countreys to seeke abbentures: and because we heard that your King menaceth warre against his ancient and malevolent enemy, the King of Scots, we came to offer our selbes and our service to him, so please his Majestie to accept it. This answer so well contented the Officers, as by their meanees they were conducted to the Court, wherc they were honourably entertained, and two daies together were ther feasted with the King: In which time Trineus understood, that the Queen and her sayze Daughter, were above twentie miles thence: Thereupon, the next morning they tooke their Journey thither, and by dinner time they came where then the Queene lay. But it fell out so happily soz Trineus, as before they came to the place where the Court abode, they met the Queen and her traine, who dayly went to a chappel, not a quarter of a mile from the City, to heare divine service, as she kept it soz a continuall exercise, and with her was the faire Agriola her Daughter. The Queene & all her Ladys alighted from off their Palstreyes, they entred the Chappell, the Prince well regarding the Goddess of his heart, who belike making her prayers moze blesse then her Mother, came forth with her wayting Ladys, to walk vnder a company of grene Trees nere adorning. Trineus seeing her a Creature, so rare and excellent, made doubt in a matter of assurance, least he shold be surprised as Acteon was, when he found Diana bathing among the Almyps. He being thus carried away with a marbelous conceit of her Beauty, saluted not the Princesse as he passed before him, neyheard Palmerin, who reproved him for omitting his custome: but wading furth and further into this Amorous fury, spake so lowe, as he was easly heard in this manner:

①

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Heavens, will you suffer the persecutions of a Lady so distinctly accomplished, to be the cause of my undesirbed death when may the time come for me, to let her understand my deales to do her service? or how might she know the loyall affection I bears her? One of the Ladys of hono; attending on the Princesse, reputing his words vnwise and over-bold, answered. Why Sir Knight, wheres learned you so little courtship, as when the fairest in the Western world passeth before you, you make no gentle gesours of salutation? I doubt not what is counted honest and vertuous among men of qualite, with you is esteemed harsh and vncivill, which makes me repute you moze malte for the Ditcher, then to beare the honourable office and Armes of a Knight, as you dw. Trineus as it were awaked out of a trance, said. Ah sweet Lady pardon me, soz by my faith, I can neither tell what you said, nor well where I am my selfe: soz even as you ended, I felt such a passion strike me to the very heart, as death will scorne arrest me without remedy. The Lady who knew not his meaning, checked him againe, thus.

Were it not better then soz you to be in the field, then here in this foolish and vndiscreet penitencelle? It is true Lady, (quoth the Prince) that at this time I have shewed my selfe vnmannerly, and a slender Courtier, yet is not the blame altogether to be thrown on me, ignorant who the Lady was which you speake of: soz we are Strange Knights, and are come farre from this Countrey, with intent to syde and succour the King in his warres, with our vittermost endeavours. Notwithstanding, because we haue with no moze regard done our duty to your Princesse, may it please you to entreat her on our behalfe, to pardon this offence: soz satisfaction whereof, we will go serue the King her Father in battell, whore we doubt not so well to behaue our selues, as wall deserue our pardon, if so be she will not at this instant so favour vs. And I gladly would, faire Lady, that such services shoud be done by her commandement, soz our strength

②

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

strength and vertue by her affections augmented, will attribute the honour to her that so graciously assisted us, wherefore so please you to make knowne our good intent towards her, we shall so such kinde we remaine indebted to you. The Lady took pleasure in hearing Trineus, especially perceiving the zeale of him and his companions to employ their valour on the Kings behalfe, which caused her immediately dwo this message to the Princeesse, who at that instant (as a thingfall to her) was wounded with love : whereupon she sent them answer by her Chambres, that she entertained them as her Knights, and as her Servants desired them to go aside the King her Father, yet would she not consent to pardon them, till the reuolue of their exploitis might shew them to deserve it. Trineus tooke this answer for better advantage then the Princeesse thought on, accounting himselfe happy by such a god beginning. And thereroye said to the Lady, I thinke my selfe (saye Lady) one of the most favoured by fortune, having the means to obey your Highnesse in her command, and hope to execute her charge in such sort, as I shall deserve the grace she doth now deny me, yet with all humilitie on our behalfe, I intreat you, to yield thanks for her Princeesse kindestesse.

The Lady returning to Agriola, accomplished what Trineus desired her, wherewyn he turned her selfe, and gave them a countenance of favour, which was answered by Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, with very great reverence, and the Princeesse, (bewailing herselfe not too stately towards the Knights) with her hand and gesture gabs a signe of her content, which was not a little welcome to Trineus. Then the Queen comming sooth of the Chappell, with Agriola and her traine, mounted on horseback, taking their way to the Court agayne: but when Trineus had left the sight of them, wonderfull vexations began to assaile him, so that he said to Palmerin, Ah, my good Friend, how happy may that man account himselfe, whose fortune honours him with the bea-

## Emperour of Constanople. PART. I.

tie of Agriola & Ah Palmerin, I sale my selfe so exceedingly tormented, as I doubt my death will be inevitable. But tell me the truth and verrele not, how thinkes you of my Spouse? is she not a Lady more then divine? In good faith my Lord, said Palmerin, what the Knight in France told us, was fables, in that he exceedeth report beyond all opinion: notwithstanding, it was necessary for you to nourish hope, having thus spoken to her, and bewayed your afflictions, not doubting but this good beginning of your enterprize shall cause the end to fall out to your content.

So rode on these thre Knights, pleasing their humours with their severall judgements of their Ladys, yet Palmerin had seen such matter in English Agriola, as, but his plighted promise to Polinarda, was of force sufficient to change his fancy. The next day they arrived at the King of Englands campe, where, because they would not be knowne, they pitched their Tents beyond all the other: and soon after came the Duke of Tintrie, bringing with him a number of harrymen at Armes, so that in short time the Kings Strength was such, as they exceeded their enemies in number. Whereupon the King assembled his Councell, and concluded, that the next day they would go forth out the King of Scots, who in two encounters had the upper hand, which made him so peremptory, as he perswaded himselfe utterly to confound the King of England: who rayning his power, followed so diligently, as the third day after he encamped within halfe a mile of his enemy, that had besieged the Towne of Corfania, and had brought it ready to yield, but that the King preuented it by the strength he brought.

CHAP. XLVII.

Of the cruell battell betwene the King of England, and the King of Scots,



When the King of Scots understood the commynge of the King of England, and that in all hys he wold bid hym battell, he wold no lenger telle hymselfe in besleging Corfania, but relyred a litle for his better abvantage, conferring with his Captains about their present affars concluding to offer the enemy no skirmishes, because thereby they wold know their intent: notwithstanding he gave orde to prepare for battell, because he knew the King of England came for no other purpose.

The Englishmen not sackinge the Scots to haue any leasure to fortifie themselves, were by the King the next moringe commanded in array, and all wings and squadrons appoynted: The Duke of Tincriel was made leader of the abavngard, wherin likewise were Trincus, Palmerin, and Ptolome: and to the Dakes Brother was committed the charge of the areargard: and bring all ready to march on, the King himselfe began his Oration. I thinke my friends. That no one of you, but soffitiently is acquainted to what respect we warre this warre, namely, to defend the honour and reputation of our Realme, and to save the liues of you, your wifes and children: and your goods, whiche the enemy wold violently spoyle and take from you, intendyng to thys perpetyall bondage and slauery on your necks. Will you not then defend your liberties: will you not maintaine your ancient tenowne, which is to be Zorbs and commanders of the Scots? assure your selues, that

Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

that how strong soever the enemy be, I hope with the ayd of God, your undaunted courages, and the right of our cause, to make a noble and victoriouse conquest. For I know that our enemy hath not one man in his Army, endued with such an entirre heart and magnanimitous courage, as you are, nor that valueth his title of honour with his life, as you do: and therefore if we march on valiantly, continuing resolute and conuent together, every man labouiring for his Prince, Countrey, friend, and felowe, and God soz us all, your soverainnesse will make them fearefull, and your very countenances enough to conquer. Every man then bechearefull, with a deale to banquish.

And here I vow to you on the word of a King, that if fortune stand so well with vs, as to winne the day, never shall the Scots hereafter lift up themselves against vs. Thus did the King of England animate his men, and so marched on in good array to the sight of their Enemies, who by this time had empaled themselves in oder of Battell: their Abavngard conducted by the Marquesse of Monchel, the King of Scots himselfe in the maine Battell, and the Kere-ward led by the King of the Isle of Magdalen: and as the King of England had encouraged his Souldiers, so beganne the King of Scots to hearten his men in this manner. The time is now come ( loyall Subjects: and dore Friends) that the pride of the English must be abated by the valour and yoyallnesse of the Scots, so that if you set before your eyes h[er] occasion which calleth vs to the field, there is no one of you but will blame his Predecessors, for stayng so long time to recover. What by true Patriomyng belonged unto them, & by the Kings of England, (most Tyrannous Murders) against all right, violentlie taken from our Ancestors. Will you not then recover your loste, and re-enter on those possessions, from whiche your fathers (against all right & reason) were expulset? Why not challenge it at your hands, being the goddes not onely for your selues, but for your children and successours. Would you then,

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

lose so good opportunity, to re-establish things so lost? Are your hearts more timorous then poor enemies? are your minds made of worse mettall then the rest? No, no, well am I assured that the least among you, is of higher vertus and account then the best in their company. If it hath beene their custome, (as they them selues haue) to triumph over vs, let vs learne them to confesse with patience, that they have no such right or custome to banquish, as in thys skirmishe alreadye we haue sufficiently made knowne, with what fortune and unconquerable spirits you entertained your enemy. Dis-may no moare now (my good friends) then you haue done, let each mans sword make his entrance amidst his foes, and favour one anothers life, so shall sweet successe retorne you with victory. The King having ended, ther discerned the English power eager to encounter, and so the Armies meeting, began a dreadfull and dangerous battell.

There might you haire the Drummes thundre, the Trumpets sound, the Clarions ring, the Whistles warble, Lances shined, Knights dismanted, footmen scattered, heads desended, armes and bodies wounded, some crying, other dying, a matter moare then lamentable to behold, and so long continued this cruell and bloody conflict, as the most part of the Manatgard were slaine, soze wounded, or taken prisoners. Which when the King of Scots perceyued, being a Prince so hardy and valiant as might be, commanded the mains battell to giue the Charge, in the midde wherof he was in person: whereupon the fight begannе againe much moare fierce then before, so that ye might haue heard the Horses Royme, the Armour clatter, and on every side beheld god and venturous Knights giue by their lilles. At this furious onset, Palmerin swing the Scots to respyre so advantage, cryed to the King of England. Why holde no more Royses you to get your selfe? why do you not follow on with your mains battell, seeing the enemy playes upon advantage? cheerfully let vs open them, so the day will

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

will be ours. The King seeing that Palmerins counsell was very expedient, commanded his men to march on valiantly, which they did with such courage, as not one of them but was thorowly busied. Palmerin fearing least Trineus would be ouer venturous, because the young Prince was maruellous forward, desired him not to runne to farre into danger, but kepe by him, so the one might succour the other, if necessity required. With these words he ranne upon the Scots like an angry Lyon, and no man durst withstand him, they saw him make such slaughter: the King of England following him at an inch, deluering true testimony of his invincible heart. On the other side, Trineus met with the Kings Brother of the Isle of Magdalen, piercing his Lance quite through his body, so that he fell dead among his owne Shoulders: and Ptolome all this while was not idle, but where ere he came, he layd his enemy at his feet, so that the Scots wondered at the behaviour of these thys Knights. When the King of the Isle of Magdalen understood the death of his Brother, incensed with unquenchable anger, ran fiercely among the English, till he came where Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome were, one of his Knights hewing the King the man that slew his Brother, whereupon he making towards Trineus, listed by his Sworde, and thought to haue slaine him, but Palmerin keeping betweene them, said. Come Captaine, to me, and so the King and he encounred together so terribly, as Palmerin was wounded in two of thys places, for which he made such recompence to the King, as felling his Sworde on his Helmet, clost his head in thair: that done, hee fell dead to the ground. The fight hereof enflamed the Scots with such rage, as like mad men they ranne cutting and killing among the English, as well to revenge the King of the Isle of Magdalens death, as to defend their own King, whose danger they feared. In this hotte skirmish, the Kings of England and Scots, met together, who charged each other

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

with their forcible stroaks, as the King of England was boyled and soore wounded: but Trineus being at hand, seeing his deere friends fater in such perill, buckled with the King of Scots so valiantly, as he gane him many a cruell wound, and but that his men made haste to convey him through the thong, he had been slaine by Trineus, so was the King of England mounted againe, and reneged his soyle on his Country with maruellous valour. There triumphed the three Grecian Knights, with inexplicable honour, the Englishmen making such hauock among the Scots, as viterly dispayring, them fled: one part to a Forrest neare at hand, and the other part towards the See, to their shippes, the King getting into one of them to save his life, by the helpe and meanes of one of his knyghts, that lent him a good Jeunet of Spaine, to escape away withall. And so sayled thence the King with greater shame, than did the Emperour Antonius from Octavius Caesar, leaving his men fiercely pursued by the English, who terrified them in such sorte, as many of the poore Scots chose rather to runne into the See, and dwelue themselves, then to fall into the hands of their conquering enemiter.

### C H A P. X L . V I I I .

Of the retreate of the King of Englands army, and the honour he did to the three Strange Knights.



After the King of England was Maister of the Field, he caused the retreat to be sounded, and his men called together, commanding likewise that search shold be made through the Field, to succour such as were soore wounded, and to bury the dead, least the ayre shold be infested, where-

upon

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

upon the Englishmen took the spoyle of their enemiter, thid by their bag and baggage whiche they had left behinde them. In the meane while the King withdrew himself into his Tent, where remembryng the great seruice of the thre Strange Knights, he commanded his nephew Cerides to seek them immedately, who found them in a Scottish tent, binding by their wounds: and being not a little glad of his goddesse, he came to Palmerin, saying. Gentlemen the King my Uncle earnestly desirereth you to come to him, because he will neither enter the towne nor dwelue himself, till he heare some tidings of you. Saing it please him, said Palmerin, to command, we humbly obey, wherefore we pray you Sir to returne his Palestyn our dutifull thanks, and diligent atten-

dance.  
After Cerides was departed, they resolved among themselves (at the earnest request of Trineus) that Palmerin shold be the chiefe among them, and him they would bounser as their Lord, because the Prince feared to be known. If such account shold be made of him: so went they presently to the Kings Tent, where they were no sooner entred, but the King (albeit he was soore wounded) arose from his Chaire, and embracced them levingly one after another, not sufferinge them to knolle before him, but honorably thus spake to them. Cloth thy Gentlemen, how welcome you are I cannot expresse. for I account my selfe so highly beholding to you, as the Realme of England had sustaineid this day great soyle, but by your soveraunce valour: thinke then weorthy Lords, wherein England may recompence you, and on my word it shall not be denied: in meane while I pray you let me have your Company, because I will see your hurts carefullly attened. The Knights with greater reverence accepted the Kings noble offer, and were conducted into a sayle Tent neare the Kings, where the Chirurgions with great diligence dresseid their wounds, and afterward they eaten and supped with the King. And because the King

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

King intended on the morrow to go refresh himselfe at the Towne of Corfania, which before had been cruelly besieged by the Scots, to give God thankes for the happy victory, a famous Sherman was made before him, by the Archbishop of Canterbury, to whom likewise he gave order for entring of such as had been slaine of accout, and in that place for memory of his good fortune, he caused a goodly Monastery to be builded, and dispatched a Poste presently to aduertise the Queen, and the Noble Lords of his good successe.

Now was his Majestie very desirous to know the thre strange Knights, that had so valiantly assailed him, especially the man that saved his life: whereupon, the next morning he went to see them, demanding how they fared? For (quod. he) we will now set forward to Corfania, where we will make you better entertainment then we can doe here in the field. Then mounted they all on b'z'ebach, and rode to Corfania, where the King remained, till he and his Knights were better recovered. And where the King made the Duke of Tintric L. high Marshall of England, committing to his charge six thousand men, commanding him to chase all the Scots forth of his Kingdome, wheresoeuer he could find them, and to sette to his Highnesse use, the Townes and Castles, which they before had in use: which the Duke executed with such expeditious, as he left not a Scot in any Village or Hamlet, placing saifst 11 Officers for the King in every Jurisdiction.

During these labours of the Duke, the King every day blamed these three Knights, and finding Palmerin at a time convenient, he requested to know of whence he was, and the names of his Companions. Let me intreat you (quod. he) not to hid your selves from me, because I shall not be in quiet till I know, that I may remunerate your deserts according to your persons. Palmerin, who now feared to be discovered, could not readily well devise what answer to make, yet at length in great humility, thus said. O King would suffice your Majestie, that it might so stand with your good liking, as this

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

time to excuse the knowledge of our present affaires, as all what we are: yet thus farre will I resolve your Highnesse that we are all Gentlemen of Greece, nevrished in the court of the King of Macedon, who in seeking strange adventures, haue travellled many Provinces, and now at length came into your Kingdome, well stored at this time with Knights Errant, and governed (as we well perceue) by a King so gracious, as no King where we yet haue come doth the like. For this cause my Lord, as also understanding that the King of Scots menaced warre against you, came we into your countrey, to doe you service in all obegiance, as the very amplest among your Soldiers. Trust me (said the King) I have well noted your service, and a man might be deceived in expecting better assistance. For which I rest yours, in ought I may, while I live: but if you shold name your selves, then shold I know to whom I were indebted, as also that my Subjects might honour you accordingly. That (quoth Palmerin) will neither profit nor prejudget your Majestie, let suffice then I beseech you, the unsainted god will and service we owe to your Highnesse. The King, seeing he could not get what he would, changed his talke, saying: Was it you Sir, that on the day of Battell was armed all in blacke? said my Lord, said Palmerin, and this Knight (pointing to Trineus) is my Brother; who helpe you from danger against the King of Scots. Ah faire Friends (quoth the King) this made me so impoztante: And may it like you to stay in my Court, I will regard you according to your speciall deservings, as the onely Knights of the World, in favour, yielding thanks to Heaven, for the good I haue received by your meane.

Humibly did the three Knights regratulate the King, promising for a while to sejourne with him.

C H A P. X L I I I .

How the Queen of England was advertised of the victory against the King of Scots, and of the overthrow of his whole Army.



Then after the King of England had sent tidings to the Queen of his good fortune, and the honour he intended to the three Knights of Greece; the Messenger was so sped, as the second day following he came where the Queen kept her Court, & presented her the letters from the King her Husband, reciting the whole manner of the battell, with the rare exploits of the three Grecian Knights, and how one of them preserued the Kings life, omitting nothing that was meetfull to be reported, and how the King intended to come with the three Knights in great Royalty to London, and therefore she should provide eqnall entertainment. The Queen highly contented with these powres, demanded of the Messenger if he knew the three Knights, that gaue assistance to the King. So indeed Madame, answered the messenger, neither yet did I see them, but at the time I was dispatched with my message. Agriola finding in her selfe the puissance of a little god that made her, suddenly suspeaced that these Strange Knights were they which she saw at the Chappell, and therefore said. I pray thee tell me my friend, what Armes bears the Knights? One of them Madame, (quoth he) who comes the very best Knight in the world, is in green Armour, & that is he that sauied the King your Fathers life, when the King of Scots had nere daine him, but he remounted my Lord, givning his enemy such a dangerous wound

wound with his Lance, as it was greatly doubted he had kilde him, he lost so much blood, and this was one of the princi-  
pal occasions of our victory. This Knights Companion in  
black-Armour, behaues himselfe with wonderfull Chivalry:  
soz as a Lyon makes haacock in a Herd of Cattell, so vnde he  
cut, dash, and mangle the Scots, as the very haire & darrk  
not ablie before him. The third in black-Armour, sparkled  
all ouer with white Roses, a Knight of no leesse courage then  
his companion, and one that fought for England, with incre-  
dible proesse. Let me dye, said Agriola to the Queen, if  
these be not the Knights that pass by this City, when we  
went to the Chappell to perorme our exercise: and there-  
withall shew rehearsed what spech her Gouernesse had with  
them, and what she commanded them. In sooth Daugter  
(quoth the Queen) your Gouernesse and son may well be  
blamed, for the slender account you made of them: I pray you  
therefore when they returne, let your former fault be suffi-  
ciently recompensed. That shall I not fail to doo said Agri-  
ola. So the Queen honourably rewarded the Messenger, sen-  
ding him back with this answer, that the Kings charge  
should be effectually executid. The King adverstid of the  
Queens reply, set forward with the Knights of Greece,  
and his Crayne to the Conrt, and by the way, remembryng  
the power sent by the Emperour of Almaigne to the King  
of Norway, he said to Palmerin, I cannot sufficientlly mar-  
uell,gentle Knight, why the Emperour should declare him-  
selfe mine enemy, and gaue assistance to the King of Nor-  
way,against me, considering I never did any thing might  
deserue his displeasure: But I swear by the saide of a King,  
that I will revenge my wronng, and let him assure himselfe,  
that while I haue one foote of grounde, a dozen of my Sol-  
diers to helpe me, I will never haue peace with him: to  
moleste me within mine owne dominions: by God, my  
Friends, I cannot forget it. These wrods greatly dispea-  
sed Trincus, but especially Palmerin,who answered. In my  
opinion

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

opinion my Lord, the Emperour did but reason, and as duty bound him, in respēt he could not honestly refuse to ayd the King of Norway his Cōzīn, and hereof I can assure you, in that I have sometimes bēne in his Court, that he is one of the wīsest and best governed Princes that ever I could heare of. Wherefore (be it spoken vnder coūfession) your Majestēt shoulde forget this light offence, and consider if the like had bēne done to yo, you would haue no leſſe.

When the King heard him so ſupport the Emperours cause, he priuenly judged him to be of his Court, and therfore ſaid. Are you he Sir, that wonne ſuch honor and renown in France, at the tourney maintained by the Prince Lewes, for the Love of his Lady? If you be ſo, I pray you do not deny it, for I shall henceforth thynke my Court wile happy, to harbour the mox Excellent among all Knights: and I promiſe you I am ſo zealous of mine owne conceit, as you can hardly perſuade me otherwise, ſuch experience haue I made of your Beautē and vertue. Palmerin blushing at these his words, and doubting leaſt he ſhould now be certainly knowne, anſwered. We mox humbly haue intreated your Majestēt heretofore, and ſo we do now again, that you woulde not enquire of whence we are, ſufficieth your Highnesſe, that we are his humble Servants, in any thing that ſhall like him to command vs. The King this hearing, repented himſelue that he haue bēne ſo impotunate, ſo he ſearched leaſt his ſpeeches ſhould make them ſayſake his company, wherefore by this time being come neare unto his Pallace, he ſaid. What I haue ſaid Gentlemen, I hope ſhall not offend you: in my excuse admit my earnest deſire to know you. By and by overtoke them the Duke of Tintrie, who went to reſtore the Crowne, (as you haue heard) what the Scots diſputed, and he adVertiſed the King, that the Queen and her Ladies were ridden to a Castle about ſoure miles from London to ſolace themſelues: whereupon the King refolde to ryde thither: whereof the Prince Trineus was not ſoory, ſuch was

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

was his deſtre to ſee his faire Friend, whose Love all croſſed him with ſo many Paſſions, as he ſearmed a man of another Worlde, and did not his wounds ſcarre ſomewhat to cover his diſease, hardly could he haue ſound out any ſhift to conceale it ſo cloſely, wherefore he began with Palmerin thus: You know my chosen Friend, that the good hope of my Love made me leaue my Fathers Court, and to prevent my meaning conſulteth onely in you: Now in respect of my ſeſcible Captivity, being apprehended of Strength, ſence, or any means to diſcover my Love to her, who onely can help me: I intreat you by the inviolable league of our amity, that when you haue chance to ſpeak with the Goddesſe of my life, my paines and anguiſhes may ſerve for my halutatſon, and unparing to her the extremity of my ſorrows, ſhe may well perceiue in what estate I am, and what need I haue now of her gracious pity. These words were deliuered with ſuch ſtoze of ſighes and teares, as Palmerin was amazed thereat, albeit he knew how heavy the burthen was, and how it excedeth patience in ſuffering, comparing his abſence from his Princeſſe Polinarda, to be as insupporatable, as the preſence of ſayze Agriola, (not daring to ſpeak to her) was to Trineus; whereupon he anſwered. My Lord repose your trauell in this matter on me, which I doubt not but to handle in ſuch ſort, as you haue no cauſe to be Mal-content, or the Princeſſe any reaſon to be ungratefull. But what think you if my Dwarse did carry this meſſage & in my opinion (through the whole worlde) you could not finde a moxe or ſellow, ſuch is his ſubtilte and preſent i[n]vention, as he will proove the onely King to your boord. Alas ſaid the Prince, I care not who were employed herein, ſo I were ſure of conſol. Then was the Dwarse called, to whom Palmerin in this ſort began. It is well knowne to the Urbanillo, with what god will I woulde do any ſervice I could to my Lord Trineus, as well for the incomparabile kindnesſe I haue receiued of my Lady his Sister, as for the affinitie I hope Hall

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Gall one day be betwixt vs by his meanes. So often have I made experiance of my leuell service and fidelitie, in my chaste and very neare affaires, as well may I impart to thee, the secrets of my Noble Companions, persuading my selfe of the surety and secrecy. It now remaynes that thou pleasure the Prince Trincus, in breaking his loue to the Princesse Agriola, as thou didst so; me to my Mistresse Polinarda: but above all things haue regard, that then belvay not of whence, or what we are, yet must thou assure her, that the Prince is one of the greatest Lords in all Europe. My Lord (quoth the Dwarf) I was never yet disobedient to you in all my time, and very loth were I now to begin: but because I am such a wretched fellow, you make me your worker in these pernicious Loue-matters.

Notwithstanding, I will do it though I dyed so; it, entailing my life well bestowed to pleasure such Princes.

There canno inconuenience arise hereby to them (quoth Palmerin) but profit every way: be not enemy then to thine owne god. That will I never (said the Dwarf) and well weight the Lady be judged by you; obide of reason, and very far from understanding, if she make resuall of the Princes honourable offer: the King himselfe (if he knew it) would imagine his dayes blessed: the issue of this enterprise cannot but sort to god. The Dwarf too;as pleased so well Trincus, as he took him in his armes, saying: I command my selfe and my happiness to thee. Let me alone (quoth Urbanillo) if I bying you not heards to coule this hot Gener, then let me never be counted for a tall man: So went he about it as you shall understand hereafter.

## Chap. XLVIII.

## Emperour of Constantinople PART. I.

### Chap. L.

How the King of England went to the Castle to the Queen and her Ladies, and of the honorable entertainment made to the three strange Knights.



When being brought to the Russe, that the King was not farre off, he sent a very honourable traine to mete him, and with them his sonnes the young Prince Fredericke, ten yeres old, but beautifull and of such perfection, as promisid great hope to come to come. He having made reverence to his father, and the other Princes, demanded so; the strange Knights, now saluting them with such kinnesse. When came the Childe, he rode betwixt Trincus and Palmerin, shewing them herte thanks for their friendly succour to his father, without which, said he, as the Queen my mother told me, he had dyed, and we all beene distresed. By this time they were come to the Castle, all the way so thickes populed with people, as there was no roome to lyeke among them, whereupon crying happy be the Knights that stayed our sister. So entering the Castle, in the aftermost Court ther mette the Queen and her Ladys, among whom stode Agriola shewed, as beautifull Venus amoung the other Starres, before which the Prince of Allemaigne shid so right in the boud, as an offendour with his guilt before a Judge. So that now regarding what young Fredericke, or the other Lords courted, he said to him, he was ready to fall before his boxe with overmuch gazing: But Palmerin suddenly twiching his fastig, said. Sir my Lord, what means you to forget your selfe thus? See you not her that is exayned yours, and will you not triumph in your happy sight, but like as one sterly discouraged? So Hamlet passe this purllianitie,

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

and with cheerfull countenance ges give her the god morrow. The Prince did so, but with such timorous conceits, as having saluted the Mother, he durst not speake to the daughter, who imagining the best, and that basfull reverence did so withhold him, she came to him in this manner. Are not you Sir, the Knight in the grene Armour, that not long since promised one of my Ladys to aid my Father in his warres? I am faire Princesse, quoth he, and what I have done, was at your commandement, the vertue whereof gane me such strenght, as icome of the Scots haue felt to their selfe: but had I gone unprovided of such favour, I am perswaded I could never haue returned aline.

It now remaynes, sweet Lady, that according to the request I then made your Ladryship, it would please you to remit his offence, who deserved the sharpe punishment can be devised, soz not honouring that Princesse, which carrieth the Palme from all Ladys living. In truthe, my Lord, sayd the Princesse, not onely is your fault to be forgiuen, if it shalbe named a fault, but also ought I to recompence you to my bittermest power, seeing by your meanes my Father is in safety, and the Realme of England delivered from the tyraunous servitude of the Scots: wherefore you may assure your selfe, that if I can stand you in any stead towards the King my Father, you shall command me to my bittermest. The Prince returned her a thousand thanks, and said. Belike my Madame, the very leaste telle of your good will, is recompence to me moche then sufficient, and would provoke such affliction in me towards your service, as you could not demand the thing, but I shoulde both durst not willinglye performe it, as I doonot but better occasions shall make manifest unto you. Then entred they the great Hall, where such a sumptuous banquet was provided, as will ask moche time to report, then leysure will admit. Likewise here to set downe the wonderfull pavillons of the amorous Prince Trincus, in regard of a Lady so ex-

ceeding

## Emperour of Constantynople: PART I.

ceeding superstitions, surpaßeth my capacity: but he that is seated so opposite to us sayes a creature, and loves so earnestly as Trincus, yet dares not speake I feare he shoulde be clipped, may judge of that which I cannot attey. But seeing the libertie of speach was denied, the spoyl was pulled betweene them with sweete converayances, and still must the countenance the stranger Knights, till fearing to be taken tardy, he closely conferred with the Princesse Eusemia, Daughter to the Duke of Norgalles, saying: What thinkes you Cousin of these strangers? are they not the seemlyest personages that ever you saw, both in fayour, countenance, god grace and hardinesse? I am of the opinion, that although they report themselves but as simple Knights errant, they be doubtless great Lords, descended of noble and princely parentage: no one may easly gather by their ciuitt and vertuous beha- bition, which is evermoore the mettresse of true nobility.

These words caused Eusemia to mark well Trincus, as her Cousin Agriola did, which he perceyning, and judging that they talke of hym, his alteracions were so sensible as they might easly be discerned: soz the more they eyed him, the greater was his torment, till the Table being withdrawne, he had some ease in spending his minde to Palmerin, whose comfortable wordes were as good to him as re-joyninges. Agriola on the other side escaped not free, for her easse was no greater when she arose, then when she sat downe, and that must be little, having to walke a mile before her to fill her stomack.

The next morning, the King and the Ladys mounted on horseback, setting towards London, and God knowes the Prince was not farre behinde them, living onely by the regard of her, with whose rare beauty he could never satisfie his eyes. And as they rode throughe a forest, the King seeing the trees so greene and delightfull, and because the heatte of the day hindered their trauell, he caused his pavillons, and tents to be there presently pitched, and

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

intended to dine there under the coole trees. Dinner being ended, he woulde neens goe coorse the Mare, walking the afternone in that paxline, and on the next day, rose to chase a Hart which was taken in the sayles, and therewithal all a huge wilde Mare, the mightiest that ever was seen, having wounded him in many places, as the Dogs and Blindehounds myght easly trake him. Afterward they roves a falshome care, when the hantmen made the broode ring so hardely with winding their Houghnes, and the Greyhounds pursued the course so spedily: as Pelemedes chise was not comparable to this, till in the end the Mare was taken. These pleasures finished, the King with his company returned to his Tents, shewing to the Duene and her daughters the frutes of their paxline, saying. I promise you madame, I thinke these Grecian Knights excell in every thing: so as in chivalry, so this day have they shewed themselves excellent bussines, as none in our saynes may compare with them. By this time the Tables were covered for Supper, all which time was spent in discoursing of these spottes till the god night given on all sides, the thre Knights withdrew themselves into their Tent. All these pleasures maden Vrbanillo forgetfull of his Masters charge, wherefore practising how to accomplish it elsewys, he found meanes to come acquainted with the Ladies attending on the Princesse, and in respect he attened on the Knights of Greece, he was licencest the other into theys company. The next morning, the King and the Knights walking into the Woods, the Dwarfe watching time to deliver his message, wades so many bushes and returns before the Princesse Pavillion, as at last he espred him, and calling him to her, said: I pray thee, my friend, by the faith thou bearest the Master, tell me the trueth of a matter I shall aske of thee: Madame (quoth the Dwarfe upon his knes) command what you please, soz there is nothing (my spakkers poyntice excepted) but I will surely tell you.

which

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART I.

which of the thre, said the Princesse, is thy Master? The spakker (quoth the Dwarfe) hath not his seruants in all perfitnes, be it so that was in the black arme, he is in greate honore, your father did so many wonderfull deedes, as falleth especially the fabulous reportes of Sir Launcelot du Lake. In sooth (quoth he) so true, as he is beside the duty referred to the spakker, I see no man fit him forsooth for a most hardy Knight: but tell me further, whence he is? what are his compaynges? and why do they make this valuty to be knowne? Madame, saye he, I comfite with my duty answere you, soz I am so trahced by a knyghtly promys, not to revealis the least matter that may be profitfull to them. Morexthelesse, in regard of the chace he hath told them, and that I wold not have him approued with such an abest creature as I am, I will gladdly tell you this thing to your content, so you will command me on your princely wye, that what I revealis conserue he discovered by you. Perswade the knyght that he will not breake his word, and looke what thou sayest, by thy knyght, that wyl turns to thy astur harmes. Then knyght spakke, (quoth he) that the grete Knight is at the most noble and illustrious house in Europe, lord of a knyghtly properrie, soz when he hath left his Country, he will have friends, to come and do her service. The black Knight, as I haue alreadly tolde you, is my spakker, and further then this I may not tolle you. What am I the more for my selfe, quod he, by this answere: either thou shaldest haue lounchynge, or else thou shal abyde satisfyd me, soz as I can not be quested, till thou tell me what Ladie it is, whiche the grete Knight loves so spredly: let me not make so many intreaties, by I promise to thee againe, by the faith of a knyght, that never shall any creature knowe it by my meane. You urge me so farrre, quoth the Dwarfe, and here haue we farrre great promises, as I am constrained (beyond the charge given by my spakker) to arguynt you wylly the trouth, in respect

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

respect, the fault will be greater in you to make resissall, than in yielding. Resolue your selfe therefore good Madame, that the braue knyght Bright, so rich in Armes, but meane in minde, is the knyght Trineus, sonne to the Empereur of Allemaigne, who dwelleth in leau, and so deuyd of libertie, by deuoutnesse of your excellent bounte: as against both Duty and Right, which deceived his Father, leyning to come ayde unto him, when the King of Norway, where contra-  
rwise, he bath shewid himselfe his moste tall Enemy. And to no other end bath he thus escended both Father and Cousin, than to make knowinge his long and laboures destres, to make you Ladie and Pittress of him and his; and such is his fears to be refused, as he exudres more tormentis, than the mar-  
tyred body of poore Prometheus. Be not then the cause honest Ladie, that a Prince so laisous, and a knyght so gen-  
gle, shall bear his great goddesse to your Father and Coun-  
try, yea the moste loyall loue he dedica to you, in batta-  
ly, unfearende, and crull death. Whiche both your Iuste,  
is it not the highest among all honouris, to be wife to such a  
Lord, and Empesse (in time) of renouned Allemaigne?  
Is it not perpetuall represt, to be Ladie and commandesse of  
the princiell part of Europe? Let not him beare recorde  
that a boor so neygarde, and Countenance so milde and gra-  
cious, can entartaine tyrannie or cruelty: yea Madame such  
cruelty, as if you receiue him not into your fauourable con-  
cett, you shall progre the death of the truest Knyght in loue  
that enclined. The blacke Knyght is the renouned Pal-  
merin D'Oliva, the wonder of the world for valour, conque-  
ring in France the Duke of Savoy. In maintenance of his  
Ladys beauty, sayde without compare: conformenting his  
Sobield and Armeur, equall to his mourning thoughts, for  
his absence from her that triumphs in his loue. The thrid  
Knyght so adorned with White Roses, is called Peolome,  
loved by a Ladie well woorthe of him. It now remayneth  
sayde Princesse, that you make the Prince Tripes equall with

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART I.

with the rest in felicity, so; you have the spalden head of his  
loue, which with hono; you may extortaine into your chaste  
thoughts. This haue I acquainted you with such a secret,  
as no creature bat your selfe shal haue knowne, and the  
danger to folde to your misconceit, for to haue done such a  
blab: leauing all you haue heard to your owne construction.  
Agriola, mette fare enough, to haue a glaze, but  
now utterly denys of longer liberte, because the wordis of  
Urbanillo, was surpised with such a straunge alteration, as  
a long time ther was diuen to silense, not able to utter the  
secreet conceite of her minde, yet at length ( to shewe her  
suddenne change from the Dwarfe) ther sayd. Oh my  
Friend, thou acquaintest me with matter altogether in-  
credible, is it possible that Trineus sonne to the Empereur  
of Allemaigne, would venturis into this Court, considering  
the nayll enmities betwix our Fathers? Tell me my  
Friend I cannot credit thee. He remoues my owne soule  
sayde the Dwarfe, if it be not as I tol you: then judge ope-  
namente, what acceptance shoulde be made of his seruice,  
when Loue to you exceedeth nature: May it not be learned  
loue surpassing all other, either registered in antiquities, or  
present memorie? If it shoulde be, quoth she, as thou sayest,  
it is beyond my power to reueare condigne recompence,  
yet in respect of the secrecy, I durst assure thee, mine owne  
opinion of him hath so over-mistris me, as in honourable  
modesty he may command, and I am not so well instructed  
to disingre. But if eypher by my woordes thou hast gathered,  
or by any change of Countenance perceaved, the shewing  
yeeling of a sterke Nature: Interprete it in this goddesse,  
that Palices afflictions make each other wile, as framis  
of one mettall, which I charge this conceale from him, as  
ther regardeth my wod and his safety. Warson me Ma-  
dame, (quoth the Dwarfe) it standeth not with my alle-  
geance to obey you herein, what a villaine knyght I ha-  
counted, and unworthy the name of a fathfull knyght.

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

I should hiss these happy synges from him, to ease those tormentts that every houre threaten his death: & you spacie, did my Master but thinke I would so abuse him, most deserved I shold hym in pieces. Well, quoth he, if thou sholdst complaynt tell him, but no other I charge thee on thy selfe, and shall certifie him, that I would not say my freres names he shold be knowene. Feare you not, good ~~gentlemen~~, said the Dwarfe, they are already so well advised, as none but your selfe can any way endanger them. It suffiseth that the Prince understand your pleasure which I will imparte to him when the thing is returned: so kissing her hande he departed, leaving her so highly contented, in assurance of theoyall loue of Tryneus, as she never determined any other Husband, yet should she not disclose her minde, no not to Enfemia, her secret companion, thinking her selfe too much bewrayed, because the Dwarfe knew it. Soones after the Queen sent for her, to walke in the coole shadowe of the Trees, where not long they stayed before the King returned, who reportid what pastime they had all that morning. The Knights having saluted the Queen and her Ladies, Tryneus saluting the Princesse Agricola, was so transported as he scant knew wheres he was. The Princesse therewile stred with a stedfast eya on him, as wounded both him and her selfe together, her complexion so aptly decyphering her Achnesse, as the Prince perceyning it, said to himselfe. Ah loye, haſt thou wrought so happily for me, as my Lady knowes my secret afflictions? Shall I be so fortunate, as she will take repouſe on my passiones? Shalte hope peraduade me so, for the often charge of her Maimed countenance, telles me there is some dower in working. The King and Queen departing into their pomerium, Tryneus and Palmerin did the like into theirs, the Prince taking Urbanillo alſo demanded if he had any goddaues for him. If you will graunt me one thing (said the Dwarfe) I will tell you such synges, as  
cannot

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART I.

cannot but content you. Demane what then will (quoth Trineus) and by the fatch of a Prince, then shal not be denegd. When began the whole discourse he had with the Prince, and what remedies he had for the recovery of his health. Judge you in what rare humour the Prince, who left himselfe without question he imagined himselfe in moe beautifull paradise, then when was in dede by Epicurus himselfe, and embracing the Dwarfe, he said. Ah my good friend, what wilt thou that I gife thee & tell what thou demandest thou hast my whole life so much at thy command, as thou mayest liberally share out thine alon recompence, the synging the beginning is so good, no doubt, much better remaineth behinde. Why my Lord (saide the Dwarfe) you know, I was boorne to do you service, command what you please, and I will accomplish it. When shal them (said the Prince) returne to my Quarters againe, and kissing her hand, pagent her from me this Generals, desiring her to weare it for my sake; with remembrance to pitte his painfull miseries, whose Life and death is enely in her hand. Urbanillo taking the King, Tryneus and Palmerin, went to sport with the King and the Princesse, at thys entrance regarding Trineus, perceyued well by his countenance that he understood her mesage, so that his bloud was not rulen chearely in his face, whiche before was sunke downe with much lany shirking. So that the toragliued her selfe moe happy, in being so belovyd, then to love, and knew not well how to discouer his joy. Ah pwe Trineus, the paine then haſt endured, in attending the boylid bones to speake with her, forre somwhat the instruments of Leander, aboutting when Phœbus would geue bathes himselfe with Thetis, and the matres goddes, that he might afterward ſittem to his affianced Heroe: and had not she gifered the a better signe by her eya to adventure, I would haue reckoned them moe unfortunat, then the beir of the Spouse to the prisoner of Abydos. Who had Trineus bathfully taken the Princesse by the hand, when unhappy ly

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

It one came to abvertise the King, that the Hart he had chased the day before, was now againe gotten within the foyles; that if it pleased him to hunt in the moring, he shoulde doubtfull him with little labour. These newes were so welcome to the King, that because he wold the next moring noye easly see to his pastime, he withdrawe himselfe so forth the Duke and Agriola likewise departing to their pavillion. So that Trineus encounter was thus prevented, and he with Palmerin returned to thayre Tent, but trauelling still on y Dwarves diligence, that he shoulde perfect all things to his hearts desire, and to perswade him the moare, Palmerin thus began. I have this hys my Lord, sayng already so many goodnes, that you cannot any way be deceived in your Love: and thys I wold advise you, Fortune being so favourable, and affyng you to the very bittermost, you shoulde not henceforth shew your selfe so Feminis, but in hardy manner rebale unto y Prince, when you shall find her at convenient leisure, both how you loue her, and what favourable grace you expect at her hande. I must confess, that Letters and Messages are able to doe much: but the Person being present, and knowing how to request, and how to be answered, is more abatleable a thousand tymes: and in bysles, no messenger can be like himselfe. I speake not this as though my Workes were unfaithfull, but to this end that he might receve no occasion of displeasure. In how many dangers haue Gentlemen bene plangid, onely by the bad construction of theyre Servants messages: the readiest wit that is cannot number them: therfore if you find opportunity, attayn no other later then your selfe, This counsell well liked the Prince Trineus, wherfore he determined to speake to her herselfe, so soone as time and leasure would permit him, and in this resolution they went to thayre rest: but the remembraunce of Polinarda, wold not suffer Palmerin to sleepe: comparing his joy in her presence, with his lamenting Passions now in her absence, breathen forth many

## Emperour of Constantiople. PART. I.

Aghe, and thos many teares, till at length he began to sleepe, wherein he thought he discerned this sight. Waking in company with the King, he saw sooth of a darkke Cane a dardfull yron, who with open thzoat set upon him, and assaged him in such manner, as with his nayles and teeth he rent his Armeur, and put him in very great danger of his life, so that he strode in such sorte in his sleep: as Trineus being in bed with him, awaked him, demanding why he strugled so earnestly. Palmerin thus awaked, desired God to withdraw all his eviles, and afterwards recounted to Trineus the whole effect of his Dreame, and late. It will not be much amiss my Lord, that to mayre we ride Armed in the Kings company, for such Illusions, albeit they commonly fallent untrue, yet can proesse no greate felowe. I like your counsell well (answered Trineus) and Ptolomey got armed as well as too. In the moring they arose, and armid themselves, all save their Helmes and Rances, which their Squires carried, and in this sorte came to bid the King god morrow whiche valled much to see them so prepared, and doubting they had receyved some occasion of offence, demanded what madded them so to bee Armed. You know my Lord ( quoth Palmerin) that a Knight ought ebormore to be ready for all Adventures: and not knowing what Incoveniences or danger may happen, before such time as we shall returne agayne, we haue Armid our selues to prevent the worst. The King was discontented with this answer, mounted on Ysabache, and comynge to the Chaiso, had excellent game appoynted. Hounds, Boars, and wild Buffell, wherein he tooke such exceeding pleasure, as he determined to lay there syne as long as he durst. But in the place wheres he supposed him selfe safe, and free from all hazard, suddenly he was sollicitid with the changes of fortune, for the Duke and her daughter Agriola were in marvellous danger, as you shall reade in the discourse following.

CHAP. LI.

How the Queene of England, and Agriola her daughter were in danger to be ravished by the Giant Franarco, and of the succour they had, by Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome.



Ye King returning from the chace with his Company, little intydng any unfor-  
tunate event, and consering with Palmerin, till they dwelunc unto their Tents:  
at length they heared a great tumult, and  
beheld a Squyre wanking towards them, so  
fast as his Hoysle could gallop. Palmerin dandling some un-  
happy chance, and remembryng his dreame, said to the King:  
Never credit me my Lord, if this Squyre come not to you  
about some speciall affaires, as well may be gathered by  
his spedye pace. At these wordes the Gentleman came to the  
King, reportyng howe the Giant Franarco, Lord of the castle  
of Carbones, since his departure cam to the Realme, & from  
thence had violently taken the Queene and her daughter A-  
griola, notwithstanding the resistance of many Knights,  
who stryng to defend her, lost their lives. The King with  
these wordes, straken in wonderfull grieve, said.

Ay Gentleman, this villanous Traytor hath notwithstanding  
wrought such wronge as it possible to recover them agayne, be-  
soze thou be intencioned: Trineus and Palmerin, mounte at  
theire habours, asked the Squyre which waye he went with  
the Queene and her Daughter? In truch my Lord (quoth he)  
I cannot tollyou which way he tooke, we all were so trou-  
bled and misfused by his Traitorise: except they went along the  
Forest, and so are gone to the next village. Then Palmerin  
claspynge on his Helmar, and loatching his Lance from his  
Dwars, galloped amostyn after the Giant, not speaking a  
word

word to Trineus, who accompanied with Ptolome, rode apace after him, and as they passed by þ Dutnes Tent, they saw the Ladies and the Gentlewomen heauly lamenting, especially Eusemia, the chaste companion to the Princesse. Agriola, Divers Knights heade armed themselves to pursue the Giant, but Trineus not a little enraged, followed the trache of the horse, demanding of all he met if they saw the Villains that had stolne away the Ladies. As concerning this Giant Franarco, you must note that he was þ cruellest tyrant, and most notable felon in all the Realme, having a dayes Journey from the Forrest wheres the King hunted, a Castle so well fortid, and surauched with Spurcellion and all things necessary, as in England was not the like which was left to him by the death of his Father who sozibly tooke it from a Lord his Neigbour, and others other places especilly the Isle Magdalen. Wheres farrabed he the Royall dignite, after the death of the elder brother who (as you have heard before) was slaine in the Battell by Palmerin, and he understanding the death of the King of the Isle Magdalen, was so highly displeased, that although he had alwaies before bounden duty and allegiance to the King, he now solemnly swore to revenge his Brothers deathe, being so scared of the whole Countrey, that nevur enterteyned to deal with him. So to revenge the slaugther of his elder Brother, with divers other of his kinsmen and friends, likewise slaine in the Battell, he strengthened himselfe with thirty hardy Knights, intencioning to displease the King so much as he coude. And hearing that he was coming to London, to feast the knights that were the cause of his great victory, but chiefly him that slew his brother, came with his company this way, in hope to find them all unprovided. And comynge that morrow, the King was gone on Hunting, he found those he wistred to mete withall, for þ hated he bare them thinking himselfe sufficently revenged, if he could carry away with him the Queene and her Daughter: which he accomplished

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

to his owne desire, causing them mount vp behinde two of his Knights. The Gentleman that were left to keepe the Queenes company, was very much offendid to see such villany cifer'd to their Ladys whiteesse, detaining her so well as they could, but all maled not against the Giant and his power, because they were well arm'd, and they with the Queen were unarm'd, so that a number of them were slaine, and soyl'd, and dead, and none had done, but that he feared the reb'nce of the King, which made him in halfe ride from thence with his spoile, sending them somewhat before, and luttiring behind himselfe fight wth any that should come to rescue them. Trineus having gotten the sight of them, came p' King to the Giant, saying. Soyle traylerous thysse, to thy may. It ner to carry her away, that is worthy of the greates Empire in the world. With these wordes they ranne fieroily tog'gether, Trineus giving the Giant a soye wound on the shoul'der, but the prince receiveth such a mighty strok from the giant, as he fel from his horse with his helme upward. Palmerin being n't far off, and doubting least the Prince had bin slain, came in a great rage to Franarco, saying: Monstrous enemy to thine hōod, what maketh thar so saucy to lay violent bands on Ladys of such account? By my sword villainie, I shall make thar to pay for thy folly. So couching their lances they met together, the Giant sayling, Palmerin gade him a chydous wound on his body, and their horses roughly ouerlouing one another, as their masters were both thrown to the ground. Franarco (being heauy and swerdly) had such a fall, as easly he could not recover himselfe. But Palmerin nimblly getting vp againe, gade the Giant such a wound on his right legge, as the flesh hung downe pitifully to behold. The Giant being not able to stand any longer on that Legge, set his knē to the ground, being glad to besende the strokcs of Palmerin, who touchid him such a sound blow on the soye head, with the hilts of his sword, as the Giant fel along on his back, when Palmerin soon settling his

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

scote on his breast, with his sword diuided his head from his sholders. During this fight, Trineus and Ptolome made after the Queen and her Daughter, whom the Giants knights drave cruellly before them.

Now was it matter well worthy memory, to se the braue behaviour of these two Knights, but chiefly of Trineus before his sweste Princesse, whose presence endued him with such exceeding courag, as he thought himselfe able to conquer the whole world, and therfore sufficient for them all, were they as many myre in number. But strength doth not alwayes equall courag, and柔ers thinke more then they are able to doe, as to Trineus p' till it had now fallen cut, but that a company of the Kings Knights pursued, wherupon began a hot encounter betwene them, and Trineus coming to the Knight that had Agriola behinde him, set him swone before his horse, with his necke broken in his fall, so that the Princesse getting score of the charg, and seeing her belov'd so valiant in prowess, betwene joy and griele, she said: Ah happy Knight, the myrron of such as follow Armies, I desire thy high Fortune may passe, as thou and thy good company may haue blisse over these Empires. Now may I be well assured of the love thou bearest me: For which (if we may safely escape this hard bynt) perswade thy selfe not to passe my compence. Trineus hearing the wordes of Agriola, was inflamed with such a spirit of conquering diatre, as breaking thame among the thickest, his strokcs gave battaille he fought so haile. But the Giants knights were n'ren of such p'pose, as the fresh supply that came were all neare slayne, and doubtlesse the rest had borne them company, but that the King and Palmerin, with other Knights more, came to assaile them: soz Palmerin having slayne the Grane, mounted on his horse, because it was one of the godliest that ever he saw, and espyng the King comming with his trayne, set on with him, and found Trineus in great danger, because so many of his knights were slayne, but this fresh assistance brought by the King.

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

King, was the meanes that all the Gyants Knights were slaughtered, and they knelling downe thanking God for their victoie. The King alighting, came and embrased the Queen, saying: How happy may we think our selves Madam, having so well p̄fended this treacherous Villany? For never did I think to see you againe, but that God and these knights so highly bescrened vs. The Queen and her Daughter were as yet so dismayed, in remembrance of the former danger, as beholding so many lye Blaine before them, and joyfull before being so fortunatly delivered, as betwix these extreames, they knew not what to say, but desired specially to set forward thence, which they presently did, the King commanding his Nephew Cerides, to see Franarco and his men burned to ashes, and honorably Sepultured to be p̄fended for the other: When the Queen heard that Franarco was dead: Well me my Lord (quoth she) who hath done such a gracious act to kill that monstrous villaine? Even he Madam, said the King, that was the can o' of my bosome in battell. The Knight here in blacke Armeur, to whom I am so farre indebted, as I cannot imagine any recompence sufficient for him: and this can I not speake without great marrell, seeing such rare valour perforned with so little danger on his behalfe. Long may the good Knight live and prosper, said the Queen, that hath so defendyd vs, and may they all three be most happy in all their affaires, for their knighthly seruice to the Realms of England. While these speeches endured, Trineus being soe bounded, was brought between two squires, and set vpon his boord, but the King, the Queen, and chieflie faire Agriola was glad, when he heard there was no such danger: but he might well escappe it. Wherefore mounting all on boord backe, they rode to see the Gyants body, which made Agriola remeber Palmerin soe no lesse then his Dwarfe commonded him. When the King commonded to unarmes the body, and one of his Knights shold bring away his Helmet and Shielde, which would be

## Emperour of Constanſiople: PART I.

tokens sufficient for him, to recover the Castle of Garbones whitch he fritzed on, and all other things belonging to the Count, he sent the Count of Bonneroy with due hundred men to confidents and returns to his Maiesies use.

The Count well knowing such matters wold not easly be accomplished, if they in the Castle shold make resistance, therefore politickly he sent the Giants Target and Helmet before, as sent from Franarco, who was with the King, and they shold open the Gates because they were comynge thither, soe wchich wherof they shewed the Knights Signet of Armes. The guard tooe crewhorse, and thinking it impossible for any man to conquer the Count, opened the gates, whereupon the Count presently entered with his power, putting all to the sword, not sparing any, not so much as the Gyants younger brother, who escaping alone from the battell, was the cause why Franarco dyed thus villanously. Thus did the Count yield the Castle into the Kings obeyances: remayning Captein therof under the Kings authority, the like he did in many other places, wher the people advertised of the Gyants rebellion, and that the Castle of Garbones was taken: there was now wchich rest the Kings commandement: wherof the Count was not a little glad, returning as soon as he could with the glad tidings of his successe to the Court, certifying the King how all things happened.

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

### Chap. LII.

Of the conference Palmerin had with the Princesse Agricola, after hee had slayne the Giant Franar.



In this time the King was come to his pavillion, where hee caused his Chirurgians diligently to attend the thre Knights, for the curing of their wounds, who found that the Prince of Allemaign was worst of all hurt, yet the King understanding he was in no danger of life, was the better pacified, because he loued him dearely, and intended to honour him so much as lay in his power, promising not to depart thence till hee recovered his health: and because he would prevent like mischances, hee caused diligent watch to be kept every night, as though hee had lyen in field encamped with the Enemy.

During the Princes sicknesse, hee was oftentimes visited by the Duegne and faire Agricola, not unthankfull of the courtesie received by him and his companions, and for which they requited him with manfold thankes. Trineus esteeming himselfe worthily recompenced, seeing that he ably speakele, whose presence healed a greater wound then any he had received in fight, desiring the continuance of the outward hurts, for comforting of his inward oppressions. And while the Duegne thus conferred with Trineus, Palmerin came to the Princesse Agricola, seeing the time so lawfull and conuenient, that he might thorowly acquaint her with matter long enough before premeditated, but because hee was desirous to talkie with him, shee first began in manner following. I know not Sir Knight, how the King my father will satisfie the great service you have done hym, in so many hazards to his Reable and himselfe; but for mine owne part, I think

my

### Emperour of Constantynople : PART. I.

my selfe so bounden, that after life, whiche he gaue me by generation, my devoted soule shall remaine to honour you. And if these occasions passed doe give me just cause to thinke my selfe happy, what lesse account may I make of that vertuous Prince Trineus your Companion, who came into this Countrey onely for my loue, as I am perswaded: yet doubtfull to be lightly carried away with report, I should accept it for more sound assurance, so please you to speake the truth herein. Madame (quoth Palmerin) If I haue done any service to the Kide or you, it is rewarded with much more then sufficient, seeing it pleasest you to make such account thereof, and I promise you, you haue two Knights wholly at command for the Loue of the third, who is so confidently vowed your Friend and Servant, as no man in the world can he worse, and this is he that lyeth wounded in his bed, the Princely Son and heire of the Empereur of Allemaigne, in which report my Dwarfe hath not deceipted you. And give my word this credite ( Madame ) that since the time hee first heard of your excellent beauty, being then in France, hee never had other determination, but to spend his life in your gracious service, and making reme of many faire Ladies, especially of Lucimania, Daugter to the most christiant King of France, set downe this Princely and commendable resolution, never to espouse any other but you, so it may stand with your liking to accept him for your husband: thinke then advisedly sweet Madaine, of the incomparable happynesse ordained for you, and stand not in your owne light to lose so good fortune. In truth my Lord quoth the Princesse, I were well worthy to bee reputed among the number of most hard hearted and ingratefull Ladies, if I should not loue the Prince Trineus, were it but for the danger hee remaines in for me, and the unfeigned Loue which you say hee beares me. And thus farre I presume my Lord on your credit, that if it were other wise, you would not disguise the matter to me in this manner, much lesse deceiue such a Lady as I am, which

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

(notwithstanding) would be to you but a slender conquest. Therefore you may assure him on my behalfe, that the loue I bear him is more then he thinkes, and very farre exceedeth his judgement, as the profe herof (in time) shall deliver true testimony. Madame, quoth Palmerin, his onely desire in this world you haue faithfully understand, in you then it consisteth to prevent the contrary, by mercifull regard of his afflictions, and your presence will appease the anger of the Emperour your father, in that so nobly he wold enterprised (though against his will) to ayde the King your Father onely for your loue. And this will be the meane that the conciuers pleasure of the Fathers, shall conclude in the happy coniunction of their Children. My Lord, quoth the Princesse, I will doe what shall please my Father and Mother to command me, and no otherwise, considering the danger I may fall into by yielding my honour to any prejudicall occasion. Palmerin who had no oþer feare but to be knowne what himselfe was, thus answered: I am perswaded Madame, that your judgement is so perfect, that to attaine a place of such dignitie, and a husband so royall as the Prince Trineus, you will not stand on scrupulous learnes, nor be carried away with any light or feminine feares, seeing that (setting apart these doubts) you shall worthily accomplish the thing which shall make you the most renowned Lady under the Occident. I pray you Sir Palmerin quoth she, referre this talk to some other time, for the answere of such a high and weighty matter, destrueth to be expositated with loðesse, so oftentimes we see, that such actions suddenly and lightly performed, cause more repentance afterward then is expected. Yet this farre I venture, and so faithfully persuade him, that hee is the onely Prince in the world I would accept for my Husband, if they were so agreed, to whom God, nature and duty hath bound me: and to let him understand my willing desire towards him, I will speake to him my selfe, as lond as the Duciene is departed.

## Emperour of Constantinop'le. PART I.

parted. Not long after, the Duciene returned to the King leaving her Daughter with two of her Ladys to consort the Prince, whereupon Palmerin taking her by the hand, brought her to the bed-side where Trineus lay, to whom she made very courteous reverence, and trembling with modest bashfulesse, said. How fare yee gentle Knight? & trust me your hard fortune doth greatly displease me, and if I could bear part therein, believe me I would gladly endure the paine: For it is good reason that the causer of the haue shold haue a portion of the torment, gratifying you with a Maidens thankes, for your good assistance without any desert. Trineus was so ravished with her presence, and hearing her speake so friendly, in whom consisted the safetie of his life, as he could not biter the joy he conceived: which the Princesse well noted and Palmerin likewise, who answered her in this manner. It cannot be Madame, but my Lord Trineus will come friend, having the sodaine misdicens so neare him, that is onely able to helpe him: and with these wordes he left them both together, to acquaint each other with their secret afflictions: when the Prince giving a grievous sigh, said. Fair Madame, to accomplish what you commanded the first day I saw you, I did my devoynce to execute the effect of the charge, albeit not so suffiently as I could wish: yet since that time I never enjoyed one minute of rest, till this instant, when my eyen delighted with your sweet presence, gave hope to my heart of furth:re comfort. For this onely cause (sayre Mistresse) haue I forsaken my Parents and Country, regarding nothing more then this present happiness, whereby my wounds are cured, my spirit contented, and my heart from all dangers sufficiently recovered, so that no griefe can now molest me, when your gracious labour thorowly consoledeth all. And now night I mynre my unforune beyond all other, were not this fearefull doute left to crosse it, that scanning disdain shold be hid in such rare perfections, as oftentimes it comoneþ

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

to passe: therefore I beseech you Madame, may it stand with your liking to resolute all doubtis by your direit opinion, and herein shal I account my selfe more honourid, then were I Monarch of the whole world. Love having then so woundid the Princesse, as for a while she was drunke to silene, at length withdrew the passion, and caused her retorne this answer. Alas my Lord, I was (ere this) so certaine of your affection towards me, in respect of the dangerous travayles endured for my sake, as you need not seeke any other proue, then what mine owne heart was fully resolved on: and so I continue still, expecting the day to make vs both fortunat, which I would haue you as yet dissensible, lest crooked mishap any way prevent vs. As she was proceeding in her discourse, the Duene entred the Tent againe, by whiche occasion Trineus could not say what hee intended; wherefore taking her secretly by the hand, wryng her fingeris with such a trembling passion, as all the night following he lay meditating on his Goddesse Agriola, and the comforstable answere she gaue unto him. If the young Prince were in such toyments, his Lady beares him company, thinking on the spaches past betwene her and Palmerin, and this euening the Dwarfe (not compassing before to speake with Agriola) presented her with the Emerald from the Prince, which shee kindly receyving, in recompence therof sent him a faire Diamond, rewarding the Dwarfe liberallie for his paines, who amongst the rest of his talke, higly commended the vertues of the Prince, which increasid her loue so confidently, as shee cured him of the Princesse leue, that Death could not change her settled affection. Trineus fully resolving herein gaue such chearefull Physick to his heart, and the Chyurgioun such diligence to his wounds, as within seuen or eight dayes hee was able to beare armour: whereupon the King departed thervie towards London, where the strange Knights were entertained with maruelous honour, the Lords, Knights, Burgess, Officers and other

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART, I.

other Citizens, welcoming them with great pompe and royaltie, saying. Welcome are the Knights that deliuered the Duene and her Daughter, from the cruell Giant Franois, with diuers other salutations, wherat Palmerin and his friends were greatly abash'd. Passing on to the Wallace all the way they were still presented with rare bewys and deuises, and the Knights lodgings were appointed in very stately Chambers in the Court, causing open Court to bee kept for eight dayes space, for the honour of these Knights, and entertainment of all friendly commers, in all which time there wanted no sports and delights as such times and occasions doe necessarily require. Now came all the Prince, Lords, and renowned Knights in England to the Court, except the Duke of Gaule, who excused himselfe by the warre in his owne Province, which yet was not the chiefe cause of his absence: but the shame hee reputed to himselfe for his soyle in France, when he entered the Combat for the beauty of the layze Princesse Agriola.

These Knights thus worthily intreated, they were at no time denied entrance into the King and Duenes chambers; by which meanes Trineus might when himselfe pleased, conserre with the Princesse, till this instant among all other, the Prince thus began to his Lady and Mistresse. You may easly prestme sweet Madame, what secret combats I continually endure for your loue, and no helpe is expected but the only hope of your labour, which as you haue promised to my espe-ciall friend Sir Palmerin, I doubt not but you will perferre in that gracious opinion, and what promise he hath made of my service to you, thinke not but I obserue with religions care and devotion, though not sufficient to equall all your de-serts, yet because ingratitude shall not insult against me. So many thanks (quoth the Princesse) I returne you my Lord, as god opinions can be imagined betwene vs both, and accounting you for my Friend, which is a higher degree, I here discharge you of my Service, and (mine honour

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

granted ston blant) I shall judge my selfe so happy to yield you any content, which I will fulfill, notwithstanding any danger towardes me. But I pray you tell me my Lord, what is the intent of your loue in this action? Madam, (quoth the Prince) Soz Palmerin, who is now come to beare his company, shall credibly informe you, so please you to rest contented therewith. Palmerin thus entred, and imagined their talke was not about affaires of Merchandise, wherefore he said to the Princesse: God speed you Madam, pardon me, I should call you Ladie, and wife to the Prince of Allemaigne, for I doubt not but you haue chosyn him for your husband in herte. Agriola blushing and smyng hereat, made no answere: Wherefore Palmerin went forward in this manner. In sooth Madame, if you haue done so, I woud counsayl you to accomplish it presently, and provide to go with vs to Allemaigne, where the Emperour will certayne you with such gracious labour, as you will not lose if you beare the munde of a Prince: Beside, you shall haue the meanes of everlasting Peace betwene the King your Father and his Myssty. To which wordes, Agriola thus discretly answered.

I promise you my Lord, there is no Prince this day living, whom I wold more gladly accept for my husband, then the Prince Trineus: Notwithstanding, for me to depart without the knowledge of the King or Queen my Parents, is an Act (in minne opynion) faire dissenting from duty and honest report. Wherefore my Lord, louing myne honor as you say you doe, I pray you let our behaviours be with better wisdome, least wee fall both into dangers not recoverable. Palmerin perceiving Agriola contrary to the most necessary occasion, used such arguments, and playd so well the Deceytur, that the pore Princesse had no power to resist: considering the great loue she did beare the Prince Trineus, which made her yield more easly to his persuasions; so that ther agreed to accomplish their determination, and

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

and depart with them towards the Realme of Allemaigne. Trineus joyes nowe yead me measure, and Palmerin (for his sake) was no leesse contented, in respect he shold the sooner see his sayle Princesse Polinarda, whose very remembrance gives him life, as the Appe doth the Cannion.

But Fortune beholding each thing prosper as liked their parties, wold now begin to play her Pageant, crosting them with the unhappiest Stratageme that euer could haue befallen to such Noble Princes; as in the sequell shall be largely discoursed. They little expecting such variable chance, are earnestly following their serious Enterpise, which was secretly to conuey Agriola with them into Allemaigne, for which purpose they made prouision both of Shippynge, and skilfull Pilots to conduct them, transporting all their necessaries abord, at what thyme this Adventure following hapned in the Court of Englaund.

## CHAP. LIII.

How in the time of this pleasant and great Assembly, there came a Damosell to London, who desired the King to doe her Justice against a Knight of his owne Court.



During the time this Royall company continued at London, minding nothing else but Pleasures, Pastimes, and Courty recreations, there came a Damosell so faire as might bee, accompanied with two grete ancient Knights, and a lussy Champion brenely Arm'd, with sixe comely Squires attending on him. The Damosell entering the Pallace, came before the King, and upon her knee began in this manner. Dread Lord, having long time heard your godly Justice towardes your Subjects, without any falour or exception of persons: I am the moze loyd, albeit hee that hath injuried me, is pretender to be reputed

## The Hitory of Palmerin D'Olva,

reputed for a man of good qualite, and holdeth place of authoritie in your Court) humbly to craue of your Highnesse one request, against the most false and disloyal Knight that ever was: whom when I doe but once remember, more weighty and grievous oppozitions fall upon my soule, then this wretched body of mine is able to endure. Damosell (said the King) I shall right gladix relieue your heauiness, if it lyz in my power to do: it: therefore tell me the cause of your offence: and what he is that hath so wronged you. Now you my good Lord (quoth she) that I loued a Knight so dearely, as contrary to the liking of my Parents and friends, and too much forgetfull of mine owne selfe. I tolde him to my Husband, and in a god opinion of him, thinking he loued me so faithfully, as his fained shewes and counterfeit behaviour gave demonstration, but the Traptoz had no other meaning then falsly to beguile and deceiue me: For after I had made him Lord of me and mine, and brought him to a Castle of mine, so strong and faire as any in your Highnesse Dominiuns: the Traptoz expulsed me thence violently, pretending that we were so neare allyd, as he might no longer account me for his wife. Since whiche tyme, notwithstanding all the humble intreaties I haue often made: he will neither restore me my goods and possessions againe, nor yet accept me as his espoused wife. Therefore I beseech you my Lord, as becomes a god and vertuous Prince, for the honour of Nobility, and regard of Womanhood, you will be pleased to take pitty on a poore distressed Lady, and that in such a rightfull demand, you would doe me Justice, which I had sooner deviated, but could not by the occasions of your troublous Warres. Lady, said the King, as yet you haue not named the man that hath offered you this surpassing injury. My Lord (quod she) this is the man in your presence, named Myseres, a vyle Traptoz, and publike Adulterer. And if so be he dare affirme that I haue spoken any untruth, I haue here brought a Knight with mee, who by combat shall make hym

## Emperour of Constançimopole. PART.I.

him confesse his falsehood and Treason, so please your Majestie to favour my Request. Myseres (quoth the King) how answer you this accusation and offence, wherewith this Lady chargeth you? Myseres being suddenly driven into this dispay, knew not well what to say: yet at length (with humble reverence) hee thus began. My soveraigne Lord, if credit may be giuen to the first countenance of accusations, without hearing how the party accused can justifie himselfe, I doubt not but your Majestie will presently condigne me: bat when the matter is once well debated and decided, they which seemed at the first vnreprovable, are found malicious and slanderous persons, and the accused, innocent and free from blame, as here your Highnes shall most plainly behold.

The matter whereof this Lady detecteth me, is forged, and villanously invented: For to mee belonged the Castle she quarrellez for, descended from my Predecessors, to whom I am the true lawfull, and legitimate Inheritor. True it ie, that this dissimbling woman, by sweet speeches, Feminine guiles, and secret deceipts, oftentimes practised to winne me for her Husband: but knowing her behaviour such as resembled not a Woman of modesty and vertue, I would not heare her, much lesse consent to match with her. And this is the onely cause of her complaint, in hope that you being above all other Princes, most benigne and honourable) wil constraine me to wed her, in respect of your absolute authority, as the dutifull obedience wherein I am bound. When the Knight whiche came with the Lady, had heard Myseres blame her in this sort, he stepped before the King, with these words.

It is great folly (my Lord) in Myseres, to deny a matter so apparantly and well known, although if it were put to the judgement of honest persons, his common good report might cause him to be believed: But the poore Lady desireth that her right and tytle may be cleared by Combat, wherein let him confound her if he can, or else receive reward for his notorious offence. On her behalfe therefore, my Lord, I say

## The Hist orie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

say and well maintaine, that Miseres is a most disloyall Traytour, and his owne mouth shall confesse it, or else this Day will I take his heade fro n his body. Miseres, feeling himselfe somewhat touched, grew into great choller, and albeit the shame hee did the Lady, delivred him culپable, and in de him doubt the issue of the Combate, yet as it were in a maruelous rage he answered the Knight, that hee falsly behyld him, and was ready to make tryall thereto in single Combate, if it pleased the Kings Majestye to appoint it. And I doubt not (quoth hee) to make thee pay for thy rashnesse, and force thee confesse thy wa y of discretion, in giving credite to the troylesse to upplaints of this deceitfull Woman. Then was it ordyned, that this difference shold bee decided by Armes: Whereupon the Ladies Knight spake thus to the King. Seeing it hath pleased your Majestye to grant the Field to Miseres, and me, may it please you (as it is the custome) to command that he deliver Hostages: to the end that if hee bee vanquished, the Cattle mybe delivered into your handes, for to be surrendered in Justice where it appertaines. God reason said the King, and therefore Miseres, you must before you enter the Field, accomplish what this Knight in equite hath demanded.

Then Miseres called one of his Brethren, whon hee requested to stand as his hostage: and dowt not before the Sunne be sette, but I will discharge my selfe and my pledge. With which wordes he departed the Hall, to Arme hym selfe: But because the Day was so farre spent, the matter was deferred vntill the next morning. The King and his Lords, seeing the Ladies Knight in such resolute assurance, maruelled of whence, and what he was, for none there knew hym but Palmerin, who neither could guesse assuredly who he was, but by the golden Sunne in the Azure Sheld, which made hym remember that at the Joustes in France, the perious Combate without victorie on ryther side, was fought betweene hym and this Knight. Palmerin being glad to see

the

## Emperour of Constantiople. PART. I.

the man he long looked for, and purposing now to be fully revenged on him: secretly went forth of the Hall, commanding one of his Squires, to convey his Horse and Armour the next morning out of the City, because if hee vanquished Miseres, at his returne he intended to fight with him, or if Miseres had the better, yet hee shold not depart thence a gaine with life.

Now you must understand, that this young Knight which came with the Lady, was the Knight of the Sunne, named Fry soll, who ever since the Combate performed betwene Palmerin and hym, remaineth with the Duke of Gaul, and was of hym highly honoured for his worthy Chivalrie. Of whom when this distressed Lady heard, shee made her complaint of the wrong Miseres had done her, and Fry soll pitying her case, promised to ayd her in the recovery of her right: and so came with her to the King of Englands Court, to the great griesse of the Duke of Gaul, who made Fry sol promise him to returne againe after the Combate: but Fry soll was much more destrong therof then the Duke, in respect of his faire Sister, because he was most specially beloued of her.

Thus Palmerin following his enterprise, scared to be prevented, because the Field was appointed by the King, in the same place where he intended to mete with Fry soll, and beside, Palmerin and the Duke of Norgalles, were ordained no Judges of the Field, which hee would not willingly have taken upon him, doubting by that means to be hindred of his other pretended determination. Now the time being come that the Knights shold to the Combate, the King and the Ladies came to the Scaffolds, and the two Judges were placed in their Tent, accompanied with many Princes and honorable personages.

After that the Heralds had comanded the Champions to doe their best devoynce, then they clasped their Helments, and fetching their Carriere, met with such puissance, as Miseres brake his Lamee on Frysol's Sheld, not mow-

## The History of Palmerin D'Orva,

ning hym in his Saddle : But Fry soll driving his Lamece quite through Myleres body, caused the false Traptoz to fall downe dead to the earth. Then hee alighting, and opening Myseres Helmet, and seeing no life in him, came to the Judges, saying : You may now perceue my Lords, whether he that offered this Lady such vllany, hath receivd his due desert, or no : So that now ( I say ) if there remaine yet anything else to doe for recov:ring of her right, I am heere ready to maintaine her cause. Palmerin, who was not very well pleased with this victory, answered : Knight, you haue done enough at this time, pray that other assayres may prove as prosperous to you hereafter, and in anger went forthof the Field, commanding the body of Mileres to be brought thence, which was afterward interred with great honour.

Fry soll having thus vanquished Myleres, the Lady for whom he entred the Combate, fell on her knies before the King, desiring him to surrender the Castle which Myleres unjustly detayned from her. In sooth Lady (quoth the King) it is reason you shoule haue Justice, and your owne deliuered you : But know you his name that defended your quarell ?

My Lord (quoth she) in concealing his Name, I shoule offer him great wrong , concealing the Bounity and prowesse of the man, which hath not bene sparingly shewed heretofore, in presence of the Duke of Gaule, against the King of Norway, whose army was discomfited by the worthy valour and policie of this Knight, who calleth himselfe by the name of Fry soll, the Duke of Gaule, bringing him forth of France at his last Cloyage, and ever since hath so dearely loued him, as he were his owne naturall Brother. I promise you, Lady (said the King) you made no ill choyse of your Knight ; For I haue heretofore heard of his Actions, and am not a little glad that now I know him, wishing he were one of my Court, because a King accompanied with such persons, must needs imagine his Countrey happy. And in respect he is so braue a Champion, it is impossible but that he shoule bee

a wise

## Emperour of Constantiople. PART.I.

a wise and vertuous Knight : Wherefore I pray you cause him come hither to mee : which she presently did. And ha-  
ving saluted his Majestie with honourable reverence, the King embraced him with these wordes. Worthy Sir, you are most heartily welcom : I could wish you were one of my Knights, in respect that my Court shoule be the more ho-  
noured, and I might requite your paines, better then I can  
on a sudden.

Hight and mighty Prince (qd. Fry soll) in assyssing this distressed Lady, I haue done but my duty : but if I could any way doe yoar Higheesse service, I know no Prince living, for whom I would moxe gladly employ my selfe. And at this present time, urgent affaires excuse me from staying here any longer : Neverthelesse, I intreat you my god Lord, if it may stand with your favourable liking to repute me among the number of your Souldiers and Servants. If it must neede be so ( said the King ) you shall doe what pleaseth you, yet will I reckon you amongst those to whom I owe continuall loue and affection. And although the death of Myleres doth somewhat grieue me, because I made some estimation of him : yet for your sake I will deliver the Lady her Castle, which you haue conquered with such knighthly Chi-  
valrie . Fry soll humbly thanked his Majestie, and departed with the Lady, which way they came : But Palmerin very much offendred at his departure, and earnestly desiring to be revenged on him, commanded the Dwarse to marke well which way th: y went.

The Dwarse diligently fulfilling his Masters charge re-  
turned, and told him which way they tooke : Whereupon, he being desirous to follow , without giving any knowledge thereof to his Companions, left Lioneus to conserre with his faire Mistresse Agriola, and departed the Court so secret-  
ly, as neyther the Prince nor Irolome suspected any thing. And so accompanied with the Dwarse Urbanillo, hee came to the place where his Squyre stayed with his Armour, where

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

where when he was Armed, he mounted on Horsebacke,  
thus speaking to his men. Returne you to the City, and  
then expect my coming : As soj the Vibanillo, thou shalt  
say to the Prince Trineus, that he must pardon me, though  
I did not acquaint him with the bixent occasion of my de-  
parture : which I was mox enforced to doe then he thinks  
on : Neverthelesse, pray him take no paines to enquire af-  
ter me, because I doubt not to returne very Soylly, although  
not so soon as he would : yet pray him to bise so little spech  
thereof as may be. The like mayest thou say to Prolome,  
and to them both command me most heartily : with this  
strict charge to you both, that upon the paine of your lives,  
neither of you doe follow me, ney, bis any other to make  
search after me.

So taking his Lance, he galloped that way which the  
Dwarke shewed him they were gone, and then he left the  
Siege to returne to the City, making very speedfull En-  
umentation, because they thought their Speller would re-  
turne no more, in that he would not be knowne whether he  
were, yet would they not abyng nothing their Speller had  
forbidden them. Trineus and Prolome were maruellous  
soyred, especially the Prince, who without the Dwarke  
assurance of his Spellers short returne, had followed to see  
like him : yet not throughtle contented with Vrbanillo's  
postwollons, the knyghte him selfe came to comfote him thus:  
you must think (saye this) that your noble friend is gone  
about some strange Enterprize. Soj you know he never en-  
cortexeth any thing, but it returned him to honour. If hereto-  
fore soj the love of his Lady, he shewed himselfe without  
his pere in Chivalrie, thinke you he will not regard his re-  
putation, and preuentiate his Actions before he comes to  
falle in danger : Content your selfe I pray you, soj if his  
returne be not the sooner, I will cause such punishment to be  
made, as he shal be founed againe. The Mynchelle Agriola  
likewise intreated him not to be disquieted at the absence

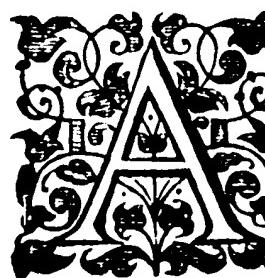
of

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. v.

of Palmerin, soj with the help of God and his scienses, quoth  
he, his returne will cause as much joy, as his departur doth  
grieve. All this could hardly content Trineus, soj he dreame  
in his sleep, that the Knighe which cle Myseres, was he a-  
gainst whom Palmerin entred the Combat in France, at  
what time they could not overcomme each other. And remem-  
bering what ill will Palmerin bare him, vehemently suspected  
that soj this cause he followed him, whiche imagination  
somewhat comforted him, and he repented the Knighe verisly  
if he medled any more with Palmerin.

### C H A P. L II.

How after the death of Myseres, Palmerin followed Fry-  
sol, whom he had slaine, but that a Damosel intreated  
his life.



In that day Palmerin travelled, and  
most part of the next, yet could he  
hear no tydings of the Lady & Frysol,  
which made him ride in great melan-  
choly till at laungth meeting with a  
Damosell, mounted on a goodly Pal-  
stry very richly harnessed, of whom  
he demanded if she met not a Knighe  
Armed, who bares in a sholdier of Ar-  
gire a Golden Hanne, and with him a Lady attened  
on by many Squires. Truly Sir, quoth the Damosell,  
if you will grant me two requestes that I shall demand,  
I will bring you to him you seeke soj, before to myre the  
third houre of the day. Palmerin who was wonderfull  
boldrons to fnd out his enemy, granted to any thing she  
should desyre: on condicione(quoth he) that you shew me the  
Knighe. Follow me then said the Damosell, soj I will

accon-

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliver,

accomplish that I haue promised. So rode they together, and among other speches, Palmerin asked her if she knew the Knight, and what his name was? The Damosell answered, that she knew not the Knight, but she was very well acquainted with the Lady in his company, and this night (quoth she) they minded to lodge at a Castle of mine Aunts. In the Evening they arrived within the sight of the Castle, where they alighted from their Horses, and entred a little thicket, for feare of being stene, and the Damosell having a fangen of Wine, and a Party of red Ware in a Paund at her Saddle bow, Palmerin and she refreshed themselves therewithall; but all that night could not Palmerin settle himselfe to sleep, watching the Castle Gate, least in the time of his sleeping his enemy shoulde escape him. The next morning, so soone as the breake of day appeared, Frysol came sooth of the Castle with his Company, wherefore Palmerin noted it little gladd, said to the Damosell. Now (Lady) is your promise performed, for this is the Knight, I seek: if theresoze you will any thing with me, I will intreat you to follow me, for I wold be very leath that he shoulde escape me.

With which wordes he mounted on horseback, galloping after Frysol so fast as the Horse could away, and overtaking him, said. Stay a while Sir Knight, thinke you to passe away in such sorte, I haue you forgot your wordes at Parris, to the Knight that guarded the Duke of Savoyes Tent: now is the tyme I hope to correct your presumption, when thou shalt well perceyue, that thou neither deseruest to be servant to the Princesse Polinarda, nor art worthy to talke of her honourable name. Frysol thus saying knew by Palmerins wordes, that it was he against whom he sought the Combat in France, whereupon he answered.

Truely Sir Knight, I haue not as yet so gotten what I then saide, now is the beauty of Polinarda, or my loue to her

so

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

so little, that my desire to her service shoulde not be now remembred, nor will I forbeare to confess it still, for feare of the oþ any other whatsoeuer. And if thou hast sought me soorth in this quarrell, thou haue found me so ready to defend it: as I will more willingly chose to dye, then deny any part of my duty to that gracious Princesse.

Palmerin being so angry, as he would not multiply any more wordes, but encountered his enemy so valiantly, as they brake their Lances, and yet could not unhorsse each other, then drawing their Swords, they lab so cruelly upon their bodies, as their Shields being broken, their Helmets battered, their Armour defaced, and their flesh so grievously mangled, as neither of them both could judge who was likeliest to winne the victory. Till at length Frysol Horsse sayling under him, fell to the ground, and he so weakened with his great losse of blood, as he could not recover himselfe, before Palmerin came to him, thinking to have parted his head from his shouders with his Sword, whiche when the Lady saw, for whom Frysol had slaine Alyseres, she fell into most pittifull acclamations, not sparing her lovely frresses of hatre, but with very great impatience renting them violently, made the ayre to echo her lamentable complaints. Whiche the Damosell seeing that garded Palmeriu, and moved with compassion of her exceeding grieses: fell on her knes before Palmerin, intreating him to give over the fight. But he, fainting that he heard her not, because Frysol with rough Strugling had got on her againe charged him with such violent stroaks, as Frysol (being of invincible courage) required him with as worthy chivaltry.

Againe the Damosell came on her knes to him, intreating him to give over the fight, saying. You know my Lord, that before you came hither, you promised me two requests and this I make one of them, that you continue no longer Combat against this Knight, and in so doing I shall acquit

E 2

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

quitte you of part of the promise which you made me, Palmerin chiding like a surious Lyon , answered. I pray you Damosell ask some other thing, for in this matter, of soe you must pardon me. In sooth said the Damosell, if you deny me my demand , I will complaine at the King of Englands Court, and there will I declare you perjured, for ill it beseemes such a Knight as you are , to make promise to a Lady and not observe it. In troth Lady, said Palmerin , you doe me great wrong , in with-holding me from revenge on him , whom above all men in the World , I hate most deadly . unhappy was the heure wherin I met you : and so mounting by en horseback, he galloped away in very great anger. When the other sorrowfull Lady saw that Palmerin was gone, and had left her Knight, with great joy she embrased the Damosell that had promisid it , thanking her soe chiding the life of a most noble Knight , for which cause she remained bound to her duryng life.

What I have done, (quoth the Damosell) is for the love of you and this Knight , swearing to you by the faith of a Gentlewoman , that I have another thing to aske of the Knight which is gone , that concerneth me very nearely. Notwithstanding , your teares moved me with such compassion , that I stand in danger to lose what I shall never recover , yet in respect the cause was so honest and vertuous, as I do not repent what I have done: but because he remaineth indebted to me for another request, I must needs leave you and follow him , so mounting upon her Paltry , she rode after Palmerin with all the haste she possibly could make. And in her journey she will leave her , returning to Frysol , whose wounds being very dangerous , the Lady bound them up so well as she could , till they came at their next Lodging , where by good fortune was a Lady so well stede in Chirurgery , as in that time she cured his leggards whole and sound. Frysol so well

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

well recovered, departed thence with the Lady, because the third day following they shold be at the Castle, whither already was come Hermes , one of the King of Englands Knights, being sent by his Lord the King to deliver the Lady her right: which Hermes did according to his charge , entertained the Lady honourably, delivered her the Keyes of the Castle , and commanded all the Subjects to reverence the Lady , which they refused not to do: but were glad of her coming, For joy hereof, were very solemnise feasts prepared , and the Lady recounted to Herme , Commissioner to the King, how Frysol fought the Combat by the way , against the Knight of the blache Armour , whereby Hermes presently knew , that it was the strange Knight , who had left the Court, unknowne to his Companions , or any of his Friends , whereof he was not a little glad , because he judged that these newnes would be welcome to the King. Wherefore so soone as he had accomplished his charge, and seated the Lady quietlie in her Castle, he departed, intending to follow Palmerin till he found him, traelling the way was assigned him by the Lady.

Frysol stayed there with the Lady till he had perfectly recovered his health , and then without any other recompence for his paines, but onely a Horse , because his owne was slaine , and a new Armour , his owne being spoylede, he returned to the Duke of Gaule , who rejoiced greatly to haue his company. But when the Duke understood how disconterfeite he had borne vse by the blache Knight, who was so highly fauoured in the English Court, he devised by all the meaneas possible to be revenged on him: so that being in a Castle on the frontiers of the Duchie , yet within the King of Englands Dominion, he understood the blache Knight shold passe that way, because he could not else retorne to the Court. Now perswading himselfe so resolute vengeance , he pitched his Tents in a faire

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliver,

There were a Bridge, and there placed twelve Knights, the most hardy and valiant men in all his Duke's dome, who should maintaine this order: that no Knight should passe over the Bridge, unless he entred Combat with these twelve Knights one after another, and such as were vanquished, should submit themselves to the Duke's mercy, either for their deliverance, or to remaine his prisoners, and the hoysc of the party soyled, should belong to the conqueror; but if they were dismouited, the passenger should goe on his Journey, and take their Horses with him. This aduenture thus established, many good Knights were overcome, because it was a very hard matter to vanquish twelve Knights, and escape: But the Duke took no little pleasure herein, who retained Frysol more by constraint then otherwise, so his anger so vehemently increased against Palmerin, as no delight or pleasure could extiate his revenging desires.

### C H A P. L I I I .

How Palmerin went with the Damosell to accomplish the promise he made her, and what befell him.



Palmerin (as you haue heard) deparcted from the Damosell in a rage, because he could not execute what he intended, wherefore he devised to devise some other way, and to singe scouth Frysol in such convenient place, as one of them should dye before they departed. And as he was imagining some other way to overtake Frysol, the Damosell had now againe reconoised his company, saying. I pray you Sir Knight, concerne no ill opinion of me, for hindering you from killing your enemy, whom you haue lost in very

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

very great hazard, considering what hauynge and courage is in him, and which your selfe perhaps will be sorry for. Wherefore I pray you forget this displeasure, and determine to fulfill what I haue promised, which if you will do, you must go with me.

Believe me Damosell, said Palmerin, you helpebat small courteie, so often hindering me from the thing which aboue all other in this world most tormenteth me. What unhappy bery are you? but more unhappy the houre I met with you? but seeing it is reason I shold kepe my promise, lead the way, and I will not faille to follow you.

So rode they on, and so somme daies space he would not speake one woord to her, and saide he would haue left her company, but that he could not lech hym to forsake her. The next day, as they rode by a Ringers Ade, Palmerin espred a Knight standynge with a Bow and arrow in his hand, which he let fly at his Horse and killed him. Palmerin remembryng by remembrance of Frysol, and wery that the Knight had thus killed his Horse, made towards him so fast as he could, but the Knight was suddenly got on the further side of the Lake, and Palmerin up to the middle in water before he was ware of it, and now he coulde neither see the Knight that haue his Horse, ney the Damosell that came in his company.

Palmerin being in great perplexity, when he saw nothing but water round about him, and seeing he was upon a Bridge, beheld a maruellous ship Creame running under it, and at the end thereof a gudly Castle. Walking along the Bridge toward the Castle, amazid at this contrary aduenture, he espyed a Knight on the battlements of the Castle, whis said, Stay a while Sir Knight, one shall come presently and open the Gate,

Palmerin knew not what to say, but determined to defend himselfe if any cam to assaile him, so the Castle Gate being opened, he entred with his sword drawn, yet was there no man that displeased him, but every one made

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

him humble reverence, with very good words and gentle countenance, declaring by their behaviour that he was more then welcome thither. Thus walking on to the inner Court, there came towards him a Lady, accompanied with many Damoisels, and Knights, also shewing chearsfull gestures, and the Lady taking Palmerin by the hand, said.

Ah gentle Knight, right welcome are you to this place, and Heaven be praysed for the good it doth me, to see you here, that is able to accomplish the thing, which no other as yet could be able to finish: enter hairely in god assurance, for you will we make all the honur that we are able. Palmerin beholding the Lady, was brought into a marballous gudly Chamber, where certain Squires helpt to a bnarne him, bringing him a gorgeous Mantle to wrape about him. This done, he was conducted into a laige Hall, where the table was covered, the Lady entertaining him so nobly, as in the King of Englands Court he could not be better. The feastes, and the Tables with the chaloun, the Lady began to devise with Palmerin, saying. Long time (my Lord) have we desired your comming, as the man in whom our enly helpe consisteth: for by your valour we are perswaded to be delivred from the Misery wherein I and mine have too long time bane retained.

I beseech you Madam (quoth Palmerin) to tell me your affaires, as also what the Knight meant to kill my Woyse, and why you entertaine me with so great kindnesse. If you will promise me' said the Lady, to accomplish a needfull occasion, and which I think is destinated to you: I will resolue you: otherwise I shall but lose my labour. If it be a matter reasonable (quoth Palmerin) & that a Knight may compasse, spare not to tell me, for I will doe my indeavour thereto. Gramercies gentle Knight, said the Lady, the circumstaunce of the occasion followeth in this sort. This Castle my Lord, sometime belonged to my noble Father, a Knight so hardy

and

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

and valiant as any in these parts, in whose younger yeares Love so over ruled him, as he affected a Lady of no lesse quality and condition then himselfe, by whom he had a Daugther: at whose birth his Lady and wife deceased. My Father being yet in the flower of his youth, matched the second time with a Lady of a very honourable and ancient descent, by whom he had me the first Childe. My Sister at fourteene yeares of age, my Father ostentiously would have richly married her to her great advancement, wherto he being unwilling, by my Fathers consent she remained with her Mother Sister, whose skill was very great in all Sciences, by whose counsell my Sister caused a gudly Wallace to be eftised, and a Streng Waller in an Isle on the other syde of this Castle, where afterward they made their continual abiding.

During this tyme my good Father loved me dearely, so as he matched me with a wealthy and noble Knight, excelling in all perfections, but chieflie in chivalry, by whom I had a Daugther a yere after our espousal: but the more my grise, my good Husband and Father both dyed, within short space after my Childes birth. Now my Daugther being come to the yeares of Marialge, her beauty made her desired of many noble Lords, but because I still reputed her too young, I denied all her suitors, which afterward turned to my vere great detriment. For my Sisters Aunt had a Sonne, the most mischaypen, despardine, and worst conditioned Knight, as all the Countrye coulde not shew such another, yet became he so amorous of my faire Daugther, as he requested his Mother to demand her of me for his Wifc: but when I heard thereof, you may well perceave your selfe that neither Colmane liked any thing more, and yet to this tyme do as much as I then did: So that I made her answer, how that I would rather desire my Daughters death, then so to dishonour her, because he was altogether unworthy of such speciall fortune. Notwithstanding this sharp repulse, he continued his amorous desires to my Daugther, so that he ear-

neably

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

neily persuaded his Mother to permit him to take her away from me perforce : to which late the unadvised Mother consented, either moued with pity, or overcome by the importunate soliciting of her, so that one day (under a colour of a friend meeting me to be merry) he robbed me of my Daughter. This wicked traitor had not long before that time intended this treachery, compacting the matter secretly with villains and thaves, by whose assistance he carried away my Daughter, shutting her up in a strong Tower, whereof I told you. And because he feared that I would gather some strength to reskew her, considering how well I was beloved of my neighbours, he prevented me by a strange Enchantment, environing the Castle and the Tower with such a maruellous Water, as no Knight should enter upon them without their consent.

Now that themselves might come south and return again at their pleasure, they devised a little Boat, which is guarded by two fierce Lyons, and a puissant Knight that had charge of them, so that none comes to them but whom they list. Since this unhappy time I did never see my Daughter, whom this damnable villaine (which most of all grieues me) immediately violated and rauished at his pleasure, swearing now never to take her as his wife, but to use her as his Concubine: and besides all this, the false Traylor in despite of me, and to revenge the words I gave him, doth monstrously abuse her, and most (vixianly) whippeth her daily with Roddes, which my Sister hath often intreated to be spared, but he by no meanes will be persuaded. Thus seeing my selfe out of all hope to recover her againe, haue ever since continued in earnest Invocation to Heaven, that some notable vengeance might punish this Villain: and such favour haue I found in my devout Implications, as first of all, his owne Mother was chastized with a cruell disease called Saint Anthonyes fyre in one of her Legs, which so grievously tormenteth her, as no remedy can be found to al-

lasse

## Emperour of Constanople. PART, I.

swage the veration. Her Sonne understanding hereof, would haue slaine thy Sister, accusing her to procure his Mothers infirmitie by her Learned knowledge. Whereupon my Sister fearing her life, and watching times convenient for her purpose, made an escape from the Villain bither to me, being sorry that her Aunt shoulde thus Injuriously dealt with me, and promised to worke the meane that I should recover my Daughter. These goddes woznot a little pleasing me, I would needs know how I shoulde come by my Daughter againe, whose misfortunes had been so ykkome to me, wherefore she thus answered.

It is so goddes Sister, that I cannot now reverse the sorrible Enchantments I haue already made for your Daughter, (though gladly I wold) if it lay in my power, wherefore you must attend the coming of a Knight, who excelleth all other in Valour, Vertue, and Prowesse: so he shall passe the Water, kill the Knight, enter the Tower, and deliver my Sister your Daughter againe into your custody. As concerning the Knight: goddes Sister, that shall so valiantly passe the Water without feare, and fully accomplish my former Enchauntment: For him will leave with you an excellent good Sword, a very sumptuous Armour, with divers other-gifts to belloyn on him, because my selfe shall not lue to see him, which came to passe, so very shortly after my Sister dyed. Now know you Sir Knight, what is prepared for you, therfore take some pity on me a poore desolate distressed Mother, and helpe Aduenture your selfe in this Honourable cause, as bounden hercunto by Vertue and needfull occasion.

Believe me Madame (said Palmerin) your discourse bath haene strange, and god reason wherby you to request vengeance, because your wrongs are the greatest that euer I heard of, which may in some sort perswade me, that the Daunger cannot long escape, without shame answerable to his cursed Villany, so Heaven will not suffer it, by assistance whereof

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

whereof I hope to revenge your Daughters Rape. And trust me dear Lady, I am sorry I came not in your Sisters life time, because she could have resolved me in a doubtfull matter: Yet neverthelesse, I will do so much for you, as if she were living. But I much maruell what is become of the Knight that slew my Horse, and the Damosell that conducted me hither. As for the Damosell (quoth the Lady) She shall come anone to attend upon you: but the Knight was only a matter of Enchantment, devised by my Sister, to discouer the man that shold answere this aduenture. And the Damosell whereof you speake hath brought hither many Knights to this Lake: but when their Horses were slaine, none of them durst be so hardy as to enter the Water, but onely you being predestinated to this aduenture.

In this and such like talke they spent the day till Supper time, and afterwards was Palmerin conducted to his Chamber, and being layd in bed he could take no rest: first, for grette that he had not slaine Frysol, and then againe, by the strange tale the Lady told him: wherefore rising the sooner in the next morning he went to the Lady to heare divine Service in her Chappell, where he besred God that he might pruaile against these Conjuracions, and vanquish the Knight that had so much abased his Order.

Returning from the Chappell, the Lady among other talke thus said: I see Sir Knight that your Armour is broken and much defaced, that one may judge you haue not kept it idle in your Armoys, wherefore I thinke you met not with your friend, when you were ensoyled to so dangerous repall: But as I understand by the Damosell that was your guidor hither, you returned him sound payment for his paines. So supply your want, I will beslow an Armour on you, which my Sister long since prouided for you, and with carefull regard kept close in her Chest: therefore let me intreat you not refuse it, in respect it was not prouided but for special purpose: being needfull for the present occasion you must

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I;

now Enterprize. Palmerin would not refuse her curios offer, wherefore opening the Chest, there lay the Armes, couered with white Lassate, whereon was written in Letters of Gold this Inscription: These Armes were made for the good Knight Palmerin d'Oliva, Sonne to the most roiall King that at this Day liveth in all Greece. That worthy present greatly delighted Palmerin, because herein his desire was somewhat satisfied, whiche was to know the estate of his Father: Wherefore in midle of this pleasing tyme he said to his Lady, I perceve sayre Madame, that your Syster knew more of my Destiny then any other: For seeing he could so truely describe my name, I need make no great doubt of her further Judgement. So taking away the silk, he held there a moze sumptuous Armour, then that which halting Vulcan made for Achilles, at the earnest intreay of Beauitfull Thetis, being most curio: by chased over with Flowers of Gold, and the shield of Forte, all engraven with rare Devises, such as well might beweare the greatest Prince in the World. Palmerin presently put off his owne Armes, and invested himselfe with the Ladys gift, whiche so wel agreed with him in every point, as the like could hardly be framed for his body.

Then he was thus Armed, he besred the Lady to shew him the way, that might conduct him to the place where he shold discharge his promise, for that he would delay no further time in a matter of such weight. The Lady commanded thysse of her Squires to condua him, who led him along a narrow Path-way, which brought him to the Enchanted Water, so deep and dangerous, and there they besewed him the Boats to passe over in, which was scattered with a great Chayre to a Tree, whereupon Palmerin forght the meane to board it: But so soone as he laid hand on the Chayre, to pluck it towards him, there rushed presently south of the Enchanted Water two mighty Lyons, who violently assalted Palmerin in such ferrele maner, as they got him downe

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

on the ground under them, yet he recovered himselfe quickly, and valiantly encountered those hideous Monsters, who had such a Diuellish Charme on them, as that no Swerd could any way hurt or wound them. Palmerin perceiving that all his valour was in vaine, called to heaven for help, in this great necessity, and commanding his ability to the Highest Protection, and his heart to the gracious regard of his Mestre: He gave one of the Lyons such a cruell stroak betweene the Eyes, as he tumbled headlong into the Water, and was afterwards seyn no moze, and soon after him he sent his other fellow for company: But had not his Armour beene of extraordinary vertue, doubtlesse this shoulde have bene his last Adventure.

Not a little joyfull of this happy Victory, he entred the Boate, and with one of the Dares he begannē to Row, but now was he surprised with a wondersfull danger, for the Water arose in huge Willows, beating and telling the Boate so fearfully, as he had very much to do to save the bottome from turning upside downe. In this perplexity, which he could not devise how to mitigate, a matter of greater misfortune yet besell him, so suddenly a maruellous great, huge, and ougly Monster started out of the Water, which laboured by all the means he could to overwhelm the Boats. So that now was he constrained to forgoe his Dare, and drab his weapon to resist this Monster, which terrifid him so cruelly on the one side, and the Waters so dangerously on the other, as he was not in the like hazard, when he fought with the Serpent on the Mountains Acrasia.

To comfort him in this contagious extremity, he imployed his Divine assistance, whose onely providence must now defend him, else had the raging and distempred Water, or the rabidous Monster that gaped for his life devoured him. But he that in greatest perils, was ever of unvanquished spirit, made such hard shift to row

## Lyperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

with his Swerd, as in despight of the Monster, and the boylng waves of the Water, he landed on the other side: when immediatly all the conjuration ceased, so that neither Water, Monster, Boat, or any thing else might then be discerned. I leue you to imagine, whether Palmerin were glad or no, that he had so happily escaped this danger: for joy whereat he fell vpon his knes, and with heaved hands and eyes to Heaven, gaue thanks unto the Highest, for his deliverance. His prayer being ended, he went to the Castle, where he heard a most grieuous and dolefull complaint of a Lady, saying.

Unhappy be the houre of my Matinity, Alas, is it possible that in all the whole Worlde, any Lady can compare with my miseries? Palmerin attentively marking these speches, knew well it was the Impytioned Lady: Wherefore moued with compassion, he called with a loude voice for one to come open the Gate, and so long he called, that at last the Knight heard him, who looking sooth at a Window of the Fosteresse, said: In an evill houre (Knight) commett thou hither, and I miche marnell what foollish presumption hath guided thee to this place, seeing thou canst no way escape my hands: but in my curteisie it remaines, either to spare thee, or put thee to a most cruell Death, although my Enchantment hath hitherto suffered thy passage: Thou art maruellous hardy (quoth Palmerin) there at the Window, but if thy courage be such, as to dealt with me hand to hand, I shall make thee understand, that thy losy wods cannot shield thee from my Swerd: So I will pull downe that Romack, and reward thy inexorable Tyranny, to that good Lady I heard complaine, whom like a Villaine thou forkeft from her Mother. Come downe I pray thee (if thou be not afraid) and thou shalt see what entertainment I glise to such as thou art.

Are you Sir (meth the Knight) such a coxetour and reformer of Wives? Darest thou but larry till I come downe.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

I shall teach thee the way to be better advised. So Arming himselfe presently, he mounted on Horseback, and came sojourn at the Castle Gate: Whereupon Palmerin thus spake to him. There is ever great odds, Sir Knight, you to be on horseback, and I on foot, you shall shew small knighthood in offering me such wrong: I pray thee (of courtesy to alight) other wise, I will bestow such a currying on your Palscar, as your Servant afterwards shall take but small paines with him. The Knight of the Castle made as though he heard him not, and ran fiercely with his Launce against Palmerin, who escaped his Enemy, with his Sword gave his Horse such a stroke on the legge, as he fell by him, that the Bone being cut in twaine, he fell to the ground, having one of his Knights legges so fast under him, as he was not able to recover himselfe. Palmerin willing to helpe him up againe, gave him halfe a dozen such raps about the Pate, as he lay quiet enough, without any moving.

Whereupon he unclasped his Helmet, when the Knight having some ire, began to grapple with him, and drawing his pocket-dagger, gave Palmerin a cruell wound therewith in the right Thigh, in recompence whereof, at one stroke he took his head from off his Shoulders. The Squires and Servants that belonged to the Castle, who came sojourn to see the issue of the fight, ran space back to the Castle again, to that the Gates for their owne safety: But Palmerin (albeit he was hurt) prevented them, laying about him so roughly on every side, as he swoze, that if they would not bring him to the Impisoned Lady, they shoulde all presentlie dye the death. Many of them with feare, tumbled headlong into the Ditch, others on their Knees asked for mercy, promising to do what ever he comandemented them: whereupon he said to him that had the Keyes. Arise quickly Willaine, and conduct me to the Prison, or I shall pay thee so thy laynesse. The poore knyght almost frighted out of his wits, brought him directly to the Tower where the Ladys was, whom they found naked

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

From the middle upwards, and so grievously beaten, as all her body was gone blood, which the Knight had done that morning, for a Dreame he had the night before, how her Mother would send a Knight that shoulde take her thence perforce, and warther her, in which opinion he came to the Lady, saying. I perceue that the Mother and Friends labour to get her from me, and practise my destruction by all the best meanes they may: but now for their sakes thou shalt surely abyde their dealing. And with these woordes the Villaine so cruelly whippeth her, as she was ready to give up the Ghost, and so left her in hope she would haue dyed. Palmerin finding the Lady in this lamentable plight, said.

Arise good Lady and leave your sorrowfull acclamations, for the villaine that thus misused you, hath had such absolution for his deserts, as he hath left his head in ague of his penance: and if you will depart with me towards your Mother, I will shew you the Traitor where he lies now quiet enough. Ah my Lord, (quoth the Lady) is the Traitorous Scotor dead, that so monstrosely wronged me? He is Lady, said Palmerin, you neede feare him no moore. Then Heaven be praised (quoth she) for this happy day, and among all knyghts be you the most renowned, for ever, with which wayes she arose, and swapping a surred Mantle about her, without any other garments on her body, she went with Palmerin, and passing by the place where Scotor lay ague, lifting her eyes, and hands to Heaven, she said. O my God, whose is the name to be praised, so justly punishing the treachery and videlity of this Villaine: Oh Treylour, how worthily hast thou received this death, which is not rigoures, as thy mercilesse tyran hath done to me.

Where you must note, that so soone as the Knight was dead, all the enchantments about the Castle were presentlie unthid, the great Lake being consumed after Palmerins passage, so that the Ladys Mother aduentured

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

sed thereof, came to make Palmerin: embracing her Daugher with such exceeding joy, as they could not speake to each other their teares so hindered them, at length the Mother kneeled before Palmerin with these wordes. Ah wox ye Knight, how happy you have this day made me : all my somer gales (by your meanes) being now converted into singular contentation. As she would haue procced in her gratulations, she perceiued the bloud to trickle downe Palmerins Armour: whiche he sawinge to behold, said. Ye think hit Knight, you are verelpe wounded, I beseech you grant me so much honour, as to repole your selfe a while within my Castle, where I doubt not to vse such diligent care, as you shall be whole and scuns in very short time. Palmerin not minding to refuse her offer, returned with the Lady, and beeing unarm'd, was brought to his Chamber, wherre the Lady disclod his bagonds, and he was so well enterlained as heart could devise.

Then went the Ladys Squires and Servants to Sclotos Castle, from whence bringing all things that were of any value, they harned the Cratons booy, and puttyngh his head on the point of a Lance, they placed it on the topys the Tower for a perpetuall memory. The next day came people from all the parts of the Island, to see the Knight that ended the enchantments, and among other, the Damosell that conduced him thither was one, who on her knideth spake to him. Now am I satisfied hit Knight, and you discharged of the promise you made me, which was only for the distruance of this Lady, whom you haue valiantly conquerid from hyr rancit that tormentid her. I beseech him, who exerciseth hath regard of the poore afflicid, that his pleasure may be to send you like, or a better aduenture, by heich by you may accomplish all your harty enterprises. So will he I doubt not, aid Palmerin, and that was one from which you distroyed me: but I shall never be mory till I see him againe, though then at your latency he escaped my hands so well, And soxane speed the

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

the matter so happily, quoth the Damosell, as Peaces and Friendship may be batteid betwixen you, so if either of you miscarry, it were great pity, considering the great valour wherewith you are both nobly furnished. Let come what wil said Palmerin, never shall other agreement be betwixne vs. With these wordes the Damosell held her peace, so she received by this answer, that he was not halfe pleased with the other Knight.

### CHAP. L VI.

How Palmerin travelling through a great Forrest, espyed a Dwarfe enter into a Cave, wherin hee followed, and found there a Knight, with whom he had much conference.



Along continued Palmerin in the Castle with the Lady, till his wounds being healed, and he able to beare Armour, he said to the Lady, Madame, by the help of God and your diligent endeavour, I haue my selfe in good constitution of body, wheresoever with your fanchonable licence, I mean to morrow to depart hence, because occassions of greater importancie to commandeth me; yet this assurance will I leau with you, that in any place wherre I shall come hereafter, your wonderfull courtesie hath gained such power ouer me, as at all times I remaine to doe you any pleasure.

The Lady right glad of Palmerins noble offer, and her Daugher thankfull for her benefit received, returned him many thankful gratulations: but seeing they could not longer

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliver,

get detaine him, soz his speches were such as he wold nedys  
be gone, he sait:

Gentle Knight, seeing it likes you no longer to sejourn  
here, but that you think it expedient to depart, I wold glad-  
ly present you with a simple gift, not as recompence of your  
painsake travells, but onely that hereafter you might remem-  
ber from whence it came.

Wher unto she out of a Coffer two rich and precious  
Kings, and presenting him one of them, she said: You  
shall give this King to her whom above all other you  
most esteeme, the King containing this speciall vertue,  
that the longer she weare it, the more she shall love you,  
and daily shall her love so vehemently encrease, as all  
adversties and troubles she shall beare with patience,  
that by meane of your love may any way endanger  
her.

This other King is of a contrary vertue, which you  
must give to the Lady your dere friend beloved, and to him  
may you safely say, that any occasion whatsoever, can-  
not pluck it from his Ladys finger: soz this is the nature  
thereof, that the Lady which weare it, shall not be dispas-  
g'd, and neither increates, gifts, or whatsover besides,  
cannot compell her, to do any thing contrary to her liking.  
If it come to passe that she were beloved of any other, then  
him she now affecteth, she shall be able by vertue of this  
King, to quench all such libidinous desire in her sollicitor,  
and cause him never afterward to move her with any dislo-  
cate request.

As soz these stones of so rare and excellent qual-  
ty, you may note that they were prettily chosen soz  
you by my sister, and placed as you see them, by her su-  
periell knowledge in the Magicall Sciences, that in  
time to come they shall do such service, as no Jewels ( of  
what value so euer they were ) might be able to do the  
like.

Wellnes,

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

Besides these, she gave him divers other Jewells  
to carry to his Lady, soz which he humbly thanked her,  
and taking his leane of her and her Daugther, who shed  
many teares soz his departure, he mounted upon Horses  
backs, and travelling thoro' a great Forrest, he alighted  
a Dwarfe, whom she judging soz to be his Merchant  
Urbainillo, because he was of his stature, and very much  
resembled him, he called alow. Hear a thou tall fellow,  
how camest thou in this place, so unrequestid and unha-  
bitid?

The Dwarfe being in a great feare, ranne so fast as  
he could into a great Cane betwix two Bushes, which  
made Palmerin alight and followe him, and very farre went  
he into the Cane not seeing any body, till at length he came  
into a little Room, as it had beene cut out of a Quarry, which  
had light into it by a littel chynke cut therewara Rocks: and  
there he found a young Knight laid upon a bedde, at  
whose feet lay the Dwarfe, all quaking and trembling  
with his late feare, whom Palmerin now saw that he  
was not Urbainillo, wherefore he saluted the Knight, say-  
ing:

I must intreate you Sir Knight to pardon me, because  
I entred so boldy, neither knocking first, or calling soz  
any of your Servants: Albeit I desired to speak with this  
little man, but nothing could induce him to carry my com-  
ming, soz he fled from me as I had bene a Dibell. Where-  
upon perswading my selfe, to finde some other body here  
more courteous, I followed him at the hard hicles, with  
no other intent, but onely to know how I might possible  
get forth of this desolate Forrest, wherein by misadventure  
I have lost my way, soz I wold not willingly stay too  
faire, least I shold be sozed to remaine here as an  
holy Hermite, considering my profession is cleane con-  
trary.

To prevent such chance, I think it was Gods will I shoulde  
followe

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Tellow your Servant, let me therfore intreate you, to know what you are, and wheresoever you live here so solitarily, Comming as it semeth the company of men & protesting to you, that if I may in ought assill you, whereby to drame you from this obscure life, I will with all my heart accomplish it, though it were a matter that should concerne my life.

The Knight rayng uppe himselfe, and sighing so bitterly as life and soule wold haue parted in sunber, answered. Alas noble Knight, sache not to understand, the depth of my sorrow, in respect the remedy is all together impossible: yet in that your demand procedeth from such a Gentle Spirit, as pitteth the myries of despised creatures, I will acquaint you with some part of mine estate.

Know then gentle Knight, that I am the most fooyne Varian, whose vndoifornate life exceedeth all mens whatsoever, for this wold assaydeth me nothing but mishappe, disgrace, contempt, and all loathsome grises, as for delight and pleasure, they are loathsome to me, my Monthes, Weeks, Dales, Houres and Minutes, being continually accompanied with all extreame passions. My greatest consiliteth in dolorous Lamentations, remembraunce of passed infurstances, sad Regrets, and insupportable Melancholy.

In brieke, I am only he, whose compaionis are, a troubled spirit, thoughts confounded with frustrate hope, having utterly lost the light of those gladsome Sunnes, whereof the one shined in my face, the other in my heart, that now nothing is left for me but a life despised, yet welcome to me that am so diuined.

These wordes were uttered with so many sigbes, such floods of teares, and haling his selfe with such impatience, as would haue cleaved a heart of Adamant, wylch moued Palmerin by gentle persuasions, to r. quest

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

request of him the cause of his disquiet: and so long he continued his importunate intreaties, that the Knight at length thus answered. Gentle Sir, so well contenteth me the sorowes which I suffer, that in hope of any remedy, I wold not betray them: but seeing Fortune hath thus condicted you hither, in respect of your gracious and affable nature, as also that you shall repute me vnscrute and misgoverned, I will satisfie you in the cause of my sadness.

Come it is, Sir Bright, that I haue hitherto, and ever shall loue a Lady, Daughter to a Knight my neighbour, she being (in my judgement) one of the fairest Ladies in the whole world. And now perceiving by her behaviour that she loued me as well, or rather more, which indeede she did not: for her I accomplished all that a Knight could for his Lady, adventuring mine honour, and my life in all dangers for her sake, yea, nothing might be refused for the Mistresse of my thoughts. Perceining my selfe to be so equally loued, and my passions to grow beyond my abillity, having occasion to acquaint her with the secrets of my heart, I desired her to pitte my opprestions, which if she refused to do, she wold loose her Lover, and his life withall. For I was so solemnely bound to her service, as she could not command any thing so hard and dangerous, but by her favourable regard woulde be most easie to me.

These wordes could draw no pitte from her, but displeased and in great anger she answered. That I might not be reckoned among thosse Knights, who deserued the loue of a Lady of her calling, and thereworth I wold not be so hardy, as to pre-haue her, exreme in her presence. So spide she, and of it in her loue that gane thee thy fulcon, wherein thou takest such pleasure, and never waitest thou turning againe to me.

Truth th. 1: wordes & & flung from me to a Willi  
VI 4

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

dow, where I was woonit alwayes to stand and talk; with her, beguiling the time in no leesse contention than these happy Soules in the Elysian fields, such was the care Beawty, good grace, and angular courtesie of my (sometime) beloved Lady Valerica. I cannot deny, but that a Lady bestowed the favoun on me, but in any such respect as my Lady imagined, God knows is most untrue, no; could death compell me so much to abnre my chosen spis-  
stresse.

Having my Lady then so rigozous, and her answer so severo, yet assured of mine owne innocency and loyalty: I was surprised with such surpassing heavinessse, as every manis expected when my feble spirit woulde forlaine his long dispised habitation. My Lady being thns resolute in her owne opinion, and disdaining all meanes I shewed to perswade her, despairing likewise of any after hope: I determined with my selfe, to abandon all company, as unworthy of their society, and then betooke my selfe to this brutish kindes of life, where I might without any impeach, breathe forth my continual complaints.

In this resolution I came to this place without the knowledge of my Lord or any other, this Dwarfe onely excepted, who ebormore hath bene my most troulie Servant, and fetcheth my necessaries at a village neare adjoyning, and by his honest perswasions: hath many times withheld me from committing violence on my selfe. Thus have you heard in breife the cause of my sorow, the depth whereof cannot be considered or valued, but by such as have in like manner tried and suffered, the basaine and ingratitude of inconstant Ladies.

Palmerin having heard the saynes of this Knight, repeated to him the graces and favours of his Lady Polynarda, what honour she did him in her Fathers Court, and how he was in danger to receive the like reward, as the Knight did of his Valerica: and fearing Indede  
that

## Emperour of Constançiope. PART. I.

that his mishap woulde sort to that illus, his selfe dwelinge at the feete of this pwoze refusid Lover. The Knight perceiving, that the repetition of his misfortune was cause of this alteration, breathing sworth a vehement sigh, he said:

Alas wretched Catiffe that I am, hath any desteny made me so unhappy, that enduring an extremity worse then death, I cannot dye, and yet hee that did but heare my mystery hath lost his life? I will not live any longer to prejudice any other man, but will now make way to the end of mine owne troubles. So then he drew sworth Palmerins Sword, and offered for to thrust it into his body: but Palmerin receyved to his former estate, Karred suddenly vp, and catching him fast in his Armes, said.

How now my Friend? Will you be so inconsiderate, that so; such a little temporall paine which your body endureth, so to condemne your soule to everlasting peridson.

And though your Passions touch you so severly, as that you will not afford any pity to your selfe: let me now intreat you to sojourn this bad humour. For not without great reason have I sustainted this sudden motion, remembryng the unspeakable comforst I received by one, who by false sug-  
gestions, or dangerous reports (which woundeth more depe then the fatall weapon) may in like sorte be changed into such conceyt, as her Judgement may excede a Hell of tor-  
mentis.

Yet can I not denie (your Lady having with such o-  
pen shame refusid you) but you have great occasion to grieve thereat, yet not to stretch the extremity so farre as to dis-  
paire, or worke injury to your calling to memory be low light  
the opinien of a Woman is, how suddenly she will alter, and  
how prompt she is to Jealousie, especially when she lebeteth  
effectually. And if heretofore she loved you frequently, it is  
impossible but she shoulde feel some part of your anguish, and  
moze

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

more violently (I thinke then your selfe can.) Trust then to him that hath all hearts at command, repose your selfe canstantly on his god Providence, soz he will not leave you sensurate of your honourable intent, standing with Justice, AND perfect Integrity.

As Palmerin continued these comfortable perswasions the Dwarse couered the Table, and then set before them such a small proportion of Pittance, as he had provided, and when they had well refreshed themselves, Palmerin tooke hys leane of the Bulght, promising hym (if he could by any godmeanes) to g.ue some ease to his oppellations. Varnan returned hym many thanks, commanding his Dwarse to conduct hym into the High-way, being not a little sorowfull to leave his company, who then had so well aduised and consoled hym. Palmerin being come into his ready way, sent backe the Dwarse, and rode on till he was got out of the Forrest, intending to finde out the Castle where Valerica remained, because he would somewhat sollicite the cause of the poore solitary Varnan. So ryding along in this determination, he espied a Knight and two Squires before him, the Knight thus speaking to one of his Squires. I know not whether it be time as yet to enter the Gardenes of Madame Valerica he as; et come thither? Goe see if that ih be there, and make thy returne quickly to me againe. Palmerin hearing the name of Valerica, knew well that it was she for whom the solitary Knight lived in such penitencie; therfore being moued with pity of his miserie, he said to himselfe: Sic here the false trecherie of a godlesse Venetian, so honourably to say she be in my neare sight verayely, and now to prest. in the tylling of this ent. ryng. Her for? But I shal reprehende thee god, that a p.ial f. bl. l. eng to the p. r. a. i. g. a. l. l. King't, and comynge to the Knight, he saith hym. Sirs, there is all reason why I shal reprehend all thy knave of knyghts knyngland: Now by my swerd, thou knyght knyght, pag

102

## Emperour of Constanople. PART. I.

for thy disloyalty. With these wordes, he lent hym such a sound strok on the head, as he clift it therewith to the very teeth.

The two Squires seeing their Master slaine, beganne to hastes away: but Palmerin caught hym that was sent to the Garden, to whom he said, Come on Syrba, is thou louest thy life, bring me wher the Lady is: If thou doest not, thou shalt never follow thy trade any longer. The Squire by no meanes daile dw otherwise: So he brought hym to the Whicket, where Valerica was woon to receive in her Loner, and knocking with his finger, as his Master was accustomed; Valerica opening the doore, and thinking it had bene her friend, cast her armes about Palmerins Neck, whos bycught her in his armes scorth of the Garden, commanding the Squire presently to follow him. Valerica much abashed hereat, said. How now sweet friend? whether will you carry me? Know you not, if my father heard hereof, that neither of vs durst approach before him,

Thus madame (said Palmerin) these are but wordes, there is no remedy, but you must go with me. So that neither with teares nor Requests would he be intreated, but presently mounted on Horselbacke, causing the Squire to helpe the Lady by before him, because he would be sure she should not make an e'cape from him, and ryding away towards the Forrest, because the darke night drew on, he left the roade way, seeking some place where they might conveniently repose themselves that night. At length he found out a little Whicket, where they alighted and he turning forth his H. y. to pasture, tooke off his Helmet, and came to the Lady, desirous her to be contented with such hard Lodging for that night: For when she beheld that it was not her friend, byringing her hant she thus exclarifi. d. Alas, unhappy were th that I am: How treacherously am I thus deceiu'd! What shal sp. me comparable to wry, having lost my deare friend, and al ryding it hi. pleasure that hath cruelly murthered

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

warthered him? Ah barde fortune, why art thou so inconstant, to exchange my former pleasures into this grieuous Stratagyme.

Palmerin hearing her so impatient, sayde: You must thikke Lady, that what hath happened, is by Divine permissioun, who hath thys appointed this contrarietie, to punish your loosenesse, and your exceeding disloyalty towradis him, who loves you durer than his owne soule: and soz your love leades a most austere life, in the very desolate and uncomfor-table place of this Woerlre. And seeing he hath thus long endured such hardnesse for your sake, it is godz reason that you shold in some sorte participate with his misery. Feare not therefore, for I have spoken nothing of him, but what I have seen: and that by great chaunce habe I thus brought you away from your fathers huse, meaning by Gods good fabour (this humoz forgotten) to cause you match with him, whose true love aboue all other hath deserued you. Ah misery incomparable, said the Lady, I see now it is in vaine to quanne what the destynies hane appointed, how falls my fortune from ill to woorse? Must I now goe with that coward Varnan, whom hitherto I have continually despised? I had rather die a most shamefull death.

I know not Lady what you thikke, said Palmerin, but in my opinion, Varnan is much better then you esteem him, and a better Knight then he, that could defend his pate with no wiser policie: worthily may you call him coward, and love the other that liues to do you service. So long they stood on these tearmes, untill a knyght passed by them, to whom Valeria cried. Help gentle Knight for Gods sake pitye me, and deliver me from this traytor, who falsely hath begatled me, and violently brought me hither against my will. What art thou said the Knight that thus dishonorest this Lady? I shall teach thee better knowledge of thine order before we part, Palmerin quickly biolding of his Horsly, & clasping on his hel-met, said to the Knight. What art thou that wouldest take

her

## Emperour of Constanſiople. PART, I.

Hey from me, when I conquered even now by my hwope folloſe thy way, or I shall ſette it & what discipline I ſee to ſcules, that will meddle with matters aboue their capacity. Doſt thou ſe obſtinately stand in thy treachery? ſaid the Knight: Mark what will be the end of thy presumption.

## CHAP. LVI.

How Palmerin having thus brought away Valeria, con-ducted her to the Cave, to her beloved Varnan, and there confirmed the agreement of their Love.



Before we passe any further, you shall underſtand that the Knight thus contending with Palmerin, was Hermes, one whom the King ſent after the Lady with Fryſol, to make deliuerance of the Caſtle, as you haue heard before: he being Palmerins friend, yet neither knowing other. For Hermes took ſuch regard of the Ladys complaint, as he marked not Palmerin before he put on his Helmet. Palmerin ſeeing that Hermes would needs try his fortunz, encountered him with ſuch a rough stroak, as downe he fell to the ground, Hermes thinking his head was ſhivered in a hundred pieces: So Palmerin called Hermes Squire, commanding hym to help by the Lady, or else he would ſend him after his Maſter. The Squire alighted and help by the Lady, rewardeing her with an infinit number of caſles, because his Maſter had ſped ſo ill by her meanes.

Trust me Lady, (quoth Palmerin) though you thinke my labour but ill bestowed, yet ſuch is my regard of the solitary Varnan, as to finiſh that Hell of torment whiche he ſuffers,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

I must needs hold better opinion of my paines. With these and many such like speches he beguiled the time, till they came neare to Varnans Cave, wher to take the Ayre, was there walking under the Trees: but when he saw Palmerin returned, and a Lady with him, yea, perceiving well that it was faire Valerica, they were no sooner alighted, but he caught her in his armes, saying: Is it possible sweete for me, tht after so long mishap, & when all hope was utterly gone, thou canst affoyd me this gracious labour? Ah happy eyes, that haue poured forth such shewers of teares, what felicity may compire with yours, contemplating now the rare beauty of your wif: blessed say it be, that after so many insuppoitable tormentes, the meane whereof should returne such pleasure, comfor, and sollace? Depart then teares, packe hence lamentations, grieves, tormentes, and all melancholy conceites, get you else where, and in most Barbarous countreyes of the world make your abiding, for she commands you hence, in whom consisteth my special content. Oh forunate knight, how my I recompence this inexplicable kindness, summounting all other that ever was heard of? Impossible is it for me to requite this fauour, though all my Possessions, life, body and spirit, were bound to your service. But Vraken wil supply my want, and continue you in as great happynesse, as your noble Bounty hath brought me comfort.

Foybrare these speches ( said Palmerin ) albeit I had done a thousand times as much, yet shold I but accomplish what one Christi in owes to another. I pray you theresoar let vs go into your Cave, least we be espied, and so prevented, beside, I am so ouer watched, as I cannot stand on my feet, through the very want of sleep. Valerica setting her selfe in such an uncomely place, and in his custody the most detested, her angry Comack would not suffer her to speak one word: but when she had a while restorid her selfe, on a seat of fragrant Pearbes and flowers, which Varnan diligently prepared. Palmerin said: Behold yondame Valerica, for in what

## Emperour of Constanſiople. PART. I.

what place, in what solitary, austere, and sharp kindes of life your Varnan liues by your commandement, notwithstanding fortune is so fadearable, let not your rigour and violeunce exceed their mutability. Consider a little, what grieves he hath endured in this comfortles place, which verily have bin so great, as all the pleasures in the world, cannot recompence the very least of them. I beseech you then, if heretofore you have boxid him hard likeing, let it now be forgotten, and if you advisedly he hath any way offendid you, let his long continuall and surpassing loyalty serue now for satisfaction, and take him to your husband, as the most perf. & and faithfull Lover in England. You likewise Sir Varnan, without remembrance of your passed miseries, or her too rigorous refusals heretofore, take her as your Lady and wife, and in all herout bairns your self to her by present speches: for saing I have byee ghet her hether, it will remaine a continuall reproch to me, if you would not accept her as your wypuse and wife. Ah my Lord ( said Varnan ) with right good will shall I accomplish your command, so it may stand with me Ladys liking, for wherein consisteth the whole sum of my dealess. Ah miserable verownd all other ( said Valerica to Palmerin ) in us I by a daulur be subiectid to so vyle an extry mist, and constrained to take hym for my Husband whom I carnot affeit, he being the most false and cowardly knyght that ever I knew? Thust I agaist my fathers will, and by my Traitors preuencion, that hath so much abused me, as no vertuous knyght woulde to haue wronged a Lady, be thus compelled to my mariage? heauen cannot like hereles, and rather will I dre, then to the thing shall returne me such reproch. Then quakid she so pitifully as thought she had been quite straignt of her seners: whiche Varnan beholding, beganne thus to complaine. Ah gentle knyght, what grieve is it to haue bei to these tormentes, whom I love much better then mine owne life? and for whom I rather desyre to die, then not to enjoy her hir her owne likeing. I cannot live seeing her in these afflictions

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

ous, and therfore rayber her againe to her fathers house, and no sooner shal she be departed hence, but Ile will sayake this sojourne Carkasse, then shall my death assure her how faithfully I loved Palmerin seeing the obstinacy of Valerica, satv. In faith Lady, I thinks in all the world is not a moxe cruel and diuersall woman then you are, perswade your selfe, that if I take the paine to carry you againe to your fathers Castle, I shall doe your errand there in such sort, as all your life time repentence will hardly excuse you. And to speake the truth, Varnan doth much moxe then you deserve, if you well remember your selfe, and for you are so Kubboyne, I shall ggue you the desrot (offering to draw his sword) that such ingratefull and trecherous women moxthly merit. Valerica scald when he saw him in such choller, and doubting he would discover her incontinent love pax, thzew her selfe at his feet, drawing him to appease his anger, and he woldes her what ere he comanded.

Soz (quoth he) seeing my fortune hath brought me into his company, who for his unseigned loves to me, hath so long suffered wonderfull calamities: well might I be eke me of hytish nature, if I did not acknowledge it, therfore I will be his wife, and give him my faith here in your presence. Palmerin well pleased with this answer, tooke her by the hand, and taking Varnan by the other, espoused them there by solemne promises, and afterward laid him downe to rest himselfe a while. Then Varnan taking Valerica in his armes, with crat kites and amorous speches, expellid all former hevinesse, esteeming himselfe the happyeſt knight in the whole world, having now at length obtained the favour of his Mistresse, giving her to understand, how unacceptable the gift of pitty was, coming from so rare a creature to her languishing belovéd. Palmerin seeing them so wel agreed, wold now depart and leave them to their fortunes: but by earnest opportunity of these lovers, he rayed there longer then he intended. Now was the love betwixne these

Iwanine,

## Emperour of Constanſiople. PART. I.

greater then their hatred had bee, so that after they had stayed there 3 or fourre daies in the Cabe, with such entertainment as the Discars could make them, they departed to one of Varnans Castles, wher there obtained peace with the said parents of Valerica, continuing long time together in comfort of their loue, and ending their limes in loyalty together,

### Chap. L V I I.

How Palmerin, after he departed from Varnan and Valerica, met with two Ladyes in chase, one of them giving him a Faulcon. And what happened to him against the Duke of Gaule his twelve knights, out of whose hands he delivered Hermes,



Then Palmerin said Varnan and Valerica lo well contented, after many offers of their seruices, and kinde almes delivred on all sides, he left them in their Maule, and sat forward on his journey, looging that night in an ancient Knights Castle, where he baderked, hale the hytthoun of the flais Knight, helled Valericas Father in his Castle: Wherefore he turned another course, and leaving the broad way that guided to London, he met two Ladys accompanied with thre Squires, who had caſt a Faulcon and a Martin to flye, the sight whereof so highly contented him, as he wold needs tarry to ſee the end thereof, which made one of the Ladys thus ſpeakē to him. I ſee thy Knight you haue no hart on your Journey, because you stay to behold our paſtime, therfore if you will go with us to a tour hereby, you shall there ſee a þiane ſight indeed, ſuch wonþy game is there ſo plentifull, & my faulcon ſo good as the wil-

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

never falle. Palmerin who abone all passimes lobed Vancking, rode with the Ladys to the Marches by their Castle, where they had such excellent sport at Heron, Duck & Mallardas the day beguiling them, Palmerin was forced to stay with them that night. When they were come to the Castle, Palmerin maned the Ladys Faulcon so well, as though all his life time he had practised to be a Faulconer. The Lady seeing him so brave a Gentleman, so courteous, affable, and comely in behaviour, and that he tended her Hawk so gently, was immedately surprised with his Love, so that she desired to know of whence he was, whom she could so gladly afford to choose for her Belouet, and having long earnestly beheld him, she said. Sir Knight, that I might entertain you as your estate beseecheth, I pray you tell me your name, and whither you travell. Lady (qu. Palmerin) I am a micer Stranger, who by Fortune on the See was brought to this Country, and because the King had warre against the Emperour of Almaine, I remained a while here as a Soldier, attening a prosperous winds, to transport me home againe into my Native Country. The Lady hearing this, and judging him to be one of the famous Knights, that came to the Court, lobed him more earnestly then he did before, probiding such surpassing delights and delicates for him, as she willed that night had bene a yeare in length. The Tables withdrown, and many pleasant speeches past between Palmerin and the Ladys Daugther, she conducted him to his Chamber, wishing (if her Honour might so auouch it) that Palmerin never might haue any other Bedfellow. But leaving him to his good rest, she departed to her chamber, where Iuril Rose of sleep suffised her that night. In the Morning, Palmerin called for his Horsle to be gone: the Lady very sorrowfull so soon to forgoe his company, but seeing she had no means to hold him, she said. Sir, your departure may not be delayed, I would present you with the Faulcon, which yesterday did so specially content you, which if you please

## Emperour of Constantinople PART. I.

please to accept for my sake, I shall not be unmindfull of the honour you haue done me, chichly, that you dauchsafe to stay here this night, being as welcome hither as the King himself.

Sir, it is your pleasure Madame (said Palmerin) to be. unto your Faulcon on me, I accept it as the only thing you could give me, and by the saith of a Knight I promise you that I will keepe it for your sake, and never part therewith, if by force of villany it be not taken from me. The Lady so joyfull hereof as might be deuided, caused the Faulcon to be brought to him.

Here will you note, that this is the selfe same Lady, whiche sent the Faulcon to Varnan, and lobed him so dearly as after the understand he had forsook the Country, she gave her selfe altogether to this recreation. Her father percyng she was affected, suffered her to take her pleasure, sending her diverse the best Hawks that could be gotten. But it came so to passe, that two Faulcons so friendly given, and in the like sorte taken, proved very unfortunat to both the Knights, causing them to curse the hours, that ever they accepted the Ladys liberality, came neare the Castle, or into her hawks, as you haue already heard by solitary Varnan, and her master shall perceve in Palmerins sayldne, he being departed from the Lady, rode two dayes together without any adventure, till at length he came to the Tent, where the Duke of Gauls Knights guarded the passage, which scant pleased Palmerin, because he imagined if he fought with them, he shoulde be deceipted in his intent, and not see Trineus so soon as he would, whom he left at the Court expecting his company, wherefore he wold haue turned another waie, but one of the Knights called to him. Returne coward returns, thou shalt not escape without tryall of thy manhood, se we must make yoose whether there be any in thee.

Palmerin not knowing where to set his Hanke, and being loth to loose her, was not desirous to fough; but seeing that with honour he could not refuse it, answered. It is small cour-

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

courteske Sir knight to challenge the man that hath no will to your spoyle; but if there be no remedy, your will be fulfilled, albeit I hope you wil first repent. I see thou canst prate wel, quoth the Knight, and belike thou wert wisse if thou couldest so escape: but seeing thou art so long before thou att ready, Ile bring thee to such a place where hanke shall not hinder thee, and in one yeare thou shalt spare the wearing of Mantles and Spurres in such a comfortable place, as the Hanke noz day light shall offend thine eyas.

I hope I have learned, said Palmerin, to kepe my selfe from such places; but I would faine know the gentle Chamber Page, that is so skilfull waitynge with his pantosles, as he can teach knyghtes errant how to weare them. The knyght being angry, called forth the rest of his compaynes, among whom he clapped Hermes psoner, his Helmet lyng by him, and his armes pinnioned: therfore to reuenge his wrong, he called his Name, saying; I pray thet my friende looke to my Hanke a whyle, for I am come to defend thy Dukes honour, and calling to the Dukes Knyght, saying. Come Sir let vs dispatch quickly, for I have earnest busynesse in another place: the Knyght laughing at him, answered. Wher be now Captainne? thynke you to passe hence so easly? weare are sufficient to stay your hally Journey, euen moze must talke with you, the wrost of them able to abate your pride, for your horse lackes a stable, and we will prouide him one. So couching their Lances, they met togidher with such force, as the Dukes Knyght was thoworne from his horse, his boord being bryken with the weight of his fall: Palmerin arresting the Knyghts horse for his owne, gane him to Hermes Squire in keeping, saying. Because the Knyght is not willing to get on Horsback againe, hold this for me, and he may lye at ease to see the fortune of his fellowes. Then came another Knyght from the Tent, whom Palmerin welcomed in so friendly manner, as he lay not able to kynge hand nor foot; with this one Lance he vnhor-

led

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

9

sed soure more, and bryake it so valiantly on the seauenfy Knyght, as whyle he lived he meant to leake no moze. Wit a fresh Lance he dismouned all the rest, none of them being willing to deale with him any further: wherefore Palmerin came to Hermes, saying. What doo you Sir Knyght? Wher take you not the best horse among all the dozen? That shall I Sir, seeing you command me, albeit not long since you served me as these knyghtes are yet God be thanked that by your meanes I am deliuored from impisement, wherein these knyghtes intended to kepe me, because I unhorsed some of them, and at the fist encounter my horse was killed, which was the cause of my losse and taking.

The knyghts (quoth Palmerin) haue now leasure to rest them, for they were troubled before with watching for passengers: I doubt not now but we may quietly passe the bridge, for I see none of them offer to hinder vs. Hermes mounting on horsback, commanded his Squire to take a fresh one for him likewise, and so they rode on together rejoyning at this good fortune. They had not ridden the space of a mile, but Hermes demanded Palmerins name, which when he knew, in great rejoyning he sayd: Ah worthy Knyght, now is my travell ended in search of you: trax me I would resuse the best city in England, in respect of the great friendshyp I haue sond at your hands, as also for the comfyt your presence will bring to our dread Lord, and your noble compaynes, who long tyme haue expected your desired returne. As they rode on in these speches, they came to a say fountain, wher Palmerin wold alight to refresh himselfe, and to binde vp such small wounds, as he had taken in scouling against the knyghts of Gaule.

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

### CHAP. LXI.

How Frysol was delivered out of Palmerins hand, by the means of Colmelio his Squire.



He same day that Palmerin souffred with the Knights of Gaule, the Duke him selfe was gone en hunting, by meanes whereof, he lost the sight of the paxtine, which afterward he repented, because he had with him y most part of his knights, so that no one was left in the Castle but Frysol, that might be counted of any value, who beholding so many Knights foyled by one, marbelled not a little what he might be, and after long consideration of his haughty explayns, he said to himselfe, I cannot thinke this Knight to be the man against whom I combated sometime in France, yet know I no man living but he, that could performe such rare chivalry.

Now, because Palmerin changed his Armour, he verily imagined that it was not he, yet was he desirous to know, but doubtfull to follow him by reason of his former experiance: againg, if you shold suffer him to passe without somes tryall, he judged it wold retorne to his great dishonour, wherefore he resolved to aduenture his fortune.

And in this determination he came to the Dukes sister, who loved him intirely, as you heard before: shewing beginning with him in this manner. I cannot sufficently marbell Sir Frysol, how you have suffered in your switnes view, my Brothers Knights to be so shamefully confouned by one passenger: I desire you swete friend, if ever you brake Lance so a Ladys love, that soz my sake you will deal with that prond Knight, and make him know that

### Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

that you can abate his courage, were his head framed of the hardest hammered brasie. If you fulfill my request, you shall do an acceptable ded to my Brother, and to me such service, as I shall hereafter require to your owne content. Madame (quoth Frysol) I did intend to fight with him, but seeing it pleaseth you so graciously to command me, no danger can withhold me, because the world can witnesse, what great abatle so honourable a Ladys labour is, to the Knight, that liveth to renowne her name. So departing from his Lady he presently armed himselfe, and mountynge on a lusty Coursier, followed the way that Palmerin was gone: the twelve Knights met a little glad thereof, well hoping that he would revenge their dishonour. Frysol continued his travell so long, till at length he came to the fountaine where Palmerin refreshed himselfe, who had no swoner espied him, but surprised with great joy, said to Hermes; I am sure this Knight comes hither to slake me, wheresoze I intreat you by the reverend lobe you bear to your best Beloved, not any way to hinder that fight betweenus, till the end deliver victory to one side or other: for he thinking to rebenge the reproach of his fellow, hath followed me to porsoone what they were not able. Then Palmerin suddenly clasping on his Helmet, mounted on horseback, and taking advantage of the platne Field, because it was most convenient for the Combat, which Frysol perceiving scounfully said; I think Sir Knight, you are some kinds of Prophete, because you devine so well the cause of my comming: unhappy was it for you to prevaile in such sort against the Duke of Gaules Knights, which you must now pay for with too late repentence. If I did them any harme, said Palmerin, it was chyr owne seeking, and by your arrogant speeches it may be presumed, you are one of the same company: but the lobe of the Dukes sister, cannot shield you from your deserved recompence. At these wordes, Frysol well perceyved that this was the Knight he so much doubted: nevertheless

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

leste his courage was so good, as remembryng the promise he made to his Lady, gave spurs to his Hyspe, and they encountring with such brave chivalry, as the shibers of their Lances flew vp into the ayre, and then they assaulted each other so roughly with their swerdys, as well they myght be exercyed right valiant Champions. No mercy was intended on either syde, for Frysol was determined to dye or conquer, and Palmerin held the same resolution, so that the ground was coloured with their blood, their Armes and sheldys battered in pieces, and no hope left on either syde of life. But as always sonys mischance or other followes a noble minde, so fell it out with Frysol, for in their close buckling together, Palmerin had got sure hold on his sheld, whiche Frysol striving sozable to recover, the buckles brake in sunder, and with the sudden brach thereof he fell downe backward, when Palmerin leaping from his horse, sayd.

And let me never hereafter be called Palmerin, if now I doo not revenge my selfe sufficiently. Whiche words when Frysolys Squire heard, he came hastily and fell at his syde, saying. Noble knyght, I beseech you for the honour you beate to Armes, to pause a whille, and tell me if you be Palmerin D'Oliva, for if you be, I am your brother, who haue suffered great paine and trubell to finde you out. Palmerin presently knew Colmelio, the sonne of Gerrard his foster father, whose sight was so joyfull to him, as calling away his swerd, he ran and embracco him about the neck, saying: My deare friend Colmelio, the most welcome man in the world to me. How happy may I accouint my selfe (quoth Colmelio) to finde you when all hope was past? having travellled so many Countryes, and all in vaine: If then you loke me as you make protestation, let me intreate one favour at your hand, that you forget your anger towards my Master Frysol, and gluce over your figh, for long time haue I serued him as my Lord, and well hath he deserued much better service then mine. Colmelio, sayd Palmerin

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

merin, the thing thou demandest is maruellous great, newnes theleſſe ſuch is my comfort having met with thee, as I grant thy request, and happily hath he now escaped with life, conſidering what occations haue past vs heretofore. So taking Colmelio by the hand, he ſayd to Frysol, Sir knyght, at your Squires iure, I ſuffer you quickeley to depart, and meet me againe at any time you think good; but you ſhall go look another Squire, ſayd Colmelio at this time hal go with me. Fryſol being wounded in many places, and very faint with leſſe of his blood, might eaſily be induc'd to this agreement of peace: But commynge to Colmelio, he ſayd: Will thou forſake thy Maſter, and go with his enemy: Trust me Sir (quoth Colmelio) you muſt needs pardon me, if in this matter I chance to offend you: for to ſeek him I forſtook my fathers house, and haue continued a veray laborsome ſearch. If thou wilt needs goe (ſaid Fryſol) and that my intreaties may not diſſwade thee, I pray for the ſuccesse of thy deſtre, and the Advancement to honur, and while I liue I wil make account of theſe as my friend and brother.

So returning as he came, he beganne in this manner to exclare against Fortune. Oh cruell and inconstant Lady: ſufficed it not the to diſhonour me before mine enemy, but thou muſt now robb me of my Squire I loved ſo dixerely: but ſo haſt thou dealt with them of high & Calling, for Inſtit Kings and Potentates haſt thou deceiued and (beside their cheſteſt enemyes) diſhonoured: ſuch bath borne the treachery now to me at this instant, that I may fulſy complain of the while I liue. As he continued theſe complaints, he met diuers armed Knights that came to alleſt him, and the Duke hiſelfe in company among them: who remanaged of Fryſol, whether his enemy were thine, or ſent away vanquished: Vanquished (ſaid Fryſol) thinke you ſo good a Knight may be ſo eaſily vanquished? When he diſcourſed his whole ſuccesse: which the Duke hearing, exclaymed, on his vanquishing, that he was not in preſence when Palmerin passed;

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

passed; wherefore he wold needs follow him, but only that Frysol intreated him to the contrary, because the Night approached so late, as it was impossible for him to overtake Palmerin. The Duke in a marvellous rage, for that his enterprise fell out no better, returned with Frysol, and an hour within night they came to his Castle, where he called for his best Chyurgtans, charging them to givz diligent attendance on Frysol. When the Dukes Sister heard the misfortune of her Friend, she camie hastily to him in his Chamber, and after many sweet kisses, said: I beseech you my Lord say get my folly, for I was the cause of your mischance.

Madame (said Frysol) where no offence is committed, what needs any remission? If my fortune have ben ill, it is not for me to complayne on you, for your Request tended to myne owne honoure: but I must be content with my hap, though it hath sorted to so bad effect, and this doth yet comfort me, that I received my soyle by the onely Knight in the World. And if the Heavens please to lengthen my dayes, I shall be dextrous to do him service, for there is no man living to whom I could better assayle it. Now need I not mislike, (having tryed him so often) if he be worthy the loue of divine Polynardus, for he (beyond all others) doth well deserve it.

Why how now? (quoth the Lady) are you so unwise, to honour him so much, that hath so injured you? and which is most childish, to desire his service? Goe then and seek him whom thou so louest, for by mine honour, I more despise thy now then any man in the World, thou making such reputation of him, whom thou oughtest to pursue with mortal hatred. Frysol smiling therat, said: Madame I will naedes say so, seeing no ill wids can amend mischance: So without any answer, she flung forth of his Chamber. The next day, the Duke call'd all his Knights, commanding them to re-scarne the passage no lower at the Bridge, intending to goo to the Court, so swere as Frysol had recovered his health.

CHAP. LX.

## Emperour of Constançinopla. PART. I.

### CHAP. LX.

How Palmerin, Hermes, and Colmelio, returned to London, and the good Entertainement the King of England made them.



After that Frysol was returned from the Combat, Palmerin after many and sum-  
dry embracings of Colmelio, went  
with him to the fountain, where he lese  
Hermes, all thys together, making no  
small joy, Colmelio for his happy An-  
ding of Palmerin, and he for the leue of  
his supposed Brother, and Hermes, say  
the comfort he shold bring the King his Master, being able  
now to acquare his Highnesse with Palmerins name, which  
he was louth that any in the English Court shold know,  
wherefore he said: Now can you not (my Lord) here-  
after hide your name, though you have borne daunce of it all  
this while. It is true Sir (quoth Palmerin) alweite I little  
thought to be discovered so sone: but seeing it is come to  
passe, my hope is in the Highest, who will defend me in all  
mine attempts. Now tell me Colmelio, what newes in  
Greece? Truly my Lord (quoth he) the discourse will be  
long and tedious: therefore if you please to mount on Mysse-  
backe, it will serue well to shorthen the thought of our Jour-  
ney. So as they rode towards London, he beganne to  
discourse, in how many places he had made search and sought  
him in Greece, and how at length he heard of him at Ma-  
cedon, by report of his conquest of the Serpent, at the mon-  
taine Artiferia, which was the meane that had restored the  
King of Macedon to his former health. And afterwards,  
how

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

how he left Greece travelling into Almaine, and from thence into England, at what time the Emperors power was discomfited: and hearing great fame of Frysol his late master, he spent some time in his service, not doubting but by his meanes to find the man; so looked for. Palmerin was somewhat mowbed, hearing Colmelo so commend Frysol, wherefore he demanded of him, if he knew any thing of that Knights lineage. No my Lord (quoth he) but I can assure you, that he is one of the most gentlest Knights in the world, and he concealeth his parentage very secretly, which makes me judge he is descended of royall birth. After Colmelo had ended his discourse, he repeated to him some part of his fortunes, in the end persuading him that he would remunerate his paines in seeking him, and in time manifest the love he bare him. By this time ther were come to the City of London, Hermes riding before to the Pallace, where he aduertised the King, how Palmerin was returned to the City, whiche newes so highly contented the King, as oftentimes he embrased Hermes, for bringing the man he long desired to see: but Trineus and Ptolome exeeded him in joy, and presently both mounted on Horses back, to go mate with their friend, when so many Embrazings, Courtises, and kinde Gratulations had passed betwene them, as is usuall at the meeting of long absent Lovers: Ah my good Lord and Friend (quoth Trineus) how long hath hard fortune kept you from me: and why did you depart, not bouchasing a Farewell? What earnest occasion might cause such an unkinde departure? Trust me, I perswade my selfe in respect of the long continuance of our Amity, that death could not procure such a severe Enterpise. My deere Lord (quoth Palmerin) it semeth yo have some cause to complaine of me: but when you understand how matters have happened, you will not condemne me a together. For at the time of my departure, I thought verily to returne the next day following: but such importunate assayes continually fell out, as that I

## Emperour of Constantiopol. PART. II.

could not returne until this very instant. Ptolome says as much as Trineus did, notwithstanding, this fortunate riddering forbad all further accusations, and they became as good friends as they ever were. So rode they to the pallace, where the King attending their coming, perceaved at length they were enred the Wall, when Palmerin falling on his knee, kissed his highnesse hand, who very honourably embracing him, said; Wheres hath my noble friend been so long? What crooked fortune hath caused your so long absence: you departed from us in black Armour. I pray you tell us where did you conquer those sumptuous Armes: by the love you bears to chivalry and to me: satisfie me in my demand. Palmerin seeing the King conserued him so straightly, reported the truth of all his adventures, how he had that Armour of the Lady whose Daughter he delivered, and left his owne there broken in pieces.

The King embracing him againe, said: I cannot be perswaded, but all especiall aduentures, high good fortunes, and chiefehonours in the world, are onely reserved for you, and among all the rest, most maruellous is this of the Castle in the enchanted Lake, which many Knights having hereforsoe attempted, but returned with the losse of their horses, Armour, and with great dishonour. Whiles Welcome are you for these happy tydings, as also for your gentle courtesie to Frysol, who is a Knight of most honorable reputation. But in regard of your wearysome travells, it is very requisite that you now should goe to rest your selfe: therfore let some body help to disarmee you, and betake your selfe (on Gods Name) to your Chamber, Palmerin reputed the kings Counsell most expedient, and therfore did accordingly as he commanded him: So having reposid himselfe a while, he came to see how the Durene and her Daughter fared, who would not suffer him to depart thence, before he had like his acquaintance her with all his fortunes: especially the whole circumstance of all his Travels at the Castle of the Lake.

But

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

But night being come, and every one betaking themselves to rest, Palmerin demanded of the Prince how he followed his distresses, and what he had concluded as concerning his Lovee. Ah deare Friend, sayd Trineus, why ask you me that question? do you not think that having so lost you, I likewise was disappointed of any mean to help me? know then, that at this instant I am in the midst of all misfortunes, for so badly hath it hapned, that I am now further from Agriola then ever I was, and I shall tell you how.

Not many dayes since, as I was familiarly dwelling with my Lady, the Duke of Gauls daughter chanced to hearre such amorous speches as passed betweene the Princeesse and me: whereby she gathered, that Agriola made some estimation of us, whereupon she laboured to save my Distress in short time mislike what I had so long travelled to perswade her with, as thus.

What ill beseemed a Princeesse of her account, of so gracious discent, and daughter to such a mighty King, to consours with Strangers, or vouchsafe a listning to any thing they sayd: for they were none such as shew repudged them, but after they had brought a Ladys honour into danger, they then were satisfied, as they vised it for a custome among their compaynons. And so well could she, for the Princeesse humeur, and these luberning and spightfull detractions, which seemed unto her as sweet and friendly persuasions, that in stead of the little love I lately canquered, I find nothing but strokens and detractions, that the will scant afford me a looke. Whiche disconterst bath well neare driven me to despaire, in regard of her slender opinion of me, as being so hindered onely through your absence. Often I determined with Ptolome, to leauue the Court and follow you in trauell; but the King by no meanes would permit me, sending many of his owne Knights, because I shoulde not go: yet was I resolute, that had not you come, no displeasure whatesoeuer shoulde have held me here; but

to

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART, I.

To find you I intended, or lose my life. This falleth out very hard (quoth Palmerin) for by those means we shall stay here God knoweth how long: beside, Hermes knoweth my name, which makes me doubt least we shall be revealed: the Emperour likewise may be offended at our long tarriance. In regard of all this, good Prince, I thinke it best, that we send your Squire and Urbanillo my Dwarfe, to adverteise his Majestie of our affaires, and how by reason of the tempeste, we were cast quite out of course so farre, as we could not by any meanes attayn his Army, not doubting but to see his highnesse in very short time.

In the meane while, we may practise means to win the Princeesse favour againe, and so in good time depart hence, with the honourable prize that we came for. Trineus was newely revived with these speches, wherevpon he desired, that somtimes in the moring he wold dispatch their Servantes towards Allmaigne. Whiche Palmerin entreated not to do. In respect of a dreame he had the night before, for he imagined that he saw his Lady Polynarda in marvellous beaute, and that shew said to him. Alas my Lord, what shall become of me? for I am narrowly sought to be separated from you. This fearefull vision so discouraged him, as he sent thence his Dwarfe, to shew her what trouble he had with his dream, and how constant he remained in his loue to her.

CHAP. LXI.

Chap. LXI.

How Palmerin promised the Princesse Agriola, to convey her out of England, with his friends, which he performed to the speciall content of the Prince Trineus.



Arly on the next morning, Palmerin arose, and wrote a letter to his Lady Polinarde wherein he secretly put a ring, which he gave hime when he departed from her, straitly commanding Urbanillo that he shold diligently attend on the Princesse till he came, whiche shold be with all the speed he could possible.

Prolome likewise wrote to his Lady Brionella, and these Letters dispatched, the messengers imediately set forward on their journey. From this time Colinelio was Palmerins Squire, which pleased him very well, because he knew that Palmerin was nobly borne, so that by his meanes in time he shold rise to preferment.

This day the King woulde ride abroad a Hunting, whiche gave Palmerin occasion to see the Gaulcon flye, being reputed by the King and all his traine, to be the best that ever fleshe saw. In this time of recreation, Hermes reported to the King, that the Knight so long absent was named Palmerin, and the same Knight that wonne so much honour in France: whiche so well contented the King, as he moxe and moxe desired his company: summoning all his Barons and Lords to his Court, where he made such feasts, triumphs, and other spoyle, for the honour of the noble Palmerin and his compe-

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

companions as the like had not bin of long time before.

At night, when the Muskers, Summersies and Spoxisores were in presence, that Palmerin espied convenient time to talk with the Princesse, he took her aside to a Window, and thus began. Madame, before I begin what I haue to acquaint you withall, I must give you this ring, as I was commanded by the Lady of the Castle in the Lake: the singular vertues therof are such, as I intreat you to keepe it constantly on your finger: whiche Agriola receyving, with a curleous reverence, faithfully promised to performe his request: then Palmerin, with earnest affection on his Friends behalfe, thus continued his discourse. I cannot but marvel, faire Princesse, you being a Lady of so speciall quality, renowned among the most vertuous creatures in the world, for your rare integrity and profound judgement, that you will be governed by the unadvised persuasions of other: whiche I would not believe, had not the Prince Trineus certaintly assured me, how since my departure, in stead of favourable countenance, and the intenttane besyning so great a Lord, he can haue nothing but frownes, displeasuris, and coy regard, whiche to assaie so him to endure, as a thousand deathes one after another.

Assure your selfe so farre beguiled, as your councellers dissuade you from your chieffest good, desirous to withhold you from the height of honor, wherof you cannot sayle being matched in Marriage with the most vertuous and worthy Prince Trineus. Make you no small account, that he being one of the most Noble Knights on the earth, hath left his Parents, his Friends, and Country, hath pass so many solitarie, strange, and uncouth Regions, hath aduentured the injury of the seas, beaten wi hys many bitter blisse, and rasing billettes, evry minute in danger of shipwrack, and all for your Lobe? Thinke you that he being honne to the Emperour of Allmaigne, attending ebery day the rule and government of hys Empire, that he came hither to you in hope of your rich doony? No truce me, Madame, and I thinke

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

your own conscience both to resolve you, that neerer home he could have found other, endued with larger possessions then this Realme affords you. But hearing the fame of your manifold vertues, rare life, choyse beauty, and all other good gifts, he was willing without any regard of his owne estate, to thrust himselfe in danger, yea, to forget himselfe soz your love, which hitherto he hath with religous service intreated, and except you entertaine him with more gracious labour, he is in danger of life. Which if it shoulde happen by your occation, so zever you shall be noted of monstrous ingratitude, and Chyckendome shoulde sustaine a losse unrecoverable. Whiche farre such a thought ought to be from you, I leave to your owne construction.

If hitherto you haue knowne me, a Knight ready to support the causes of Ladys far beneath your hight, think you I haue not greater reason to honour you & ye a net to wrothe you with any request, but what may every way advance your credit. And though my Lord Trincus were not of the blood Imperiall, yet might his gentle heart, unsworne late, and surpassing humanity, cause you to make choyce of him, above all other whateuer they be. But saying it so fassant, that you will not regard good counsell, following rather the persuasian of meane capacities, whose judgements may not reach to so high occasions, continue in your obstinacy, and mark the end of such bumptious censures.

I see that our company is ryghtsome to you, therfore (sooner then you imagine) we will remoue that occasion. I know well enough, that you intend to march with the Duke of Gaule, who is but your fathers Subject: so refusing the daigne of an Empyre, you shall tarry in England and be a Marchesse. Think you, that if my Lord matched not with you, the greatest Princesse in Europe, would not triumph in his Lobe? Yes certainly Madamme, when you may at lexure fit downe and account your losse, which you sustained by flatterers and parasites. Think what will be the danger after our deparc-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

departure, the Emperour his Father, not minding to pescate the losse of his late Army, will send such a puissant Strenght into England, as the King your father, nor the Duke your husband that must be, will scant excuse the whole rulne of this country. The meane to prevent this mishap, and assure your continuall tranquillity, is in entertaining the counsell I haue given you: where otherwise your selfe conceyt makes way to manifold misfortunes & dangers. Thus concluding his speches, in great heabinesse he turned from her, wherat the Princesse now inwardly grieved, for the King which he had given her was of such vertue, that after she had put it on her finger, she was wonderfully affected toward Trincus, as she could not thinke on any other: wherefore in this sudden change, and tremblung with the doubtfull coniect of her owne Spirit, she called Palmerin to her, thus answering. Alas my Lord, and only comfort in these heavy passions, what saue hath these hard and rigorous speches brought me into? It is very true that following the counsell of young Ladys like my selfe, haue bene perswaded to cast off the Princes Leane, accounting him but a simple Knight errant: but now being assured of his nobility, loyalty, and great gentlenesse, and that he would not request (as I hope) any thing contrary to vertue and honour, I beleve what you haue said, and submit my selfe to your discretion, as willing to obey any thing you shall command me. Yet this I will request that aboue all things mine honor may be defended, soz rather would I suffer mine owne losse so zever, then this famous Realme of my Father shoulde be any way endangered.

Believe me Lady (quoth Palmerin) If thus you continuall, you may well bantare to gaine this genera benefit, so henceforth there will none be so hardy, as to molest your Father with warre, having matched his Daughter with the great Emperours Sonne of Almaine. To confirme this purpos, you shall give me this swete hand which I kisse, as

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

In a hand of the soveraigne Lady and Empresse of high Alaigne, that you w.ll net shynk her rester from this honeste determination; but for your alone regard, you must conceale this contrare from your most trusty friends, and dispose in such sort of your selfe: for I hope to compasse the meanes and opportunity, that you shall leav<sup>e</sup> England, and go to the noble regions of your most worthy Lord and Husband.

What I have promised (sayd Agriola) I will perfoyme, and with whatsp<sup>e</sup> you shall think convenient: albeit I repose such trust in you, that having bin so fortunate hitherto in your Enterpryses, you will be most carefull in accomplishing these dangerous intentions.

Thus before they departed, the marriage of Trineus and Agriola was concluded, and because they would not as then be suspe<sup>c</sup>t, they kept into the Dance, next the young Prince, shewing very amiable and pleasant gestures: which Trineus (In his often turning) diligently noted: imagining that Palmerin had not so long conferred with his Lady, but some assured resolution was determined, yet he resembled his inward joyes so cunningly as he could. Each eye was fixed on these two brave Knights, the Ladys and Gentlewomen perswasing themselves, that they never beheld moze noble personages: deserving like estimation for their speciall Chivalry, as also for their Bounty and Courtly Cibillity,

Thus passed the Feast in all kinde of pleasures, and these two Ianights withdrawing themselves into their Chamber, Palmerin discoursed to Trineus his talke with Agriola, and how he had with such cunning pursued the matter, that in the end he had obtained what he demanded, reporting the sequell of the gentle concil<sup>e</sup>tion he made with the Prince.

Whose sofullnesse drove the Prince into such a quandary, as he could not expresse his secret content, wherefore Palmerin awaking him out of his musing, sayd: As I am a true knight, I never thought that a man of your state could be of so slender courage. What countenance would you

In

## Emperour of Constanstople. PART. I.

In a matter of se<sup>r</sup>row, when such deuyt<sup>e</sup> tyngs make you so effeminate? Who of god there man: Agriola is your spouse, and none bat Trineus must be her only Lord and Husband. I must confesse my Lord, (sayd Trineus) that my behaviour, but little becomes my calling: but that cause therof is, that I know no desir in my selfe that may be esteemed les<sup>e</sup> then the least labour of my Lady. Beside, these newes brought me such speciall contentment, as I am no longer mine own, but in her onely I live, and she holds the balaunce of my danger & felicity, in that I was borne to be her Servant. But now I desire you my Lord, seeing the occasion offereth it selfe, we hinder it not by any negligence: for if now we loose the labour of the time, we never (I feare) shall recover the like, therfore let us so soone as we can, provide all things ready for our departure. Mentre that dwelle, quoth Palmerin, be you as ready as I shall make provision. The next day he went to the Waller of a Ship, to know when time would serue for thilk secret departure, who answered him, that the time was then very convenient, the tide seruing prosperously, and the sea calme and navigable, and he would furnish him with all necessaries for his passage. Quoth Palmerin, see that your men and all things be in readinesse, that we may lauch away vpon halfe an hours warning. So departed the Waller about his busynesse, and Palmerin to the Prince Trineus, whom he informed with these glad tyngs, now nothing remaining but to know the Princesse pleasure, for being lured into his ready to depart as the most forward. But (as Palmerin) how shall we safely get you forth of the Cittie? said he, sayd the Princesse, to night shalde my selfe, and for my greater quiet, callde my Ladys to another Chamber, and so secretly will I escame disguised to the backe gate of the Palace, whiche is not farre from my fortayn, whereunto I may passe withoute of aby, and from thence god will you safely to the Haven. This practise was faithfully con-

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Orwa,

clad betweene them and Agriola withdrew her selfe closely to her Chamber, where at night she began her counterfeitt Achnesse, commanding her Ladys to leave her alone, because she would see if she could scape a little. Her Ladys little thinking of her secret deceit, went to their owne lodgings very penible and secretesfull, which Agriola perceiving, covered her selfe with her night mantle, and came to the place where the Knights layed her comming, Palmerin taking her under his arme, conveyed her in that manner to the Princes Chamber, where they altogether layd downe the order for their embarking, Trineus exolling his happy sorte, seeing his Lady so ready to accomplish his desire. They arming themselves, and taking with them the Princes costly Jewels, whereof she had plentisly stord her selfe, they came to the Haven, where they found the shipp and mariners ready, and getting all aboord, the winde serving for their aventure, they set sayle, and before day they got farre enough from London.

## Chap. LXII.

How the King of England and the Queene were advertised, how their daughter Agriola was conveyed away, and of their sorrow for her departure.



¶ The Duke of Gaules Daughter, who continually was bedellew to the Princesse, absenting her selfe very long from her, fearing to disquiet her Lady, being sick as she supposed; but comming at length to see how she fared, finding the Webbe empty, and Agriola gone, she presently made a great outcry, wherat the other Ladys came, and altogether amazed

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

amazed at this sudden aduenture, went to the Quenes Chamber, where they reported how the Princesse was gone, but how, or when, they knew not. The Quenes at these tydings suddenly arose, and comming to her daughters Chamber found it too true, which made her fall into such pitifull acclamations, farre surpassing those of Maguelona, when she lost her friend Peter of Province in the wood.

In these lamentings she returned to the King, whose heauiness exceeded judgement, for the losse of his daughter, and then came divers Lords and Gentleman, who declared that the Strange Knights were likewise departed. Which raised such a rumour through all the Cite, that they had stolen away the Princesse. The King understanding the generall sorow for his daughters absence, said. In sooth my friends, if these Knights haue done such service for me, they haue suffisiently recompenced themselves, in doing me the greatest dishonour they could deuise; yet will I not condemn them so much as my Daughter, for that I am perswaded shes procured this mischance. But now I well perceiue what credit a man may repose in his enemy: for Palmerin euermoze serued the Emperour of Alcinaigne, then hardly could hee be true to mee. Yet let it in batine soyme to blame him, or his compaines, if they take the advantage of their owne intents. But now there is no remedy, my daughter is in the company of most chosen Knights: If she haue done well, or ill, hereafter her deserts will answer her misdemeanour. Thus the King would not suffer any pursue after them, though the Quene and her Ladys earnestly intreated him: he answering that no such mone shold be made, for a Child so ungratefull and disobedient, but having committed an action so vile and enormie, she shold no more account of her as her childe. And well may we (quoth he) so release her, in that she wold leaue her Parents, and depart with Strangers: happy might

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

might we haue accompted our selues, if we had lost her in her Islands. The Queene seeing her Lord so impatiens, appeased his displeasure so well as she could, because the world not prouide him so much. Whithin few dares after the Duke of Gaule attiued at the Court, who most of all grieved at these vndappy tydings, wherefore he perswaded the King to proclaine open warre against the Emperour of Allemaigne, assuring him, that the Knight which most commonly accompanied Palmerin, was Trineus the Emperours sonne. When the King heard the Dukes speeches, so getting his anger, he resorted, esteeming himselfe happy, and his Daughter wile, in matching her selfe with such a Husband: and if she had made her chioise among all the Princes of the world, she could not haue so let one comparable in honour. It biidle answere the Duke, that for a Daughter so lost, he would not leake the death of his louers and Daughters: but being gree of Fortunes changes, he could not helpe hand it, and thus the King wile, and plentifully indured his grieves.

### Chap. LXXXI.

How Bragilus and the Prince Trineus Esquire, arrived at the Emperours Court, and what great joy their coming procured.



Mr. Biscle In this place taketh occasiōn to speake, how the King of France daily expected newes from Palmerin, as concerning his intent of Marriage, betwixt his Daughter and the Prince Trineus: but seeing he heard no tydings at all, he determined to send his Ambassadours to the Emperour, electing so chiefe in this embassage

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

embassage the Count of Armignac, to whom he gave full power and authority to conclude the Marriage betwixt Trineus and his Daughter Lucimania, as also of the Princeesse Polinarda with his Sonne and heire. The King dispatching all things soz his Embassage, sent many Barons and Knights of name to accompany the Count, to countenance the pratter with moze repartie and magniscence, and in this maner they came to Gaule, where the Emperour being adverstised of their arrivall, made no great account therof, such was his grieve soz his Sonnes absence and Palmerins, of whom he could not heare any tydings, as also soz the soleys his Arme sustained in England. But while the messenger from the Ambassadours of France stayed with the Emperour, Vibanillo and the Princes Squire entered the Hall, whose presence highly contented the Emperour, as embracing them very lovingly, he demanded soz Palmerin and his Sonne Trineus, when they delivering their Letters, and the Emperour perswaded thereby of their speedy returne, was greatly contented, saying to the Ambassadours messenger. My friend, seeing I haue heard such leng hoked soz tydings of my Sonne, you may returne to the Count your Master, desiring him to come when he thinks conuenient, and he shall be heartily welcome to me: with this answer the messenger departed. Then the Emperour taking Vibanillo by the hand, saith: Tell me now I pray thee, how fares thy Master? Where is he? Is my Son with him? My gracious Lord quoth the Emperour, where your noble Sonne abideth, there is my Master, both of them in good disposition, and highly honoure. And therof I can assure your Majestie, that you haue a Son, whos good reason ought to be numbered among the best Knights living, for such honourable experiance hath hee made of his worthinesse, that perpetuall memorie will record his deeds of Chivalrie: what else remaineth you shall know at their examing, which will be so swome as they can possibly. I ever persw-

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

bro my selfe, said the Emperour, that in the company of so good a knight as Palmerin, my sonne could not but purchase credit and honour: Wherefore seeing they haue such prosperitie of health, I care the lesse for their stay, but welcome are they whensoeuer they come.

By this time Polinarda heard of the Dwarfe's arrivall, which greatly pleasing her, she laid to Brionella; I pray thee sweet friend goe speedily and seeke the Dwarfe, that we may know what is become of our Lordes and my brother Trincus. Brionella, who longed to heare of her loue Sir Peolome, whom well she knew to be one of the company, with all speed accomplished the Princesse commandement, and found the ioyfull messenger with the Emperour, who take great delight in the Dwarfe's reports: but his Maister perceiving with what chearefull countenance she came to bring Vrbanillo to her Lady the Princesse, bad him goe with her, hoping by his meanes his Daughters extreme sadness would be comforted. Brionella being southe of the Emperours presence, embrased hym many times to know his tydings, when the Dwarfe not ignorant of the Ladys passions, delivred Peolomes letter to cheere her: but when the Princesse sawe Vrbanillo comming, with the teares in her eyes she ranne apace to meet him, and casting her armes about his necke, embrased hym very often, saying: Tell me Vrbanillo, tell me, howe fares my Brother and thy Master Palmerin? Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, so well as your alone heart can wish, and will e're long be heere with you. Then delivred he the Letter from Trincus, which certified her of his shooft returne, and that he wold bring with him the thing he most esteemed. But the way knowing shes expected other matters, and that her Brothers meidicine was not sufficient for her cure, he gaue her his masters letter, when she hastily breaking open the seale, found the ring whiche her louall friend had sent her, and after she had welcommied it with many devout kisses, she put it on her finger

## Emperour of Consta[n]tio[n]ople PART I.

finger, with these words. I charge thee keepe this token safely, in witness of the Knights gentlemeane that sent it, whom my heart bath made speciall choyce of above all other. Then reading the Letter, and discreetly considering (not without great abuse of teares) the sweet words, humble supplicat[i]ons, entres excuses, and extreme passions, that her friend continually suffered for her loue, delivred many bliter shetes, she said: Oh my true and louall friend, I belieue well, and take in good part your cause of absence, being assured, that if possibly you could returne sooner, nothing shoulde stay you from the place, where the onely remedy of your dolorous grieves abideth. But seeing for my loue you may not forlake my Brother, I pray you for your continual safety, and speedy returne to your longing desires, that mine eyes ewerwatched with sodiens expectation, and my heart neare tryed with bothele wistings, may by your presence be shewly comforsted. Afterward Vrbanillo by his reporte to her the noble actions of his Lord and Master, the Duke of Trincus to the Princesse Agriola, describing her beauty and rare perfections, wherupon Polinarda thus answered:

Wellcme me Vrbanillo, if the Princesse be so faire as thou sayest she is, her great vertues and armes louable likewise comparable, envy and false report shal not impeach her, take reckoned amongst the most happy Ladys of the world, and her desires will be as honorably effected, as with vertuous thoughts she first began them. The like (I doubt not) will happen to thy Master, for fortune hath euermore so speciall favoured him, as now it were against reason he shoulde alter her countenance. He departed the Dwarfe from the Princesse, returning to the Emperour, who by no meanes could get any other tyding of his son then what you haue heard, which made him doubt the dwarfe layled with him. The next day the Emperour sent his chiefeſt Lordes and Masters, to conduct the French Ambassadors to Court, which was

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

was sumptuously hanged with Tapistry, especially the great Hall, which was adorned with costly cloth of gold and rich Purple, as it had borne the Pallace of Salomon. The Ambassadeurs entered richly with marvellous Royalty, and having delivered the lumine of their Ambassage, the Emperour answered, that he would confesse thereon with his Councell in the any whiles they might retorne to their losings. After they were departed the Hall, the Emperour demanded of the Princes, Clerkes, and the rest of his Nobilitie, if these marriages of his Daunc and daughter, with the heire and Princesse of France, might not be granted, as well for the vility and honor of the Caprice, as for the general behifit of Christendome, commanding them to speake their Judgements without feare. The Lords altogether answered, that the marriage was so good and the alliance so honourable, as it was no waye to be disliked. I will then (quoth he) talke with the Empresse, that she may understand her Daughters opinion, and then my Lordes of France shall be answered. So leaving them he went unto the Empresse Chamber, to whom he reported his agreement with his Councell, which pleased her likewise maruellous well: but when she had a little conuered on the matter, she answered, that but little could be sayd before Trineus returned home againe. You reason well, quoth the Emprouer, but in meane time I pray you sond your Daughters judgement, that we may retorne our brother of France sone certaine answer. Which he promised to doe, and so departing from her Lord, he went to her daughters chamber, where having commanded her Ladys sone, he thus began. Harte daughter, it is the Emperours pleasure and mine, that you marrie with the eldest Daunc and heire of France, and your Brother Trineus with his Sister, so he is one of the most renowned Kings in Europe, and his Son recckoned among the best Knights of the world: for which yead shalde you may thank the heauens, that so great a Prince offers his

Henne

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Honne to be your Husband. Adisse your selfe of your answere, for by your opinion must the Ambassadeurs be dispatched hence, who came to the Court for nothing else but to conclude these honorable marriages. Polinarda hearing the words of her mother, was surprised with such sudden heauiness, as she could not tell what to answer: but fearing the Empresse shuld perceive that her Lord was already determined, with a sad countenance, thus replyed.

Madam, you know what promise I made my brother, the day when he departed from the Court, in the presence of you, and all the Nobilitie, that I would not marry before his returne: and me thinks I were greatly to be blamed, and well worthy of grievous reprehension, if I shoulde so falsifie my word, which I cannot do, without impeaching of mine Honour.

And herein shall I follow the laudable vertus of the Emperour my Father, who evermore esteemed his promise above all earthly possessions. Beside, I can assure you that my brother will never marry with the Princesse Lucemania: for her Loves are many degrees beyond her, and (may I speak it without offence) one of the most beautifull Ladys that ever nature framed. Thus Madame, my Father and you have excuses sufficient and available, wherewith to answer the King of France. It may be (quoth the Empresse) that your brother loves elsewher: but I can tell ye, that neither he nor you shall doe any thing, contrary to the Emperors commandement. Polinarda, saing her Mother perill in her opinion, bit her sozrowes with many secret sighes: yet knew she so well how to dissemble her passions, as the Empresse could not discerne her private meaning. So returned she to the Emperor, adverting him of her Daughters answere: whereat he was so offended, as in great anger he came himselfe to his daughter, saying: Why, how now daughter? Are you so bold to disobey my commandement? Do you dare you repugne against my will? All is to no end that you have dobbled with your Mother: for (will you or no) it shall

be

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliver

be as I have appointed. I know right well bread Lord and Father, (quoth he) that I ought no way to deny your good pleasure: But yet rather will I dye a thousand deaths, then consent to match with the Son of France, considering what promise I have made unto my deare Brother: and if I should but once so lare dishonour my selfe; as not to regard what I have promised, I should think my selfe unworthy hereafter to be called your Daughter. Thus stood the resolute in her answer, and therewith shewd such abundance of teares, as the Emperour was constrained to tell the Ambassadours, that the mariage could not be concluded till the retorne of Trineus, notwithstanding he granted all the articles of their Embassage. The Princesse qualifying her griesse so well as she could, sent for the Dwarfe, and taking him by the hand, sayd. Alas my friend, I am now in the greatest perplexity in the world, neverthelesse, one thing comforts me: that thou beholdest the true loy and loyalty I bear the master, which never shall be broken, what ever become of me. And would to God he were now here, then would I speake openly without feare of any, that I am his, and he mine. Madame (quoth the Dwarfe) if you continue faithfull to my Spawler, perswade your selfe of his assurances, so he building on your constancy, takes such continuall pleasure in remembryng you, that it is the only meane that preserves his life: and you may be bold to credit me, that if your Brothers loue do not withhold him, he would have bin here long ere this, but he will come sone enough (I hope) to end this doubt.

As so me, I am of the opinion that heaven will not suffer so good a knyght to dye, but first will permit him to see his miffris. Die: quoth the princesse, sooner let all the knyghts in the world end their dayes, and the eldest Sonne of France likeable, though he love me so verely, so might I bee rid of these impotunate Ambassadours. The Emperour seeing he could get no other answere of his Daughter, conclud-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

ed with the French Ambassadours, that so soon as his Man was returned, he shold be aduertised, and so soz that time they might depart: but the Empresse and he shold be swadowed on them many rich presents, and so in short time they arriued againe in France, where great joy was made in hope of these Marriages, albeit they little thought the Prince Trineus would tarry so long. Above all other, the French Prince was most joyfull, hearing the Counte of Armignac report the wondershull beauty of Polinarda: but the good Lady was of another minde, for she had rather take her selfe to a Cloyster, then to break her faith to Palmerin, whom she loued so constantly. Thus leabe we her conserning with Urbanillo, returning to Palmerin, and the Prince Trineus.

### CHAP. LXIII.

How Palmerin being thus on the Sea, caused Trineus there to marry the Princesse Agriola.



His noble company being thus on the sea, having Wlnde at will, sayled with such expedition, as in lesse daies they had gotten farre enough from England, and the Prince shewing the Princesse Agriola very penkue and sad, comforting her with many swete welcomes and kisses, and taking her by the hand, thus spake. O Soueraigne Creatour, how shall I render sufficient thankes and prayse to the, in granting me the onely thing I desyre? Ah swete Madame, and my onely deare Princesse Agriola, how much is your Servant indebted to you? hath any knyght more cause to honour and extoll his Lady then I?

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Believe me faire princielle, such are the rare effects of your gracious Nature, and I so toysfull of my happy Fortune, as neither friend or fether shall fetch you againe from me. If my life might endure the length of ten mens, and every day I should accomplish wonders in your good service, yet could I not remunerate the least part of your princely deserts. But if your Love be such to me, as I am right well assured it is, let me intreat you to forbeare this heauynge, and banish from your thoughts yowre melanchyle humors: for seeing you soldeone and pensive, I suffer a torment worse then death it selfe. For let me perceiue (how little soever it be) that my presence may be to your liking, and our present Enterprize somewhat more pleasing: I live to the Heavens with coniect of happiness, and value my fortune aboue the reach of hys manie capacity. In stead of teares, let vs vsse quashie tearmes, and for these dumps, pleasant Imaginations: perswade your selfe Madame, you are now in his custody that honours you for your vertues, reverenceth you for your diuine predictions, extolleth you for incomparable vertees, and liueth for you, with his very veraymost endeavours. That will bet Madame, though you have left your Parents, the fault is not pardonable: For the new alliance wherin you have combined your selfe, shall one day glad you with your speciall content: that what you doe imagine now a dangerous offence, will be imputed an act of prudency and princely discretion. Then shall you finde it true, what Palmerin hath spoken, and his promises of preferment, and Imperiall dignitie, shall be both rightly and sufficiently performed. Let these perswasions, if not my intreaties, excell these passions, and procure better comfoare. Madame (quoth Palmerin) though you have left your native Countrey, consider the occasion, the loue of a mighty Prince, and the heavenly appointment, that your noble vertues shuld be coupled together, hath brought you from Engeland, to sit on the Imperiall seat in Allemaigne.

How carefull we haue beene of your honour, your selfe can

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

can witness, no motion being offered to preservise your life hinginge. But you are remittred before the emperour himselfe to remisse you beth aduertised: thereloy to prevent all stirring purgatis, the small Ceremonie shal be here celebratice, and the Royall Churche Uncle Melanchope, wher we shall come into Allemaigne. Well Hymer claudes his doo, you must graunt to me that any report, labours will be well contented hee faceth. Distraynes, and other afflictions, will helpe to stille the chalenge, and shew yowre warray bloudes, your beaten wylt, forbyt: how the same woun, is cannot be recalled, his armes blazened but only by deury, and grym barding; And when begun, his spous comande, therefore (so pleas you) let it be performed. The goddes both agreed, they were married exquiting their chal leue, with a symphaty of bethumbed bessons: but this time of delight and pleasure had small continuallance, for Fortune envious to prosperite, accompanied with her elwest soule mischance converted their loves into loathly spires, & paleas, unspeakable, as you shall reade hereafter.

Wherupon dide this wroking shortly on the Creame, suddenly the sea began to stirre, the shalpe waves spangged roughly, the shalpe waves troubled, and full a dangerous tempest beat hym on the shalpe, on the spier, spottis, and spaelers hee met wther to say, land faire daies togidher: they were in this perigly, sometime forwars about agayn backward, that no hope of life was expected, but obay ons prepared themselves to death, the impalable messenger of God, so they coulde haue no other remedie. Agriola not accustomed to these dangers, was iniunctly discomfited; but Trineus perswaded her with many examples, in that such tragedians were vanall on the sea, albeit, she to end the ferre the saile before her eyes, would often times haue cast herselfe into the raging waters. At length the tempest sturr past, they descriued an Island, whereon with the helpe of their Domes they coulde lyvonding thyselues under the shes of an high mountaine: and although the place shewes casuall, yet thys they better mincd

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

determined to cast Anchor, until the seas were more calme and quiet. Being thus under the Lee, and defended from the wind with the huge Rocke, Palmerin entred upon the chaces, to see what judgement he could make of the Island, and so delectable the Country seemed ynglym, as he was desirous to returne thare, taking his Faucon on his shold that wch he giveth him for good, so without other desyre but his wifes he wente to the Land, not suffering any body to leave him company. Trineus and Agriola, perswaded thereto by contrarie, but all would not serue : for the situation of the Countrey pleased him so well, as he walked on in great contemplation, not meaning to returne againe to the Shipp for want of Querning, and so he laye all day in a groare, and at night he comyd him selfe in a shipp, and so he stod

Cap. XLIII. *How Palmerin was taken by the Turkis.*  
How Trineus, Agriola, Peolome and all their Matusiers were taken by the Turkis after that Palmerin was gone to view the Land.



He vnderstaide report eth, that while Palmerin was thus absent, there arrived fourre or fiftie Turkish Galleyes, who like-  
wise glad to shun the tempestuous wea-  
ther, cast Anchor neare to Trineus shipp,  
and seeing no body on the decke of this  
Orange vessell, because fearing no harme  
they were all at rest : they environed it  
about, and having boorded it, the Captain of the Turks called  
to them, saying : What are ye aisepe within, that ye let vs  
boord ye without any resistance : by the reuerence of our gods  
we shall awake ye, but little to your easse. So came the  
Souldiers on board after their Captaine, who put the Pilote,  
the Master, and many of the Marriners to the Shwoord, spa-  
ring none but such as they pleased to ransome. Then sear-  
ching the Cabins, they found Trineus, Agriola, and Peolome,  
whom they tooke Prisoners, by reason they were un-  
armed,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART, I.

worned, as also somewhat sickly after their roagh passage.

The roving Captaigne or Pyrate, named Oliuacel, noting the singular Beuty of Agricola, commanded her to be car-  
ried on boord his Gally. When the Princesse saw her selfe  
so hardly handled, and that her Lord was Prisoner with  
these villanous Moores, so that perforce they must abandon  
one another : shee brake forth into pittifull acclamations,  
and looking outher Husband, thus spake. Ah my Lord, how  
hard and strange is this Fortune : Haue we escapt a tem-  
pest so dangerous, now to fall into this mercilesse extrem-  
ity ? Oh that you and Sir Peolome had biene Armed, that  
these Moores might haue bought our liues with the Shwoord :  
But despightfull chance hath so thwarted vs, as no meane s  
is left to prevent our perill. Ah Palmerin, how grievous is  
thine absence, and how displesant will our mishap bee to  
thee : How much would thy valour now availe vs, being vt-  
terly destitute of any succour or refuge ? I know our mis-  
hap will so offend thee, as I feare thou wilt doe some outrage  
on thy selfe. With these words shee fell downe among them  
in a dead trance, the sight whereof so enraged Trineus and  
Peolome, as snatching weapons out of the Moores hands,  
they laid about them so lustily, that in short time they had  
slayne halfe a score of them. But vnable were they to con-  
tend against so many ; Wherefore being taken againe, they  
were bound so cruelly with Cordes and Chaynes, as rent  
their tender and delicate flesh in many places : and being so  
conveyed into another Gally, their Squires likewise pri-  
soners with them, the Moores tooke what they pleased out  
of the Shipp, and when they had done, set it on fire. Then  
presently they wexed Anchore, and launching away, made  
halfe, least any rescue shold follow them, so that quickly  
they lost the sight of the Island, and Oliuacel com-  
ming to see Agricola, assayed by any meane s to all wage her  
heaviness, embrasing her in his armes, and promising her  
great Riches if shee would be pacified. But all his speeches  
were in vaine, for shee seeing the Moore imbrace her, with  
angry

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

angry stroake like a Lyon enraged, caught him by þ halfe  
and the throte, saying: Then villainous Dogge, thinkeſt thou  
I take any delight in thy company? Who daresſt then trac-  
toſly thysfay hand on me? And ſo roughly bid the Strugge  
with Olimael, as if his men had not kild him, he had  
Strangled him: notwithstanding he ſtoke all patiently, per-  
ſwading himſelfe, that by gentle ſpachier, ſmooth flatterings  
and large promiſes, he ſhould in time win her to his pleaſure.  
So came he loyly of þ Cabin, with his throat and face þiane-  
ly painted with Agriolaes nailes, waching away the blood,  
which made comely circles about his phlegme: þis called  
þe the Capitaines and chife of his company, trilling them to  
share the booy among them, and he would haue nothing but  
the Princeſſe for his part, ſoþ he was ſo bewigled with the  
beauty of his paſſioner, as he had no delight but onely in be-  
holding her. In thiſ manner then he beſtowed his paſſioners,  
Trineus he gave to one of his Cozins, and Ptolome to a  
Knight that ſerved the Souldane of Babilon, the Squires and  
the pelle he gabs among the common ſoldauns. But whē  
the Prince ſaw he muſt neſt leaue his Lady, and each man  
would carry his paſſioner whether þem pleased: þis grife for  
his wife, and ſeiron for þis friends, I leaue to your iudg-  
ment, as not able to be expreſſed. Yet ſomis hope of conſol-  
þe reposed in Palmerin, that by his meaneſ (þing escaped  
þey hands) he ſhould get againe Agriola, elſe was there no  
way left to helpe him. Ptolome who daresſt loued the Prince,  
befoþ they departed thus began. Whyp how now my Liege  
where is your wanted þudence and diſcretion? Whare is  
that collant magnanimitie, which is so many ſoz'nes here-  
toſþe you bleſſe what eſt it left, oþ haue you forȝet it? What  
meane þe will ye be ſubject to paſſions, as a weake effem-  
inate person? You that are ſprung from the moſt ancient  
moble and generous race of Chyſtendome, ſcamed ſoþ a  
moſt courauous and barbarous Knight, tell you be dyven  
into these ſad and doſolate opinioneſ? What then would a  
Tark, Moor or barbarous Myrmidon do in like affai-  
rons?

## Emperour of Conſtantinople. PART. 1.

afflictions? When hee that hath auſſurance of his God, and  
knowes that all persecutions, ſorrows & mishaps, are priuies  
of his fidelity, and the meaneſ to attaine eternall quiete,  
þe weſt heſte vndutfull behaviour, as though he had lost all  
meaneſ of hope and conſort. If the body be affliſed, let the  
ſpirit be animated, and armed with patiencie againſt all inſtr-  
umeſtis of the ſickly. Leave theſe ſoft countenances for Wo-  
men, and if you will not perſwade your ſelſe, that theſe trou-  
bles happen for the increaſing of our joy, it may be the meaneſ  
that God will forſake vs. Then neither ſcarre or dispayze I  
þey you, for he that ſuffered vs to fall into those Moores  
hande, both can and will deliver vs againe. As ſoþ your La-  
dy Agriola, doubt not of her unconquerable loyaltie, for she  
hath in her cuſtody a ſewell of ſuch vertue, as no one can diſ-  
honour her againſt her owne liuing. Conſort your ſelſe then  
in the power of the higheſt, and repoſe your ſelſe on the con-  
ſtanſy of your Lady, with this certayne perſuasion, that thiſ  
adverſity hath fallen upon vs, for our greater god-  
ard advancement hereafter. Then came Omeri, and inter-  
rupted their talkie, commanding nine or ten of his people, to  
convey Trineus into another Galley, and Ptolome into that  
where his Master was, that ſo they might deparc to recontrer  
the reſt of their Galleye, whiche were ſcattered from them by  
reaſon of the tempeſt. And ſo they deparced one from another, the Galley wherein Trineus was deſerpyng a godly  
Ship of Chyſtiane, wherof they being glad, ſet ſayle with  
the wind towards the Chyſtiens, who rode away ſo fast as  
they could, and had ſcape, but that they met full with cer-  
taine Myzyates of Natolis, who royming with the Galleye, in  
the end boorded hem, and paſted the ſpoyle among them: the  
wind ſuddenly began to change, for that they were conſtra-  
ined to ſlie for ſuccour to an Iland in the Kingdome of Cariſe,  
which they reached in god time, glad to ſhield theiriſelues  
from danger. These Myzyates that come to Haven, went  
all on ſhoze to refreſh themſelues: but they had no ſcience ſet  
foot on land, ſuch enchantments were there diſperced through

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Olivet,

the whole Isle, as they presently knew not one another. But to acquaint you with the manner of these Enchauntements, you must note, that the Isle where they landed was called Malfada, which name was gien it by the Lad thereof, which was called likewise Malfada, the most subtil Magician of her time : so that we may say of her, as the Poets feigned of the auncient Circes. And albeit she was issued of Christian Parents, yet having such familiarity with the Diabolall and his mabigne Spirits, she would not acquaint her selfe with any godnesse towards Christians, but daily practised their harne and destruction. And for this intent, she had of a long time before Enchaunted this Island with such Charmes, that what Shippynge soever arrived there, could neuer deuert thence againe, much lesse such as once entred within the Isle. They being thus rayed, Malfada would come her selfe, and chose such as shee liked, the rest she transformed into Harts, Civolies, Dogs, Beares, and all manner of Beasts. Such like wylle as shee tooke with her into her Fortresse, when shee had abused them to content her owne pleasure, shee would cast them forth, transforming them as shee did the other : In briese, shee was worse then a Diuell, this Island was a very disguised Hell. This wicked woman knowing that more vnsortunate people were Landred at the hauen, called her Servants, and came to see them : but shee made no great account of them, wherfore she comandred her trustiest Servants to take away all the Riche wealth of the Ship, converting it by her Enchantment, that it seemed like a bottomelesse gulf. Afterworts at her pleasure, shee transformed them that came into it : Among whom Trineus was changed into the shape of a very faire Dog : not that hee was so, for that is a thing against nature, and which God no way will permit that man shall take any Buttish shape, or a brute Beast to assume any humane forme. For the Magicall dispositions thus hold these Actes, that the Enchaunted esteem themselves Beastes, and that therby this disfigured Mastiffe : Notwithstanding, these distressed Captives had natu-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.I.

naturall reason and humarie power, but the benifit of speach was taken from them. And thus was Trineus transformed, which he seemed not to mislike, for not remembred himselfe hee forgot all his heauy passions, maruellung onely at his sudaine mutation. And here will we leaue him in his strange desorみて, to report what besell to the Princesse Agriola, after that dolorous separation betwene her Lord and her,

FINIS.

Thus Gentlemen have we left the Prince Trineus transformed into the shape of a Dog in the Isle of Malfada, by the Enchantresse : The English Princesse Agriola, in the custody of the Turkish Pirate Olimacel : Ptolome and Colmeio carried into Ethiopia ; and Palmerin ranging in the Island with his Hawke for his delight. Right strange will bee the meeting of all these Friends againe, after the hazards of many perillous Fortunes. For Agriola thus seperated from the Prince her Husband, is married to the great Emperour of Turky : How wonderfully the Ring which Palmerin gave her, preserves her Chastitie, will be worth the hearing. How Palmerin counterfeiting himselfe dumbe, doth many rare exploits in the Isle of Calphe, will be as acceptable. How Palmerin gaines his Polinarda, Trineus his chaste Wife Agriola, Ptolome his Brionella, and all Honours meeting together in the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, will be so strange as the like was never heard : and all this is performed in the secend part of this History.

A. Mundy.

Honos alit Artes.

Palmerin D'oliva,  
THE SECOND PART:  
OF THE HONOURABLE  
HISTORIE OF PALMERIN  
D'OLIVA.

---

Continuing his rare fortunes, Knightly  
deeds of Chiualry, happy successe in love,  
and how he was crowned Emperour of  
*Constantinople.*

---

Herein is likewise concluded the variable troubles  
of the Prince Trineus, and faire Agriolas the  
Kings daughter of England: with their  
fortunate Marriage.

---

Translated by A. M. one of the Messengers of  
her Majesties Chamber.

*Patere aut abstine.*



LONDON.  
Printed for B. ALSTOP and T. FAUCET, dwelling in  
Crab-street, neare the lower Pumpe.

1637.



TO THE RIGHTHONORABLE AND HIS VERY  
GOOD LORD EDWARD  
*DE VERE, EARLE OXEN-*  
*ford, Viscount Bulbecke, Lord San-*  
*ford of Badeleſmore, and Lord*  
*high Chamberlaine of*  
*England.*

*A. M. Wishes b the full issue of his  
noble desires.*



Romise is debt, my good Lord, as the Proverb avoucheth, & debt must needes bee paide, as reason requireth: the one not arguing so much liberality in speech, as the other doth vertue in accomplishing. Whon I presented your honour the first part of this Hikory, I promised to hasten the other to the selfe same Patron: whereto I have beene vehemently induced, by the gracious and affable receite of the former: and therefore (kissing your hand) I offer the conclusion of worthy Palmerin. Nor hath it beeene so tedious and troublesome to me in the translation,

## The Epistle Dedicatoria

as I hope you will conceive delight thereby in the reading: howsoe'er it proove, I neede not despaire, having a judge so honourable, who measureth good will farrre beyond ability.

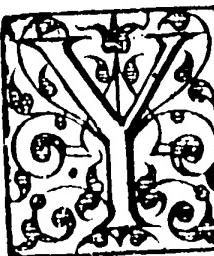
TO THE FRIENDLY  
READERS

YOR Honours in all  
humilitie. A.M.



## TO THE FRIENDLY

### READERS



Hough long, yet at length Palmerin is finished, and having endured so many bitter brantes in search of adventures: after all, now remaineth either to be commended or condemned by your censure. Condemne him you cannot with reason, considering all his actions have beene so honourable: as too malicious were the man would deale so hardly with him that hath given no occasion of offence. Command him then you must, in respect of his manifold vertues, thruſt all together in the face of Fortune, onely for your delight and recreation.

As concerning his Sonnes Palamendos & Primaleon, the one is kept under his Mothers wing the Queene of Tharsus, and the other sparing in the Court at Constantinople: not daring to set foote in the stirrop after Knights exercises, till they beare how their father speeds. If he have that favour his deeds deserved then on goes their Armour, and in the chiefest places of Christendome will they shew themselves, with repetition to the world of wonderfull adventures.

But weile they expect good newes or bad, Paladine  
sonne  
A 3

To the Reader.

Sent to the King of Mylanor of England, is passing to you: what he and the noble Prince Manteleo of Millaine doe, in knigbly affaires of most noble Chinalry, the Historie shall deliver: which is already on the prese in good forwardnesse. From my bouse at Cripple-gate this ninth of March.

Yours to his vetermost  
Anthony Monday:

## THE SECOND PART OF THE AN- TIENT AND HONORA-

ble History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Continuing his rare Fortunes, Knightly deeds of Chinalry, happy successe in Love, and how he was crowned Emperour of Constantinople. Herein is likewise concluded the variable troubles of Tryneus, and faire Agriola of England, with their fortunate Marriage. &c.

### Chap. I.

How Olimaell presented the Princesse Agriola to the great Turke, who immediately became amorous of her: and what rewardes and preferment the Pyrate received for his gift,



So yet I am sure you cannot choose but call to your memory in the first chapter, how the pyrate Olimaell divided his prisoners, reserving for himselfe none but the King of Englands Daughter hoping in time to purchase her riddance. And being alone with her in a fairest Cabin in the Wallay, he devised by all the best meanes he could to comfort her: But yet all

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

his labours were lost, and bestowed in value, for she would not receive any kunde of sustenaunce, desiring every hours to dye, having so lost her Lord Trineus. He seeing that faire speches, offers, gifts, and other enticements proper to perswasion, could not compasse h[er] b[eing] he desired, he grew into Choller, intending to gaine his pleasure perforce, so that after many threatnings, with rough violence he would mades rabi[n] her. Agriola seeing that her fable strength could not long withstand his easled Turk, albeit his strake and rested so well as she could: therelose with devout prayer she called on God, desiring him to take pity on her, and not to suffer that villainous Rossi an to dishonour her.

H[er] Prayer being ened, Olimael beganne in such sorte to tremble, as he staggered backwards four or five times, and so exceedingly was he surprisid with feare: as he was constrained to leave her, and withdraw himselfe into another place. The Princesse, though she were amazed at this sudden change, and nothing wch what sorro[w] the Captain departed: yet was she greatly comforted by her happy deliverance, imputing the whole we[r]ke thereof to y Almigh[tie p[ro]vidence, and the vertue of the King that Palmerin gabs her: wherelose with a thankfull heart, and elevated eyes to Heaven, she said: O b[ea]utifull Father, how great and infinite is thy Goodnesse: how happy is the Creature whom thou regardest with the eye of pity: assuredly I now perceve, that such as in extremite have recourse to thee, shall no way perish. Then taking the vertuous King, and kissing it many times, said:

Unvaluable, Jewell, given me by the best Knight in the world, how carefull will I keape the: how true is that saying: that great persons, give great presents; Hence forth shal thou be knyght to the lord of him that gave thee, and to thy singular Merite) in the place where I dwallye things of greatest price. So taking a little Chaine of Gold, which served her as a Bracelet, she fastened this unto the

## Emperour of Constanctinople. PART.2

wo[re] the Jewel thereto, and put it about her Neck, so that the sumptuous Stone lay glistering betweene her Shulders, white Wicks, a prospect so rare and delicate, and of no lesse power to draw the beholders eyes then the Adamant, the Amber, or the Yeats can by their Vertue: Beside so wonderfully replete with sweet regard, as I dare affirme that the most cruell Tyrant in Turkie, would stand amazed at those two dainty Poenitentes, more mortified and humbled then the Ages Hermites of Thebaida. Olimael yet quaking at this sudaine alteration, durst presume no moze to offer her villainte but by rich gifts and presents sought to perswade her: All which abailed not, soz as he go: but little profit by his violence, so wonne he much lesse by his treacherous offerings. So sayled they eight dayes together, Olimael not able to compasse Agriolas lone, nor bearing any tyng of the Wessel that were lost, neither of his Cowzin who had Trynecus cap[i]tive which giv[en] him as nothing could do moze, in that he was so unprovided, as wel he could not present himselfe before his Lord, o whome he had promised to bring ffor of Christian Prisoners, and now in his boord he had so lost his time, as after the Tempest of Shipwacke, had spoyled him of his owne company. In this doublous opinion, he debated with himselfe, that the great Turke did earnestly affect faire Ladies: so by the meane of his beautifull prisoner, he imagined to be entertained with god countenance, and his loss would be past over with forgetfulness: wherelose he commandded their Wylot to make toward the Port of Ottobant, where as then the great Emperour of Turkie sojourned, and therethen they came in h[er]t time after. Notwithstanding, as a Servant well instructed, not daring to avise the familiarite of his Lord, he sent one of his knyghtes to excuse his caue, and to report, that by euall mischance he had lost his men and Gallrys: but if his i[n] aches pleased to forges his misfortune, and receyve him into his accustomed fa-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliver.

son; he would bying him one of the fairest Ladies in Christendom, and descended of most Royall Parentage. The Emperour being lascivious, and more addicted to vinhall delires then any to his Dominion, hearing this Message, was surprised with the onely report of her Beauty, as immediately he became passionate for her Love: sending the Empress word that he could not bying a moe desired present, and therfore remitted all his offences, promising him greater fauour then euer he had. And because no contrary occasion might hinder his coming ( quoth the Emperour ) thou shalt carry him this Letter, sealed with mine own signature, that he may no way doubt of his assurance. The knyght taking the Letter, and kissing the Emperours feet, according to the custome, returned to his shallop, delivering him the answer he had receaved. Olimacel joyfull thereof, caused Agriola to clothe herselfe in her mett sumptuous Garments, and so with all his men set forward towards the Court. Soho although the Princesse was all blubbered with teares, and halfe dead, to see her selfe in the power of these strangers, professed and stroynge Enemies to her faith and religion: yet could not the rare perfections of her Beauty be shadowne, but the greate thereof set every eye to wonder. And as she looked about her, to see if any of her company were larded with her. She espied Prologue, whom they minded secretly to convey from her: but she beholding him so sadde and sorrowfull, stopt towards him, saying: Ah my dere friend Prologue; what dredfull chauyne hath Fortune thysone bypon vs: but well may I content my selfe, for this is a just scange for minnes offence, and vndutifull obedience to the King my Father. Ah my Lord and leynall Husband Trincus, never shall I see this againe, for God doth know whether these villains habe sent the. Ah noble Palmerin, who was wont heretofore to comfort me, too much bast thou failed vs, all thy former promises are now altered: for in stead of Imperiall soberaignety, pleasure and

honors

## Emperour of Constanople. PART. 2.

honors, I am requited with poverty, griefe, shame, & mockery. Ah Death, swete death, in long deare death: why comest thou not to end all these miseries? But God will not permit that, because by my tormentes and afflictions, I may finde the weighty burthen of my offences, and large bounyng of his mercies.

Prologue seeing her in this mournfull vexation, said. It is no time now (Madame) thus to disquiet and offendre your selfe: but rather (as wife and well governed) to bear these adversities, even with as great content as your former prosperites, taking in good part whatsover shall happen, for I am in good hope, and my minde peradise me, that we shall be delivered by noble Palmerin, who I am well assured endereth greater griefe in his liberty, having losid the, then we can see in this our impysement. Olimacel exceding angry to see Agriola wepe, violently putt Prologue from her, charging his men, not to suffer him none to come within her sight whiche he suffered patiently, because he saw it was in vaine to kiche against the pricke. When they came to the Wallace, and admitted to the Emperours presence, Olimacel knyghting him before him, and kissing his fote, presented Agriola to his Majestie: who setting her off such a rare and wonderfull Beauty, said to Olimacel.

This Present (my friend) is of such surpysing value, as thou couldest never honay me with the like: Good reason is it therefore, that a gift so pretious, shold be rewarded with like recompence, and so peradise thy selfe I will, that thou shalt say the Emporour is benytfull. As for the Lady thou hast given me, I perceve is so faire and gracious, as I inted never to habe any other wife: one that I may espouse her with the greater magnificencie, I will say till the hallowed day of my Coronation, when all my Princes, Warrons, and Knights, will be here assembled, and then in their presence shall our Matrimony be solemnized. Now has the Emperour a woman capitaine named Hypolita, who has a Marchants Daughter

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Daughter of Sicily, and better skilful in all Languages then any Lady in the Court, for which he made speciall account of her, reporting great confidence in her, and acquainting her with his chiefest secrets: wherefore he sent for her before Agriola, and said: Hyppolita, I give you this Lady in keeping, commanding you to intreare her as our owne person, and that all meanes may be practised to cure her soe sake this sad Melancholly. In conference you may shew of what Honour and happiness she shall receyve by falling into our hands, and what incomparable Fortune it is to her whom we shall please to accept for our selfe. All which Hippolita (with great humility) promised to accomplish, and soe conducted her into a most princely Chamber, the stoue covered al ober with cloth of Linc, and hang about with most sumptuous Tapistry and cloth of Gold, as hardly might the richnesse thereof be valued. There Hyppolita caused the Princesse to sitt downe in a Chayre of state, which was purposely provided for her, demanding of her Name, and of what countrey she was.

The Princesse answered, that she was of England, but further of her estate she would not betray. Hyppolita speaking perfectly the English tongue, took great delight daily to communke with her, and because Agriola shoulde the better like of her conversation, she told her that she was likewise a Christian, but that by constraint she followed the Law of Mahomet, and his Alchoran. In further speeches she acquainted her with the estate of the Sultanes, in the Court of the great Emperour of Asia: which communication served well to ware away the time, albeit the Princesse took small pleasure therin. Olimaell in consideration of his noble present, was created high Admirell of the Mediterranean Sea, and furnished with greater stoue of Foyles and Galleyes, then he had before.

CHAP.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

### CHAP. II.

How the great Turke summoned all the Kings and Princes his subiects, because he minded to hold open Court: and how he married with the Princess Agriola his Prisoner.



Hippolita being daily converstant with the Princess Agriola because she had so good knowledge in her Language, at length the Emperour himselfe came to her Chamber, and to the end he might the better behold the Princess, he set her downe in a Chayre opposite to her, and there he sat a long time, not able to content his Eyes with looking on her, and beholding her excellent Beante: so speake to her he could not, because he understand not the Turkish language. Wherefore he commanded Hyppolita to requie her name, and what her Parents were: which to satisfie his Curiositie, she did: Agriola thus unswering her. In vaine Urby forke you to know of me, the thing whiche death can not forke me betwix: Let it suffice you that I am a pure Gentlewoman, the most unforunate that ever liveth: with which wordes she wiste very grieuously. The Emperour moved with pity, departed to his Chamber, so surprised and inflamed with her Love, as he could take no rest one minute of the night: conserning with himselfe, that seeing he esteemed so little of the richnesse she saw in his Palace, and refused the offers made her by Hyppolita, that doubtlesse she was extract of some Noble Lineage.

The next morning he called his soule Secretaries, commanding them to write to all the Princes of his Empyre, that they shoulde not faille to honour the day of his coronation with their presence, and to bring with them their Dutches and Daughters, and that they shoulde doe on paine

of his displeasure : all which was performed with present expedition. In the meane time, he cam euider suspi-  
cuous intent to be prep'red, with all manner of prictus  
Arms could be devised, and these he daily sent to Agriola  
but all these presents, promises, and manifeste entreaty-  
ment, could no way move her, nor so much as to graunc  
him a graciond countenance. So likewise sent for the  
best Ladys to his Court, that they shold kepe the Princ-  
ess company : but he wold be conuersant with none but  
Hippolita, of whom he had so prettily learned the Arabian  
tongue, as many times sh'd wold indifferently answer  
the Emperour. But when he beheld her continually pen-  
sive, and that by no meanes she would be consoled : he  
doubted least his presence did offend her, and therefore  
as for the halle of his Empyre, he wold give her no occa-  
sion of discontent, hoping in time (whitch is the Lord and  
conquerour of all things) to alter that humour, and pur-  
chase her love, whitch he dectod with earnest affection. But  
now at this day, where may we find a Lady so vertuous and  
true by such a mighty Emperour, considering her youth and  
the high & Loys protection her, that she moze libell the  
Turke to his honours and persuasions, the meze loyall  
conuainyd her to be to Trincus, whose perfect image was en-  
gadon in her harts. And not fearing tormentes of death, he  
so rightly lobe him. In that she was married to an  
enor'me noble every way then he, and none but  
himselfe wold lobe while he lived: yet made he no great  
trust in a man. The day being come of this great preparation  
and all the Princes present to understande the severallnes  
well: he being placed in his imperiale seat, said. That he

intended to take to wife, one of the most beautifull Ladies  
in the world, and for that cause he sent for them, to under-  
stand h. to they liked ther of. Wher answere, wos that they  
had well therel, and wold glately honour her as wll be-  
launced them. Then he sent for Agriola, and before them  
all, said unto her: that it was his pleasure to accept her  
for his wife, and therfore she shold prepare herselfe on  
the morrow to be married. The Princesse abashed at these  
spiches, fell downe before him in a dead traunce, wher upon  
by the Dames and Ladys present, she was conuayed  
into her Chamber, wheres being againe remived, she began  
most pitiful and dolorous lamentations: so wch: all the  
company had left her, that she was alone with Hippolita,  
falling downe on her knes at her beds fete, sh'd thus be-  
ganne.

O my God and benigne Father, pity the poore disaf-  
fected creature, and forget the offences I have here tofor com-  
mitted: for what is a sinner, unlesse you in mercy suffer  
her to come before thee? Will thou then forchase (O won-  
derfull workeman of the whole world) one eye of pity  
open thy banable forsaken servant: and suffer her not to fall  
into subfaction, to the boyled enemy of thy holy word, ar-  
ming me so strongly in this temptation, that I no way ins-  
pire my Lord and Husband Trincus, but rather grant  
this desolate spirit, may leave this body and the world to-  
gether. Ah my honourable Lord Trincus, where art thou  
now? that thou art not here to defend the shaws and  
wong this Tyrant offred the? What, art thou dead? or  
hast thou forgotten me? No, no, so well am I assur'd of  
thy fidelity, as no torment can divert thee from me. Yet if  
I knew directly that thou art not living, the less would  
be my feare to follow thee: for then the greatest pleasure  
this Pagan could do me, where to make me happy only  
by death. But for the matter is uncertaine, and that I live  
in hope once more to see thee: I will patiently endure all  
afflictions

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

affiliations whatsoever, for so sweet a reward as is thy love. Whose servantes of the Princesse so graced Hypolita, as one could hardly judge whos was most passionate, yet at length the chivalrie to Agriola, I beseech you good Lady to have cheste greevous lamentacions, and regard the high estate, honor and dignitie, that you shall have in marrying w<sup>m</sup> h<sup>r</sup> my Lord. Hev<sup>e</sup> r porsteade me (quoth the Princesse) to my selfe chivalrie: for such preferments, if they be not gotten by justice and by vertue, they ought not to be c<sup>on</sup>serued, but to be th<sup>e</sup> man<sup>t</sup>s asdivillish Serpents. Thus spent th<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> e<sup>r</sup> night, and in the moring came the Queenes and L<sup>e</sup>gates noblie come to the Court, to bid the so<sup>r</sup> d<sup>ame</sup>full Queenes geue newe in her Chamber, attyng her in wendallynge vesture, after their Country manner, for b<sup>r</sup> o<sup>w</sup>n<sup>t</sup> he<sup>r</sup> valye of Helena, after her arraial at Troy. And th<sup>e</sup> same forme King<sup>s</sup> she was brought into the great hall, and from thence conducted to the Temple, where they were expectid by the Motti. To recount here the copill<sup>ar</sup> sumarity in the Temple, the Majestie and unspeakable dignitie at the Hallace, the excellent Co<sup>r</sup>entes, rare triumphes, synges, Chamerles, Horitores, and such like courtly pleasures, wold be a matter too prolixous: for they are not to our purpose. Let it then suffice us, that after they were magnificently increased at Dinner and Supper, the dancing begynn<sup>e</sup>, and God knowes so<sup>r</sup> the Turkes, Moores, Arabes, and Medes, sette forth themselves in their dances and sportis before their Ladys, much like the Satires and hec<sup>t</sup>o<sup>r</sup>ian dances, gaias neverdances of the Almypes of Diana. So<sup>r</sup> all these werbetter, japes, and tollies, could not ch<sup>e</sup>are the Princesse countenance, for the continuing in her preludies, these sportis were worse to her then the torment of hell: above all feareng the losse of her chastity, which was her chiefner to be recovered. The parlement was done, by the Duke and the Loris she was certe<sup>n</sup>ly a g<sup>e</sup>at empfull bode, so by her and steele, as the Prince

Aneas

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Aneas when he came to Queenne Dido of Carthage, and there was the unfortuniate Bride committed to her rest. Soon after came the baske Bride graine, calling for Agriola, that he might behold the Goddess he honoured, and as he was preparing himselfe to Bed, he was troubled with such feares, passions, and appetites, as now he seemed mo<sup>r</sup>e like a Chok then a man. Perforce he was constrained to forlake the Chamber, when the extremity of the fit somwhat alwayng, and his former love passions freshly assailing him, coming to the Princesse againe, heavily he uttered these speeches.

O Agriola, Lady and sole Mistresse of my heart, I thinke thou art some Goddess or (at least) exceeding all humanity, so strange is this adventure, as never any man (I think) has suffered the like. Alas, cannot thy anger be appeased, nor be perswaded to love him, who for thy sake endures most greevous torments? I pray thee be not the cause of my death: or if thou needs will, suffer me first to enjoy the fruits of my desire. Know my Lord answered Agriola, that with my will you never shall enjoy it, and if perforce you seeke to dishonour me, assure your selfe I am resolved, rather to suffer endlesse miseries, then to violate my faith to my loyall Husband, for such is my tru<sup>t</sup> in God, that he will not forget such as call on him. But in respect thou hast not beene cruel to me, nor hast exercised me with any tyramie, I shall suffer thee to lye upon the Bed by me, as my Brother might doe, and sometime (though it be mo<sup>r</sup>e then modesty) embrase thee in mine armes: but if further thou presumest, thou maist not be permitted, but shalt loose that favour, thy selfe, and me together. Spadam, quoth he, in granting me that courtesy, you save my life, for I have many Concubines to qualifie those passions, and never will I attempt your dishonour while I live, if I but offer the motion, refuse me for ever. I shall therefore account of you as my Sister, and death shall not make us two contrarie

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

rie to your appointment. The yong Princesse glad of his solemnis promise, gabs him a kisse or two, and suffered him to embrase her : but other kindnesse could he never obtain, contenting himselfe with this, because he loued her so dearely. At alreine dayes end, the Feasts being ended, the Princesse tolke their leave of the great Sultane, who with many rich presents sent them home into their Countees. Thus remain'd Agriola with the Great Turke, and the Knight to whom Oimel had given Ptolome and Colmelio, sayled with his Prisoners into Ethiopia : and thenceforward used them not as slaves, but as Gentlemen of good qualite, especially Ptolome, whom he reputed a hardy Knight, and a man boone to great enterprises.

### CHAP. III.

Now Palmerin after his Recreation, returned to the Seaside, and seeing the Ship and his company gone, made great lamentation, and what after followed.



Cloze in this Histore you have heard, how Palmerin walking on shose with his Faulcon on his fist, desired to see the pleasantnesse of the Isle, and finding so many delights to withhold him, returned not toward the Shipp till it was neare night : but when he came thither againe, and could not see the Shipp nor any one to question withall, he was greatly amazed, running here and there, yet all to no purpose. Sometime he imagined that Trineus had betrayed him, because he had acquainted him with his loue towarde his Sister : and then againe resolved himselfe on the contrary. All about he looked for his compantions, not knowing what to think : whether they were carried away by Pirats, or taken Prisoners

by

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

by the Inhabitants of the Iland. In the end, having compassed in his minde all imaginacions he could, and saing that by his regard of pleasure he had lost his Friends ; he entred into many sorrowfull lamentations, saing exceeding Cadmus when he lost his Soldiers by the horrible Serpent, cursing and exclaiming on himselfe, as he had beeene guilty of the death of his Father. Alas (quoth he) why did I not remember these wretched misfortunes by poore Varnan ? Whose sorowes was likewise procured by a Hawke, in an haplesse houre was this wicked Bird given me : Ah treacherous and deceiving Rumpet, I think thou art some incorporate Friend sent from Hell to injure the most constant Lovers : and therfore gentle Owle, or rather enchanted Divell, thou shalt never hereafter displease me other, so taking her by the necke ye pulled her in pieces, and said.

Oh sweet Lady Polynarda, how contrary is Fortune ? and how unhappy our desires preuented ? Well am I assored, if Trineus come to the Court without me, it will endanger your life, and the onely thing that shelds me from death, is comfortable hope to see you once again. Therfore Divine Histesse, I call for your succour, that by your gracioue assistance, I may endure these vehement afflictions. Ah gentle Princesse Agriola, how have I deceived you ? But in requitall of your louyng, no rest nor ease shall possesse my soule, till I have brought Trineus and you to as great joy, as by my meanes you have received discomforst. In these complaints he layd him downe under a Tre, and so wasted the time till morning came, when seeing no creature to speake withall, nor any meanes for him to passe the Sea : he determined to travaille through the Iland till he might meet some body to conserre with. Thus having no defence, but his Hilt under his arme, he walked a long, and at length he met a Moore with some Spantels, and a Warlin on his fist : whom he humbly saluting, de-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

manded the name of the Country, and if there were any shyping neere for his passage. The Moore perceiving by his language that he was a Christian, in great anger answered. At thos come so farr to take thine owne misfoe. By Mahomet I shall welcome thee hither with a vng.ace. So laying hand on his Sennary, Palmerin perceiving by his gesture (though he understood not his talke) that he wished him no good: wherefore drawing his sword, he gare the Moore such a stroke on the head as he cleaved it to his very ta'ch, and said. By God villaine, thou shalt not take me Myselfe, or lay me into the sea to take my ran-  
sone, and so in all disouerteous valets be served, as re-  
seable thee i' t' notions. Thus leaving the Moore dead, he ke' another way, least if he shoulde be followed, hee  
migh't fall into danger: but seeing he was unarmed, and  
could not speake the Arabian tongue, he magned that  
at length he must needs be taken. Herenpon he returned  
backe to the Moore, and taking his garments, left his own  
there, and thence forward determined to counterfeit him-  
selfe dumbe: by which subtiltie he thought to escape un-  
knowne, and prevent his trippisement, till he found  
meanes to returne towards Almaigne agayne. The day  
dealing on apace, and darke night appoaching, he came to  
a faire Fountaine of the clearest water (in his opinion) that  
ever he saw, where he laying him downe to rest, consumed  
the night so quietly as he could. On the morrow he began  
to remember his misertes, his dangers past, and such as  
were i'minent, the conceit wherof made him very me-  
lancholly: so after he had eaten a little bread, which he  
found in the Moores Budget, according to the manner of  
Diogenes, he layd him downe agayne and slept.

CHAR. IV.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

### Chap. III.

How Palmerin counterfeiting himselfe dumbe  
in the Isle of Calpha, was found by cer-  
taine Turkes as he lay a sleepe by the  
Fountaine: and how he was re-  
ceived into the Service of Al-  
chidiana Daughter to the  
Souldan of Babylon.



Now that you may the moxe easilly un-  
derstand, in that which followeth, the  
full intent of our discourse, you must  
call to memory, how Gamelio, who  
was slaine before Constantinople by  
the Prince Florendos, as you have  
heard in the first part of this Historie:  
was son to the Souldan of Babylon na-  
med Mylos, & brother to Maulicus, who at his death was  
a very young Prince. Mylos understanding by his Sub-  
jects, & Gamelio the hope of his declining age, was gone  
by h' summons of Atropos to the habitation of his G. ds,  
could not afterward enjoy any health of body, or quiet in  
mind, and therefore ere a yeare was fully expir'd, he went  
to seek his Homicide among his equals in the fields of Eli-  
sium. Before he took his journey wherinto creature re-  
turneth againe, he charged his succeeding Sonne Mauli-  
cus, to revenge his brothers death: being perswaid, that  
himselfe shoulde not be discharged of his unforntunate re-  
mbiance in the other world, if he failed to accomplish his  
latest commandement. Maulicus, not to hinder his depar-  
ture promised he would, yet could he not fulfill it, being  
troubled in his own Kingdoms, moxe then 20 yeers afte.

B 3

But

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

But after he had reduced the rebellious provinces into obedience, he married with the King of Armeniaes Daugther, by whom he had the Princeesse Alchidiana, one of the most beutiful and gracieus Ladies in her time: who being come to age of experiance, was soluted of her faither, as he woulde never suffer her out of his sight, so that he mad deniall to all such as requested her in mariage. Alchidiana, when she understood her owne singularity, desirred the company of the most beautifull Ladies in Asia, because she held this opinion, that when the fairest were present, beuty woulde then be moste splendant. For this cause she sent to Prince Guilharan, sonne to Polidia her Mothersister, that he woulde bring his sister Ardemia to the Court, who was counted the Paragon through all the Monarchy of Babylon.

She being come to the Cittie of Calpha from whence the name of the Island was derived, her Cosen Alchidiana devised all the meanes she could to entertaine her, and among other Courtly recreations, they daily used hawkynge and hunting. It came to passe, that these Princeesses and Gallants of the Soldans Court, now riding to their pleasure, the Knights delighting, the Ladies in beholding the braue voltages of their boxes, and their swiftnes in course like the wings of Pegasus: after chooye of many places for game, they came by the Fountain wher Palmerin lay asleep so soundly, as he neither heard their boxes nor halloowing. Which when one of the Mores perceived, intending to make all the other laugh, he alighted from his boxe, and comming to him that meant no body harm, said. We lupiter this sleepe settethis dynke, but I will awake him, that he may sydge the palze of our course: with which wordes he gab Palmerin such a blow on the ears, as made him turne his head on the other side. Palmerin suddenly startynge up, and seeing him standescoyngh that thou had stroken him, he drew his sword, and therewith sealed him a quittance for his life, wherat

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

the other ambushed, came to revenge their compaines death: but Palmerin casting his haule about his arme, layd about him so lustily, as he sent six moore after their felow, and any one that came nare him, he layd at his foot, eyther matmed or slaine outright. Alchidiana marvelling at this Stratagem, as also to heare the outragious noyse of the Mores came riding towards them, demanding what he was, that made such haucke in her presence? The knights gafe place to the Prince, so that she came very nare to Palmerin, who enraged like a salvage Beare in the wood, made a bloody massacre among the Moores, & when she beheld his braue and comely featured body and hardie courage, she perswaded her selfe that he was descended of high and Noble birth, and if she sought not meanes to cease this turmoile, it woulde proced to a greater danger: theresoyle (moved with pitte) she commanded her people on paine of their lives, to hold themselves quiet, while she demanded the cause of this tumult.

Palmerin glad that the Princeesse so succoured him, imagined by her exceeding beuty, and sumptuous ornaments, that she was their Sovereigne; wherefore calling himselfe at her feet, offered her his sworde; which curioselie not a little contenting her, she said: I know not my friend, whether thou be Knight or Squire, but whatsoeuer thou art, seeing (of thine owne good will) thou hast thus yielded to me, I will defend thee against all other. Wherefore tel me what he was, that against my will did first assaile thee Palmerin with rebent obesiance, made shynes of his thankfulness, and with such good countenance dissembled to be dumbe, as one woulde have judged he had never spoken. This pwo man (quoth Alchidiana) the Gods affored great wroght in depriving him of speech: for this I will say (hadst thou stertenre) thou wert one of the brauest accoldished men in this world, both in styrke complexion, curioselle and hardiness. Notwithstanding thou must needs be high in their grace, being able to encounter with so many:

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

AND defend thy selfe so worthily as thou hast done. Then was he certified by an ancient Knight, that one of the Squires of her Chamber smote him as he lay aslafe, which he redenged in such sort as she had seen. T<sup>r</sup>ust me (quoth she) the dumbe man did as well desirned him, wherefore in respect of his cibillity, and that he can so well correct the other boldnesse of knoles: I will entertain him as one of our Court, forbidding any to wrong him, as they tender my labour and their owne libes. So commanding bussall for the dead, & probation for the wounded, he went to her Pavillion, which was not farre off, willing Palmerin (by signes) to go with her, delivering him his sworde again, and saying he shold be her servant. Humble graces did Palmerin require her withall, and in signes of his obeysance offered to kill her self, but she would not permit him, and taking him up by the hand, said: Looke that herafter thou go not from me, whereto by signes he consented, knowing that by her meanes he shold be safely protected. While these carthes on either side endured, the Princesse Ardemia & the other Ladies entred the Pavillion: but Palmerin earnestly beholding Ardemia was amazed at her wonderfull beautie, imagining that she much resembled his Lady Polynarda, so that breathing swyth a vehement stgh, he could hardly with-hold himselfe from speaking. The Tables being covrid for their han-ting banquet, very choice delicates were served in on great plates of Gold, garnished with very precious and costly stones, which caused Palmerin to marvaille not a little, who the Princesse saing so sad, said: How now my friend? doest thou not think thy selfe safe in my presence? Verbo me on my word, if any one displease thee, he shall presently die the death. So causing him to sit by her at the table, intreated him so wel, as he had beene one of the chieff Barons in her Fathers Court. The Tables withdrawne, the Waiters had Carted the Ware: which was so narrowly purw-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

pursyd by the Wounds, as to save her selfe, she ran into the Princesse Pavillion, but the Gryphon was so speedy of pace, as he caught her in the presence of Alchidiana, who with her owne hands tooke her from the D. g, and gave her in keeping to one of her Pages. By this time it drew towards night, wherfore each one mounting on their Pavillayes, set forward to the Citie: the two Princesses having no other talk all the way, but of the singular beha- vour of the dumbe Knight. They riding faire and easly, because Palmerin travailed by them on foot. Ardemia beholding his goodly sworde, demanded of him, if he were a Knight, which he by signes made known unto her, whereof Alchidiana very joyfull, said, that she wold present him to the Saldan her Father, and for this cause, the more she beheld him, the greater pleasure she concived in him. Being now come to the Gates of Calpha, there stood many Knights ready with lighted Torchies to conduct the Ladies and their train to the Wallace, which was so rare and sumptuously edifted, as Palmerin was amazed to see such royaltie.

All the way Alchidiana had the dumbe Knight by her side, giving him her hand to alight s. o her Pavillay, whitch he did with exceeding reverence, and nothing discontented with his office: but many Knights and Princes there present, murmured therat, thinking him not worthy to come so neare her, nor might he be so suffered, but that the Princesse somewhat enamoured of him, would suffer none to contrary her pleasure: and leaned on his arm at the while he went up the Staires of the Wallace, to give the good even to the Saldan, who stayed his daughters returne in the great Hall. Still leaned she on Palmerin, till she came to her Father, who sat in a magnificent Chaire of state, having the resemblance of the scimant over his head, (after the Turkish manner) so garnished with Rubies & Diamonds, which with the lights of the Torchies shined most

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

most gloriously : wherent Palmerin wondred, conducing the Princesse with so braue gesture, as many reputed him some noble personage, and others (cubicularly) thought the worst of him.

The Soldane, who loved his Daughter as you have heard before arose from his Chair to welcom her home, demanding what spoyle he had on Hunting, and if he had brought any Game on home with her : Certes my Lord, (quoth he) we haue better fortun than you thinke on : but before I declare the maner thereof to you, will it please you to gib me what I haue found this day? The Soldan, not able to deny his Daughter any thing, liberally grauited her request. A thousand thanks, good Father (quoth she) : his dumbe Knight hath your Spouse & given me, who (in his owne defens) hath this day slaine certaine of your Knights, and herof you may assure your selfe, that he is one of the most hardiest Gentleman that ever came into these parts. Bring it to your request Daughter (quoth he) I could be well contented to grant it, but how shall I answer the friends of the marthered, to whom I have already promised, that for his offence he shal be delivered to the Lyons & to which of these grants ought best to be kept; yours being my Daughter, wherein Nature ruleth, oþthers being my Subjects, which the Law commandeth: I may not be Judge herein, said the Princesse notwithstanding me thinks (under your Highnes correction) that you haue bin but hardly counsellede to give a sentence so cruel, having not yet heard noysome the party. And albeit he were guilty of blame, as he is not, but before his condemnation, he ought to be heard how he could cleare himselfe, but if he will dye, I having assured him life, and taken him into my defens, the disgrace is so great to me, as mine Honour must remaine for ever condemned. And you my Lord and Father, whose Authority may discharge me of this repreach, if you refuse now to allle me, the grief herof

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

hereof will be my death. These words she spake with such affection, and so heably weeping, as would haue moved a strong heart to pity her : wherefore Maulicus touchid with naturall remorse, said. You shall perceive daughter what I haue devised, to the end my word may not be impeached: He shall be put into the Lyons Den, and sudainly taken out againe, by this meanes I shall keepe my promise to his accusers, and satisfie your earnest desire. And the better to content you herein, his enemies shall be perswaded that he escaped the Lyons with life, and then will I give him safety thowzow all my dominions. The Princesse fearing the bloud thistly deale of the Lyons, could not so content her selfe, which Palmerin perceiving, that the Father and Daughter thus contended for him: fell downe on his knee before the Soldane, making argues that he shold accomplish his promise, for he feared not the danger of his life. Maulicus marvailing hereat, perswaded his Daughter that bring so hardy, he might escape: desiring her to rest contented, for things shold be handled in such sort, as the Knight shold no way be endangered. These words somewhat contented the Princesse, whu caused Palmerin to be conducted to his Chamber, charging him that was appointed to attend on him, to see that he were very honourably used, and in the moring to bring him againe before her Father. The Soldane and his Knights spent all that evening in divers judgments on the dumbe Knight, each one being glad of the Soldanes sentence: but Alchidiana was so penible (considering the dangerous hazard he shold passe) as she flung to her Chamber refusing all sustenance, and spending the time in dolorous complaints, desiring rather her owne death, then the Dumbe Knight shold be any way harmeid.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

### CHAP. V.

How Palmerin was put into the Denne among the Lyons and Leopards, and having killed three of them, escaped valiantly.



Palmerin being brought to his Chamber, which was one of the most sumptuous in all the Pallace, according as the Princesse had appointed; he made Agne to the Gentleman that attended on him to withdraw himselfe, for he was accustomed to be alone in his Chamber, which he immediately did, being loth to offend him.

Palmerin being alone by himselfe, gave thanks to the God of heaven, who in midst of his intsofounes, caused such a gracious Lady to labour him so kindly, as defended his life when he was in danger, and by whose meanes he conceived god hope to escape his Enemites hands, and returne safely towards Almaigne. His meditations ended, he betooke himselfe to rest, and in the morning, Linus the Gentleman that had him in charge, came and persecuted him before the Soldane, who commanded him to be carryed presently to the Lyons. Alchidiana understanding that the dumbe Knight was with her daughter Linia a rich Mantle of Scarlet, desiring him to wear it for her sake: which he putting about him went stanchly with his keeper to the Lions Den, where the dooors being opened, he boldly entered, desiring God to assist him in this perill. Palmerin being in the Den, because none of the Lyons shold get sooth to hurt any other, how ever

God

### Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

The Lyons comming about him, smelling on his clothes would not touch him: but (as it were knowing the bloud roiall) lay downe at his feet and licked him, and afterward went to their places againe. But there were among them thre Leopards, that furiously came and assayled him. The foremost whereof he panted with his sword, that he was able to doe no moze harme. The other two, although they had toze his Mantle, and put him in very great danger, as they that looked in at the windowes and crevices perceived: yet to their no little admiration, in the end he slew them both, and so went forth of the Den againe, to whom Linus came, and lovingly taking him by the hand, brought him to the Soldane, to whom he discoursed his fight with the Leopards, and how gentle the Lyons had beene to him.

The Soldane greatly astonished hereat, made more estimation of him then he did before, and because the Lyons refused to touch him, reported him of Roiall parentage. Whereupon he sent for his Daugther, praying her to intreat him not as a Knight, but as a Noble and vertuous Prince, considering his behaviour so well deserved. The Princesse entertained him very graciously, and hearing the successe of his happy fortune, spake thus in the hearing of them all. Because every one shall know, Sir Knight, how much I honour your god gifts, I will cause my Father so well to love you, as he shall repent himselfe a thousand times of the danger he put you to: and so very lovingly embracing him, desired pardon on her chaine behalfe, because she suffered him to be thrust to the Lyons. Palmerin in Agne of attonement, and that he was nothing displeased, kissed her hand, and sitting downe in a Chaire by her, beheld Arclidiana, who resembled his Princesse so equall in beauty, and could not hold his eye from her, so that he conceived such pleasure in his regard, as he hadged i' sustenance enough to maintayne life. But he that was ignorant of the cause, presumed

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

sumed that he loved her, wherefore thenceforward, she began so amercingly to affect him, as she enjoyed no rest but in his presence. Thus were these two Ladies Alchidiana, and Ardemia touched with one disease, and that so sharply to the quicke, that the least torment they endured (ixing he could neither speake nor understand the language) was worse to them then death. And so it fell out, that each of them thinking her selfe best beloved, concealed her thoughts from the other, and woulde in no case be reputed amorous, least so her desires should be discovered. Alchidiana soz arguments of her loue, gave him Horses, Squires, Servans and Pages, so that the greatest Prince in the Court was not better furnished then he: and in this sorte such was his minde, that so all the honoz and favour the Soldan and his Daughter bare him, he did not outreach himselfe in behaviour, but was so courteous and benigne, that each one lou'd and desired to be familiar with him. And if any enterpri's of Jousts or Tourneys were in hand, Palmerin was the foremost in the field, and caried the prize away from all whatsover, which incited Maulicus to leue him in such sorte, that he entertained him into such speciall credit, as he would never resolve en any matter of importance, without his shew of good liking. And albeit the Princes of the Court shewed him good countenance, yet Davie (that neuer can reit in ambitious hearts) caused them in the end to raise slander against him: which Palmerin perceived, but being unable to remedie, awayted convenient time for his departure, notwithstanding the earnest affction Alchidiana bare him. He knew likewise so well to disguise his matters, that so often as the Princesse would hold him in talke, he still feigned not to understand her: which made her jealous towards Ardemia her Cosen, who by Alchidianaes injuries, and Palmerins refusall of her loue, lost her life, as you shall read in the Chapters following.

CHAP. VII.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

### CHAP. VI.

How Prince Maurice sent his Ambassadours to the Soldan, to desire safe-Conduct for his comming to the Court: to try if he could finde any Knight there, able to deliver him of an extreme trouble, that he endured by Enchantment.



In the time that Palmerin was thus esteemed and beloved, in the Court of the great Monarch of Assyria, upon a Sunday after dinner, as the Soldane was in the great Hall conferring with his Daughter, and many other great Princes and Lords present: there entered a Moorish Knight armed, except his Helmet and Gauntlets, whitch were carried after him by two Squires, and making his soleinne reverence, humbled himselfe at Maulicus feet, saying: Most higb and redoubted Monarch, my Soveraigne Lord Maurice, Prince of Palmeria, kisseth your highnesse hand, sending to require your gracious safe-Conduct, that himselfe may come to your Court, to trie among all your Knights, if there be any one so louall and valiant, as can deliver him from a torment he endures, the most cruell and strange that ever was heard of, and happened to him in this sorte.

The King of Palmeria, great Governoour of the Moores, and Father to my Lord, being unable (through extreame age) to weild the government of his Realme, gave the administration thercof, and made his Lieutenant Generall my Lord Maurice, a Knight so hardie and puissant as any of his time, and so renowned for his boontie, sagacitie, and braise

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

brave lincaments of bode : as there is none of the Kings of Iudea, Egypt, Achiopia, and the neighbouring Countes round about , but gladly desire his Alliance and Frien:shp.

So that many have sent their Embassidours unto him, presenting their Daughters and Kingdoms to him, the greater part whereof he hath hitherto refused, excusing himself by his Fathers age, and his own youth. But as often times it happeneth, Fortune enemy to all good endeavours, not suffering him to remaine in quiet, permitted that the Queene of Tharsus, the fairest in all the Orientall parts , a yong and rich Widow, as is very well knowne : after she had sent him many presents of incomparable value, intreated him to come and see her, shewing in this message, the great desirs she had to match with him. The Prince being benigne and cartercur, would not deny her, but in short time after journeyed to her. The Queene entertaining him with great ospalynge, and seeing in him farre more gracious and beautifull gifts, then before she heard reported : was so surpized with Love, as instead of looking to be swayed, herselfe was constrained to demand ; knowing so well to declare her desirous and affectionate passions, as the Prince moved with amorous pittie, granted what she requested, without any further condition or promise, she presuming on himselfe, in respect of her great and favourable entertainment; that he would not leave her for any other. But herein was she deceived, for the yong Prince having layd with her ten or twelve dayes, desired leave to depart, saying : that he had received Letters from his Father, which commanded his speedy returne home agayne, promtting her, (if so his Father consented) to take her in Marriage, and that with such expedition as might be. The Queene somewhat contented with this answer, thinking he would performe what he promised, let him depart. He being come home into his owne Country forgot his Love to his new Friend,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Friend, and by his Fathers commandement, married with a yong Princessesse, Daughter to the King Lycomedes. The Queene hearing this newes, was almost dead with very conceit of griefe, and conceived such hatred against my Lord Maurice, as she determined to be revenged on him, whatsoever came after. And the better to compasse her intent, she sent to search out one of her Knights, a learned Magician, promising him, if he would helpe her, to be revenged on him that so deceived her, she would make him one of the chieffest of her Realme. The Magician who vermoze was desirous to please her, promised her to worke such a devile, that Maurice should endure such cruell tormentes, as her selfe shold be constrained to pity him. And to accomplish this practise, he only desired the King her Fathers Crowne, which was one of the richest in the whole World : which Crowne he Conjurcd in such sort, as the Devil himselfe could not imagine the like, and comming therewith to the Queene, said:

Madam , you must send this Crowne to the Prince of Palmeria, desiring him for your sake he will weare it on his head, in the chieffest affaires of his estate, which he immediately will accomplish : but this I dare assure you, that hereby he shall suffer so many vexations, as he would endure a thousand deaths if he could possible, to be delivered from this torment, whch he shall never be, till the most loyall Lover in the world take it from his head. The Queen so joyfull hereof as could be, sent the Crown to the Prince, who received it thankfully, and beholding it so sumptuous, suddenly put it upon his head : But presently flew out of his head such a flame of fire, as it had bene the blaze that comith from a discharged Cannon. Then called he for ayde and succour, making the greatest Lamentations that ever were heard : but all was to no end, for no Knight or Ladythere could doe him any good: and so all the whole day he remained in this cruell Martyrdome, burning alive, yet

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

not perishing, resembling the Salamander in the extremes  
rie. When his Subjects saw they could procure him no  
ease, they sent two of the greatest Lozds of the Realme to  
the Duene, who humbly intreated her to pity the Prince :  
and to recompence the fault he had committed, he shold  
take her to his wife, and endow her with those honoura-  
ble possessions belonging to him. The Duene entertained  
them very nobly, and after she had understood their Mes-  
sage, she answered :

My Lord, the Partinge betwene your Prince and  
me is intolerable, and no way can he now contract him-  
selfe againe: for I remembraunce his disloyalite, and he the  
torments he suffers by my meanes, it were impossible that  
we shold loyallye lide together, therfore in this matter  
you shall excuse me. And let him know, that seeing he was  
so presumptuous, contrary to his faith and promise, to re-  
fuse me for his wife, I now so much disdaine and contemne  
him, as my heart by no meanes can be induced to lobe him.  
And no other remedie there is for his tormentes, but that he  
lacke throught Alia, Europe, and Africa, a Lober so perfect,  
wh: by his Loyaltie may easse the paine he suffers, for his  
treachery and treason. With this short answer departing  
Country: for your Master is so unworthy of favour, as for  
his sake I hate his people.

The Carballadours marvailing at this fatal Destiny,  
returned to their Lozd, to whom they reported the Duene's  
answer, and what remained to easse his affliction, which  
more and more encreased his griesse: wheresoever seeing what  
he was enoyned to doe, the next day he left the Court, en-  
tending not to stay a day in any place, till he shold finde a  
Knight so vertuous and loyall. Thus hath he travailed A-  
nthiopia, India, Tartaria, and the greater part of your Domi-  
nions, but as yet he hath found none to remedy his misfor-  
tune: but if any other disloyall Knight in tryall touch the  
Czylon, his vexations are far mozo greater then before. For

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

this cause most mighty Lord, having heard the great name  
of valiant Knights in your Court, especially of a Stranger  
Knight being dumbe, who came hither but of very late  
time: he desires your Majestie, his assurance granted, to  
luffer him to trie his fortune here, if in your presence he may  
 finde any helpe, or else to lache further in other Princes  
Courts. These are the princi pall points of my charge, may  
it please your Highnesse to consider of my answer, how I  
shall returne and certifie my Master, that you may likewise  
see an Adventure most marvellous.

### CHAP. VII.

How Prince Maurice came to the Court of the Sol-  
dane of Babylon, where he was delivered of his Burn-  
ing Crowne that tormented him, by the Loyaltie of  
Palmerin.



Aulicus, wondring at this strange dis-  
course, thus answered the Moore. You  
may (my friend) returne to your Ma-  
ster when you please, and say from us,  
that he shall be welcome to our Court,  
with as safe assurance as our own per-  
son: as well for his valour and booray  
which I have heard greatly esteemed, as for that we are ce-  
urons, to see so strange an Adventure ended in our presence.  
And we cannot sufficently marvaille, how he could be so  
forgetfull of himselfe, that after his faith plig bier, he could  
extinguish her remembrance that loved him so unfeigned-  
ly: but herein we may behold the soberalguity of confidant  
lobers. Goe then and certifie him of our pleasure, and that  
we pray our Gods his conning may be in such an houre, as  
he may depart to his content: yet am I greatly afraid that  
he shall not finde any Knight in our Court, but that eyther

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

so fainted or falled towards his Table. The Moore killing the Soldans hand, and humbly taking his leave, returned to his Lord, leaving the Soldane and his Knights admiring this rare accident, so that he exhorted every one to adven- his fortans at this Crowne, to give the greater assurance to their Ladies of their loyall fidelitie: but many of them were herein deceived, for instead of praise and glory, they receiv- ed shame and reproach, as you shall see hereafter.

The Prince advertised of the Soldans answer, in hope of good successe, set forward on his journey, and the next day following he came to Calpha, where Maulicus caused him to be honourably lodges in the Cittie, because that day he wold not come to the Pallace. On the morrow after that, Lethe wife to the Soldane, her Daughter Alchidiana, the faire Ardemia, with many other Ladies, and Princes, were come into the Hall; to see the tryall of this nobeltie: Prince Maurice understanding how the Soldane with all his Courtly assistants layd his comming, went to the Pallace, accompanied with an hundred Knights, all clad in Black mourning, in signe of their continuall sorrow for thir Princes misfortune. There was he very royally entertained, the Soldane causing him to sit by him, in a sumptuous Chaire of Estate, of purpose provided, and after many welcomes and kinde gratulations, the Soldane De- manded how he felt himselfe, and whether he sustained any easse of his torment. Ah my Lord, quoth the Prince, I cannot expresse to your Grace by the pain which I fele, be- ing a thousand times worse to me then death, & every houre enforcing me to despaire, but I must endure it with what patience I can, till incomparabile loyaltie discharge me of this burden. With these words he lamented exceedingly, so that each one was moved to pitie him, for such a burn- ing flame continued in the Crowne, and such farrous heat proceeded from his mouth, as set the Hall in verbaulons batnesse, yet he consolde nothing at all, but in ebery part was

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

was so fozmall as any other man. Wclobed Cosen, said the Soldane, for my selfe, I will not enterprize to meddle with your Cratone, for I doe not imagine my selfe so favoured of love, as I can knith that wherein so many have falled, nor would I willingly sake mine owne dishonneur, being farre unable to profit you: as for my Knights, let them make prove of their loyaltie and spare not, and see which of them can win the honour of this Adventure. Hereupon Guil- haran, Wzother to faire Ardemia first entred, and comming to the Enchanted Prince, sayd. Trust me my Lord, since I began my p[ro]fession in Love, I never committed any p[ro]fa- dice to my Lady, therefore will I try to end this Enchant- ment.

Then earnestly beholding Alchidiana, for whose love onely he came to the Court, he approached the Enchan- ted Prince, and knel so hard as he could at the C.own, but he crying aloud, sayd. God's sake Sir Knight, strive no longer, for if by disloyalty I could be cured, I see you are able to give me remedy. Alas, in all my life I never felte like paine, by any Knight that tryed his fortune, great need have you to doe sevres penance, if you will bee fa- voured by love any more, towards whom you have so he- nously offended, for my infirmite may not be holpen, but by loyaltie, armes, faithfull pursuit, constant perseverance, and such other honoured vertues esteemed in love, wherof you have not the least particular. Thus retayred this nowe Lover, more ashamed then a Virgin to be scene lightly dis- posed, and so set downe among the other Knights, whose fortune proved as effectuall as the first, to their owne dis- grace, and great torment of the languishing Prince. The Kings and ancient Princes, seeing the young Knights could doe no good, put themselves in order, each one con- ceiving so well of himselfe, as if their fortune servde to end the Adventure, their yeares should enter the honour, and they be renowned for ever by their Ladies: but their

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

vaine conceit and desire to accomplitly an impossibilitie, much abused them, so that they shamefullly remained frustrate in their intents, and the paines of the enchanted Prince greatly augmented, who thus spake to them. Truly my Lords, it is the custome of your ancient and audacious opinions, to extoll your loves and valour: but soz any thing I see, your old yeres have much lese merited amorous mercy, then the indiscreet and unconstant dealing of these young Princes. Then seeing that no other offered to prove his vertue, delivring many wretched sighes, he said: Unhappy wretch that I am, how much more had it beeene to meaze and benefit, if the Queene of Tharsius (whom I so hevily offend) wold haue contented her selfe in her rehenge, and cauie me to be peace-meale torn in sunder, then thus haue delivered me into this insupportable vexation, the end whereof will in ver be accomplished, seeing that in this honourable Court of my Lord the Seldan, I find no one can give me comfort.

Palmerin hearing the Lamentation of this amorous Party, fell into a profound iuagination, and after he had long regarded Ardemia, who so lively resembled his Mistresse Polynarda, said within himselfe: Ah sweet Madam, and my only Mistresse, wouldest at this instant to assist me, for by your succour I shall now make proesse of my faithfull and inviolable Loyalty: which never in ought offended you, if not at Durace in affecting Lauram, whom I simply thought to be the Lady, who was so often promised in my visions. But seeing my thoughts never soz led to effect, as also that I was deceived in your name: that ought not to be imputed to me for any trespass, and therfore divine Goddesse be favourable to me. Then surprised with sudaine joy, he began agayne earnestly to behold the Princesse Ardemia: who imagining her selfe onely beloved of him, cast forth a bitter Ugh, and turning to Alchidiana said: Ah Madam and my deere Colen, what great fault hath this

## Imperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

cruell Queene committed, appointing her Magique in such sort, as loyall and fathfull Ladies may not be suffered herein, for deliverance of this young and beautifull Prince doubtlesse he shalde sooner receive helpe by them then by Knights, for much more loyally doe they love then men, and are in their affections firme and constant. Alchidiana, who felt her selfe touched with this intricate furie, whereof the faire Ardemia complained: undainly conjectured whereto her sighes and faulting speches tended, which rayled private concett, and such a vehement attaint of Jealousie, as she woulde not answer a word, but feigning to smell some discontented labor, turned her face the contrary way.

Palmerin looking round about him, and seeing none would medole with the adventure: fell on his knee before the Soldane, craving leave to ligges to try his fortune, which he granted, and in a laugher said: Goe thy waies Dumbe Knight, and in such an houre maist thou touch the Crowne, that all the honore may fall to thy share. Then Palmerin having his eye fix'd on her, who in beauty did paragon his onely Mistresse, exalting his minde with an intire Ugh, secretly said:

Ah mirrour of excellency, although my body be farre distant from you: yet am I in spirit day and night in your presence, being so confidently assured of you: I v' that it is not inferiour to mine, which ver' bought makes me thinke you present before me. Wherefore chiefe Mistresse and Governesse of my life, you shal now receib. the honoz, that by the vertue of your fatchfull Servant you ought to have: for I hold my selfe towards you, so innocent and pure, as needs must answerable sufficeye, repay so god deservyng. Then I layd he hand on the burning Crowne, which he towke from his head so easly, as though no Enchantment at all had held it: and then ceased the vehement heate in Maurice, and from his mouth came odiferous and sweet labours, as every one present delighted to seele them. The

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Prince so joyfull as could be for his deliverance; as may well be conjectured, prostrated himself at Palmerins feet, and with unspeakable joy, thus said: Most Noble and fortunate Knight, how much am I bound and indebted to thee? Right happy was the houre of thy Birth, but much more happy my journey to see this: let my word suffice, I so farre deliver my selfe yours, as my selfe, my Subjects, my possessions, or whatsoever els is mine, I freely offer to your disposition. Palmerin, who ever bare the mind of a gallant Knight, was displeased that so great a Prince shold honor him with such reverence, wherefore with great humilitie he tooke him up in his armes, causing him to sit downe where before he did: But the Soldane and all his Lords greatly amazed, not so much at his curtisie, as his gracious Fortune, did him all the honour could be devised: but he baschfull of his overgreat kindeste, kneeled downe before Maulicus, shewing by signes that himselfe was altogether unworthy of such hono; but his Majestie, to whom that rich Crowne worthily appertained: which he presenting the Soldan, kastled downe to kisse his feet, but Maulicus would not suffer him, and taking him by the hand, said: Sir Knight, we heartily thank you for the great pleasure you have done us, promising you by the saith of a Prince, that this Crown shall be kept in our Treasury, to witnes that we had in our Court, the most loyall and honorable among all Knights. In recompence whereof, we give you this Caste, with all th' appurtenances thereto belonging, and to morrow we will put you in possession thereof. Oh that it pleased the immortall powers, and their great Prophet Mahomet, to deliver you speech whereof you are desirous: For I sweare by their high immortall Name, we would make you the greatest in all our Kingcomes. Palmerin with humble gesture returned his thankfulness, signifying that he wold have neither Cities nor Castles, but that it suffised him to be one of his Knights: Notwithstanding the Prince by im-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

fortunate means gave him rich gifts, and so; his sake stayed there moze then two moneths.

### CHAP. VIII.

How the Princesse Ardemia, enduring extreme Passions and torments in Love, made offer of her affections to Palmerin, which he refused: wherewith the Princesse ( through extreme conceit of griefe and despaire) suddenly dyed.



Allmay be conjectured, the great pleasure o' the two faire Ladys Alchidiana and Ardemia, beholding the onely man whom they both loved as their lives, aspiring to obtaine the honour of the Enchanted Crowne. For each of them severally perswaded herselfe, that he had this adventured in honour of her Love. And as they returned from the great Hall to their private Chambers, Alchidiana came and tooke Palmerin by the hand, and walking onwards with him, thus spake:

Ah gentle Knight, how are you to be regarded above all other? I knew not why the Gods shold despise you of speech, except that in all things, this onely excepted, you should be perfectly resembled to them. Oh how happy is she that might but adventure to make you her Servant? Doubtless, if in her appeare so singular perfections, as apparently shew themselves in you: Well might it be reputed a rare conjunction, when the Celestiall dispositions governing their humaine affections, hath united you in so amiable alliance.

The Gentleman that attended on the Princesse, greatly murmured at this private familiarite: but sh was so

immo-

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

immoderate in her affections, as Virginall modestie was now forgotten, and carelesse of regard, openly shewed her desires. Thus were these two Ladies now, much more amorous of the Dumbe Knight then before : So that they were not well, but ey. her in his company, or thinking on him. Alchidiana remayning jealous of her Cosen, seemed not to loke her as she was wont, but devised all the means she could, that she might be sent to her Fathers Court againe : yet she that little made account therof, sought opportunity to bewray her Love to Palmerin, and by chance seeing Alchidiana in the Gallery, consering with two of her Ladies, she entred alone into her Cosenis Chamber, where sitting downe on the Bed, she compasid many Imaginations, how she might discover to the Dumbe Knight, the secret fire that was kindled in her Breast. So long she staid there, till Palmerin came, because about that time he continually visited the Princesse Alchidiana. Ardenia so glad hereof as could be possible, suddenly started up, and saluting him with more then common Reverence, taking him by the hand, and causing him to sit downe by her upon the Bed. When enflamed with wonderfull passions, surpassing Pasiphae's desire to the bruyish Bull, when she met him in the Wood made by Dedalus, she beheld him with such a piercing Countenance, as the least glimpse whereof, was able to confound the reason of the most constant person, as the aspect of the Sunne in the signe Leo, both the eyes of the beholders, and of force to warm the coldest complexion, although it were an Gunnach himselfe in her presence. Then delivering thre or fourre bitter sighes, secht from the very bottome of her heart, as cruell as the Striving pangs of death : She tooke a rich Diamond from her finger, and put it on Palmerins, with these words :

O sweet friend, and onely comfort of my Soule, let me intreat you to weare this as an argument of my love, thereby to know, how well I esteeme of you, assuring

you,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

you, that I am so devoted yours : as if you bouchsafe to grant me the fader, and honer as to goe with me to the Court of my Father, I never will have any other Husband but you, and there shall such account be made of you, as well becometh a Knight so noble and vertuous.

Ah divine defense of my life, and more worthy to be belov'd then Love himselfe, misdee me not of my speeches so adventurously uttered by a yong unmarried Ladz : for the seruent love I bear you is such, as I am constrained (for getting the decent regard of a baithfull Virgin, who naturally is shamefaced) to esteeme of you honestlie, and as is convenient to mine estate. Then seeing the Gods, the place, the occasion, and the time permits me to bewray, that which I dare not otherwise manifest : Have then, faire Knight, some pity on me, and let me enjoy assurance of that grace, for which I live in ceaseless torment. With which wordes she embrased him, and sealed so many sweet kisses on his hand, as apparantly deciphered her earnest affection.

Palmerin amazed at this stranges accident, because she was a Pagan, and contrary to him in faith, therfore made no answer, but following the example of chaste Ioseph, who refused Zephirah wile to Patiphar great Provost to the King of Egypt ; started from her subtilty, and being moved with displeasure, departed the Chamber, thinking in himselfe, that such occasions moxe over rule the hearts of men, then all other matters that might be devised, and only the pracieles of Hellish Pluto. Then calling to his Ladyes assistance, said to himselfe. Ah sweet Milresse, succour now your Servant, for I rather desire a thousand deaths, then to violate the chaste honour of my Louis, or to giue that favour to this Lady which is onely yours. Alchidiana, by chance seeing Palmerin when he entred her chamber, and perceiving him to depart againe imagined presently the truth of the cause : wherefore entring the Guarderoobe, which was adjoyning to her Chamber, she closely stood and heard

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

heard all that had passed, and at his comming sooth stayed him in this manner.

Not without great cause (good Knight) didst thou take the fatall Crowne from the head of Maurice, for in thee is more stetnesse and continencie, then is in the destroyall Ardemias unchaste desires and villany: but in an unse time did she rip open her unmaiden-like affections, so I wil publish her shame to every one, and cause her to be lesse esteemed then a knowne offender.

Palmerin fearing that in her Choler she would doe no lesse then he said, fell on his knee before her, intreating her by Agnes to forbear, or otherwise it would be his death.

She seeing him so faire and gracious, and thus to humble himselfe at her feet, qualified her displeasure, promising to keepe it in secret. So Palmerin withdrew v himselfe to his Chamber, leaving the two Ladres now together: but Ardemia grieved at the Dumbe Knights refusal, would not reveale her minde to Alchidiana ( who so soones as Palmerin was out of hearing ) thus began. Why? Shamefull Ardemia, thinkest thou thy Beuty of such value, that th. Knight, to whom my Father and I haue done so great honours, would leau us, and depart with thee? Trust me thou art farre frome thine account: For if thou hauntest to doe him such honour in thy Fathers Court, as his possibility deserueth, it consisteth in my power to exalt him moore in one houre, then thou canst doe in a thousand yeares, migh test thou live so long. I did never thinke that such audacious and incontinent tempting a man could ever enter thy heart: but if such be thy disposition, thou oughtest rather to containe thy selfe within thy Fathers Court, where thou mayst have leisure to follow thy base affection, with some Virgins or Porters attending on thy Father, then to offer such a motion here in my Chamber. hence, hence, forth of my presence: For I will not keepe companye with such an inconsteitall woman. What regard hadst thou of thy

great

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

great Linage, or the place from whence thou art descended: Yea, what comfort will it be to me, when I shall haere that a Lady issued of the Blood royall, should be moare shamefesse and impudent then a Trumpet, a villain, or an highway Begger? Many other such like hard speeches used Alchidiana, all which greeved her not so much, as to be despised of him, whom she reputed as passionate for her love, as she was for his.

These high words of the Princesse, caused the Ladies attending on Ardemia to enter the Chamber, which made her then breake off, because she would not have every one know the matter: and they seeing their Mistresse so sad and discomfited, brought her to her owne Chamber, where on her Bed she sorrowed so impatiently, as each one feared she would injurie her selfe, and saime she would, but that their presence hindered her, therfore she desirred it till better opportunitie. And because she had spent the most part of her yonger yeres, in reading the workes of Poets, as well Greekes as Arabians, she remembred the mournfull Tragedie of Biblis: which caused her to framie a Dittie, that she had translated from the Greeke Poetrie of Sappho, into her vulgar speech, and turning towards her Ladies and Gentlewomen, she began in this manner.



### The lamentable Dittie of Ardemia, dying for Love.

Myse not (faire Virgins) at Ardemia,  
Although her end be hard and dolorous:  
For Death is pleasant as mine Elders say,  
To any Ladie sometime amorous.

For

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

For as the Swan in cold Meander glide,  
By mournfull notes foretelles her speedy death ;  
So my complaint doth bid me to provide,  
For sweetest Love makes hast to stop my breath.

The Ill that endlesse and uncessantly  
Torments my heart, is faire and choicest beauty :  
And this unhappy awkward Destiny,  
Falls to my Lot through spotlesse toyality.

For fond conceit that over-rul'd by wit,  
More wretched then faire Biblis maketh me :  
And he I love more stony hard is knit,  
Then Caunes who could ken no curtesie.

Yet Biblis oftentimes could ease her heart,  
By sweet devising with her louely friend :  
But he I honour, wrecks not of my smart,  
Nor will vouchsafe one gracious looke to lend.

And as her sorrowes chiefly did arise,  
Because the secrets of her Love were knownne :  
So I reveal'd, each one will me despise,  
Which death can stint, ere it too farre be blowne.

Unhappie wretch, that could not this foresee,  
And be more charie of so choice a thing :  
But all too late I with the remedie,  
Therefore my folly doth due guerdon bring.

If Love that is esteem'd a Power Divine,  
Unto his Servants give so sharpe reward :  
What merit may vise hatred then resigne,  
Unto his fassilis that his Lawes regard ?

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

Oft have I heard mine ancient Elders say,  
That such as love not, are unworthy life :  
Yet doth my love imagine my decay,  
And throwes my hope into whole worlds of strife.

And yet the paines I wish for my mischance,  
May not be valued with my present woe :  
For to compare them is meere dalliance,  
And neither sense or reason should I show.

Life is to me lothsome and burdenous,  
All pleasure seemes to me tormenting Hell :  
A poore, refus'd, and abused thus,  
Must thou needs die for loving all too well ?

O sacred Venus, Patronesse of Love,  
In this distresse wilt thou not pitie me ?  
And thy faire Sonne that thus his shafe did prove,  
Will he forsake me in this jeopardie ?

If you forsake me in this just request,  
And will not favour what you did procure :  
Give leave to him that bringeth all to rest,  
And he will ease the tormentes I endure.

You fatall Sisters that have spun my thred,  
And now think good it should be cut in twaine :  
Fulfill the taske as you are destined,  
And let my heart abide no longer paine.

Come sweetest Death, expected too too long,  
End all the Ils unhappy Love begun :  
If thou delay, I challenge thee of wrong,  
Hast then good Deare, that Love and Life were done.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Her Complaint thus finished, she commanded her Ladies to depart the Chamber, and being alone by herself, she againe began to consider, the rigorous resusall of Palmerin, the conceit whereof grieved her so extreame-ly, as also the reproachfull words of her Cosen: that making a conscience of her sorowes, and raving with extremitie of this despight, bzaile the vexnes of her heart in sun-der, and the Arteries of her body, as the blood issued forth at many places abundantly, and therewithall in short time she was strangled.

The next Morning, her chiefe Ladye that attended on her, and lobed her excadingly, came to the Beddes side, to see how she fared: but finding her dead, and so besmeared with her owne bloud, gave such a loued shrieke, as Alchidiana and her Damozels affrighted with the noyse, ran in all haste into the Chamber. The Princesse knowing the cause of this mischance, was maruellous sorrowfull, assuring her selfe that those words she spake in her anger, occa-sioned this bloudis Stratagem. And the rumoer of this mis-hap was so soone spread thjorugh the Vallace, as all the La-dies, Damozells, Knights, Squires, and others, came to be-hold the hard Fortune of Ardemia. What Lamentation was made on all sides, is not to be expressed, especially the Ladies attendant on Ardemia, and her Brother Guil-haran, who brought her with him thither: but her Governesss not able to endure the burthen of her heabiness, without feare or dread of any, thus openly couplayned. Ah sweet Princesse Ardemia, the flower of Beauty, how dare hast thou bought this precious gift: so I know assuredly, that so this cause onely thy death happened: Unhappie was the houre when thou didst leave thy Fathers Court, to accom-pany the Princesse Alchidiana. After her moanes, and the Funerall Pompe accomplished, the Soldane erected her a most beautifull Tombe, with a sumptuous Coronet on the Top thereof, being upheld by two inestimable Pillars of

engraven

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

engraven and gilded Alabaster, the like whereof were ne-ver stane, since the first King of Grecce. Yet was he igno-rant in the cause of her death, and Palmerin not imagi-ning whence this inconveniencie did arise, was so sorrow-fall for the death of the Princesse: as day and night hee mourned for her, and at length remembryng her wordes to him, and doubting his unkindnesse to be the cause of her death, said within himselfe.

Alas faire Princesse, wist I (at the first motion) dyde thee to despaire? Had I dismbled a little, or temporized the matter, thou hadst not fallen into this extremitte, but my onely wilfull indiscretion, is cause of thy losse. O se-male sexe, howe are you subject to casuall passions? Yet need I not wonder at this present mishap, for from the beginning of the world, Women have bene so sudebene and voluntary to effect their desires, were they good or evill: but especially in the action of Love, as myther sores, hones, shams, tormentis, no nos death could divert them from their undiscerte fantasies. Whereas beare record, Hypeimne-stra, Myrrha, Dejanira, Scylla, Phedra, Thisbie, Oenone, Phyllis, Salinacis, Hero, and Dido, whose deatthes were procured onely by lavish Love. O divine Wisedome, that hast suffered me to fall into this lucklesse accident, protect me from any farther disadvantage, seeing thou hast ta-kon her hence, who gave somes ease to mine affections, in that so livelyshe resembled my sweete Willresse, whom I desire to serue with continuall loyalty, I now perswade my selfe, that this love was not accompanied with vertue, and that so my god it hath happened so: forget me not then, but so enable me, as in such bad occasions, I swarve not from my duty. And such is my confidence in thy pro-mises, as no temptation shall predaile against me: but this captiuitie once discharged, I hope to direct my course plea-sing to thy sight, and to perfrome such gracious service, as thy name shall be exalted and glorified for ever. So long con-

D

tinued

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Stayed he in this silent contemplation, as Alchidiana perceived him, which greatly displeased her: but fearing any way to offend Palmerin, she durst not say what she thought, living in hope, that her Colon being dead, she should now compass the effect of her desires. Ardemia entered in her honourable Chamber, Guilharan her brother with his traine, and the Ladies that attended on his Master, returned into Armenia, where great sorrow was made for the death of the Prince: and the renowne of her beautie, blazed the report of her death through every Region.

### CHAP. IX.

How Amarano of Nigrea, Eldest Sonne to the King of Phrygia, understanding the death of the faire Princess Ardemia, who was newly promised him in marriage, made many grievous lamentations for her losse. And how Alchidiana discovered her amorous affections to Palmerin.



So farre was spread the report of the strange death of the Princess Ardemia, as at length it came to the hearing of Amarano, eldest Son to the King of Phrygia, the most valiant and redoubted Knight of that Country: as well for his great powesse and bodes of armes, which he before that time accomplished in Asia, as for his assable nature, vertue and carresse. This yong Prince, being in the King his Fathers Court, and hearing the faire Ardemia daughter to the King of Armenia commended above all other Ladies of the Caste: at the very sound of this blazing Goddess, and setting the noyses downe for true,

from

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

from affecting spacie, he became so amorous of her, as he had no content but in thinking on her. Whereupon, he sent her Ambassadors to her Father, to request her in mariage, whereto right willingly he consented, and now at the instant, when he intended to goe vist her, newes came to the Court of her admirable death, which for a while was conteled from him, because each one feared the conceit thereof would cause his death. For they knowing the loue he bare her to be so vehement, as he understanding her strange kinde of death, they thought it impossible, but it would arise to very scandalous inconuenience, yet in the end he heard thereof: but to set downe here the griesse teares, and complaint of this yong Prince, is mode then I am able, let it therefore suffice you, that his sorowes were such, as every heare his death was likewise expected. It was likewise told him, how through the entrie of Alchidiana, she dyed, and that (for certainty) she was one of the chiefe causes thereof: which moved him then into such an alteration, as he swore by the great Prophet Mahomet, to revenge her iniurie, so that the Soldans should for ever remember the danger in suffering so great a treason. In conclusion, he intended to take with him, two hundred chosen knyghts, all clad in mourning for the griesse of their Master, and sone of his brethen, knyghts of great hardinesse, and so well they journeyed, as they came within twenty miles of the Soldans Court. But that we may not too farre swarbe from our intent, Alchidiana, forfay (as you have heard for the departing of Guilharan and his company: from thenceforward sought all the meaneas we could, to conferre with Palmerin alone at her pleasure. And labooring thus in her tormenting passions, as it is common to all Lovers, such account she made of her Beautie and riches, as shes imagined that Palmerin would no disdaine her: but rather would repaire himselfe happy, to have that at his pleasure, wheresoever so many Kings and great Lords had

W.

had

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

had been venged. And in this opinion, the next time that Palmerin came to her Chamber, she began with him in this manner.

How Sir Knight, what thinke you of the death of Ardemia, who falsely would have seduced you to goe with her hence? Did she not commit great treason against me if she had prevaricated? But right well is she rewarded, and as I desired. Thinke then no worse of her presumptuous follie, or the ridiculous conceit of her vaine Love, which she had made her pretence, to cause you to forsake my Fathers Court: where you have received so many speciall honours, chiefe-ly of his Daughter, who loves you dearly, and intends to make you Lord of all her Possessions. Believe me Sir Knight, if hitherto I deserved to acquaint you herewith, it was in respect I doubted her: But now she being gone, esteem hencesorth of me as your owne, and to begin this our Alliance, I honour you with all that is mine, and my selfe to be disposed at your pleasure. For my heart, which is onely subject to you, applies it selfe to your liking, and can wish nothing but what you will command.

How long habe I desired this happy day? How often have I contemned and despised my selfe, in not daring to breake the seale of my affections, which now I have adven-tured to your knowledge? As soj that which now trou-bleth me, is onely the want of your speche, which the Gods have deprivid you of, being envious of your manifold per-fections. Alas my Lord, why did they not endue thee with that benefit? That in declaring my desires, thy answers might retorne reciprocall pleasures?

None in their love delight themselves with embacing, kissing, and such ceremoniall behaviour: as soj me, amou-rous, private, and familiar conference, I repute a chesc content. Yet hath Love one chaste in his Quiver moje plea-sing them all these, being the onely argument of each others resolution: In respect wherof I commit my Honour into your

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

your protection, prizing, esteemming, and chusing you above all men in the world beside. Palmerin exceedingly abashed at this answer, and having recourse to his onely comforter, lifting his eyes to Heaven, thus privately Invocated. O my God, deliver me from this enemy, and suffer me not to fall in consent to this temptation: for I thinke her a Diuell in-carnate, and sent to deceive me. Impossible is it that a Woman, by nature modest and bashfull, should harbour such un-chaste imaginations: This conceit hereof so vexed and offended him, that the Princesse feared he would have dy-ed: not with conceit that like hap might come to Alchidia-na, as did to Ardemia, but because he should so wickedly sin against his owne soule, and safisfie his Love to his sweete Mistresse. Yet knowing that this sadness woulde not safisfie the Princesse, he signed to swanne, his colour chan-ging in such sorte, as one would have judged him past recov-ery. Alchidiana was so grieved hereat, as she could not imagine what to say: but seeing that Palmerin seemed now not to understand her, and before had by signes still revealed his meaning, said: By our great God, it may well be said, that this man is a huge lamente of flesh, which the diuell hath enchanted to torment me withall, or else some other shaddow and resemblance: For he refuseth what all men desire, yea, and often despaire, because they cannot attaine it. But fearing lest her end would imitate her Cosenes, or that the Dumbe Knight shoulde dye in her presence, she durst presume no further, but threw her selfe dolene upon a wallet, not able to speake, her Comackie was so enraged. Which Palmerin soon perceiveng arose out of his signed Trance, and gibing a great sigh, departed the Chamber, and went to his owne. The Princesse seeing him gone, began to weape and lament very grabeuse, and in midst of her melancholy, fell into these speches. You Gods, how can you suffer one so contrary to nature, as is this Dumbe Knight, to live among men? Can you behold that he whom

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

I deliv'red from death, brought into the grace of my Father, and to whom I have done more honour then had he boene mine owne brother: will not regard me? But against reason, disdainety, refuseth, maketh no reckoning of my colours, and setteth at nought my earnest intreaties? Ah un-discreet and carelesse Cirtie, thy folly at this time too much over-ruled thee, that knowing thine owne estate and high linage, wouldest submit thy selfe to love one unknowne to thee, and of whom thou canst have no answer, more then of a seacelesse stocke of stone. If I can now learnes to hate him, it will be some comfort to me: but the more he insurge eth me, the more am I devoted to his love. Then again she contayned her selfe in this sort. Yet seeing it is so ingrateful wretch as thou art, I will cause thee (ere it be long) to repent thy villany. In this anger she continued all the day, not comming sooth of her Chamber, intending thenceforward utterly to despise him: but the first time she saw him again, she repented him so lovely, faire, and gracious, that (to dye) she could not wish him any harme, but loved him much better then before. Yet to recover her owne inconstancie, she sent him no more presents, nor did him such honour as she was accustomed, whch Palmerin well perceived, but he could vissimble it in such sort, as the Prince hardly might decipher him. For he lived in hope of the Soldane promise, whch he had made to his deceased Father, to send his Brethren to Constantinople, in whose company he might travaille thither, and so escape the Turkes and Moorish Invaders.

CHAP. X.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

CHAP. X.

How Amariano Prince of Nigrea, came to the Soldane Court, to accuse Alchidiana, as cauler of the death of the faire Princesse Ardemia her Cosen.



Wring the tyme that the Princesse Alchidiana dissimiled not to love Palmerin, the Prince Amariano of Nigrea, came within a dayes Journey of the Isle of Calpha, where he remained to rest himselfe a little. In the meane tyme he sent an Ambassadour to Maulicus, cravynge assuranc for his commynge to his Court, to accuse one that was neare about him. The Ambassadour being arrived, and his Message understand, the Soldane answered, that he shoulde have what securite he woulde demand: for to the Prince Amariano (quoth he) nor the meanest of his people, shall anything be misdone, nor to him or them that shall defend the cause of the accused. And greatly amazed was the Soldane at these tydings, considering the distance betwene Calpha and Phrygia: wherefore he supposed that some body had injured the Prince since his arrivall. Notwithstanding (quoth he to the Ambassadours) that your Lord may stand in no doubt of treason, you shall have our loyng Letters to him: and let presently be proclaimed through the City, by sound of Trumpet, the safe conduct of the Prince and his traine. The Ambassadours returned with their Letters to the Prince, who sofull of these newes came to the Citie: but before he woulde appioach the Court, he went to the Tombe of the Princesse Ardemia, and if he made such lamentations, when he bat heard of her death. What judgment may

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

be set downe of his moanes, being now at the Sepulcher of his best beloved. Ah inconstant Fortune, quoth he, why wouldest thou not permit me to see her living? Ah Ardemia, accomplished with admirable beautie, great was her Unne, who cubyng the perfections, procured the euell death: yet this is my comfort, that I shall finde time enough to revenge thy undeserved mishap, and he that dare gaine, say me (with her the Author of thy tragedie) shall receive such condigne punishment, as shall remayne soverain in mem'ry.

These complaints delivred with exceeding sorrow, his Wethren persuaded him, that such behaviour before meid not so great a Prince: therefore he shold reserue those offices to effeminate persons, who make a God of their violent passions. As for him, he shold thinke on nothing, but his mostall manner of revenge. Amarano ashamed of his owne folly, mounted on Horselbacke, and came to the Palace, where he and his Wethren entred armed, and the Prince being a man of a godly personage, had so stearne and ferce a countenance, as he was generally reputed a hardie Knight, and his Wethren very little inferiour to him. He being come into the presence of Maulicus, saluted him with great reverence, but not kylling his hand as others were accustomed, because he was not his Subject, neyther came for peace, but matter of Warre and death: after long pause, in that the remembraunce of his griesse somewhat impeached him, he began to the Soldane in this manner,

Mighty Lord, and redoubted Monarch of Asia, being assured of the equall justice, whiche you afford to all persons without exception: I doubt not but you will punish the partie abiding in the Court, be his or her calling never so great, who by disloyall treason hath too much dishonored me. For which cause, reposing my hope in your noble vertue, I have left my Countrey, and adventured into your

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

presence, to accuse your Daughter Alchidiana, whom (so please you to call before this assembly, I will charge: that she by false and spightfull hatred, as a most cruell and disloyall Lady, trayterously murdered her Cosen the Prince Ardemia. And because this Villanie hath hitherto bene concealed very secret, in respect it could not easly be verified: I am here ready to prove in open field, against any of your Knights that dare maintaine her cause, how the treason before rehearsed, was committed by her, in revenge whereof, she ought to be rewarded with sharpe and shamefull death.

The Soldane meruailing at this accusation, said. By the reverence of all our Gods, Prince Amarano, I cannot be persuaded, that it could at any time enter my Daughters thought, to perpetrate an offence so abominable: but because reason commandeth that I doe justice, I will send for her, promising you, that if she be found culpable in your accusation, she shall have such punishment, as your selfe shall rest contented therewith. Then he commanded two Kings to goe fetch the Princesse, who being come, sate down by her Father, her accuser not daigning to salute her; once to move from the place where he sate. This day had Maulicus, for the better defens of his person, caused fiftie hundred armed Knights to attend on him, the greater part whereof, (seeing the pride of the Prince of Nigrea) would furiously haue ranne upon him, saying, that he shold repent his folly: but the Soldane offendred thereat, caused a Herald presently to proclaimme, that in paine of death, no one should harme or offend the Prince, nor any in his company, and whosoever did otherwise, should presently dye for breaking his commandement, thus framing his speeches to the Prince, said. Amarano, now maist thou behold my Daughter before the: disburden the greife of thy minde to her, and justice shall be done the to thine owne desire. Imagins, quoth the Prince, that such as know

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

know you Madame Alchidiana, will not a little mar-vile, seeing you accomplished with such gracieus beauty, that you thulo so farre forget your selfe, as to commit treason. But because a matter so unlikely, demandeth as baird a profe, I will averre with mine owne person in Combat, against any one that daie suppost your quarrell: that you are guilty in the accusation already alledged, and principally cause of the death of the Armenian Prince your Cosen. To revenge which infamous wrong, I have taken my Country, travalling night and day, and have presented my accusation before your Father, with this condition: that if your Knight shall be vanquished, you are to be punished as a cause so weighty requireth. If it be my soule to be fyled, and your Champion victor, I shall yeld my selfe as conquered, and demand no better recompence, for it cannot grieve me to remaine with her boode, whose very remembrance keepeth me alive: this said, he went and sate downe by me.

The Soldane, who was a man of great wisdome, and well considering the matter, seeing the accuser perissh so confidently in his words, knew not what to answer. Yet as a vertuous Prince, he spake to his Daughter in this manner. Alchidiana, you have heard the pacheys of the Prince, abisse your selfe well of your answer: for which of you both shall be found attainted in the crime, be it Leue Majestatis, or other kinde of treason, shall be punished according as the cause requireth.

CHAP. XI.

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

### CHAP. XI.

How Palmerin seeing that none of the Soldans Knights would adventure for Alchidiana against Amarano, enterprised himself in her cause in Combate. And how the Queene of Tharsus sent him a sumptuous Helmet.



Alchidiana having heard the accusation of Amarano, and that he had spoken so slanderously of her in the presence of the Soldane: incensed with marbuious anger and disdain, returned him this answer. Amarano, the most rash and un-discreet Knight that ever I saw, I wonder how thy folly could make thee so audacious, to come to accuse me of Treason (against all truth) before my Father and his Nobilitie. But thy speeches well noted and considered, shew nothing but careless youth, arrogancie, and too vaine glorious conceit: chiefly in this, that thou armes Cap-a-pe, and accompanied with so many well appointed Knights, comest in this sort to molest a pale Maiden, who never to thee or thine committed any offence, but all serviceable honour, especially to her, qm whose behalfe thou offereſt the Combat. As for the vaiglant thou repuest in thy selfe, that moutte which thisander both encourage thee withall, colouring thy hardinesse and resolution of heart: thou oughtest rather oppose agaist a Knight able to answer thee, then a sillie Virgin, who hath no weapon but her Honour wherewith to defend her selfe. I confesse I am a Lady, but not trayterous or false, as thou aboucheſt, yet of so noble couraſe, as were I of thy here, thou never shouldest de part this Hall, before I had that conspiring head from thy Shoulders, to witnesſe thy

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

thy falsehood and malevolent spirit. Notwithstanding, as I am, so please my Lord and Father, with a Witchin cudgell I shall let thee know, that thou dolest in thy speeches, and against thine own conscience chargest me, with the murther of my Cosen. Examine thy thoughts, what likely reason might induce me to such an offence? If she was faire, thanks to our Gods, mine owne talente is so good, as I need not envie her beauty. If she made account of her rich dowerie, I being sole heire to the Signories of the Soldane, nught judge my selfe faire beyond her, being desired in marriage by many Kings and Princes, whereof I am well assured she never had the like. I know not then what cause shold any way induce me to request her death: but what need I make such protestations to thee? Seeing that by some one of my Fathers Knights thy pride will be abated, and I revenged of the injurie thou hast done me. Amarano not answering her a word, spake to the Soldane in this sort,

It is not decent my Lord, that a Prince or Knight of quality, should stay on the words of a Woman so little considerate, who more by anger than vertue, thinks to reproove and annihilate a true accusation. Wherefore, according to the agreement before determined, call for y Knight, that dare undertake the quartell of your daughter, to whom I will manifest in plain Combat, that what I have said is truth: and if he be vanquished, your Daughter Alchidiana and he shall bee burned together, as the greatnessse of the offence well deserbeth: contrariwise, if Fortune deny me successse, I will request no other justice, then what shall please you to appoint for me. Mauleus seeing that well he could not deny the Prince, though to his grieve, pronounced the sentence, that his Daughter that day should present a Knight, to sustaine her cause, according to his conditions alleadged. This hard prescription, made never a Knight willing to adventure the Combate, so much they feare

## Emperour of Constantiople. PART.2.

feared Amarano, for the great report they heard of his prouesse, but stood all silent, as though themselves were condemned to death. Alchidiana seeing the courage falle of somany Knights, whom she esteemed for men of great accound, knew not to whom she shold have recourse, and therfore overcome with exceeding sorow, but that her Ladys affilid her, had twice or thrice swoaned before her Father.

Palmerin beholding her, and knowing that his refusall, was greater cause of Ardemias death, then the injurious words of Alchidiana: pitying her estate, and having before his eyes the lobe she bare him, the great honours was done him for her sake, and the puillanimity of the Soldans Knights, was so moved, as forgetting all danger, and his dismembled dumbnesse, which hitherto he had so curiously obserued: as though he had been borne in that Country, he thus began in the Arabian tongue.

Th cowardly Captaines, unworthy henceforth the name of Knights, how can your hearts endure, that a proud and presumptuous Prince shall come into your presence, falsely to accuse your Lady and Princesse, and not one of you daring to defend her right? By the Celestiall powers, well may you be accounted heartlesse men, and in suffering this wrong, to be depryed of all noble Titles, and to be sold in the Market as slaves and Villaines: thinke you the Prince Amarano is come hither for any other intent, then to make tryall of his great hardinesse? Can you be destitute of reason, and so easilly abused, as to think that the Princesse Alchidiana whom Nature hath so worthily enriched with beauty, and with whom no other may make comparison, could be provoked to murther Ardemia, for this onely occasion, because she was faire? And you Lord Amarano, for a matter so slender, have you enterprized to blame a Lady so vertuous, as is the Princesse Alchidiana? I accept the Combate on her behalfe, avouching, that shamefully and without reason you have accused her, behold me ready like- wise,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

wise, to maintaine in open field, that falsely and malici-  
ously thou lyest in thy thzoate: in witnes whereof, there  
is my Sage, and I beseech your highnesse affoyd us pre-  
sently Judges, that may discerne the issue of our Combat.  
I take thy ester, quoth the Prince, and before the Hulset  
will give theo the paynient that belong to such an audacious  
companien.

Who can now imagine the joy of Maulicus and his  
Daughter, seeing him whom they repused dumbe by na-  
ture, thus to receve his speach? Assuredly they were all so  
amaz'd, that they thought Mahouict had come from the  
Clouds to perfourme this miracle. The Soldane thus sur-  
prised with unspeakable comfort, lozetting the Majestie  
of his person, caught Palmerin in his armes, saying: Ah  
good Knight, how may this be? Dremme I? O doth but  
my fancie delude me with your speach? O Mahomet, soz e-  
ver be thou praised for this great grace. By the highest  
God, I am more joyfull of his god Fortunes, then had I gai-  
ned the fairest Island in the Mediterranean Sea. Now  
will I dismay no longer of my Daughters fortune, seeing  
that you take her quarrell in hand, and soz her sake will co-  
bate with Amarano: with all my heart I grant you the  
Field, and thynke that my Daughter will not deny it.  
But tell me noble Friend, how have you so happily re-  
covered your speach? Palmerin abashed that he had so for-  
gotten himselfe, knew not what excuse to make, never-  
thelesse, seeing now there was no remedie, and that the  
stones throwne could not be recalled: imagined some likely  
similitude of his subtillue speach, saying. I promise you  
my Lord, that the certitude of your Daughters innocency,  
and the great grise I conceyde, seeing your Knights so  
cowardly and faint in courage, moved me into such chal-  
lenger, as the Catarie which of long time hath hindered my  
speach, dissolveth it selfe, and bath given my tongue liberty  
to reveale, what I was enforde to bewray before by  
signes,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

signes. And this is not a thing altogether strange: soz  
I have heretofore read in histories, that a Knight called  
Agle Samien,dumb from his birth: when one of his com-  
panions would usurpe the honour of a victory, which justly  
appertained to him: was so enraged and incensed with dis-  
pleasure, as that very passion, with the helpe of the Gods,  
restored his speech. And thus hath it happened to me, soz  
which I honour their names with immortall thanks, not  
so much for my speaking, as that I may now declare my  
earnest affection to doe you service, and faire Alchidiana  
your daughter, to whom I am so greatly indebted, soz the  
manifold honours she hath done me without desert, as I  
that never be able to make recompence. Ah my noble friend  
(quoth the Soldan) this liberal offer for the defensio[n] of my  
Daughters honour, contents me in such sorte, as both he and  
I remaine to require your paynes. Amarano amazed at  
the brade disposition of Palmerin, but especially, at the great  
honour Maulicus did him, knew not well what to think:  
and did not the seare of reproach over-take him, I thinke he  
would have deserred the Combate till another yeare. But  
withstanding to cover his new opinion, he bethought him  
of a prettie subtillty, and said: I beseech your Majestie to  
tell me, of whence this Dumbe Knight is, to whom our  
Gods (by miracle) hath restored such brauing language? It  
is necessary that I know what he is, and whence he is  
descended, because the Knight being enterpris'd soz two such  
Princesse, as sometimes was the faire Ardemia, and your  
Daughter present: if he be not the Sonne of a King as I  
am, he may not be permitted the field with me. Amara-  
no (answered the Soldan) I know not what he is, soz till  
this time he hath continued dumbe in our Court, to him  
therefore you shall frame your demand: For this opinion  
I hold of him, that he will answer you nothing but truth.  
But if you goo about so craftily to excuse your selfe, each  
one may judge that in you, which bat ill besemes the minde  
of

## The Hitory of Palmerin D'Oliva.

of a Nobleman, that is, to be double in your speach. And (whitch is moxe) he being a Knight as good as your selfe, you may not refuse him, because you demanded the Combat against any Knight in my Court, and in your challenge made no exception. Perswade your selfe then (quoth the Prince) that if ye be not the Sonne of a King, he shall not enter the Field against me: wherefore if he be none such, he hath not to meddle with armes in this cause, and so the Fight on his behalfe is finisched. If thou make such doubt, (said the Soldane) of him, aske him the question thy selfe: I hope he is able to resolve thee, in these subtil cabis and so phisicall questions.

During this contention, there entred the Vall a faire yong Damosell, bearing betweene her hands a godly Helmet; the richest and most beautifull that ever was seene, and falling on her knees before the Soldane, with such gracieous salutation as God with her dute: she demanded whitch was Amarano of Nigrea, whos of enbie had accused his Daughter, and whitch likewise was the Dumbe Knight, who enterprised her defence. Maulicus without any other inquisition, shewed them both to her: whereupon the Damosell arose, and comming to the Prince, thus began.

Amarano of Nigrea, the Queen of Tharsus, my Lady and Mistresse, being certain that this day thou wouldest be in this place, sent me hither to advise thee, that the Dumbe Knight is of higher Linage then thou art: and such a one he is, as the greatest Lord or Prince may not compare with him in Bountie. And if thou wilst know the certainty of his Willing, moxe then any other as yet doth: she adviseth thee (for thy profit) to deale from the Combate whereto thou hast challenged him, in defence of thy false accusation against Alchidiana. And further she also doth admonish thee, that if thou doest not as she commandeth, the Knight late dumbe, surpassing all other in knyghtly Chivalry, shall overcome thee, and thou shalt not be able to stand against him. Damosell

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

mosell (quoth the Prince,) you may answer your Mistresse, that overlate wo sent me her counsell, and I am not accus'd to give credit to such Sorcerers: Besides, I will not loose mine Honour, at the simple wordes of a Woman I knew not. And it doth not a little content me, that this Knight is such a one as he shoulde be: wherefore being so sure of his Bounty, I am the more desirous to Combat with him, to make experiance of his renoun: yet this I will maintaine, that what I have spoken is true, and thereon we will presently enter the Field, so please the Soldane to give consent. Maulicus seeing that the day was too farre spent, absourn'd it till the day following: Wherefore the Prince withdrew himselfe to his Lodging, reposing great confidence in his owne strength, and after his departure, the Soldane taking Palmerin by the hand, sayd. I know not my Loro, how I may acknowledge the honour you doo my Daughter, whom I esteeme as mine owne selfe: But if the Gods afford me life, I will debite some such recompence, as I hope shall returne your owne content. Then the Damosell sent from the Queen of Tharsus, approaching to Palmerin, presented him the Helmet, saying. Noble and vertuous Knight, the Queen saultest you with this token of her good Will, in remembrance of your speciall Loyalty, whereby you delivred the Prince Maulice: for whiche she so much remaineth yours, as you shall command her any seruice henceforward, albeit she could have withold him longer torment, hat proved so unsaithfull to her. She likewise desirereth you to weare this Helmet in Fight shith Amarano, for it wille greatly availe you, and more then any other: For such is her hope, that after you have finished this Combat, you will not deny her one request, which one day she intendeth to craue of you. Palmerin taking the Helmet, answered:

Faire Queen, most humbly thanke the Queen on my behalfe, and tell her that wheresover I am, she shall finde

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

me readie to fulfill anything she will command. The Damoisell departed, and made such speed, as in shor time she came to the Queen her Mistresse, whom she acquainted with her whols message: whereof she was very sorrell, especially of Palmerins great curtesie, whom she began to esteeme very greatly.

### CHAP. XII.

How Palmerin entred the Combate with the Prince Amarano of Nippon, whom he slew: and of the great Honours which the Souldane and his Daughter did him.



He Princesse Alchidiana hearing of those reports, which the Queen of Tharius Damoisell made relation of before the Souldan her Father, being likewise marvaulous glad that Palmerin was descended of such honourable parentage, and so much renowned in the Region faire thence distant: began to love him moe curteinely then ever she did before, and resolued with her selfe, that sayng for her sake he undertake the Combat, he bare her more secret assencion then he durst betwix: and in this opinion she practised how to conferre with him againe, which this day shys could not compasse, because he was continually with the Souldan. But when Palmerin tooke his leave for that Night, the Princesse had a little byrne to thank him for his honorable kinnesse, and bough to her was that the Gods had restored his speach againe. Some after she sent him a most sumptuous golden Armour, dresing him (for her sake) to weare it in the Combattre, which Palmerin thankfully accepting, assured the messenger, that he would sufficiently

revenge

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

revenge his Ladies injurie. In the meane time, the Souldan commanded his Knight Warhall, to see the Field prepared in readinesse, and the scaffolds for the Ladies provided, and to haue two thousand Armed men in place, for defensio[n] of his owne person. All which the next morning was duely executed, the Souldane appointing two Kings, and Amarano his two Bischoun Judges of the Field, who going to their Tent, and all the nobilitie to thair appoyned places, expected now the issue of the Fight. The Ladies came to their Randing: among whom Alchidiana arm'd like faire Vesper, among the other Stars: and soone after came the two Combattants, so bravely and richly appointed, as nothing wanted that could be imagined: especially Palmerin, before whom a King bare his Helmet, and the high Admirall of Assyria his Sword, and so bravely did he manage his Horse, with such knightly behavour, and gallant countenance, that each one judged he had learned his knowledge before he came thither into Turkie, and caused Maulicus to perswade himselfe, that the victory was belonging to him. In the end, that they might the sooner begin the Combat, the Judges tooke their seats, commanding Silence through the Field, which was pestered with wonderfull resort of people: and then the Heraldes fulfilling their charge, gave liberty to the Champions to doe their devolre. Palmerin clasping his Helmet, gade the Spurres to his Horse, and encountered Amarano with such fury, as they were both dismounted headlong to the ground: But Palmerin eschewed to be soyled before the Souldan, recovered himselfe quickly, and advancing his Field, gade Amarano such a sound stroke on his head with his Sword, as made him stagger in great amazednesse. Hellwithstanding, his courage and agility was such, as well declarid he had followed thole aduersaries: So that the fight was so fierce and cruelt between them, as in many parties before the Assyrians saw not the like: for Amarano was the most hardy Knight in

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

all those parts, yet Palmerin assualted him with so many sharpe charges, as he made him forger his cunning points of Defence, and with head and sholders to awarde his strokcs. Which when the Princes two Brethren beheld, they were marshallously abalmed, for they imagined that through the East parts, no Knight might be found to equal him: wherefore one of them said, I thought my brother would have dispatched this companion at the first encounter, but seeing he hath hold out so long, no doubt he is more expert in armes, then we at first made account of him.

The two Kings were somewhat mooved with these words, willing him to be silent, untill such time as the end was determined. Amarano hearing what his Brother had spoken, offendred with himselfe because he could not overcome Palmerin, began to encourage himselfe, and albeit he was soze wounded in many places of his body, yet he followed his intent so nobly, as taking his Sword in both his hands, he stroke Palmerin so violently on the Helmet, as made him set one of his knes to the ground to save himselfe. But he perceiving that if he had so many such blowes, it wold return to his disadvantage, intended to play double or quitt, and remembiring the honour of his Mistresse Polinarda, he came with such valoor on Amarano, as cleaving his shield in two pieces, cut away a great part of his arme. The Prince seeing himselfe so maymed, began to faint, hardly endurinc to defend his Enemies strokcs, which Palmerin perceyng, chased him about whiche way he listev, first here, then there, wheresoever the Prince had hope of safety: but all these delaxes little abayled him, for Palmerin left not untill he got him down, when Amarano thinking to helpe himselfe, drew a little pocket Dagget, and therewith thralld Palmerin under the shouldeir ribbes, whiche wound so mooved him, as renting his Helmet from his head, immedately smote it from his shoulders. Palmerin

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

rin being then so glad and well disposed, as though he had but nedly entred the field, tooks the head of his enemite by the haire, and presented it to the Princess Alchidiana, saying. Madam, I now thinke my selfe acquitted of the promise, which I made to my gracious Lord your Father, for here is that Spynge-head that first accused you: be thynke your selfe therofore, if there is any other thing else to be done for you, because I remaine here ready to accomplitsh it.

The Princess exceeding soyfull for this worthy victory, answered. Truly my Lord, you have done so much for me, that although my Father, my selfe, and all my Friends, shuld bequeath our libertie to your service: yet could we not recompence the very least of your noble courtesies, chieflie, even this one, surpassing all the other, and beyond our abilities to remunerate. Yet let me intreat you to carrie the Traxtors head to the Judges, that they may Censure my Innocencie in this slander, and whether the Accuser hath not received condigne punishment. Which he did, and threw the head before the Princes Brethren, whose griele exceeded measure for their Brothers ill Fortune, and taking up the head, with the Body likewise, they caused it to be sorrowfully courayed forth of the field. Immediately was Palmerins Horse brought him, whereon he mounted, and was conduected with great Pompe, by the two Kings that were the Judges, and other mighty Princes, as well Calistes, Agaz, as Taborlans, to the Wallace Gate, where the Soldane (to doe him the greater Honour) attended in person his coming, the like he never did before to any living Prince, how mighty soever he was, and therfore his Subjects marbailed not a little herat Palmerin would have done him reverence on his knes, but he would not suffer him, but taking him in his arme, he thus said: for ever (Gentle Knight) by the honouer of thy victoray against our Enemie, and the false accuser of our Daughter, for whiche, I

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

account my selfe so bound to thow, that all the Dignities and riches I am able to give thow, may not counter balance thy unspeakable deserts: therefore I will remaine so much at thy disposition, as I and mine shall be at thy command. So taking him by the hand, he conducted him to his Chamber, where himselfe helpes to unarm him, commanding his Chyvartlions to be so carefull of him, as of his owne person: Thus leading him to have his wounds dyed, he returned to the great Hall, where he found his Nobilitie attending his coming, to whom he said: What thinke you my Lords of our estate, if our Champion had beene foyled? I had been the most forlorn and abject Lord in all Assyria, to have beene enoyced to doe Justice on mine owne Daughter. But thanks to our Gods, they delivered me from that danger: therefore marball not, if (beyond my custome) I welcome him with reverence and honour: For one that renouneth himselfe by Vertue and Prouelte through the whole world, ought to be entertained, rather then such as live in vaine Pompe and glory, whispering deceitfull Tales in Latics eares. Deyther can you (in my judgement) hono[r] him sufficently, because he hath shielded my Daughter and me from death, expulsed our ignominious slander, and slaine our false accusing Enemy, to make us live in perpetuall fame and memorie. The most part of them well noting his wro[rd]s, and confounded with the remembrance of their shame, when they darst not enterprise the Combat for their Lady: knew not what to answer, but fearing to growe in further offence, sought how to change his minde to some other talkie.

Alchidiana being all this while in her Chamber, prepared her selfe to goo viste Palmerin, not knowing how to shape her course, so fresh bewraying of her secret afflictions: but the Goddess Juno, when she stood before Sir Paris, for sentence of her Beauty, was not more sumptuously adorned then the Princesse. Now begins she to dispute in

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

In her thoughts, the honorable graces of Palmerin, his nobility so farre renowned, his knightly prouesse and magnanimitie, whereof herselfe had so good experiance, as she resolued never to have any other Husband. Then demands she of her Ladies, how he might recompence her Knight & All her Heire, if he stood orderly: If her lockes of haire were trebled as they ought, and if her Garments were blude enough. For conclusion, she louely Maiden knew not how to dispose of her selfe, to gaine his loue she earnestly lengered so.

In this equipage she goes to see her friend, and in his Chamber she findes her Mother, who hindered her languishing Daughter, from discovering her sicknes to him, that onely had the power to helpe her: wheresoe living in hope of some better opportunity, so this time she smothered her griesesse well as she could, finding other talkie with her Ladies, lest her Mother shold suspect her.

## Chap. XIII.

How the Brethren of Amarano, would have buried his Bodie in the Tombe with Ardenia, which Alchidiana would not suffer: but constrained them to carrie him home agayne into his Countrey.



Mariano thus slain, his Brethren (according to his charge given the, before he entered the Combat) took his body, and with great mourning they brought it to the Princess Ardeoniaes Tombe, thinking to burie him ther with her, but Alchidiana advertised her self, came presently and intreated her Father, that he wrold send a Herald to the Brethren of the vanquished Prince, to charge them not to leave the body of Amarano.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Amarano in his Disquisitions, soz if they die, he would cause it to be burnes as a heretike rebarded. & moreover, that they themselves shold be parke within fourte and twenty houres, on paine of the danger shold ensue by their default. For godfathur (quoth she) if you shold pernisch thair boldnes, it wold be grete blaue and dishonour to you : in that it is publike knouing with what great pride and arrogancie he came to your Court, thinking to injury my good name, and that misfor ever from your presence, or else by their scandall to end my life. The Soldane well regarding her woress, willingly granted her request, whereupon the Princes Brethren were certiffid of the Soldanes pleasure, by a Grammet; wherat they marvailed not a little, but seeing they could no way remedy it, they laid.

Veraid, it is reason that your Lord shold be obeyed within his owne Territories, nevtherelasse, you may say unto him : that the craulties he shewes to a dead boode, is very great, and against all equallitie, which he hereafter haply may repent. So opening the Tombe againe, they tooke sowth their Brothers boodes, and the Princesses Ardemias likewise, conbaging them into a litter of Cypres, to keape them from corrupting, and thus returned with them to Phrygia, where the Princes death was greatly lamented : but chichly by the aged King his Father, who seeing his Sonne dead before him, after many dolorous passouns, thus complained.

Ah Fortune, how cruell doest thou shew thy selfe to the mightie, as well as the wianesse : Ah my Sonne Amarano, too deare hast thou bought thy love to Aixemria. Wretched and despised old man, how unfortunat art thou among all other : for when thou persuadest thy selfe to have joy and confort by thy Sonnes, thou findest nothing but sorrow and grieve. O death, thou art too croeket. Yet if the Soldane had granted this Buriall, where thou diddest desire it besoyle thy death, the leste had bene my grieve. But sone shall

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Shall I cause him repente his hard dealing, and revenge thy death with sufficient requitall.

The second Brother to Amarano, named Graniel, steling his Father in such extreme heviness, assayed by all means he could to comfort him: promising in the presence of all his knyghtis, with all possible sped to revenge his Brothers death, and so did all the sixe Brethren solemnely booke together. Whiche speches did somewhat comsoothe the aged King, who commanded the Bodies of the two Brothers to be taken from his presence: and so a perpetuall memory of his Sonnes death, he caused a sumptuous Monumēnt to be made of Purplic and Porphyre, whereon was engraven the cause of their unhappy death.

All this while Graniel, who undertooke his Brothers revenge, gabe charge to the people round about him, as also to the Kings and Princes of Suria, who were then enemites to the Soldane, to prepare themselves in readinesse, so that within a Moneths space, he had assembled a Power of fiftie thousand hardy Souldiers, himselfe being appoynted Leader and Generall ober them. In this sorte they bestook themselves to the Field, hoping to raignate the Soldane Country with fire and sword: but they were better entartayned then they expected, as hereafter shall be largely discoursed.

CHAP. XIII.

How Alchidiana overcome by vehemencie of her Love, offered her selfe to Palmerin as his Wife: and of the answer he made her.

**B**Y remembryng what bath past in the Chapters before, we may not forget how by the Message the Queen of Tharsus sent to the Soldane Court, Alchidiana who began as it were to despise Palmerin, was constrained to renew her Love, thus conserning with her selfe: that is to say great a person as the Queen of Tharsus, commended, esteemed and honoured him, having never seene him, the moxe reason had she, being daily in his company, to practise the furtherance of her earnest desires. She therefore continually awaited oportunitie, to discover the streynghes newly rakte from the Embres, and which day and night consumed her with languishing: but so well it came to passe, that not many dages after the Combat with Amarano, he came to visit her in her Chamber, right joyfull of the talkie he had with the Soldane, as concerning the probation of his strenght, to gos inniate the City of Constantinople, which gave him hope of his returne to Almaine. Alchidiana having curiously saluted him, and shewing better countenance then before she did, caused him to sit downe by her, and sone after began in this sort.

I desire you Sir Knight, by the reverence you beare our Gods, and the faith you owe to her, for whose love you tooke the Enchanted Crowne from the Prince Maurice: to tell me your name, what your Parents be, and of whence you are. For I sware to you by the honour of a Prince, that the guerdon you shall receive in so doing, is my heart, having

Empcroure of Constantinople. PART.2.

having once conquered those desires that long habbe conquerred me: intending to make you Lord of my selfe, and all the possessions of the Soldane my Father, without any straifer meaning you may believe me. Consider therefore good Knight, that without feare or dissimulation, I have told you what nearely concerneth me, if then you desire not my present death, make answer as honorable duty requireth, balancing in your owne thoughts, how vehemently the impulsion of love hath touched me: in respect that now I have twice for your sake, exceeded the limits of mine owne regard, whom balsafinesse should protect from such boldnesse. And if patiently I endured your sharpe repnse, when last I bewayed the estate of my love: thake it was caused through mine owne good concorde, that being denyed the liberty of speech, you did not perceive the extremity of my passions. But seeing our Gods habbe been so fav'able, as to restore the thing was taken from you, and likewise hath brought you into her company, who loves you deareer then her owne selfe: shew not your selfe hard hearted, to syre the houte that Love and Fortune presents you withall. Therefore my onely beloved Lord, in recompence of your sharpe Combat with proud Amarano, receive me as your Wife, whom you have worthily deserued.

Palmerin seeing himself assayled by so faire an Enemie, who could sooner dyng in subjection another Hércules, then euer did Iole; and as easly give life to a statue of Marble, as Venus sometime did, at the request of Pigmalian the Carbar: ) was in marbatious affliction, having before him, on the one side, feare to offend God, on the other, the logaltie he owed his Mistresse, and then the immediate death of Alchidiana, if he denyed her. In the end, remembryng what the Soldane had spoken, concerning his Employe to Constantinople: he devised by this meanes to make her such answer, as she should rest contented, and neither God nor his Mistresse be offended: he thus began. Wertu-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

ous and most excellent Princesse, thus I am assuredly per-  
swaded, that there is not any Monarch or Prince so noble,  
in all Alia, but might reckon himselfe among the happiest,  
in respect of your perfections, and unvaluablie riches : so es-  
pease you as his wife. By farre greater reason, I that am  
poore, a knyght errant, natuorne, and whose life you have  
laved : may say, and name my selfe above all other in for-  
tune. But knowing my selfe so simple, and of so slender de-  
serving towardes you: I esteeme it impossible for the Gods  
and Nature likewise, to lift me to so wonderfull degre of  
happines. Wherefore, seeing the cause such, and greater  
then I can desire or imagine, likewise that it is consono-  
ble to your commandement: doubtlesse I were onwo-  
thy any favour of Fortune, and to be esteemed among the  
most ingratefull Knights in the World, if in any thing I  
should disobey your reason. My reason is, that you (being  
reckoned as chiefe among the most perfect and accom-  
plisched Ladies) daigne so much to abase your selfe as to make  
me Lord of your Love, which hath been desired by so many  
worthy personages.

For these causes most gracious Mistresse, I am bound  
to love you above all other Ladies living, which henceforthe  
I hope to doe, and I tally to serue you with my uttermost  
endeavours. And as I ought (sweet Madam) to love none  
but you: so is my dutie to hold your regard in chiefe con-  
demnation: therfore will I with such secreete, as so hono-  
rable a Conquest will permit, conceale this extraordinaire  
grace. And had I not this morning made promise to your  
Father, to accompany his power to Constantinople, there  
to revenge the death of your deceased Uncle Gamezlo:  
soon would our labours to good effect, and I gather that sweet  
flower, which above all other would beautifie your garland.  
But withal, my hope is such, that in this焉 page I  
shall doe such service to the Holdane your Father, as at my  
returne he will recompence me to your content, and good  
liking

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

liking of his Princes and Subjects: which may no way  
now be moved, lest his minde otherwayes basid, shauld  
conceive displeasure against me, and so all our Fortune for  
ever be iandered. In this respect (sweet Madam) if ever  
hersafter I shall doe you service, let me intreat you to pa-  
tience till my return, resoluing your selfe that I am more  
yours than mine owne, and dedicate my life to your most  
gracious Service. As concerning the rest of your demand,  
my Name is Palmerin D' Oliva, and what my Parents  
are, the Dates of Tharsus within these thre dages will tell  
me more, then hitherto I could understand by any, when  
you shall have more knowledge of my Estate and Country  
also: but so farre as I yet can gather by mine owen under-  
standing, my Descent is from Persia.

This excuse he made, because Alchidiana shoulde not  
suspect him to be a Christian, and with this answer we  
was so joyfull and contented, as nothing was able to in-  
spire more cheeffull life into her languishing Soule, which  
Palmerin perceived, and the better to continue her in this  
opinion, very often he kissed her hand, in signe of his affec-  
tionate obeylance: And so leaving her, he departed to his  
owne Chamber, leaving the Princesse triumphing of her  
Conquest.

He was no sooner come into his owne Chamber, but sol-  
licitid with the remembrance of his Lady Polinarda, he  
imagined how she blamed him with mourisall complaints  
for his late promises: which thought so diversly afflicted  
him, as he sent all the rest of the day in teares, and as she  
had been in presence, humbly requested her to pardon  
what had past him, in respect he did it not willingly, nor  
ther gave any consent with his heart thereto, but dissem-  
bled the matter, lest the Princesse by his deniall shoulde fall  
into despaires: and rather then he woulde violate his soleynne  
Wol to his gracions Goddess, he woulde adventure on  
infinite dangers. Yet did this feigned answer to Alchi-  
diana

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

diana greatly availe him, and caused him to be more honoured then ever he was before, as also to be continually accompanied with her presence, whose onely delight was in daily beholding him.

### CHAP. X V.

How the Soldan, having determined to send his Armie to Constantinople, would elect Palmerin his Lieutenant Generall: which he refuted, intreating him to give the charge to the old King of Balisare.

**B**IT now was the Soldane continually mindfull of the promise he made to his deceased Father Mitos, to revenge the death of his Brother Camazio: wherefore leaving all his Dominions in peace, and having with him the valiant Palmerin, he concluded to leade a mighty Army, to finishe that whiche duty daily called for. And having provided a hugo number of Gallions, Foxes, Gallyes, and other Vessels, he sent abroad to adverteise all the Kings, Princes, Calisses, and Cabozanes his Subjects, of his will and pleasure, who likewise gathering their forces together, were numbered to be above an hundred and fifty thousand fighting men. All this while the Soldan so favored Palmerin, as he had bestowed on him divers Dukedomes, which he made but slender account of, because he continually wished to see his Polynarda. Alchidiana, building on his passed promises, daily presented him with many rich giles, and practised all the devises she could to please his fande: for so dearely did the Princess love him, as she rather desired her owne death, then to give him the least occasion of disliking. And Palmerin by faire and effecting speches, perswaded such settled opinions in her: as shee held his promises with greater

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

greater pertinacie then euer did any Logitian maintaine his Aristotle. By this time were the men of Armes come from all places, wherefore the Soldane calling for Palmerin, began with him in this manner. Sir Palmerin, considering how much I am indebted to you, my afflictions are so resolutely persuaded, that I tellen of you as you were my home, and much more then I am able to utter: not so much for services as you have done me from time to time, as for the incomparable deeds of Armes and Chivalry, which makes you honoured through the whole world. Having now determined to send my forces to Constantinople, my onely hope I repose in you, and well it liketh me that you beare the office of my Lieutenant Generall, and principall governour of the Kings and Princes in this expellition. Wherefore my noble and approved good friend, using your wisedome, maner and discretion, my people shall think well of my appointment, resorting the honour of their victory, to the generall haubock and confusion of their enimys.

Now I perceve ( my gracious Lord ) answered Palmerin, that by your manifold curtesies and labours, you would deprive me of acknowledging mine owne turne: notwithstanding, in respect it is your pleasure, I would adventure the uttermost of my life for you, which I cannot with greater honour loose, then in your noble service. Yet, may it be spokien within compasse of your Highnesse controul, me thinkes you shold rather give this charge to the King of Balisare, a man wise, experienced, and farre more skilfull in Armes then I am. Beside, your people having a man of their owne nation for their head, will obey him more willingly, and serue with much more chearefull courage: then under him whom they know not, but onely by your princely and libertall bourn, which hath brewe such, that from the meanest slave, whereforsoe he doth me as altogether despised, your Highnesse hath lifte me to the highest earthly honour. This speake I, vnyad Lord, as

not

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

not gainsaying your commandement, but for this consideracion, that taking this honourable charge, the ~~Soldiers~~ may hunting against me, and so your Service be altogether disappointed.

And thinke you (quoth the Soldane) that my people will be more obedient to the King of Balisarca, then to your selfe? doubletelle my Lord (said Palmerin) that is my opinion. And so then (quoth the Soldane) that for the councell you have given me, my love is nothing diminished towards you: for I see by this noble regard, how deservedly you gaine the labours of Kings, and great personages: it shall be therelore as you have appointed. This councell gave Palmerin, not for any good he wished to Maulicus, or the King of Balisarca, but (desiring nothing more, then the raine and generall destruction of these Heathen heounds, swenze enemies to Christ and his Servants) to ridde himselfe of that charge, which would bring him so great and shamefull reproach, to fight against his Lord and Master. Therfore pre-meditating on all these inconveniences, he but expected the meanes to get sooting in Christendome againe. Maulicus thus contented with his answere, the King of Balisarca was appointed Generall of the Army, yet he gave commandement that Palmerin shold be reverenced amoung them, as the second person to himselfe, and on paine of death, none to affend him. As all this strength was readie to take Shipping, it was came to the Court of Gramiel, and his Brethren, what slaughter and spoyle they made through all Alfraria: wherelat the Soldane being greatly offended, seeing his præfession against Christendome thus changed, came to Palmerin, and said. My Sonne, what thinke you of our enemies? What shall I doe to these Followers of their Brother in pride? I pray you selfe me in this necessitie. Palmerin perceiving his desire prevented, was overcome with marvailous passions: yet to hide this discontent from the Soldane, he thus answered. Seeing it hath

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

so faine out my Lord, that without any summons or enemies have presumed upon us: I thinke it most expedient, that your Armie provided in so godd readinesse, begin at first with the arrogant invaders, for I doubt not, their attempt being so treacherous, and the courage of our men so resolute, but they shalldarely buy their presumptuous rovers. A matter once begun, will be as soone ended, and our Shippynge ready, we may afterward set forward to Constantinople: so this will be a good whetting of our Stomachs, to deale with our enemies of greater multitude. This Councell being accepted, wherefore it was immediatly proclaimed th<sup>e</sup> next the field, that every man shold be ready to depart within thre dayes.

### CHAP. XVI.

How the Prince Olorico, Sonne to the King of Arabia, came and offered his Service to the Soldane, bringing with him five hundred Armed Knights, and of his entertainment.



One what before the Soldane's Armie was readie to depart, the Prince Olorico, eldest Sonne to the King of Arabia came to the Court, and with him five hundred Knights, so hardy, braves and comely personaged, as both for the Court and the Warre, better might not be imagined. This young Prince, being reputed among the most valiant of his time, hearing report of the rare beautie of Alchidiana, under colour of offering the Soldane his assistance: determined to behaue himselfe so bravely in his Court, that by his liberallitie and honorabla actions, he would obtain the Princess to his wife, wherefore being come to the Court, and

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

and having done his obesauces to the Holdane, he began  
in this manner.

Right mighty Lord of all Alisia and Palestine, ha-  
ving of long time hearde your great forwardnesse to the  
increasing of our faith, chiesely of the last honourable coun-  
cell you helde, to reuenge the death of your famous deceased  
Brother Gunezio, whom our Gods now entartaine at  
their celestiall banquets : I take my selfe to trauaile, with  
advised resolution to doe you such seruice, as might stand  
with my abillity, and your pleasure to command. And so  
I now behald, that my arruall is in a tyme so fortunate,  
I celebrate their names with immortall thankes, assuring  
your Majestie so farrre to stretch my endeouours, as the Son  
that is bound by due'y to his Father. The Holdane who  
had heard great report of his bountie and valour, his Fa-  
ther likewise being one of his Friends and confederates,  
after he had made him very gracious welcome, thanked  
him for the succour he brought him, and henceforth he would  
not exume of him as a stranger, but as his Sonne and  
most especiall Friend. All this while Palmerin noted the  
behaviour of the yong Prince, and judging by his comple-  
xion, that he was of better nature then the other Alisrians,  
beg in to affect him : so that after the Holdane had givuen  
them all the god night, Palmerin accompanied the Prince  
to his Chamber, where they could devise no other conse-  
rence, but of his new and warlike enterpise, which made  
Olorico demand of Palmerin, if he shoult goe in those  
affaires, that will I verily (quoth he) if sicknesse or prison  
doe not withhold me. Let me intreate you then, said the  
Prince, to doe me so much honour, as to accept me for your  
companion. Thereto Palmerin right sone condiscended,  
and then began such a league of amity betwene them, that  
it endured to the death, as you shall reade hereafter. But  
because it was now late, they tooke their leaue of each o-  
ther till the next morning, when Mauleus woulde have

Olorico

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Olorico dine at his Table with Palmerin, where wanted  
no provision that besemmed so great a person, being new set  
forth in most rich and honourable poinpe. The Tables be-  
ing withdrawne, the Prince began the daunce, thinking to  
see faire Alchidiana, but he was deceived, for she kept her  
Chamber in her amorous opiniones, and would not be seene  
till the appointed day, when the Armie should make shew  
in open fieldoe.

This day the Holdane went to order the battell, and  
to appoint the winges and squadrons, which made Alchi-  
diana likewise take delight to walke abroad with Palme-  
rin, who was now in marvellous sumptuous Armor, bea-  
ring a Sheeld of Sinople, with a bar of Gold figurede there-  
in, signifying his inward joy, that in so shourt time he shoulde  
get from these barbarous and unchristian hell-hounds. Be-  
fore them went two yong Lords beare-headed, and behinde, a  
great number of Ladies and Knights, so rich in apparell as  
could be devised. Being thus brought to their Pallaces,  
Palmerin began to carrie and brave with his Hoste be-  
fore the Princesse, who tooke no little delight in her sup-  
posed Lover, and riding along with him, fell into many dis-  
courses, nothing tending to Religion as I gaesse, but such  
devout services as Love teacheth his Schollers. In the  
midle of their communication, came the Prince Olorico, so  
altered with his affection to the Princesse, that they which  
have felt like affanites, might easly judge the cause of his  
passions. Having mad two or thre humble reverencies to  
her, he offered to kisse her hand : which she would not per-  
mit him, excusing the matter so modestly, and wishing his  
welfare as her owne, that he imagined himselfe greatly  
favoured.

Palmerin regarding the afflictions of this new-comen  
Lover, and that he might give him the better meanes, to de-  
vise with her so privately as he desired, turned his Hoste to  
the other side of the Princesse, thus speaking to her. What  
thinke

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

kinke you ( Madam ) of the gentle succour, which my Lord Olorico hath brought your Father : Welbewe me, the cutesse is so surpassing great, as your selfe ought especial-  
ly to thank him, if it were but for his forwardnes in qual-  
lifying the haughty courage of Amaranoes Brethben. Dubi-  
tate (quoth he) his compante is to be esteemed, and among  
tenne thousand Knights, hardly may be found so brave  
men as is in his troupe : in recompence whereof, I will not  
deny the Prince any thing, that he with honour will re-  
quest of me. Olorico perceiving this subduaine inventio[n] of  
Palmerin, returned him many thanks, and after the accu-  
stomed dissimulations used in such causes, albeit Love had  
so[me] wylle deprived him of speech : earnestly beholding the  
rare beauty of the Princesse, he thus began. Madam, al-  
though I shuld bee to my Lord your Father, all the ser-  
vices that a knight is able to yeld his gracious Patronne, yet  
the very least of these favours, which it hath pleased your  
Excellencie to holde on me, may be reckoned so much  
more then deserved recompence. Wherefore being per-  
suaded that my service is placed in your good conceit, I  
shall not henceforth feare to put my life in hazard, so much  
I desir to see these present promises accomplished : where-  
of you Sir Palmerin, being esteemed among the most fa-  
mous persons living, shall bear me witness, when time  
granteth convenient opportunity. I have promised no-  
thing, said the Princesse, but what I will rightgladly ac-  
complish : req[uest]ing nothing but your good opinion, which  
so manz chiose Ladies have heretofore desired. And I de-  
mand no better pay (quoth the Prince) then her gracious  
favour whom I desire to please. Thus beguiled they the  
time, till the Army marched forward in array, which they  
safely and scilfully followed, till tenne Pages belonging to the  
Princesse, leading tenne godly Coursers most richly Ca-  
parisoned, came before them. Another Page brought a  
sumptuous Luce, the bannrole whereof was the Princesse  
colours

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

colours, and a Golden Shield, whereon was portraied the  
Head of Amarano, held vp by the haires by a Knights  
hands, signifying the victory of Palmerin against him :  
The Shield being bordered round about with Pearles,  
Rubyss, Emeralds, Crystallites, and other pretious Stones  
of inestimable value, then began the Princesse thus to  
Palmerin.

My noble Friend, in this warre I desir you to bee my  
Knight, and so[me] my sake to beare this Lrance and Shielde,  
that the proud Brethben may see the shame of Amarano.  
And such is my hope, that as you servid the eldest, so will  
you deal with the other, while one of them remaines aliue.  
These Horses likewise for the warre I beseech upon you,  
they being accounted the very best in Turkie, and these  
will serue you well when you are in the Field : Our Gods  
bearing us witness (faire friend) that did not my estate  
hinder me, and the regard of mine Honour with-hold me,  
with right goodwill would I beare you company, to see your  
noble and knightly vicks of Armes. And this I dare boldly  
say, that Hypsicratea never followed her Husband Methri-  
dates with greater affection, were he on Sea, or on Land,  
on Horsebacke or on foote : then I could doe the Noble Pal-  
merin d'Oliva. Notwithstanding, though my booy may  
not be there, yet shall my spirit bee continually present, to  
comfort my languishing life, which will bee but a shadow of  
death to me till you returne. But because I see many Eyes  
are fixed on vs, all the Kings likewise taking their leave  
of my Father : I will leave you in the protection of our  
Gods, who send you happily and right sone agayne. These  
words were coupled with such sighes and teares, as he had  
fallen from her Roome, but that one of her Ladies of honor  
stayed her.

Palmerin after he had with great kindness thanked her,  
kissed her hand, saying. Perswade your selfe sweet

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Madam, your shield shall be shewe in such place, where his brethen that detracted your honour, shall easly see it, although but little to thair abbantage. Thus tooke they leave of each other, and Olorico likewise did bid the Princess farewell: then doing their dutie to the Soldane, sollied the Army, leaing him and Alchidiana sorowfull for their departure.

### CHAP. XVII.

How the Prince Olorico being with Palmerin in his Tent, demanded of him if he loved the Princess Alchidiana, and of the answer he made him.



Whise two yong Princes, Palmerin and Olorico censured till as they rode, with what great grise and sorrow Alchidiana parted from them and falling from one imagination to another, they concided to lodge together in one Tent. And because Palmerin was the better and more richly provided of all things necessary for the field, Olorico was the more glad of his company: so the day being spent, and the Tents pitched in a goodly plaine, Palmerin invited the Prince of Arabia to sup with him, for the Soldane had appointed him such honorable provision, as better he could notso his own sonne. The tables withdrawne, and spending the time a while at Chesse play, they went to bed, where Olorico not able to sleepe, began in this manner to his friendly companion.

Yon fortunate Palmerin, how much more could I wish to resemble you, then the greatest King or Lord in the world, to be likewise beloved of her, who in beauty, god grace, and swet sprach, hath not her like. And because my

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

my good friend and brother, I have noted the speciall love of the Prince Alchidiana towards you, let me intreat you to tell me, whis she is you above all other love, and intend to make your espoused wife? Clowing to you on the word of a Prince, whosover she be, to conceale it with secrecy, and to distwade my selfe from my love newly begun, for your sake, though it cost my life. For your noble mind, and brave gentilly, hath gained such soveraignty over me, as all other pleasures whatsoeuer I despise, onely to have your company and labour. Thus qualifieng the passions, which day and night do secretly torment me, I will set downe such order as my father shall not need to send his Ambassours, nor I employ any of my friends to demand her for me: yet for this onely cause, I lest my Country in such set as you have seen.

Palmerin hearing the words of the yong Prince, and perceiving him bewayed with her love, whom he desired to be furthest from, steling said: My Lord Olorico, I sweare to you by the honour of my knighthood, I never thought of the love which you demand, nor have I any desire to follow that humour. But true it is, that I would do as much for her, as a knight may for his Ladie, for so shewell deserves, her labour and gentle behabittue warlike faire better abilitie: wherefore my deare friend, if you will believe me, give not over your intent, but practise to gaine her to your wife: and I promise you that I will so move the mitter to the Soldane: and her, as happily may effect the end of your desires. Yet let me intreat you to continue to haue a friend to her, as her bide calling will serue her: otherwise I had rather die the death, then once to speake word on your behalfe. Wherefore I chere the Prince, as esteeming him manlyme, and returning his many folo that he had. Albeit, my noble friend, I am greatly beholding to my father, who gav me my present being: but much more to Gode to you, because my estate had now

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

ended, but that your gracious speeches called me againe to life. My second selfe, having thus lost my liberty, I despaire of attaining what you have promised, and endure a death more then mortall: but that you breath hope of successe into me, assuring me of immediate felicity and joyfull dayes hereafter, which no fether, but so good a friend was able to doe. After other such like speeches, the Prince slept, but Palmerin layed in another soft, was solicited with the remembrance of his lost friends: and perceiving his companion slept soundly, he began thus to deliver his sorowes. Oh unforntunate and wretched Palmerin, how can thy minds so long beare this yoke of servitude, onely standing in feare of death? Hast thou forgot those two perfect Lovers, Trinicus and Agriola, with thy true friend Ptolome, not knowing whether they be alive or dead? What? Wilt thou not search for them? The Emperour of Almaine, hath now he gied cause to complaine of thee: rea, and to blame thee, if his Sonne be not returned? Darest thou present thy selfe before him? Oh touch of loyalty, faire Agriola, how basely mayst thou call me thine enemy, inbenter and first motion of thy misfortunes? Oh wretched and miserable that I am so leaving thee so discourteously, I well deserve a million of tormentes, farre worse then those exercised by the cruell Dionite on the Sicilians. Nor could they be sufficient to expiate my haynous guilt, in the forgetting thee faire Princelle, I live in darly delights among these Moores and Tartars. But were I such as I ought to be, mindfull of a fault so foully committed: I shold not live one houre in rest, or quiet, till I had found up darrest friends aganu. Oh d'Alaytour, how canst thou thus waste thy time heire slothfully, knowing the great and continuall Travels, the Lady and Mistresse eaveth for thee? But I bow to God, this warre finished, I will not abide in the Holdans Court ten daies, but intend to set soorthwards to see the Reuelli of my welfare. And were it hot to my perpetuall discredit, as al-

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

so that I shold be judged a fainting Coward, I would begin my journey presently:

Thus all the night continued Palmerin such like complaints, considering his Friends misfortune and his owne, with such deepe impressions, and thence coward he lived in marballous melancholly, and would not delight himself, as before he was accustomed.

### C H A P. XVIII.

Of the Combat between Palmerin and two of Amaranos Brethren, whom he valiantly overcame and killed.



At following the true discourse of our Historie: The King of Balisarca, who being Lieutenant Generall of all the whel Army, caused the next morning to bee proclaimed by sound of Trumpet, that every man shold attend on his Ensigne: and not to gos robbing and Forraging the Villages along the Countrey, on paine of death to be inflicted upon the offender. So marching on in god array, in short time after they Encamped themselves before a City, where the Enemies kept themselves in Garrison: and planting themselves there for their advantage; the next Morning they determined to give the assault. All the night long they were ordering the manner of their Battery, the Wyners digging and making Trenches, and such Defences as are requisite in warlike actions.

Every thing in due and perfect order, at Sunne rising they beganne to assaile the Citie round about: following their intent with such Courage and Alacritie, as with Scaling-ladders, and other Engins, in lese then two houres they got upon the Walles, and (in despite of their Enemies)

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

mes) entered the City, murdering and expelling the Phrygians, and sharing the spoyle among themselves. All other Cities, Townes, and Villages, that were taken by the Enemy, within sixe dayes after were recovered, they notwithstanding to withdraw the Seldans power. Gramiel, Amaranos eldest Brother amazed hereat, having undertaken to be revenged of his Brothers death, with his Forces betooke himselfe to open field, determining to give the Allyians battle, and that way to make tryall of their fortune: in which resolution they came within halfe a dayes journey of their enemy.

The King of Balisaca advertised hereof, dislodged innie, quickly taking advantage of a little opportunitie, which was in the open sight of the Enemy. And Palmerin, who desired nothing more then fight, that he might accomplish his promise to the Princessse Alchidiana: when he received of her his rich Shielde and Lance, perswaded the Generall, that he shold the next morning summen the Brethren of Amaran, that with a sounre and twenty houres they shold depart the Soldans Confynes, & cle endare the danger of the sword. The King of Balisaca addisling hereon in counsell, found it very necessary and expedient: wherefore calling his Sonne, Sir Palmerin, and the Prince Olorico, he committed the charge thereof to their present dispatch. They being come to the Army of Gramiel, were immediately conducted to the Prince Teot, who was then deliberating with his Brethren, and other Capitanes of the Army. So soone as he understood the arrivall of these Embassadors, he caused them to come before him, and they delibered their Message. The Phrygian Prince being of maruarious haughty disposition, answered; that they wold not obey any such commandement. Whereupon, they intended to chase thence the Soldans Lieutenant, to the very gates of his owne Citie: Because (contrary to all equity) he withdrew the half of their Brothers boode in his Kingdome. Guerelin,

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

Sonne to the King of Balisaca, could not suffer such injury to his Lord in his presence: Wherefore he said, that the Seldan had done them no wrong, but received their Brother and his Traine with greater honour then they deserued, and that none of them shold have the like againe. So he went forth of the Pavillion, Gramiel and two of his brethren following him, whereof the one had bene in Aslyria, with his brother Amaran: who seeing Palmerin, that all this while kept himselfe without the Tent, and marking well his Shielde, wher a meekage was painted his Brothers head: he knew him immedately, and in great rage pulling himselfe by the haire, said:

Villain that I am, how can I suffer in my presence the Traitor that malthered my Brother? Bold and presumptuous Captaine, how darst thou venturo before me, thus to deride me with thy villanie? Trust me (said Palmerin) I dare come before thee with better assurance of my selfe, then the false Brother when he entred Combat with me. Wherefore, if thou wolt prove such a Gallant, as thou wouldest have me judge thee to be, by these Embassades, and likewise haue any stomachs to revenge thy Brothers shame: arm thy selfe and another of thy Brethren with thes, and come to me in place convenient, where I my selfe wll suffice to you both, that Amaran was worthily slaine, and as such a false accusing Traitor wll deserve. I desire nothing more said Orinello, (for so was he called that gave these hot speeches, but my Brother shall not deale with the, till I have tyed my fortune alone, and if I faille of my purpose, then shall he afterwards Combat with the: this provided, that then assure me from any in thy company but thine owne person. That will I upon my Right hand (said Palmerin) thou performing as much on thy bosome: yet I thinke before the sport be done, that thou wolt wish thy fellow with the. Thus Palmerin, Olorico, and Guerelin, withdrew themselves: Orinello and his brother

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

presently going to armie them, and accompanied with many Knights, came into the field, Palmerin likewise as ready as the foremost, came in with a good traine of Soldiers following after him, lest any treason shoule be wrought against him. Olorico he knew himselfe greatly discontented, because he might not accompanie his friend in the Combat: but Palmerin perswaded him, that more needfull occasions were reserved for him, which shoule returne him greater honour, and whom he would court in better sorte, thene ver he did the Ladies of Arabia. Gramiel very richly arm'd, wold needs come see his Brethrens Combat, with god hope it wold sort to their honour: but Palmerin seeing Orinello readie to the carrie, encountered his enemy with such puissance, as his Lance passing through his body, caused him fall dead from his Horse without reposing either hand or foot.

Habing performed his course, he returned to take his Lance out of his enemies body, striking him with the great Truachton end on the Stomacke, to see if any life was left in him: but seeing his soule was departed to Lucifers Palaco, he couched his Stake to receve the other Brother, who met him with such strength, as he was well neare dismounted, yet in the end he was sent after his Brother, though many hardy Croakes first passed betweene them. Whereupon was such a suddaine cry on all sides, some with joy, and others with sorrow, as made the ayre resound their voices. And I thinkie that the Greckes when they received their liberty by Quintus Flaminius, made not the like clamour: when (as Valerius reharseth) the Birds fell from the ayre with the lury of their cryes. In the meane while, the King of Balisarca, habing heard hereof, came into the Field, accompanied with many Lords, and conducted Palmerin with great honor and triumph backe to his Tent: especially the Prince Olorico, who exceeding full so the good sorte of his companion, embracing him, said. Ah gentle

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

gentle Palmerin, how bravely have you accomplished your promise to the Princesse: We like successe Heauen grant you in labouring my cause. Belewe me god Prince (quoth Palmerin) so well will I employ my selfe in this action, as I hope you shall haue cause to thankie me. Now to retorne to Gramiel, he caused his Brothers bodies to be embayed thence, and embalmed them into two Chests of Lead, referring their funerall till his returne: and with the teares in his eyes, he thus began to exalte his people.

Not knowing how (my loving Friendes and Countrimen,) to animate your mindes sufficiently, wth remembrance of the tyzannie exercised by the Solvan, on the knyng of my late Brother and your Prince: unhappy occurrance presents you with a fresh memory of revenge, seeing these two yong Princes, the beloued Sonnes of your King, so shamefully slaine in your presence. For this cause, deere Friendes, that each of you may take a newe courageous spirite, to morrow to encounter these effeminate Alsyrians let vs all be resolute togither, and cause them to understand that you, who haue led your liues in the Deserts of Africa, much better know how to manage Armes, thene such boisterous in theyz Mistresses Chambers, who can doe nothing but before theyz Ladys.

Herebypon two hundred Knights aduanced themselves before him, swearing and undertaking to bring Palmerins body to him the day following: and theresoone all that night they prepared themselves strengthening theyz Shields and Armours, and all other things necessarie for the fight, thinking the next morning by Sunne rising to bid them battell: these Knights inventing to amitush themselves as you shall heare. Palmerin beeinge brought thus honorably to his Tent, called for the Chyrurgions to visite his wounds, which they found so easie to be cured, as they assured him of speedy recovery. He then summoning the whole Councell iugather, aduised them, that in his opini-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

on he thought it expedient to dislodge from that place about midnight, with bag and baggage, and to coast the ~~Span~~ maine, signing a seafall flight. For (quoth he) the enemy ad- vertised of our retyre, will imagine that we despairre of our successe, by reason of the death of the two slaine Princes.

Thus our dissembled flight, will cause them disorderly to pursue vs, which we will suffer, till espyng our advantage: when returning valiantly upon them, I dare gage my life we shall eyther kill them downe right before us, or at leaste drive them to a most shamefull foyle. This devise was generally allowed for good, and at the houre appointed was executed. By great chance this morning was Gramiel come among his men very early: and understanding how the Soldanes powre was departed with such silence, presently cryed Alarum, charging all his men to follow them, for he doubted they wold enter a Cittie nere at hand, which was so strongly fortisid, as they shold never entice them forth to skyll, therfore he desired to prevent them of that helpe.

Whereupon the Horsemen galloped after them amaine, cryng: upon them (my friends) upon them, the day to ours. Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, the King of Balisarca, Gue- rresin his Denne, with a thousand men at Armes, seeing how they were disordred: returned upon them, and made such a slaughter among the Phrygians, as that the field was covered all over with their bodies. When Gramiel, seeing that of the first battell not one came backe againe, set forward with his Battell, wherein he had a thousand Horsemen, and furiously running on the Soldans powre: by misfortune he met with the Prince Olorico, to whom he gave such a cruell stroke on the head, as had almost set him beside the saddle. Olorico highly discontented hereat, turned valiantly towarde his Enemie, and between them continued a very dangerous fight: but in the end, Gramiels Helmet being cut off from his head, he began to despaire,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

despaire, when Olorico following his intent, nobly at one blow smote his head from his sholders. This mishap was saue by one of his younger Brethren, who running fiercely with his Lance against Olorico, was suddenly presented by Palmerin, in that he strokis him beside his Horsse, where he was broden to death with the trampling of the Horsses.

Then came forth the twe hundred sworne Knights from their Ambush, who had undertaken Palmerins death, and they hem'd him in so subtilly, as he was brought into very great danger. Whiche the Prince of Arabia beholding, made way through the thickest to assit his friend, after whom followed Gueresin with a hundred Knights: without which supply, both Palmerin and Olorico had bin slain, for their Horsses were killed under them, and they enforced to fight on foote. But when they beheld this fortunate succour, their courage nobly increased, and then began the sharpest encounter, for the wings on eyther side approached, the Archers and Crosbowes likewise, sending their Arrows as thicke as halfe among them, so that the Battalls endured till darke night. Then the Brethren sounded the Retreat, for whiche the King of Balisarca was not sorry, having so overtravailed himselfe that day, as he could no longer sit on Horse-backe: notwithstanding, before he wold enter his Tent, he saw the Field assur'd, the Watch placed, and all the Souldiers planted in good order.

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

## CHAP. XVIII.

How the Brethren of Gramiel, with all their traine, took themselves to flight, and how Palmerin suddenly pursued them with his Power, and tooke them Prisoners.

  
O suddenly after that these two Christian Princes had thus scundon the retreat, and considered how they had lost five of their Brethren, three in single fight with Palmerin, and the other in the Battell, the greatest part of their power likewise, almost utterly dismayed; to know the certainty of their strength, they commandred a devision to be made of the whole and wounded, and seeing how small their number was, they concluded not to stay in any place, till they came to the Realme of Palmeria, wherof Maurice was King, and their kinsman, from whom Palmerin tooke the Enchanted Crowne, where they thought to supply their want, with men active and able to Armes.

The next day, the King of Balisarca ranged a thousand men in Order, to give fresh assault on the enemy: but he was suddenly adverstised by his aspval, how the Christians were fled. He not a little glad of these newes, sent word to Palmerin thereof, who though he was soze wounded, armed himselfe, commanding his Captaines to provide six thousand men presently, to goe see the certainty of these youngs. With this strength the King joynd his power, and so went to the Enemies Campe, where they found no resistance, nor any but sic as Iao grieuously wounded, of whom he demanded which way the cowards were fled: whiche the poore soldiern reporting to him,

he

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

he vowed to follow till he overtake them. This resolution agreed upon, betwene the King of Balisarca and him, with tenne thousand Light-Horsemen, he determined to pursue them: and the King to stay there with all the rest of the Armie, to recover the Cities and Townes againte to the Soldane, which before had bene taken by the Enemy, and to be in readinesse with alliance, if he shold happen to stand in any need.

While Palmerin made election of his company, a messenger was dispatched with these newes to the Soldan, how the Enemies had been soyled, and of their flight. The Messenger being come before Maulicus, and the Letter opened, hearing how valiantly Palmerin dealt with his Enemies: before all his Nobility, he said: By all the Omnes of Delphos, I may well perswade my selfe, that wheresover Palmerin is soz us, we are assured of victory.

The Princeesse having heard these newes, sent soz the Messenger, and when he understand by him, how Palmerin bare her shield in the face of her Enemies, and had slaine in Combat two of Amaranos Brethren: she was marvellous joyfull, and so well rewarded the Messenger soz his paines, as soz ever he might extoll the boanties of the Princeesse.

The Messenger dispatched againe with the Soldans Letters, brought speedy answer to the King of Balisarca and Palmerin, of their Packet: wherin the Soldane heartily thanked them, desiring them to follow their fortune.

Palmerin understanding the will of the Soldane and Alchidiana, and how they desired him to pursue the Brethren of Gramiel: determined to set forward the next morning, advertising the Prince Olorico thereof, that he might put himselfe in a readinesse. But notwithstanding their diligence, their Enemies got before them into Palmeria, wherre they rested themselves, in hope to be assisted by their Cosen Maurice. But when he was given to under-

## The Hitory of Palmerin D'Oliva.

And how the Dumbe Knight named Palmerin, followed them, wherefore he comandades them to depart his Realme, soz he would not agd them against his dearest friend. This repulse drove hem into great despaire, yet suring they could not helpe it, they were constrained to make a vertue of necessity, and as secretly as they could devise, by little and little stole toward their owne Country. Maurice hearing how Palmerin was come into his Realme, rode thzo of four daies journey to meet him, and entertaining him with exceeding honour, offered himselfe, his people, and substance to his Seruice.

Palmerin very thankfull for the Princes kindnesse, would have nothing but certain horses of him, because divers of his owne had miscarried. By this time were the Brethren entred the Confines which belonged to the Admirall of Tharius, where they did very much harme, by Tractiens and great misusing of the people. This Admirall was a verie gentle Knight, and named Altarano, who siring what insurupy they did him, and understanding that they had bene conquered, and now fled without emp place of assurance: levied an host of haloy Sculdrouts, wherewith he intended to keape a straignt, throngly which they must of necessity passe; being so narrow as they could not passe two together, and no way else could they escape him, except they shold climbe the top of the Mountaines.

In this place lay the Admirall ambushed, with so many men as he thought convenient, and within three dayes after Palmerin with his power came to assit them. The Phrygians having heard hercōf, were greatly amazed at this unynected Adventure, and had no other helpe but to climbe the Mountain, where in holes and Caves they were glad to bide themselves, and there they continued five or sixe dayes in safety, albeit they were ready to dye for want of sustenance. Palmerin foreseeing the incumbrance of the place, and that they could not escape him, nor nad ha

any

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

further to follo w them : caused the Mountaine to be environed on all sides, thinking the end hereof would bee such, as indeed it afterward p̄rooved to be. For these poore distressed men, having neyther food or other provision, came forth of their Caves, and assembled together on the syde of the Mountaine, where entring into conference of their Estate, some gave counsell to go fight it out, but other (better advised) would not consent thereto: for better it is (quoth they) to yeld our selves to the Mercy of our Enemies, then to aduenture our Fortune where no hope of successe is to be expected.

Wherepon they concluded, and the two Brethren of Gramiell, were the first that unarmed themselves, and comming in this manner to Palmerins Tent, thus they began. Noble Knight Palmerin, wroze fortunate then any man in the world: We, Brethren to the renowned Prince Amarano, whom thou with thine owne hand hast slaine, and thys other of our Brethren likewise, whereof the noble Oriaello deserueth spech, all honestes to a King; and themselves heretofore worthy accomplished Princes, though now forsyed and cosorted with the dead: we (noble Lord) more certaine of thy clemency and curteſe, then any successiue end of a Battaille so unreasonable and desperate, come to yeld our Widies and goods at thy disposing: desirring thee to pity our Estate, and regard the woakes of Fortune, unto whom thou art subject as well as we. Beseeches, that the more shall greater persons be praised for honorable fauour then by us: rigour and unnatural cruelty, which maketh them everywhere hated and despised. When Palmerin saw them so humble, considering his owne Estate, and how ill me might frown on him, returned him this answer.

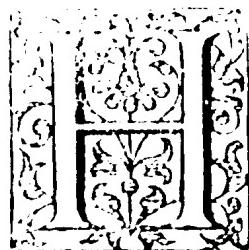
Now (my Lords) have you done vsely to lay by Armes, and submit your selves, for otherwise your destruction was at hand. Notwithstanding, in respect you have thus yelbed yourselves to me: I entertaine you into my safe defensē,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Offering you Peace with the Soldane, so that you swears your faithfull Love, and do him homage. So he gaveth them in keeping to one of his Knights, whom he specially trusted, and returning to Alfarano, in recompence of his wrongs, and losses sustained by the Phrygians, gave him all their spoyle, and the Ransome of all the Knights taken Prisoners. The Admirall humbly kissing his hand, desired him to repose himselfe in one of his Cities, which was within ffe or ffe miles of the place, which gentle offer Palmerin would not refuse, because he was soe over-wearied with travalle: Wherefore by the Admirals appointment, the Wallace was well provided, both for Palmerin, and his good friend the Prince Olorico.

### CHAP. X X.

How the Queene of Tharsus came to see Palmerin, in the Citie belonging to Alfarano her Admirall, where by the meanes of an Enchanted Drinke, shee accomplished her pleasure with him.



Crie our Viscyo willeth us to rememb're, howe that in our former Discourse was mentioned, that the Queen of Tharsus sent a most rich Helmet to Palmerin, and at the Daniosels returne, being made acquainted with his Ongular composed feature, rare carre, &c, and Knightly Chivalry: the report wherof influced her amouerously to affect him, and that in such bohement manner, as she determined her own death, unlesse she might enjoy his lovely company.

Whch the better to compasse, she discodored her selfes to a cunning Spagittian, he by whose meanes she sent the Helmet to Palmerin, who gave her such an Enchan-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

ted phader, as Palmerin, drinking it in wine or otherwise, shold soon after become so forgetfull of himselfe, as the Queene myght accomplish what ever she desired. He like-wherefore did revele to her the severall loves of Palmerin and Olorico, which Tale made her more earnest in following her intent. And therewithal his arrivall in the Realme of Palmeria, concluded in person to gae for him: furnishing her with all things necessary, both rich Tapstry, and great stoe of Gold and Silver plate, habilliments, preciuos Stones, rings, and unvaluable Jewels. With these she adorned her Knights, Ladies, and Gentlewomen to the uttermost, and when she had furnished her Traine to her owen liking: she set forward with such expedition, as within thre dayes she arrived at the City where he was, but first she aduised her Admirall of her comming, that he shoulde imagine nothing by her subdaine presence. The Admirall was exceeding joyfull herof, because by this meanes he shoulde the moxe honourably entertaine his Guests, acquainted Palmerin and Olorico therewith, who likele were exceeding glad of h' news, especially Palmerin, desirous to knowe y her his off-spring.

Wherefore in most magnifcent order with their men at Armes, and the Admirall Alfarano, they rode to met the Queene for her greater honour: who by the speciall intelligence was given her, knew Palmerin among them all, in that he march'd foremost with the Prince Olorico, and the Admirall of Tharsus. She regarding in him farre more singularities, then sparing report had acquainted her withall; after that Palmerin had saluted her with verry great Reverence, as he was not to learne Courte anstee, the Queen requited him with a sweete kiss, and this beganne. Sir knight, the fairest beyond all other that I saw, well worthy are you to be esteemed amang all the most happy, being able to winne the Love of Ladies that never saw you. Advise your selfe well of this great labour, and what

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

a pretious Jewell you receive of them in recompall of your  
Service, by acceptance of any amounges contentment.

Then wonder not (gentle Knight) if to see you, I have left  
my Country : soj before your great valour, bounynge, and loy-  
alte, which never can be sufficiently commended: your beau-  
tie, affabilitie, and most rare perfections, deserue not onely  
the Love of the greatest Lady and Princess, but their con-  
tinuall service likewise, if they but consider their owne hu-  
ties. If thyn your vertues and gifts of nature are of such ha-  
gue and merit, what may she imagine of her selfe, who is  
your onely Lady and Mistress, and above all other is hono-  
red with your fayfull service, as well recordys the memory  
of the burning Crowne ? Palmerin hearing himselfe so com-  
mended by such an excellent Queen, blushed with bashfoul-  
nesse, and hambly spayed this answer. Madam, so farre un-  
able am I, to deserue the Love and good will you beare me,  
as never will Fortune favour me sufficiencie, to recompence  
the least part of this Princely kindnesse. Yet hereof (faire  
Queen) you may assure your selfe, that you have a Knight  
so forward in your service, as nothing shall withdraw him  
from executing your commandement, though the penalty of  
my life were enjogned theron.

Trust me (quoth the Queen) your behabitor promisest  
no lesse then you speake off, and if I have taken any paties  
for you, I thinke my selfe now throughtly satisfied : let it suffice  
you then, that I account my Fortune not the least, ha-  
ving gaine d'uch place in your good opinion. These and such  
like speeches passed betwene them, till they came to Alfa-  
rano's Pallace, where they spent the rest of the Day in di-  
versite of pleasures: the Queene intreating Palmerin and  
Olorico the next day to dine with her in her Lodging, wheres  
she intended honourably to feaste them. The next day at  
ten of the clocke, these two young Princes came to see her,  
finding her in a gaudy Hall, which was richly hanged with  
Cloth of Gold, and therin stood a faire Cupboard, garnished

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

with the most costly plate that ever was seen : for the baseſſ  
piece was cleane Gold, embelished with pretious Stones,  
but oþers other inestimable Orange Cups and Glasses  
of Agatha. What their Service at dinner was, I leave  
to the judgment of Ladies deſirous of labour. Yet this I  
dare well say, that the viands were ſo rare and exquisite,  
and abounding in ſuch plenty, as though ſhe had them ba-  
ſily at her command. The Tables uichorawne, the Queen  
ſtoke each of the Princes by the hand, and ſitting downe  
betwene them, with a ſweet ſmiling countenance ſhe be-  
gan thus.

I pray you (gentle Knights) to tell me, which of you is  
moſt affected to the ſervice of Love, and followes it with  
greatest endeaþour ? Gladly would I be reſolved by you, al-  
beit I know the certainty as well as your ſelves ?

Madam (quoth Palmerin) if you have ſuch knowledge  
of our affectione, well may our anſwer be excused. Every  
ſtrake (ſaid the Queen) especially you, of whose Loyalty the  
Prince Maurice is ſo notable a bottnesse. Notwithſtan-  
ding, which of you doth moſt miſtrift the attainment of her  
grace, to whom he is moſt devoted in Love, let him not giue  
over the purſuit of his deſire : but rather let me intreat you  
continue your Love with much moſe fervencie, as to thole  
renowned Ladys, who by their vertues and graces, doſ<sup>e</sup>  
woorthily challenge you from all other: for I dare auer you  
ſuch a ſuccellent end of your Love, as with ſpeciall content  
you ſhall finiſh your affectionate deſires. If they were joy-  
full of this aſſurance, it is no queſtion to be demanded, chieſ-  
ly Olorico, who till then deſpaied: but now ſo happily re-  
ſolved, gave place to Palmerin, who was deſirous to con-  
ſerue more privately with the Queene: therſezein meaſure  
time he deuiled with another Ladie, and Palmerin ſeing  
the occation ſo fit, began his tale in this manner. I can-  
not forget (faire Queene) when you ſent your Ladie to me  
at the Soldans Court: that after her message deliþered, the  
said

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

told to me, that you were acquainted with further secrets, concerning my estate. For this cause I intreat your highnessse, if you doe not imagine me too importunate: that it might please you to acquaint me with my father and mother, for that above all other things I must desire. The Duke amaz'd at this demand, thus answered. Know (gentle Knight) that what the Lady in this matter said to you, as also what my selfe even now promised you: cometh not from me, for one of my knyghts acquainted me therewith, he being the most skillfull in the Magicall sciences, than is in all Turke. And now he is returned into his owne Country, and no other answere coulde I get of him: but that you are the Sonne of the most loyall, renowmed, and valiant Prince in the world, whom before you have any further knowledg of, you shall deliver from death, and that very shortly. Beside, you labe a Lady, who in all perfections of nature, for face or spirit, hath not her equall.

In sooth (quoth Palmerin) I shall account my selfe right happy, to deliver my Father from such danger, and heaven I beseech that it may to be. So these tearmes came Altarano, and the dancing began, which constrained them to breake off talke, and step into the dance, in which delight they spent the time till Supper was summned, till which advertisement, they were as well, as was Ogyer the Dane in Faria. For never was Dido such an affectionate audittress of Men, & counting the ruin of the Trojans, then was the Queene of Thartus to Palmerin: towards whom her heart was loorthalled, and with secret fire so wasted and consumed, as doth the flax before the fire. Being set at the Banquet, Palmerin and Olorico on the one side, and the Queen and Alfarano on the other, the Waiters attending on them were two Ladies, who had in charge to give the one, the sleepong and dangerous drinke, and to the other, the amorous and delicate, yet in effect to provoke forgetfulness: so well did the Ladies discharge their office,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

office, and the Princes took this mixed drinke so substantielly, as they could hardly forbear sleeping at the Table: wherefore every one arising, the Queen gave the goodnight to Alfarano, who presently went to his lodging. Then were these two knyple Princes conducted to their Chamber, where being in Bed, they slept soundly, and the Queen comming to them, accompanied with those trustie Ladies that waited at Supper: took the Prince Olorico, conveying him to another Bed, so he was so charmed as he could not awake.

Afterwards the Ladies departed, and the Queen went to Bed to Palmerin, whom she abusid at her owne pleasure. A matter not to be esteemed fabulos, in that other have bene brought into the like case, as well may witness Brangiana, who endured these sweet skirmishes, because she would not manifest the history of Yseul her Mistresse, and Tristram. The Queen having satisfied her unchaste desire, caused Olorico to be brought into his place again, and then returned to her owne Chamber.

But now this Enchantment lossing his operation, a same appeared to Palmerin, resembling his Lady Polynarda, who said. Ah Palmerin, disloyall Traytour and Adulterer, how much are they deceived, that reputeth a loyall and faithfull Lover? Ah wretch, unworthy of so good a name, having so injuriously forgotten me. Doest thou not consider the great offence, committed against the God of Heaven: medling with a Woman more brute then brutishnesse it selfe, and thy disloyall treason against my selfe? We assured, that if thou presently forsake not her company: I will never forget thy fault, but challice thee continually, as a dissembling reprobate. So he departed, Palmerin intreating her to pardon this injury, which he wouldest not heare, but flung away in great anger: and he awaking, brake forth into these speches.

Ah unhappy wretch that I am, thus to loose the gracieous

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

ous favours of my Mistresse. These words awaked the Prince Olorico, who embracing him in his arms, demanded the cause of his sorrow: but Palmerin was so surprised with griefe, as he would make no answer, but fell from the Bed, in a swoone. Olorico fearing he was dead, cried out for helpe, whereat the Queen arose, and casting her Night-mantle about her, came to know the occasion of this clamour: and finding Palmerin breathlesse, she called for so many present remedies, as extinguished the passionate fit. Palmerin seeing the Queen so neare him, clothed himselfe immediately, and departed the Chamber, commanding all his people to probue themselves, for he wold depart thence within an houres space. Neither could the earnest intreaties of the Queen, nor courteous persuasions of Alfarano, cause him to stay till Dinner time: but his Carriages being sent before, and his Men attending him, he came to take his leave of the Queen, who very sorrowful for this strange accident, said to him at his departure:

Noble Sir Palmerin, my heart attainted with such extreme griefe, as the sight of you doth somewhat remedie, expected further hope of ease by your presence: but seeing your departure may not be with God, I pray you vouchsafe to weare this Ring for my sake, and keepe it safely, till my messenger bring you another like unto it. Madam (quoth Palmerin) being unable to remunerate the great honours you have done me, I will not denie your small request: that I may the better fulfill the bond of Allegiance, wherein I stand bound to you while I live. So then in the safe protection of the Gods (quoth she) for thou hast left me such a recompence, as all my life time will be joyfull to me.

Palmerin not understanding her darke speeches, departed, putting the Ring on his finger, being the most rich and curious piece of worke that ever was seene: For in it was a godly great Ruby cut in faces, so lively as could be devised, which shin'd so brightly, as in the night time it sparkled,

led

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

led great light. The Queen likewise, after she had given great Riches to the Admirall, returned to her owne Cittie, leading thenceforwards a very Chaste and Continent life, onely for his sake, by whom in (short time) she found herselfe conceiv'd with childe. And at the tyme appointed by nature, she was delivred of a godly Sonne, resembling his Father in brave constitution: whom the Mother caused to be named Palmerendos, as well in memory of his Father Palmerin, as also of his Grandfatre Florendos, from thent berling his Name, as being the onely flower of Chivalry. And as Palmerin was vertuous, so did his Sonne follow him in all bountie, prudence, magnanimitie, loyaltie, liberalitie, curtesie and humanitie: in whiche he had all the noblie vertues that a Childe might receiue from his father, as you may at large perceiue in his Historie. But because as yet his deeds serde not to our purpose: we will leave him growing under his Mothers charge, and returns to them whom lately we left.

### Chap. XXI.

How Palmerin to colour his intended and desirous Voyage into Christendome, perwaded the Soldane to send his Armie to Constantinople, and what followed thereon.



Now greatly desirous was Palmerin to returns towards the Soldane, and therefore would not make his way through Palmeria, but tournded eitherward, whence the King of Balterca stayed his coming: who came to meet him with all the Lords and Capaines in his Army. This having broughte the Country in quiet obeylance to the Soldane, with their Prisoners they return-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

returned towards his Prestie, sending word before of their speedy comming. The Soldane was not a little joyfull of these tydings, as also of the fortunate victory against his Enemies, wherefore he left the City of Calptia, and determined to meet them at a Castle of Pleasure, which he had lately Crasted, clely because he would see the good order of his Army, which was now conduced in better ega-  
page, then before was wont to be seene in Alsyria.

The King of Balisarca caused the Captives to be lead before, who (by his commandement) when they came in the Soleans presence: threw their Armour to the ground, and thre times fell on their knees kissing the Earth, pro-  
trating themselves, beseeche him with great reverence. All these ceremonies finished, Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, & all the other Gouvernours of the Field came, and kissing his Highnesse hand, he entertained them very graciously: and after he had embrased Palmerin, he would needs ride between him and the King of Balisarca. In this order rode ther on to the Pallace Gate, where his Lady Lethea and Alchidiana her Daughter, tricke up in vesture of sur-  
passing value, attended their comming: and after the accus-  
tomed reverences on all sides, entered the great Hall, whers the Princesse taking Palmerin by the hand, before her Fa-  
ther and all his Warous, thus spake.

Sir Palmerin, so well is your proesse and haughty  
deeds of armes knowne to every one, as my praise can-  
not extoll them to aduantage: Notwithstanding, I dare  
say before my Father, and all his Lords here present, that  
he is so much indebted to you, as he can never retorne suffi-  
cient recompence. These words uttered with such affaction,  
were noted by every one, especially the Prince Olorico,  
and straight Palmerin made this answer to the Princesse:  
Madam, here my you behold the Prince of Arabia, one  
of the best Knights that ever I knew, and who hath done  
more Service to your Father and you in this Warre, then  
any

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

ang other beside: For with his owne hand he slew Gram-  
ell, who was chiefe Leader of the Phrygians Army. Beside,  
such and so many have borne his rare Exploites, as no one  
that I know may be equalled with him. And all this he  
admitteh to your favour, wherein he earnestly desirerh to  
continue, so please you to accept him for your Knight: Deliv-  
ering this assurance before hand, that hereafter he will  
adventure his Life in your cause, wheresoever it shall like  
you to command him. For this cause (Madam) you may  
not refuse him, being the man that among the Assyri-  
ans, both best deserve to be your Servant. Alchidiana,  
who well understood to what end his speeches tended, and  
the occasion why Palmerin thus spake, advised her selfe well,  
and returned this answer.

My helpe me our Gods, I know well that the Prince  
Olorico is as valiant and renowned as any man of whom  
I yet heard: notwithstanding, I hope the Soldan my Fa-  
ther will not be ingratefull in the knowledge thereof, and  
that sufficiently I dare warrant you. But I desire you,  
satre Sir, to tell me how the Queen of Tharsus treated  
you, and what is your opinion of her: In good sooth Ma-  
dam (answered Palmerin) She is one of the most curios  
and hercules Ladies that ever I came in company withall,  
and to whom I greatly desire to doe any service. You have  
good reason (qd. the Princesse) in that she came farre to see  
you, and discover her love: which others could as well accom-  
plish, as good, or rather in Honour beyond her, if they might  
hope of any ease in their passionate desires. Palmerin seig-  
ning not to understand her meaning, entred into other kind  
of talke, untl Supper time, whch binched, each one re-  
turned to their Chamber, when the Prince setting himselfe  
alone with his Friend, thus sayd. Ah my deare Friend  
Palmerin, how wondrously may you be sayd to bee without  
compare, in all perfections that a Knight ought to have.  
Love onely excepted: Yet hererin (if I be not deceived) you

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

doe soz me against all reason, soz a thousand times are you moze beloved, then your selfe can lobe any. Notwithstan-  
ding, soz this default, is so it may be named, and soz the  
wzds this day used in my presence to Alchidiana, I re-  
maine vowed to your Service: soz in trath you know not  
the godes you did me, supporting my imperfection of spech  
when I was before my Mistresse. Yet know I not whence  
such iubecility shoud proceed, if not by being ravished  
with regard of her celestiall countenance, my over-labou-  
red spirit forsooke me, and being too much tormented in  
this languishing body: abandoned all the parts sensitve,  
placing it selfe onely in mine eyes, which never could tria-  
gise themselves satisfied, contemplating beauty of so rare  
and especiall estimation. And were it not my hope one-  
ly consteth in you, comparing my small desert, had the  
excellency of my Lacie: long ere this had my soule forsooke  
her infortunate habitation, mych soundiscrately fell into  
these oppressing passions. And this I earnestly intreat  
you to let her understand: in that I feare least she impote  
happie alteration, to want of wisome and civillty. Trust  
me, quoth Palmerin, I promise you my uttermost ability,  
and so much will I doe, as one friend may soz another, to  
discharge my selfe of the promise whch heretofore I made  
yce.

And let me intreat you on mine owne behalfe, to re-  
move that opinion of speciall lobe, whch you report the  
Prince beares me, being not such as you doe imagine:  
soz (noble Prince, and my deare friend) you need not de-  
spaire of the benefit whereof I have so solemnly assured  
you. After many other speeches, they slept till the next  
morning, when cloathing themselves in their richest gar-  
men't, they went and gibe the good morrow to the Sol-  
dane, who very honourably thanked them; and Palmerin  
espying convenient occasion, thus began.

My Lord, you have sufficient experiance, that by the  
bounte

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

bounty and great labour of the Gods, you have obtained  
victooy against your enemies, to the no little content of your  
Subjects: all which being so happily finished, base were  
the thought, to feare the perfection of higher Enterprizes.  
Wherefore my Lord, I thinke it expedient, so it may stand  
with your good liking, considering your provision for the  
Sea, is in such readinesse, your people likewise acquainted  
with your intent, before we medled with the Brethren of  
Amarano, came daily in troopes to offer their Service: that  
now you send your Army to Constantinople, soz your an-  
swer once heard, right soone will we Embark our selves,  
and set forwards on our voyage. Soz the rest, I pray you  
deliver these Prisoners, to be used as your Slaves: But as  
for the Princes, I think (hadting sans the Fortune of their  
Brethren, and their owne bad successe in Armes) that they  
will serve you with continuall loyalty. My Sonne, (quoth  
the Soldan) let all be done as you have appointed, soz such  
is my confidence in you, that this your intent cannot but  
sort to a good end: Wherefore my Gallyes and all things be-  
ing ready furnished, depart when you please, having first  
sent your Soldiers abroad.

The Prince Olorico being present, offered againe to  
go in his Vlopage, with like number of men, as he brought  
against the Brethren of Amarano: Soz whch the Sol-  
dane greatly thanked him, promising him such satisfaction  
at his returne, as would agree with his owne content. Al-  
chidiana taking in ill part, the wazds of Palmerin on the  
Prince Oloricoes behalfe sent for him to come speake with  
her, which he did, and finding her very sad and melancholy,  
he demanded if any one had done her displeasure, and  
what the cause might be of her pensiveness? Ah my deare  
Friend (quoth he) how can I but be grieved, seeing no one  
Lady in the world, hath so many contrary fortunes as my  
selfe? Alas, my heart hath chosen you soz my onely Lord  
and Friend, thikking to finde place worthy my conceit,  
and

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

and that your Love would answer me with the like : but in sooth I can perceive, I am too much beguiled, for you, either as ingratefull, or careless, use affecting speeches to me, imparting no other end, but that in leading you, I should take the Prince Olorico for my Husband. Do you imagine me so muttable and inconstant, that I will, or can love any other but you ? D<sup>r</sup> that my affection enticely settled so high can brooke such a downesall, as to like the man so much inferior to you ? And (which most of all offendeth me) not contented to mocke me, in disdaining my knowne love : but disconreoually wouldest perswade me to chuse another : Let all our Gods be judge, if I have not just cause to complain of you, albeit I have greater reason to hate and despise my owne selfe : Because that I have more then deserued your love, yet (as too much unwise) I cannot consider, that in the heart of an ingratefull person, Love hath no place of certaine abiding. But seeing our Gods have in such sort subiected me, as against my will I am constrained to love mine enemis; in vaines were it so me to resist against them, that they beholding the unspotted love of the one, may in the end punish the ingratitude of the other. Thus thinking to continue longer speech, so many violent Agges intercepted her, as she was not able to proffer one word more, whereby Palmerin enoyed, thus answered. I beseech you Sarac, crosse me not with these nobleste words, for although the Prince is so worthy to be beloved, as any man that ever I saw: yet were I very much unprovided of wit, and a more stranger to god consideration, should I refuse that speciaall Felicity, then which I can desire no greater.

I know (sweet Ladie) that you Love me intirely, perswade your selfe then, that my Loyaltie is no lesse, ney can death cause me to gaunesay the promises I have made you : and were it not to the great disadvantage of mine honour, to forsake this honourable Warre your Father hath intended,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

intended, which might procure him to misconceive of me : assure your selfe I would for sake Dignities, Arms, and all, to do the service you worthily deserve, which at my returme shall be effected. Palmerin dissimiled the matter so well, as the Prince was well pacified : and taking his leave, returned to the Soldan : Before whom he caused to be brought the Princes, and Lords that were prisoners, and at his request Maulicus gave them Liberty, with this charge, that they should serue him in this Warre. Whiche that they might the better accomplish, he gave them Housse, Armes, and all other things necessary, making all possible speede could be devised, that his Army might set forward to sea.

### CHAP. XII.

How Palmerin Sayling with the Soldans Armie, was brought by Tempest into the Sea of Almaigne, where he took Landing with the Prince Olorico.



Almerin quickly consented for to Embarke the Armie desiring the Prince Olorico to accompany him to the Haven, to the end they might make chioce of the best Vessels for themselves : and surveying them all, they found a goodly Carracke, new and verp well appointed, wherein many prisoners lay chained, who formerly had been taken by the Soldans Gallies, and other Robers of the Moores. Of whom Palmerin demanded what people they were : They answered that they were Christians, and had of long time lived there in that thralldome. Palmerin not a little glad of these newnes, asked of what Countrey they were, wherupon one of them that could well speake the Arabian tongue, thus answered : We are all borne in Almaigne, to whom Fortune hath

bath exceeded in crueltie. These words were marballon welcome to Palmerin, and so; which inwardly he thanked his God: but the better to dissemble his joy, he thus spakes This Country shoulde seeme to be very farre from hence because I never heard thereof before. So finding this to sell fit for his purpose, he appoynted it for himselfe and the Prince Olorico, discharging all others that were therein, two Knights onely excepted, to whose charge he committed the Christians: causing his Horses, Tents, and Drums, Trumpets, Clarions, Cornets, Siles, and other Oloricoes, as his owne, accomplishing every thing in such order, as within thre dayes after the Souldiers were reountered together. Palmerin thus floting on the government of Neptune, imagined how with safetie he might when the Soldane and other Tabozlans, accompanied by all the Christians. For (quoth he to Olorico) seeing they world not be sone, by reason of her grieves and sorrowe for her may stand us in good stead, if time to require, or any her friends departure: For when she came to take her leave of Palmerin in his Chamber, she sell (in a maner) little his owne people, he caused them to swere their faith, dead) at his feet, and sone after she delievered these lauening speeches:

This is no common farewell, my beloved Lord, whiche slept soundly: called two of the Christians, and in the Al-

you now take of me, but say it is my very last Adieu: for maigne tongue thus began. My friends, give thankes to my heire persuades me, that I shall never see you more. God for your Fortune, in that you Christians be be sound because the extremities of my sorowes are such, as will one of your Faith and Religion, who hath god hope shortly I know I cannot long endure. Adieu then sweet friend, to deliver you from these Heathen will-homme: therefore who instead of joy and comfort, leavest me in despaire, rare apart, and regard well your Duabrant, if you can whiche never can haue end but by my death.

Good Rabani say not so, (qb. Palmerin) for I hope right Christians more glad then can be expressed, answere, that some to see you againe. So leaving her, Olorico and he they would accomplish his commandement, and therefore went towards the Haven, the Prince being so passionate he should repose his trust in them. About mid-night, as God to leave her sight, by whose sweet looks his life was main- tained, began a greet Tempest and blustering of WInd, so fierce, as had not his friendly companion comforted him, that in despight of the Pylots and Mariners, the fleet he had bin unable to depart the Vallaco. But being come was severred in many parts: but the Christians perceiving to the West, and seeing the westerne and sea serviceable, left to telle the time with any longer say, they came to take their

leaves of the Soldane, who tooke great care for their contentment, and many times embracing Palmerin, commending to him the disposition of all his affaires, said: My noble Sonne and friend, I beth to you in presence of our Gods, that if you returne hither againe with victoie, with such honours I will endow you, as shall be sufficient for the whole World to talke on. Palmerin humbly kissing his hand, went aboard, the Mariners boylng Haile, with such a brave noyse of drums, Trumpets, Clarions, Cornets, Siles, and other instruments, as though Heauen and Earth would have en-

countered together. Palmerin thus floating on the service to him, compassed any meanes to get the Coast of Almaigne. The Christians more glad then can be expressed, answere, that some to see you againe. So leaving her, Olorico and he they would accomplish his commandement, and therefore went towards the Haven, the Prince being so passionate he should repose his trust in them. About mid-night, as God to leave her sight, by whose sweet looks his life was main- tained, began a greet Tempest and blustering of WInd, so fierce, as had not his friendly companion comforted him, that in despight of the Pylots and Mariners, the fleet he had bin unable to depart the Vallaco. But being come was severred in many parts: but the Christians perceiving to the West, and seeing the westerne and sea serviceable, left to telle the time with any longer say, they came to take their

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

hew to order their Course, that in thoyt time they got faire enough from their compaines, and thus continued the viiiij. soz tene or twelve dayes, soz which Palmerin devoutly thanked God.

So happily trayed Palmerin with his Almaigne that one of them at length told him, they were neare the Straites of Gibraltar : soz which Palmerin not a little joyfull, said : Hau that they myght passe Spaine without feare, and so the sooner reach Almaigne. But when they began to Coast the Straite, the Turkish Mariners were amazed, saying that the Christians knew not their Course being more then eight thousand Leagues sooth of their Compasse.

Palmerin fearing to be discovered before he came to his intent, answered in anger ; that the Christians knew their Course better then they did, bidding them to pray no man on paine of their lives : which threatening, presently drove them all to Glence. Afterwards, they sailed with so god Winde, as they tooke Landing at a Port in Almaigne whitch at this day is called Toledo : When the Christian said to Palmerin, how that was the place wheres they were boorne, where (if so he pleased) they desred their libertie Palmerin alstaring them of thoir request, answered that he himselfe would land there, and therfore went sick on thoyt seigning to seeke fresh Water, and all things accomphished to his swone desire : he caused his houze to be brought sooth and Oloricoes likewise, who was import mante to bear him company. No sooner was Palmerin on Deere, but he kneeled downe, g.ving thankes to God for his safe deliuerance. The Peichans and Mariners of the Citie, seeing them whom they thought lost in the See, more then ten yeres before, were greatly abashed, welcoming them home with exceding ioy : but they answered, that they ought rather to thank the Knight in grene Arme, for he delivered us from the Moores and Justors, without Ransome.

Olorico

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

Olorico amazed at these signes of ioy, as also when he saw Palmerin pray, knew not well what to thinke : whiche Palmerin presently perceiving, and to resolve him of all doubtes whatsoever, said. No lenger nad I now my good Lord and Friend, to hide the affaires and secrets of my heart from you: know therefore, that I am a Christian, and a Gentleman of the Emperours Court of Almaigne. But that which most of all grieveth me, is that I am constrainted to saylake your company, and returns againe to my Lord, soz too much should I offend my God, to gos with you in the Soldans Service. Wherfore my loving Friend, let me intreat you to hold me excused, swearing to you (by the fath of a Knight) that whether else it shall like you to doe, I will accomplish your mind: in any thing. I intreat you likewise, to entertaine all my Squires and Gentlemen into your Service, and among them to share all my treasures in the Ship, because I will have nothing with me but my Hous and Arment. And notwithstanding all this, scarce not to present your selfe before the Holdane and Alchidians : soz to them will I write such matter of you, as they shall accept you in my place, and with as great honour as eber they did me. If Heaven so favour me, as I may come to the knowledge of my Father, I will certifie you with the truth of all. As say my counterfeting to be done, was onely but to avaite opportunity, when with safety I might escape from thence.

If Olorico at the first was amazed, what may be sayd of him now? Notwithstanding, he loved Palmerin so perfectly, as he returned him this answer. Although Sir Palmerin, we are of contrary fayth and Opinion, yet hath your Noblenes and humanity gained such privilege over me, that as you habe long time lived a Christian among the Turkes, soz your sake will I live a Turke among the Christians, dissembling in like sorte as you did, and never shall any occasion force me to saylake you, till you habe

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

found your Father, and know if he be descended of the Soldans blood. No honor will it be for me now, to returne again to the Alliancian Princes, and as for my people, I force not though they go backe again with my Treasures: for on my Knighthood, I will be no richer then you, nor will reserve any thing with me, but what belongs to a Knight Errant, which is Horse and Armes. For the rest, let Fortune do the best she can, I hope for all this, one day to be R. of Arabia. Then noble Friend, be not offended, for I will beare you companie: if death or strong imprisonment doe not hold me. Palmerin embrasing him said.

Ah worthy Prince, so noble is your mind, and replete with fidelity, as perswade your selfe to finde me your loyall Brother, and fellow in Armes, never to forsake you while I can lift my Sword, so please you to abide with me. So calling the chiefe of them in the Ship, they said as much to them as you have heard, commanding them not to stirre from Arabia, before they heard some other tydinge. As for their strange conceit at these newes, I bequeath to your judgments, yet durst they not gainsay their Masters: but launching into the deepe, sailed backe again into their own Countrey.

Palmerin and Olorico for this night lodged in the City, to refresh themselves: and the next Morning, after they had taken leaue of the Merchants, they deliberaed, they set forward on their journey. Continuing their traualle these daies together, at length they met a Knight, who seeing them Armed after the Turkish Manner, said. Gentlemen, God save ye, if I shoulde not seeme troublesome to you, because I judge you to be Strangers: I would gladly know if you could tell me any tidings of two Knights, which long since left this Countrey. How were they named (quoth Palmerin?) He said the Knight, one of them is Trineus, borne to our dread Lord the Emperour; and the other, the most valiant Palmerin d'Oliva. Two yers and moore since, they

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

they left the Court, without any newes what is become of them: saing that we heard they were a while with the King of England, and thence they conbayed his Daughter, the Emperour continuing so sorrowfull for their losse, as every houre his death is expected. May it be (quod Palmerin) that all this while Trineus is not returned? What danger will noble Almaigne sustaine, by losing their young Prince? Overcome with exceeding griefe and sorrow, by report of these unhappy tydings, to himselfe he began in this manner.

What shall I do? Dare I be so presumptuous, as to present my selfe before my Mistris? What sufficient excuse can I make for the losse of her Brother? Doubtless, if it were such a Hell to me, to finde the meanes for my departure, from that long Captivity in the Soldans Court, much moore will it be to me now in search of the Prince, for without him I dare not appreach the Emperors presence.

While he thus secretly discoursed with himselfe, he became so exceeding p'sionate, as Olorico thought he had lost his sences: whitch was the cause, that without any further enquirie the Almaigne Knights departes from them, when Olorico amazed at this sudden alteration, said :

How now Sir Palmerin? What hath moved you to this Heavincle? I beseeche you conceale not the cause from me: for if it be by any offence, that the Knight offered whitch spake to you, wone shall I deliver him his Penance. Therefore tell me I pray you, for undoubtedly I will not suffer you to rest, untill you have acquainted me with the truth. Palmerin knowing how dearely the Prince loved him, and that onely for his sake he had left Countrey, Parents, and Friends: reposing on his loyaltie, imparted his Love to him, as also the losse of Trineus and the Princessse Agriola. Olorico then laboured to perswade him, at killing him to compasse some secret speach with his Lady, of whom he might learne how to recover her lost Brother, and the faire

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Agriola of England againts. Palmerin following his counsell, pacified himself, and he kept himself so closely as he could, from being knowne to any.

### C H A P. X X I I I .

How Palmerin, by the meanes of Vrbanillo his Dwarfe, spake with his Lady Polynarda, with whom he stayed five dayes, to recompence some part of his long absence, and to the great contentment of them both.



In this expedition in their Journey made these Noble Companions, and most worthy Knights, that at length they arrived neare a strong Castle, which was about four Miles distant from Gaunt, where the Emperour as then was disposed for Hunting, so the delight of the Ladys: but chiefly to expell his owne melancholie and sadness, for the loss of his beloved Sonne, as also to recreate the Princesse Polynarda: who under pretence of shadowing the cause, by her Brothers absence, lamented continually for her Noble Friend Palmerin, of whom she could understand no certain tydings, albeit she travailed her veraytemost endeavours, which forced her to so many extreme imaginations, as that the very least was worse then death it selfe.

The Emperours Traine lodging each way about the Castle, hindered our Knights from any good Hostage, so that they were constrained to Lodge in a homely simple house: Where they demanded of a Courtier which lay there, what time the Emperour would depart thence: Who answered that his Highnesse was minded that day to returne to Gaunt, to conferre with the Princes Electours of speciall affaires concerning the Empire. Palmerin joyfull hereof

## Emperour of Constantiople. PART. 2.

hereof, caused his Housle to be hiedled: and accompanied with Olorico, went and Ambushed themselves in a little Thicket neare the High-way, where the Emperour must needs passe, to the end he might behold his Ladie Polynarda. Palmerin attending her coming who was the only support of his life: his heart leapt with conceit of his Joy to come, yet trembled likewise, because he durst not present himselfe before the Imperiall Majestie, without the Noble Trineus.

Sone after, by the Guard of Archers that came so-moist, he well perceaved the Emperour was at hand: when remembryng the honours and labours he had receiv'd in his Court, the teates trickled downe his Cheekes, chiefly for want of his Highnesse Sonne, which was so especially committed to his trust. Then followed the Empresse, and with her the faire Princesse Polynarda, clothed all in blacks, witnessing by her outward habit, the secret sorowes of her heart. Her thoughts still hammering on her private grieses, yet assallid with a suddaine Joy, she gabs such a Sigh, as Palmerin easly heard it: which troubled him in such sorte, as without the assistance of Olorico, he had falle downe from off his Housle. Polynarda beholding his suddaine alteration, without any regard of her Mother, called Vrbanillo the Dwarfe to her: who since his commynge from England, never boudged from her, and to him she said. Hast thou heretofore (Vrbanillo) seyn these two Knights, who shadow themselves in the wood side, while we passe by? Do trust me Madam (quoth the Dwarfe) I never saw them, to my remembrance. I pray this (said sh) ride to them so fast as thou canst, and demand of them from me, of whence they are? And if they can tell any tydings of thy Master, and my Brother Trineus. The Dwarfe, who was a good Doctor in such like affaires, dissembling that his Housle would fall, suffered the Traine to passe by, and then rode towards the Knights, who were debiting on the Princesse

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Princesse beauty. Palmerin well knowing Vibainillo, and seeing him come in such hast, was not a little glad, thinking now he should heare some newes of his Mistris, wherefore he said to Olorico. I pray let us go meet this Yoyseman soz I thinks his returne is onely to us.

How was the Dwarfe come to them, and having humbly saluted them, said. I desirch you faire Knights to tell me whether you belong to the Emperour or are strangers? For the Lady whora I serue is very desirous to know: and that soz matters nearly concerning her, whereof if you can any way truly resolve her, your reward shall answer your owne contentment. *¶* That Vibainillo (q.d. Palmerin) lifting up his Veve: Didst then not know thy Master?

My Headen (quoth the Dwarfe) pratised be my Maister for ever for this Adventure. And moved with extreame joy, he fell at his Masters feet, saying: Ab my Lord, what comfort will this be to the Princesse Polynarda, when she shall understand of your presence? And not without just cause; for by this meanes is she delivred from the greatest tormentis in the world. And that nothing may want to furnish this long expected joy, tel me if the Knight in your companie, be the Prince Trineus or no? It is not he (quoth Palmerin) for it is more then a yeare, since that of him, and the faire English Agriola, (after that I unsoytanately lost them) I heard any certain report. For this cause Vibainillo, it behoves thet to be faithfull and secret, not discouering me, bring here to anie but my Ladie: of whom thou must learne, by what meanes I may best come to see her? The Dwarfe taking his leave of his Master, turned his Yoyse to be gone, but comming backe suddenly againe, said. Is this Sir Ptolome that is with you? Madam Brionella will not be a little glad to heare of him likewise. Peris it he (q.d. Palmerin) I left him in companie with the rest. God will recompence them one daye ag iun (said the Dwarfe) so giving the spars to his Yoyse, he galloped till he came to the Princesse,

vho

## Emperour of Constançinople. PAR T. 2.

who seeing him returned in such hast, knew not well what to think: yet fearing to be discovered by a Knight that accompanied her, determined not to request his yoydings, until she came home into her Chamber. But never was poore Iober in greater agonie, when she expeceth her friend in semper privat place, then was the faire Princesse at this present: wherefore as soone as she came to her Chamber, she called for the Dwarfe, who being come, she said; I pray thet Vibainillo, by the reverend dutie thou owest me, whence are the two Knights, & what answer did they make thet? They are such sweet Madam (quoth the Dwarfe) as when all the men in the world could tell no yoydings of, my selfe by happy fortune, have found: for by them I bring you the Bey of Paradise, is your self will bat find the meanes to enter. Only, I pray thet, quoth the Princesse, jest not with me in this sort, for now is no time of sport or merriment tell me who they are I desire thet? Now then faire Madam (quoth he) that one of them is my Mr. Palmerin, who thus concealeth him, because he hath not brought the Prince your Brother with him, and he (humbly kissing your hand) commandeth him to your gracieous labour, desiring you to send him answer, how he may secretly speake with you, because he would not be knowne to the Emperour, or any other of the Court. Now welcom these long expected newes were to the Princesse, I leave to the option of long absent friends. O heavens (quoth she) doth Palmerin live, and is so neare at hand? Now hath my heart his only desired confort: and such is my hope, that seeing he is come, my brother (by his means) shall not be long hence, to such good fortune are all his actions destinated. Presently she ran to tell Brionella these newes, who likewise was exceeding joyfull, because she imagined Palmerins companion to be her Ptolome. Whereupon they coaled together, that Palmerin shoulde the night following come to the Garden, where for his sweet amours were solicited, and by a Ladie of cordis he shoulde ascend her Chamber. This resolution set

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

set downe, the Dwarfe departed to execute his charge, when Polinarda thus began to Brionella. Ah my deare Friend, how impossible is it soj me to hise the joy my heart concelebeth, that was so late in such surpaſſing heauynesse:

What will my Ladys now thinke, when they behold their Mistresse so pleasant? Let them ſpeak what pleafe them (quoth Brionella) Could you render them account of your behaviour? Yet this I thinke, that your diſcretion is ſo good, when you haue ſene the onely conſeſte for your cares: that you can ſo well diſemblie your thoughts, as the moſt warie Eye shall hardly diſcernē you. Well haue you ſaid (quoth the Prince) if Loue could be gobernied by wiſeſſe: but the pleafe which the wiſeſſe haue received by his rules, haue in the end diſcovered their vanity and follie. Much were the ſpitches betwixne these two Ladys attending all the Night in good devotion, when each one thought to ſee her Lord and beſt beloued, that their long ſorrows might ſeme whiſt be qualifiſed.

The Dwarfe being gone on his Meffage, as you haue heard, the Knights reposed themſelues on the græne grasse till Sunne ſetting, that they miȝt moſe covertly enter the Cittie: and the time be no come that they would ſet forwards, Palmerin ſaid to Olorico. My Lord, we will take this by-way, which leadeth to the Cittie, for I intend before I depart, to haue ſome newes from my deare Miſtreſſe. Goe which way you please (quoth the Prince) yet muſt I needs maruile at you, that you would be ſo long abſent from ſuch an excellent Princeſſe: Trust me Alchidiana is faire, yet may not the be equalled with your Lady. The grieſes I haue endured (ſaid Palmerin) by my long abſence, are not to be ſpoken of: yet could no way compaſſe my returne ſooner. By this time they were come to the Cittie, and to a Lodging appainted them by Urbanillo, who being now come to his Maſter, deliuered the Meffage he was commanded. Palmerin understanding his Miſtreſſe pleasure,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

pleaſure, preſently unarmed himſelfe and wrapped a Scarf about him, taking his cruyſy ſword under his Arme, he intreated Olorico to lay there til he returned, or heard further tydings from him, leaving Urbanillo, in his compaionate, with charge to uſe him as his owne perſon.

He being come to the walles loveliſt Paradise, found the Ladder ready prepared for him, whereby he made a ſpeedie paſſage: and finding Brionella, there ſtaying his coming, enbraſcing her ſweetly, ſaide. Trust me Ladie, the want of Syr Ptolome your friend, doth not a little grieve me: but by the grace of God, ere it be long I hope to bring him with me. Ah my Lord (quoth ſhe) right happy is your good coining hither: for your preſenſe hath beene here moſt of all desired. But albeit ſhe ſet a gud countenance on this anſWERE, yet were her ſecret ſorrows innumerable, being deceiued of the conſeſſe ſhe expected. Palmerin who thought he ſtarde too long from his Ladys Chamber; who angrily had þrowne herſelfe on a Pallet, because he ſayd to ſpeak with Brionella, then falling on his knee before her, he offered to kille her hand, which with diſembling diſdaine, ſhe would not ſuffer him, ſaying: Truly you haue no fauour of me, before I know certainly who you are: for I ſtand in doubt to be deceiued, and that you are ſome other then my Palmerin, ſeing you haue bene ſo long tyme from me, and (which is moſe,) would never vouchafe to ſend to me.

Then taking a light in her hand, and earnestly beholding him, hardly coulde ſhe let it from her againe, when welcomming him with an infinite number of ſweete kisses ſhe thus ſaide: Now know I well that this is my Palmerin: what Countrey might he ſo delectable, or Fortune to contrarie, that coulde with helpe you all this while from me? What it might haue ſlood with mine honoure, for me ſelfe to haue ſonght you out: with god will could I endured the Crab. II. Pea, much meze then you haue done for me,

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

me. How often (considering the dangers of the See) hath very death surprized me? And into how many sundry opinions habbe I fallen? Sometymes to disguise my selfe into a Mans attire, to enter the eate of a Knight Errant, and begin a search whiche never shuld have ended, till I found you. For this hath been receiv'd to a generall rule, that by too long sufferance and expectation one may endure a thousand deaths: and think not but the very least of my afflictions, habbe been of force to deprive my life. Consider that griefe, desse, rememb'rence, languor, sorrow, hope, suspicion, teares, complaints, and other suchlike passions common in love, continually beat upon the heart with burning affection, and to such inconvenience their issue growes, as the vitall spirit is chased from the body. For God's sake Madam (quoth Palmerin) leaves these mourning speeches, and suffer me to take a little life, in beholding that which is no lesse divine than humane, for my essence believ's not these accusations. When discovered he all his softurnis passed, which drove the Princesse to no little admiration, when she saith;

Believe me my Lord, saing that by your meanes my Brother Trineus is lost: for my love, and so sethie rear ydom'e to my Lord and Father, you must ne de goe finde him againe. What shall I Madam (quoth Palmerin) but before I begin this Journey, let me increate that favourable regard: which is the ioynt in love, and uniteth life and Soule together, which heret leye you have granted, and I have will not now bear me. What may I judge (quoth she) of your constancy since reu' abne? For not long since I was solicited with a Vision, which told me, that you committed breach of truce with a Queen, to my no little griefe: although tell me: I reproved you therefore, to cause you for sake thereof, when me thought the Queen thus affriert. Now then said Polynarda, that although Palme in estate were above all other, yet

(hall)

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

shall he leave some part of his love with me. Hearing these words, I brake forth into teares, wherewith you seemed to be mou'd, and so loszaking her, followed me: and here, with I awaked, finding (indeed) my face besprent with teares, and my heart overcome with insupportable griefe. Palmerin abashed hereat, remembred what entertainment the Queen of Tharsus made him at the Banquet: of her sundry delights and great favours for his arrivall, her piercing, eloquent, and alluring speeches, wherewith she incessantly did sollicite him: and such was his conceit, as he verily perswaded himselfe, that by enchanted practises she had abus'd him: whereupon he sayd. I swear to you Madam, by the Religious values of our Love, that never did I commit such wrong against you: if the Queen of Tharsus, of whom you have spoken, did not one night deceiue me by an Enchanted drinke, which unwittingly I receiv'd as I late at Supper, causing me to loose both sense and understand: and so acquainted her with his Dreame that night: likewise.

Doubtlesse my Lord (quoth she) considering the extremity of her affection, she practised some meanes to compasse her desire: but seeing it fell out in that sort, and belieding you would not willingly offend me, I am contented to pardon that fault. In these and suchlike speeches, they spent that night, and fours more afterward, all whiche time Palmerin was kept unseene in her Chamber: till his departing time being come, when the Prince attyng her selfe in her wond'ring Garments, and shewing her countenance to her former sorrow, shrowded her pleasures past: and thus we will leave them, returning to our Asyrians Singing on the See.

CHAP. XXIII.

CHAP. XXXIII.

How after the Tempest was past the Soldans Armie assembled together, and came against Constantinople, where by the Emperors power they were discomfited: and the King of Balilarca, his Sonne Gueresin, and divers other great Lords of Turkie slaine.



In the Tempeſt (which had throwne Palmerin on Hercules Pillars, after many long and contagious stormes, began now to cease, the ſea being faire and calme, and the windes very quiet, whereupon the King of Balilarca, Generall of the Armie, inhort time assembled together the moſt part of his fleet, and came upon the Coast of Natolia, where he attended the reſt of his Roys and Gallyes. And having there stayed about fifteen dayes, among all the ſhippes the long stay whereof cauſed him to doubt, leſt he had un-happily perished in the ſea, and overcome with exceding grieſe, he thus began:

Ah gentle Palmerin, the flower of all Chivalrie, in a luckleſſe houre diſt thou betake thy ſelfe to the ſea: what anſwer ſhall I make the Soldane for the loſſe of thee, and the Prince Olorico, being ſo elſpecially committed to my truſt? Now cannot Fortune be ſo favourable to us as the world: For by the loſſe I utterly deſpaire of expeſted victorie. To cut off these bookeſte complaints, he was counſelled by the Lordz Knights and anciēnt Captaines, to ſet ſowrard to Constantinople, to diſcharge themſelves of their p̄miſſe to the Soldane, leſt in returning without dealing with the enemie, they ſhould be reputed ſo ſearful and fainthearted Cowards. Setting their ſailes to the wind

at length they came to the Bophor. Now was the Emperor very Aged and ſickly, having alſogether committed the ſuperintendance of the Empire, to his Sonne Caniano, who had a Sonne aged eaueſtene yeres, named Cariteos. And being aduertised of the comming of ſo many Aſſyrians, Turkes and Moores, he ſent to all the Christian Princes for ſuccour: the greater part whereof, was there as now arrived, with reſolute determination to welcōme theſe Infidels.

When the Emperours ſcoules had ſpied the Enemys to enter the Straight, young Cariteos beholding the Knights on all sides, ſome on the Wallies, and other in the Field: came and knelled before his Grandfather, earnestly de-ſiring him to graunt him his Knighthood. For my Lord qb. he, a better time and occation cannot be then now. The aged Empereur graunted his requeſt, and with the teares in his eyes ſaid. In the name of God, my Son, maſt thou receaue thy order, and to the gloriouſ maintenance of the Christian faith: albeit thy youth forbids thee to venture ſo ſome.

Prefently arose the young Knight Cariteos, and clapping on his Helmet, was the firſt that went forth of the Cittie, accompanied with tenne thouſand Horsemen, and twentie thouſand Footmen, to binder the landing of the Enemys: whiſch a great while he did with ſuch valour, as the Haven was charged with the blwo of the ſlaughtered. The King of Balilarca hearing theron, comandred his Archers to their taske, whose shafts flew ſo thicke in Cloudes: and on the other ſide he got thirtie thouſand men on Land, who attaileſd the Christians ſo furiously, as young Cariteos was ſaine, and a great number of Noble personages, whiſch was the cauſe that the Christians reti-red to the very Gates of the Cittie. The Prince Caniano aduertised of his Sonnes death, & the great danger where-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

in the Army was : issud forth of the City with eight thousand Pyslemen, and four thousand hardy Archers, who like hungry Tygers raine upon the Turks, beating them to the earth in such heapes, as twelve thousand of hem were slaine at this encounter, and the rest repulsed backe to their Shippes, wheres many entred soz safeguard of their livers, and a great number were miserably drowned in the See.

At this mishap the King Balisarca was greatly enraged, who with his power presently went on Shore : the fight enditing so cruell and bloody threoures space, as neyther side could be reputed likelie to victorie. In this encounter ended their lives, the King of Balisarca, his Sonne Gueresin, and a great number of Calyses and Tabozlans of Turkey : and of the Christians, the Prince Caniano, with divers other great Princes and Lords, whose deaths are to this day lamented in Greece, yet were the Pagans and Christians so animated one against another, as darke night was the cause of their separation. When the Emperour understanded the death of his Sonne and Nephew, hee was ready to die with conceit of griefe: but seeing the necessarie of the time required other matter, then sorrowing, tears and unprofitable lamentations, hee presently dispached Valles and Messengers, to halken the succor was comming from Christendome. In shoit time arrived a mighty Christian power, and in despight of the Turkes entered the City, when the Emperour presently sent tenne thousand into the Field, and prohibed a Ugnall soz the other, to set fire among the Turkish flote, at what time they received the Sgne from the City. The Infidels stiring the Christians to sallie abroad, left their Shippes and came to mixte them: whereupon, the Christians diuided themselves into squadrons, and running furiously on the Moores, Arabes and Asirians, made such havocke and slaughter of them, as happy was he that could best defend himself. Then

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

suddainly was the signall of fire made, on the highest steeple in Constantinople, to the Emperors power wasting on the See: whiche immediately launching among the Turkish flote, suncke the greater part of them, and burned the rest with their wilde fire. When the Turkes beheld this Stratageme, and that they were now destitute of any helpe, they beganto faint: so that at the comming of the Emperour, who came himselfe upon them, with a fresh sally of five thousand men, they were all slaine, except a few that escaped into Galleyes, that brake from the rest upon sight of the pollicie. Great was the spoyle gotten by this conquest, whiche the Christians taking with them, entered Constantinople, where they gaue God thanks for their happy victorie.

But althoough the Emperour saw his enimies vanquished, after the Princes were departed that cam to his succour, right grevous was the losse of his sonnes to him, wherefore his Lords advised him, to send for his Daughter the Queene Griana, and King Tarisius her Husband, and to commit the government of the Empire to him. For the accomplishment of this generall determination, the Duke of Pera was appoynted Lord Ambassadour, being one of the most ancient Princes of Greece: who accompanied with many noble Gentlemen, made such expeditiōn in his iourney, as he arrived in Hungaria before the King and his Queene Griana, whose sorowres may not bee expressed for the death of her Brother. When they understood the Emperours pleasure, they resolved on their obedience, whiche caused the King to send for two of his Nephewes, who were Sonnes to the Dutchesse of Ormida his Sister, the one named Promptalcon, and the other Oudin, to be his Lieutenants in Hungaria during his absence. Upon their presence, before the Ambassadour of Constantinople, the King Tarisius tooke their oathes, for their loyall and faithfull government. But because we must not rebibe

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

matter long expeded, as concerning the noble Prince Florendos of Macedon: I am loth to spend any further time in vain, and will now report what happened at Buda, during the time of this determination.

### CHAP. XXV.

How the Prince Florendos of Macedon, accompanied with none but Frenato his Cozen, departed from his Country in a Pilgrims habit, journeying to Hungaria, where he killed the King Tarisius: and how he and the Queen Griana were taken Prisoners.



W<sup>i</sup>dings, let vs now remember how after that Palmerin was departed from Macedon, having recovered the health of the old King Primaeon, Father to the Noble Prince Florendos, who during the time of Palmerins presence: was somewhat moze pleasant then of long time he had been, appearing his complaints soz the Princesse Griana, by the happy tryngs of the ancient Knight, that sent the Sheld to Palmerin at his knighting. But now Florendos hearing no newes of him, returned to his former heabiness, and languished much moze then ever he did: so that when the Macedonian Princes and Lords, pressed him with continuall request of marriage, that he might have issue to succeed in the Kingdome, he was constrained by their importunitie, to make them promise of shelt request, craving a feres respite before, in which time he intended to make a devout voyage, whereto they consented in respect of his promise. Now did he not demand this time of his Subiects, soz any desire he had to be a Pilgrim, or any superstitious zeal to the Spaniish Leather Cape, Hobbes, Frock and such like: but soz he longed to see

his

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

his swete Mistresse Griana, whom he serued in heart with such loyall affection, as till death he woulde not marry without her consent and licence.

The day being come that he woulde depart, he tooke his leave of all the Princes, Lords and Gentlemen, and accompaned with Frenato Father to Tolomeo, both scaped after the manner of Pilgrims: mounted on two Palfrayes of small value, and without any weapons, except each of them a little short Dagger, departed the Cittie, making such hale in their journey, as they arrived at Buda, where as then the King kept his Court providing to set syward to Constantinople. There were they lodged in one of the best Otteries in the Cittie, and the next morning went to the great Church, where the Queen was euer wont to heare divine service: And so well it soytuned, that at the tyme these two Pilgrims entred the Church, the Queen her selfe was in the Chappell. Florendos who was marvellously disguised, stood not in doubt to be knowne: but seeing the Chaplaune had begun Service, hypocritically he approched to the Altar with holy devotion, to the end he myght the better behold the Queen. Regarding her sweet countenance, he remembred the curiosities he sometime received of her, and what exceeding affection as then she bare him: but now being in the custodie of another, and he out of hope to habe any moze gracious ptitle his spirits were so wonderfully troubled, and so many paleinate shetes he breathed from his heart, as he fell downe in a swoond, that every on reputed him fer dead. The Queen, who many tymes had noted his pitious looks, commanded Tolomestra one of her Ladies, she that had the charge of her in the Tower at Constantinople, that she shoulde goe under Land the Pilgrims disease, and doe her best to recover hym againe, whitch Frenato had done before she came.

Tolomestra demanded of Frenato, the cause of his sicknes; who answered, Madam, we are newly come from the Holy

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

vage of Jerusalem, and hee (who was wont to endure many vehement altertions, which the contrary ayres by the way dwyled) seeing the freshes colenesse of this Church, hath therewith bens overcome as it shoulde appere.

My Friend, quoth Tolomestra, withdrawe your selues to the Court, and enquire for the Gallerie in which place the Queene doth daily give her almes; there shall be proff. ev'ry remeedy for you, and I will give you certane precious Drugges, which shall hereafter comfort you, when any such honour offendeth you. A thousand thankes (good Lady) said Frenato, we will doo as you have commandied us. Herutcs being cuied, they went to the Gallerie, whither soone after came the Queene, and opening the Casement of her Window as she was wont, shewd to behold the Almes given to the poore Pilgrims. Frenato and his companion had gotten so neare the window, that the Queene might easly heare any thing they said. After most humble reverence made, Florendos thus beganne. Most excellent Queene, renowned beyond all other Ladies among so many of your daily charities, may it please you to pitie the most poore and miserable Knight in the world? The Queene at these wordes knew him, and was in such scarre least the King should know his being there: as he could hardly sustaine herselfe, but late downe on a Pallet by Tolomestra, who seeing her soudains alteration, said, What ayle you Madam, that your colour changeth in such sort.

Ah my triste Friend (quoth the Queene) the Pilgrim that wounded in the Church, is the Prince Florendos of Macedon. I pray thee go to him, and intreat him presently to depart hence: for if the King come to the knowledge of him, all the world cannot shield him from death. For the rest, will him follow no further what he left by his owne default: and that the labour heretofore granted,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

my duty and honour now forbiddeth me. Tolomestra entring the Gallerie, said the messe to the Prince Florendos: who understanding this Sharpe answere, shed many teares with greife of minde, saying: Ah my deare Friend Tolomestra, deare my gracious Mistresse Criana, that in requitall of so many tormenting passiones, which now to 20 twenty yeares long I have patiently endured: She will assynd me once to speake with her, and kisse her hand, before I depart. Tolomestra brought this answer to the Queene, persuading her to heare him speake: which she myght doe with safety, under colour of requesting to know the marshallcs of Palestina, with the precious and worthie monumets of the holy Cittie.

I am content to grant so much (quoth the Queene) but I greatly feare che issue of his speeches: goe then and cause him secretly to enter. Ah gentle habitt, where under many one often beginne their delight, which in the end prookes worse then Tragicall. The two Pilgrims being entred, Florendos fell on his knoe before his Lady and kissing her hand, said:

Oh my God, thy Name be praised through all worlds, permitting me now to kisse these hands so long time desir'd. Here swete Mistresse your Florendos, that with such loyalty hath loved you, and hitherto hath kept the faith which he vowed to you at Constantinople, to your Fathers Wallace: and which no death can cause me to forsake, unlesse you please to suffer me take another wife, wherein I shall satisfie the impoztunate requests, which daily the Lords of Macedon make to me for Marraige, that I might leave them an Heire of my Lineage. Which is a ma ter so gretvous to me, in that I failed of you, to whom I first gave me Faith: as I resolved never to take any other, which I know not how I shall persone without losse of my life.

As he thought to have proceeded further in speeches, and the Queene having not answered one word; unhappily the

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

King entred, which the Queen beholding, swooned with feare. But he was immediately recovered by her Ladys, when the King seeing her in such estate, and in what secrecie the two Pilgrims were talking with her, he gathered some suspition and overcome likewise with the force of jealousy, said:

Madame, what make you here at this tyme? And in so slender compaie of Ladys? How dare you stand talking with these strangers? I wold gladly know the matter and what hath made them so bold to enter your Chamber?

Florendos seeing his affaires to grow frome badde to worse, and that his Lady was so threatened: entring into choller, he drew his Dagger from under his Frocke, and taking the King by the Wosome, said: Tarisius, I will not heye from thee who I am: it is moxe then twentz yeres since I promised thy death, and now I am come in person to performe it. With these words he stabbeth the Dagger to his heart, and downe fell Tarisius dead at his feste: which when the Queen saw, she on the other side fell in a swound againe: Frenato greatly amazed hereat, said to Florendos: For Gods sake my Lord, let vs hift so our selves before this misfortune be blazed abroad. Content thy selfe, said Florendos, never shall it be reported that I left my Ladie to suffer for mine offence: or that for the feare of death, which is the end of all mishaps, I will endure such intolerable anguishes and tormentes.

Now by ill fortaine, one of the Pages of Honour attayning on the King, and having scene this homicide, hastilie ranne downe the Staires, crying alowd: Arme ye Knights, Arme ye, and revenge the Kings death, who by a trapteous Pilgrim is slaine in the Queens Chamber. Cardyno one of the Queens Squires, her Brother that carried young Palmerin to the Mountaine, had no leisure to take any other armes then a Sword and Sheild, wherefore he was the first that came to the Queens Chamber, where

he

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

he found Florendos guarding the Entrance, who presently knew hym, saying: Depart my good friend Cardino, unlesse for the Queens Love I shall take thy life from thine. And what art thou (said Cardino) that knowest me so well? I am thy friend (said the Prince) the most unsyntune Florendos.

Strange it is my Lord (quoth Cardyno) that you durst venture into this Court: But take here my Sword and Sheild, and defend your selfe: for I thinke you will stand in great need thereof. In the meane while, I will goe adverteise the Duke of Pera of this mishap, he is your good Friend, and by his meanes you may haue some succour: so oftentimes haue I heard him say at Constantinople, that he wished you as well as my Lord the Emperour. Dispatch then (said Florendos) that thou be not send here with me, assuring thee, if I may escape this present danger, I will acknowledge this seruice to thyne owne content. Florendos armed himselfe with the Sword and Sheild, whereof he was so glad, as if he had bene backed with many truske friends: bowing before he dyed to make such a spoyle amonge his enemites, as shoulde remaine for an after memory.

Cardyno went with all diligence to the Duke, and secretly acquainted him with all this misfortune: Whereat the Duke greatly amazed, answered. I will doe my uttermost for his safety, because full well he bath deserved it. And so accompanied with many Grecian Knights, he went to the Queens Chamber: and thrusting through the ideng in despight of them that guarded the Staires, he gotte to the Chamber. At the entrance whereof he found Florendos, defending himselfe with such manly courage, as nine of ten lay Slaine at his feste.

The Duke and his men caused the Hungarians to withdraw themselves: saying; that himselfe would not suffer the matter so to escape, for the offence ought to be punished by Justice, after the truth were knowne and thoroughly understand.

Nod.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Lord. Hereupon the Kings two nephews came in great rage, saying to the Duke of Pera, that the Queen and the pilgrim ought presently to dye : What ( quoth the Duke depart you likewise : your wills shall not here stand for Law : nor shall the Queen be intreated with such rigour.

So drawing out his sword, and his Knights likewise, resisted the Hungarians, so that many of them were slain : untill certayne Gentlemen came, who loving and esteeming the Queen, appeased the tumult. Then was it agreed upon, that the Duke should take him into his charge, who had murdered the King : on whom such punishment shold be inflicted, as the cause required : and hereupon the Duke tooke his Oath before all the whole company. In this sort the Kings nephews were quieted, who presently departed the Chamber, causing the dead and wounded to be conveyed thence, that the people might receive no further occasion of offence, and then the Duke comming to the Prince Florendos, said :

Yield your selfe to me my Lord, and I promise you on the faith of a Prince, that I will maintaine both your right and the Queens, whatsover danger I shuld hazard there-by. If you will not, assure your selfe that your bodies cannot suffice the villanous fury of these people, soz they have confidently sworne your deaths. I know my Lord ( quoth Florendos ) that you speake the truth, and I repose my trust in your noblenesse, whch is such, as you will not suffer any injarie to the Man being in your Guard : I yield my selfe to you : and earnestly intreat you not to imprison the Queen ( soz on mine honor ) she is guiltlesse. And if any offence hath bee committed, it was by me : yet not without just cause, and in defence of mine owne life. By comming hither was, because I am newly returned from Jerusalem, and remembraunce the manifold honours, which sometime I received of my Lady in the Emperour her Fathers Court : in

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

In my passing by, I was desirous to doe my duty to her. At the instant time I was saluting her, the King came into the Chamber, who mowed with an ancient haire, which you very well know, would have slaine me : but I prehenting his intent with the ayde of my weapon, beseeched that on him which he wished to me. I believe well what you have said, quoth the Duke, yet you must needs abide strall in this case.

Frenato perceiving his Colon in such danger, sought about the Chamber for some Weapon to defend him : and finding the Kings sword by the Queens Bed-side, shewed it to the Duke, that he might give the better credit to the Princes words. Yet notwithstanding all their excuses, these two Pilgrims were taken into sure custody, and shut up both together in a strong Tower : which was very long before they could accomplish, because in leading them thither, many sought meanes to kill them, and they had done it, but that the Duke very strongly defended them.

## C H A P . X X V I .

The sorrowfull complaints made by the Queene Griana, seeing her Husband dead, and her Friend taken Prisoner. And how the Duke of Pera conveyed her to Constantinople, causing Florendos and Frenato to be brought thither, by five hundred armed Knights.

  
Cry sad and sorrowfull was the Queen Griana, seeing so many severally misfortunes succeed one another, as every hour her death was expected : and saime she would have committed violence on her selfe, but onely that Cardyno with divers worthy Knights attended on her, that none of the Kings kindred should offend

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

offend her, whiles the Duke of Pera led Florendos and Prenato to the Tower. At whose returne, as he thought to comfort her, she fell on her knees before him, saying. Ah Noble Duke of Pera, if ever pity had place within your heart, soz Gods sake make an end of my infortunat life: and execute on me (without any favour) the sharpest rigour of equall Justice, not suffering longer life, to a Woman so despised and miserable.

O God, dost thou permit a happy life, to enjoy so bad an end? Thou that enely knowest the inward secrets of the heart, seeing I stand suspected in this Treason, let my speedy death deliver my innocency. Ah inconstant Fortune, that in my younger yeares was so aduerse to me: how might I credit thy continual malice, by this strange and unexpected accident. Ah gentle Prince Florendos, it was not for love that they came to see me, but for a secret hasted, more then deadly: seeing that by thee (and that with great shame) I shall remaine forever desained. Where was that great loyaltie, and the great feare to offend me, which sometimes thou seemdest to have? Knowest thou not that in a royall and noble munde, one onely jote of infamie is an extremis torment? Doubtlesse, if thou wouldest well consider the wrong thou hast done me, thou shalt finde it to exceed all other worldly injuries. But I may perswade my selfe, that my destinie was such: For being long since by thine dishonoured, it must fall out for a finall conclusion, that by the same I shall receive death.

In this manner the Queen complained, with such excesse of teares and bitter sighes, as the Duke pitting her case, said: I beseech you Madam, to endure this mishap patiently, seeing now it cannot be recalled, and consider that these teares and lamentations can yield yee no amends: but rather threaten darger, and will in the end not onely weaken your body, but hazard desparation. The King is dead, he must be buried: Florendos hath offended, he shall

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

be punished: your people are wounded, they must be cured. Desend not then your selfe with these bootlese regents: but command that the p[ro]ofe of your innocency be followed. Whereupon the Duke caused preparation for the funerall pompe, and brought the King to the bed of honor, not without many teares and lamentacions of his subiects.

When the Obsequies were finished, Promptaleon and Oudin came & exclaymed on the Duke, because he brought not the Queen and Florendos to open punishment. By Friends (quoth the Duke) have I not heretofore told you, that we must not inconsiderately put such persons to death: let the Council be called together, and as they determine I will procease.

Then were all the Princes and Lords assembled, among whom the Duke was intreated to speake his opinion, which he did in this manner. I thinke it convenient, under correctiones you my Noble Lords, that the Prince Florendos and the Queen, ought to be sent to my Lord the Emperour, and there to haue Justice extended on them: as well for the surety of your owne persons, as for the conservation of the Realme. For except iustly and by probable causes you condemn the Prince Florendos, hardly may you perswade the Macedonian Princes: beside, the Lords may say, that without hearing he was cut off, and likewise by his open enemites. Againe, thinke you that the Emperour wll let passe in silence so great a wrong, to punish his Daughter, and not acquaint him with her offence.

Considering this indifferently, you shall find your selues on either side endangered: your goods wll be spoyled, your liues endamaged for hardly can you resist against such power. So well could the Duke set forth his Discourse, with confirmation of Histories both ancient and moderne, that in despite of the Kings Neophewes it was concluded; how the Prisoners should be sent to Constantinople. If they were hereat offend, it is not to be doubted, but hearing

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

the Counells resolution, prepared themselves to goe to the Emperour, determining a sharpe and severre accusation, thinking so much in their owne strength and prowesse, that if the Emp. rour ( for proufe of the cause ) shoulde commit it to the Combat, they easly thought to compasse their intent.

So were the two Pilgryms committed to the Duke Repheus, with an hundred Knights of Greece, for theys guarde, and seuer hundred Hungarians, who would needes follow, for the leus they bare the Queen: her being marvellously laudoured in her Country, for her many vertuce, and chiefly charity.

The Queen herselfe, with the young Princesse Armida her Daughter, and all her Ladys and Gentlewomen, were committed to the Duke of Pera his charge, and the rest of the Traine that came with him in committion of the same Embassage. When the Queen understood she shold be carried to the Emperour, she was surier out of patience then she was before: rather desiring a thousand deathes, then to come with this reproch before her Father: yet notwithstanding all her intreaties, she was conueyed into a Litter, and not so much as a plaine left about her, for fears of inconuenience.

To comfort her, her Daughter Armida was placed in the Litter: without whose company, such was her griefe to come before her Parents, as she was divers times in danger of death by the way. But the young Princesse being twelve or thirteene yeres of Age, coulde so well comfort her sorrowfull Mother, as her talke expellde many blitter Imaginations. If the Queen was in heaviness, he must thinke Florendo's grieves nothing inferiour, seeing his Lady ledde in such sort, and accused of a crime where in done but himselfe was culpable: and yet made he no account, being revenged of his ancient enemy, so the Queen were delivred, though himselfe endurde the death. But now are they come to Constantinople, yet not so sone: but

the

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

the nephewes of the Deceased King were before them, where they had blazed a most false and shamesfull report. And but for the godly advise of certayne noble Princes, that sauored Florendos and the Queen Griana, upon the treble speeches of these twaine: the Emperour had concluded to burne his Daughter and the Prince so sone as they came, such horrible daunders had these traitors spread of them. Namely, that the King was murdered, finding Griana committing adultery with Florendos. At which wordes the Emperour was so enraged, that like a man depriv'd of reason, he violently puld himselfe by the beard saying,

Ah wretched and infortunate olde man, have the heavens suffered thes longe lise, that after the death of thy Sons Caniano and young Cariteos, then maist see thy daughter convicted of treason, adultery & murder? If I haue had some comfort by my Daunes, lyng now in the Hearse of honoz, for maintenaunce of the Christian faith: doubtlesse this injury is so great and enorm, as no soy or comfort can now abide in me. Ah my lovely Daughter Griana, whom I had good hope woulde be the enely supposse of my age, and soz that cause sent to have thy company: comwest thou now with such shame & monstrosus reporte Florendos, if heeresofore against the Turke Gancio thou didst me service, with great wrong hast thou now revenged thy selfe, taking from me that goud, which thou canst never restore agayne. But let it suffise, that knowing the truth of thy disorderred dealing: such shall be thy punishment as shall remaine for perpetuall memory. The Empresse likewise forsoaking her Chamber, came and knelde before the Emperour, desiring him to put Florendos to the first counsell, and he to be dispatched with diligence. At which wordes the choller of olde Remicius augmented, hee answering.

Madame, for Gods sake get you gone, for you are the onely

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

onely cause of my dishonour; and then you beganne it, when you would not suffer the Prince Florendos of Macedon to match with our daughter, but gaue her to your Nephew perforce, and contrarie to her swae liking. The Princes seeing him so offended, intracted her to depart, persuading her, that the accusers of Griana were her chiefe enemis; and that might easly be gathered, by their proud and malevolent detractions, which happily would prove false, rather then truth. For if they might herein speed of their purpose, and their accusation passe so currant, the Prince Armida shoulde be disinheritid, and themselfes be the onely heires to the Kingdome. This was their principall drift, not any desirion to revenge their Nuckles death, as they in outward shew declared: and hereupon all opinions were set aside untiill the next day, when the prisoners arrived.

### C H A P. X X V I I .

How Florendos and Griana were brought to Constantinople, and there were appointed by the Emperours Counsell, to purge themselves of their accusation, by the Combate of two Knights, against their accusers Promptaleon and Ondin.



He Duke being arrived at Constantinople, immedately caused the Queen Griana, and Armida her Daughter, to be conducted to the Pallace, by many noble Lords and Gentlemen. When Griana saw she must needs goo before her Father, she began againe her wrotes pittifull complaints: notwithstanding, she was so comforted by the Lords of Greece, by their solemne promise to defend her righ:, as she encou-

ged

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

ged herselfe, and comming before her Father, fell on her knees, and thus began. My gracious Lord and Father, inconstant Fortune evermore hath borne, and still will continue, a most cruell enemy to them of highest calling: and no further neede I saye for proofe of my words, then the history of your last warres against the Turkes, and the present flanerie of mine enemies against me. I cannot likewise forget, that twenty yeres and more are now ex-  
tred, since ( to my great griele ) I was separated from you: but with much more exceeding heaviness am I now returnid, if by my misadventure you receyve any impeach, or I deserve to lose the name of your Daugter. Therefore my Lord, forgetting the name and office of a Father, let naturall regard be exempted from you, and exercise on me tyrannous torment, with the greatest rigour that may bee devised. Yet all too little in respect of my deserts, not for any offence in this matter, as God is my witnessse: but for the suspition of the common and bulgar people, more credulous of the faults of Princes and noble Ladies, then of their discret and sober vertues. Neverthelesse, receyving death for a matter never committed, and with patience: despight of mine enemies, it will redound to my immortall hono:.

Upon these spaches, the Prince Armida making great reverence to the Emperour, and with the teares trickling downe her cheekes, sayd. Dread Lord, my chiefe de-  
sires evermore have binne to see your Majestie: but so it falleth now out, that instead of joy and pleasure, it is with griele, teares and tribulations. Yet gracious Lord, sey the first request that ever I made to your highnesse. I beseech you to credit me, that my other hath committed no trea-  
sor, or any dishonour to the deceased King my Father, nei-  
ther ever permitted any man entrance into her Chamber, but he whome now the question concerned: and at that  
time, I with these other Ladies were present, and are cre-  
dible

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

vible witnesses of the whole action. Such efficacy brought her words in the Emperours minde, as he began to belie the accusation, persuading himselfe that it was nothing but falshood: and loyngly taking the young Princesse up by the hand, addredded his speches in this manner to the Queen.

Well hast thou said, that Fortune hath beene to contrary towards thee, for when my whole hope remained in thee, and that the Crowne of mine Empire should have beene placed on thy head: thou hast fallen into such wounding reproch, as both thee and I shall be for ever dishonoured. My Lord, quoth Griana, under correction, and saving the reverence to your imperall Maestie, never imagine the case any thing to your desame: if you credit not mine enemies, or common report, from whence is engendred all untruth. This speak I not to excuse my death, whiche I know to be the refuge for the desolate, and end of all afflictions: but to declare mine owne innocency, and that mine honore shall at length be found unspotted. But now consider good Father, with what violence you enforced me to match with the King Tarisius: my heart being full against it, and the neerenesse of lineage betweene us forbidding it. Noz were you ignorant of my love to the Prince Florendos, the most gentle Knight of Grece, and whose onely tra-  
vaille hitherto was to make me his wife: all this will I not deny, noz can my heart permit to passe in silence. Notwithstanding, by your commandement I was constrainted to forfaine my best beloved, and take the man I was not borne to fancy. After I saw it must needs be so, ac-  
hino vledging him my Lord and Husband, and my selfe his wife and Subject: neither in word or deede, noz so much as verry thought, did I dispose my selfe to any disobedience, but libred in most lawfull and honourable duty. Very true it is, that his sonnd Florendos talking with me: but I pro-  
test before God, that it was with such chal. and modest regard,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

regard, as the Dillier might conserre with her Brother. And so little time our talk endured, as I had not the means to answer the Prince, for the King comming in, and provoked with frenzy or wicked zealous, would have slaine him, whereby such fortune fell out, as the King receaved what hee would have givven. Soz can Florendos be twiz-  
thly blamed for comming to see me, in respect of the long  
time since our last company: beside, having not forsaken  
his Pilgrims waide, wherein he travalled to the holy  
Land, he came to acquaint me with the marvailes in his  
journey.

Now here in brefe the whole truth of this Historie, and if the Kings Rephelnes avouch otherwise, I say ( my Lord ) ther lys falsly. In which respect, as well to protect mine owne honour as the Princes, I humbly desire your Maestie, that our innocency may be decided by Combat: for such is my hope in a rightfull cause, as I shall finde some Knight to fight for me. The Lords of the Empire were al-  
together of the same opinion, and instantly desired the Emperour, to grant his Daughter her lawfull request: whereunto he answered, that he would take counsell there-  
on, and justice shold be done her as it ought. Whereupon  
the Emperour went into his Chamber, and the Queens was brought to the Empresse her Mother: wheres the poore  
Lady was assaulted alread, soz she was no sooner entred  
the Chamber, but her Mother thus beganne. I know not  
Daughter how badly thou hast beene councelled, that since  
the day of thine espousall to the Prince Tarisius, who lo-  
ved thee so dorely: thou hast continued such hatred against  
him, that at length thou art become the onely cause of his  
death.

Madame, quoth the Queen, you speake your pleasure:  
but ( in regard of my reverence to you ) I answer, that I  
never thought it. Wherefore I intreate you to forfaine  
such speches, and if you consider all things well; your selfe

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

will be found in greater fault then I. For contrary to my soleinne promise, which I had made to the Prince of Macedon, you compelled me to marrie with him: and if Florendos had the opportunity, and in defence of his owne person hath slaine him, ought you then to impute the crime to me? With these wordes the Empresse held her peace, and sat conserning with the young Princesse Armida: in meane while came the Duke of Pera, who had the Queen in charge, and conducted her to her Chamber, and afterward (by the Emperours commandement) hee shut Florendos into a strong prison.

The next day, Promptaleon and Oudin came to the Hallace, where with great and audacious impudence they came before the Emperour, saying. Why have you not my Lord prohibited the fire, to burne your Daughters and her adulterer Florendos? Nowland faire, answered the good Remicius, be not so hasty, I finde them not so faultys as your accusation delivereth: so; no other harme was committed then talking together, and because Florendos was disguised, is that a consequence, my daughter must dye? Now will I encure such infamous report, in putting such a Prince to death, without hearing how he can answer so himselfe: you therefore my Lord of Pera, goe fetch Florendos that he may answer to their propositions. The Duke obeyed his commandement, and brought the Prince, so spent with extreme griefe, because he had brought the Queen into such danger: as hardly he could sustaine himselfe, but after he had with great humilitie prostrated himselfe before the Emperour, he began in this manner. Most mighty Lord and Emperour of Greece, marball me not that with such headinnes I come before your Maiestie: when in dede of doing you a service, according as my duty commandeth me, I bring you cause of offence and displeasure. Perherbolesse, I repose my selfe on your benignity and princely Justice, wherein I must intreat you to have regard on

the

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

the Queen your Daughters innocency: for the fault that is committed, if it deserve to be called a fault, was done without the Queens knowledge, or so much as a thought of the matter on her part, before it hapned. Moreover, there is none of so harsh iudgement or reason but will consider, what familiaritie and friendship doth passe betweens Princes and Ladies in occasion of honour. Which may serue to answer the cause of my coming to see the Queen, being thereto bound by duty and honest love, wherewith in my younger yeare I faithfully serued her. And this I did, without any injury to her honour, much lesse occasion or offence to the King: which he would needs interpret in that sort, when with so great indiscretion he camis and assailed me.

These are fables, quoth Promptaleon, for the conspiracy and treason betweene thee and the Queen is so manifest as every on knowes it. And if the Emperour do not this day consummate your libes. both together in one fire: he effereth the greatest indiscorde that ever Prince did, and before the whole world we will hereafter accuse him. Darest thou maintaine by Combat in field, said Florendos, what thou with such bravoure affirmeſt in this Hall? That will I by mine honour, quoth Promptaleon, and let the Knight come that dare aduenture: on this condition, that if I be the conquerour, the Queen and thou may be burned as you haue deserued, and the Princesse Armida declared not legitimate, and so dis inherited of the kingdome. Now hast thou revealed thy villany, said Florendos, and for the last condition doest thou solleto the cause so earnestly rather by any matter of trach and equity: but thou art deceived in thine intent, and thy death (villaine) shall deliver assurance of her succession. So please my Lord the Emperour of his grace, to prolong the day of Combat till I have recovered some health: my selfe alone, against thee and thy Brother, will prove you false Traitors, and that

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

that maliciously ye have accused the Queen. The Emperour seeing the Prince so weak and sickly, and yet with so god courage willing to defend his Daughters wrong: resolved himself that she was innocent. Remembiring then his noble services in defence of his Empire, and how injuriously he denied him his daughter: he was moved in such sort as he could not resaine from teares, thinking soz vengence of that offence, that headen had fully permitted the death of Tarisius, wherfore beholding Florendos with pittifull lookes, pronounced the sentence in this manner. You Promptaleon and Oudin, nephewes to our deceased dore and beloved sonne the King of Hungaria, shall maintaine your wozds in open field, against two such Knights, as my Daughter and the Prince Florendos can deliver on their behalfe, and that within twelve dayes after this instant. One of which the Prince himselfe shall be, if he be not furnished with another to his liking: always provided, that the vanquished shall be declared Traytors, and attainted of the crime of Lece Majestatis, and so punished according to the exigence of the case. The two Brethren accepted these conditions, being so farre overcome with their owne pride, as they reputed themselves the most valiant Knights of the world. Florendos seeing himselfe so weake of body, would gladly have demanded a longer day: but the sentence being given, the Emperour likewise promising to appoint another Knight in his stead, he was contented, and committing all to the Emperours pleasure, was carried back againe to prison in such peniternesse, as he was judged not able to live till the Combat day. The Queen likewise was kept in sure guard, desparyng how she shold finde a Knight, that would adventure on her behalfe in fight: becauls the strenght and powesse of the Challengers was so renowned. Leaving thus those two lovers in doubts and seares: let us returne where we left before, to noble Palmerin, that he may byng them some better confort.

CHAP.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

### CHAP. XXVIII.

How Palmerin having stayed with his Lady five dayes, in so great pleasure as heart could desire, fearing to bee discovered to the Emperour: tooke his leave of her, promising to beginne the search of Trineus and Ptolome.



Olynarda having her friend in her custody, would not willingly presume so farre upon her owne selfe, or the truely faithfullnesse of her Ladies, as that she would permit or suffer him to stay therre in the Day time: and doubting likewise least his coming in the Night shold vs espyed, committed the whole matter in especiall charge to Bryonella, as they performed their ioyes without any impeachment. During these delights and Amorous contentments, which these amorous Lovers passed together, the Prince among other familiar talk rehersed to her friend, how the King of France sent his Embassadors to the Emperour, to treat on the Marriage betwixne her and his Eldest Sonne, as also her Brother Trineus, with his Daughter Lucemania. And how importunate the Empresse had been with her, discouering what Honour and Felicity it shold be unto her, to bee Queene of so great a Kingdome as France is. And trust me my Lord ( qd. he ) I know my Parents are so affected to this Alliance, as if my Brother Trineus were come, I know no meane whereby to excuse my selfe. Also Madam, ( quoth Palmerin ) in you may consider, if the Emperour by violent force constraine you here to: what contumall griefe it will be to your servant Palmerin? what torment? what tyrannous paines of strange concuite, may equall

## The History of Palmerin Doliva.

equall themselves with the very least of my passions; nor can I any way bee able to endure them. The doubtfull feares of this misfortune stroue to his heart, with such an impression, as hee fell in a swoone betwene his Ladies armes, shee entreating him with such ardent affection, as the soale of the peare tormented Louer, falling with what equall desire his Lady required him, receyved fresh strenght into his languishing body, and boing comis to his soberer estate, the Princesse sayd. Alas my Lord, at the time I supposed to be in assurance with you, and to think on no imaginacions, but new pleasures and delights: forgetting the regard you have long continued, in expectation of the wished fortunate houre, will you bee now the cause of my death?

Think you, that if Love be so violent up your behauing, it exceedeth not a thousand times more in me? Believe me: You men make your haunts of the great Pagions, feares, and doubts you have to offend your Ladys, whom to serue loyally you have especially chosen: but in no wise may these appassions be compared to ours. Whereas is he among you, who hath experiented, how great the Payne of dishonor is, and can cover his extream loue with disimulation? What a death is it to constraine violence against it selfe? To containe the piercing Eye, and subdue an heart so affectionate, as bringeth death to the rest of the boodie, if shee not some part of her desyre, by lookes (the faithfull and secret Messengers) to him shee hath chosen, loueth, and willeth? The torment of the will likewise, when one dare not come in presence, nor behold her favoured, to languish, and yet may seek no means of helpe. All these insupposable miseries we poore Ladys must endure, being given by Nature, or forced for a cestorne. Wherefore my Lord, present not me with your Pagions, considering each thing as it ought, they may not be compared to the least of mine: so Love who hath over-mastred me, reaigneth with such resolute Authority, as I must sooner dye, then offer you any

wrong;

## Emperour of Conancople PART.2

wrong, seeing that am my Lord and Husband I have elected you, and bestowed these labours on you which are most desired, to wit, willing obedience, and that (then which) nothing is more precious, having then made you soueraigne of my selfe, the Prince of Franco cannot entrap an other mans right. And if my Father bring his authozity, shall enforce me, although it bee grievous to me, I will tell him what hath hapned, and no menaces whichever shall alter my opinion.

Palmerin seeing his Lady so firmis and loyall, was not a little toysfull, thus answering. Doubtless by your grace and most gracious Princesse, hitherto I durst presume on my selfe, that by my manifold loyall services, I should one day deliver recompence, for some part of the Honours you have done me: but now may I well perceive, that abounding in your graces, you despise me of all meane to acknowledg your Bounte, which commonly men desire to shew by their obediencie: no; shall I be able to deserve the inestimable value, contained in the amplest word of your last most honorable promise.

Now the Princesse discerning by the Celinole, that Aurora, Phœbus his faire Woxtor, beganne to let for the Morning light, and provided way for his Masters iourney: withdrew hir selfe to her Chamber, and quickly laid her doone by Bryonella, who the better to hide her Ladys absence, dissembled that she had a feber Quotidian, by which means she compassed to keep her Chamber, & entreated Palmerin as hirselfe desired. All this while Urbanillo brought newes from the Prince Olorico, who was so desirous to see the Princesse againe: as he volred not to depart the City, before hee accomplished what he intended.

Palmerin who loved him as his Brother, was in great doubt, how he should safely bring it to passe: untill Bryonella, whose devices were ever readiest, sayd. My Lord, the man being no way able to hurt you, and of the lesse importance

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Importance haue you make the matter : will you see how we will a little tuggle with the Emperour? Let it bee said, that the Prince is Cozin to Virbanillo, and the cause of his comming into this Countrey, was to sake you : then because he understands how my Lady labes the Dwarffe, his Princely (without any doubt) will suffer the two Cousins to take their leaves of her : Will not this device then shooe him seeing the Prince deale? Without question (quoth Palmerin,) I shuld never have invented such a subtlety, be it then as you have determined: But with great politcy, that the Emperour misdaile nothing, soz if he discover us, we are shamed for ever. Reserve it to me (sayd Briodella,) if I deserue not their kindred cannily, never belieue that a Roman can invent a lye without study... Briodella conferring with the Dwarffe, laid downe the plats, soz in such order as the next day the Prince came before the Emperour: When Virbanillo on his knie desired leave, that he might depart with his Cozin there present, to seek his Master, in whose search he would travell, till he heard certainly of his life or death.

Ah Virbanillo! (quoth the Emperour) in such a good lucky houre mayest thou goe, as to finde both him and my Sonne Trineus, God leue hast thou to goe when thou wilst. But when I behold you both advisedly, how hardly doe you seeme to be Cuzins: for if thers be any Allegiance between you, it never came by the Fathers side: and if it bee by the Mother, the one was then married in Barbary, and the other in Scotland. Alby my Lord (quoth the Dwarffe:) rather had I dyed then tell an untrath before your Highnesse: and with such protestations did the Dwarffe looth his tale, as they of greatest doubt gaves credit to him. Whereupon, the Emperour commanded them to goe take thicke leave of his Daughter, willing her to write to her Brother. Having obtained whiche they desired, they stayed not long in returning thensels: but went presently to the Princesse Chaim

## Emperour of Constantynopole. PART.2

her, where she (advertisid of their comming) staid for them. Honourable salutations on each side delivered, a Chairre was brought to the Prince, and he sitting downe by Polynarda, she thus began. Albeit my Lord I am very loath to forgoe my Servant: yet having found him so honest, and soz the god will I wish to all his Dimeys, especially you, who habe Enterprised to seek his Master and my Brother, I am the better contented to part with him.

If the Prince commended her Beauty, when being in his opinion now: for beholding her, the comfort of her long absent Friend, had called all her Beauties together, enriched with so many sweet and amiable graces: as he could not repute her of humane lineage, but rather some Angel descended from Heaven, to make the glorie of Palmerin more ample, whereupon, to deceave the Ladies being present, returned this answer. Undoubtedly Madame, if I and all mine had spent our soules in your service, we should hold our selves suffitently recompenced, with the princely favor you affeit our Cazin, which he is no way able to deserue. And perswade your selfe faire Princesse, that if he be your obedient Servant, my selfe am no lese, in all things that your Excellency shall please to command me: So that if there were not urgent occasions to excuse my departure, it would be my onely content to remayne at your disposition. Yet such is my hope, that this greate shall be chaunged into joy by a spedg returne, when we shall bring the Prince Trineus, and our noble Master Palmerin. The sooner, the better welcome will they be (quoth the Princesse) for therewarde consisteth my chielest content. And after many other speeches between them, she gave him many rich gifts, whereupon he held himselfe so honoured, as if he had gained the whole Monarchy of Asia: So kissing her hand, the Prince with his new Cozin, retyned to his lodging. Now was it concluded betwene Palmerin and the Princesse, because

## The Hitory of Palmerin D'Oliva.

the Empresse on the morrow would come to see her daughter, that he should depart the same way he came: Wherefore the houre being come that he should passe the Wall, Polynarda thus spake. Now is the time (my Lord) that you must leave me, & I am loyced to consent, because there is no remedie: but persuade your selfe, that with this parting beginnes my sorrows. Yet if I knew where you travellled, my gretes wold be the lesse, and my lise prolonged with better hope: but being uncertaine of your way, and knowing what misfortunes and dangerous perills may encounter you in unknowne Countrys, I know not, how I shall dissemble my tormentes. Notwithstanding, sweet friend, if your stay bee long, send Urbanillo againe, to comfort poore Bryonella and my selfe: For lossing the onely maintenance of our languishing lves, impossible is it but our Spirits will soone forsake their miserable habitation.

Forsakes sake Madame (quoth Palmerin) never talk of such a separation, for the remembrance thereof, is death to me: and it so much offendeth me to see you in this perturbation, as I loose both courage and hope of well doing. Continue then the hauour you have done since my coming, that I beholding you pleasant, may be comforted thereby, during the search of your Brother, which I hope will be both short and sudden. Otherwise, before the Earth bee ready for me, I shall be enforc'd to take upong endlesse Hostage. So after many sweet Kisses, and graciouse laſsing Curtesies passed between them, they took their leabe of each other, with such effusion of Teares, as the very inward soule bemoned their departing. So lech his Ladvers of Cordis, he got over the Wall again, and came to the Ldgatz where he left Olorico: then arming themſelues, they rode away in great haste, because they feared to be knowne by any.

CHAP.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

### CHAP. XXIX.

How after Palmerin was delivred from his Lady, there appeared unto him one of the Fayries of the Mountaine Artifaria, who declared to him part of his Fortunes following. And of a Combat which he and Olorico had against tenne Knights.



Meat hast in their Journey made these two Nightes, so that in therte time they came to the Kingdome of Hungaria, where passing through a great Forest, they ascended a high Mountaine, at what time the Ayre being calme and cleare, was upon a sudden obscured with many darksome Cloudes, and such outragious Windes, as they were glad to shrowde themselves vnder certayne Pine Trees neare at hand.

Having there heltered themselves a while, they beheld a very thick Miste about a fyre Tree, and heard with all a very terrible Thundur: and the Fogge somewhat clearing, they beheld a comely Lady vnder the Tree, where at they were strooke into no little admiration, yet Palmerin being desirous to understand the effect of this adventure, made towards the Tree, when the Lady began in this manner to him.

Palmerin d'Oliva, maruell not at this Accident, which bath hapned onely for thy sake and profite. Heretofore I came to thee on another Mountaine, where I and my Sisters healed the Wounds thou didst receive by the Serpent. And this time I am come to thee, to wyth the follow thy journey begunne: Assuring thee that they whom thou seekest, are yet living, and in the custody of Turkes and Indians: but before thou canst finde them, thou shalbe delivered

liberated

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

liber'd from death by him thou hast most. And after that thou hast found this favour by him, he shall ayde thee in recovering from prison and death, the best and dearest friends: and so I leave thee to thy happy successe. Then suddenly vanished the woman away, and could not afterwards bee seene againe, leaving Palmerin very penkfe soz what hee had heard, which he esteemed to bee true, because hitherto he had found no lesse all that the Sisters said to him on the Mountaine Artifaria.

Returning to his company, Olorico demanded what Goodesse had talked with him, and what had made him on a sudden so chearsfall: Trust me my Noble Friend (quoth he) the matter is such, as soz all the Gold in the world, I would not but have knowne, which Vrbanillo can better declare unto you, moze then I am able: But because we would moze no moze strange Adventures in this Pountaine, let us spedily set sywards on our Journey.

All that day they rode without any occassione to stay them, and the next day likewise, till towards the Evening, when they espied ten Knights before them, the foremost of them leading a Lady, who made very grievous and pittifull lamentations: wheresupon Palmerin clasped his Helmet, desiring Olorico to doe the like. Because ( quoth he) soz any thing I see, we shall have pastime with some danger. The Prince did as his friend required him, and when the Ladie was come somewhat moze neare them, she framed her speches to them in this manner. Gentle Knights, soz Gods sake helpe me, soz these Traytors haue sozibly brought me hither: and to compasse their villainous intent, they haue murthered my Husband, and two of my Brethren. Palmerin without answering one word, approached to him that led her, and gave him such a rap on the pate, with a space that he carried at his Haddle-bow, as with the stroak he fel dead to the earth: making him sure not to escape, during the time that he dealt with the other. Olorico had taken

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

his caretre against another of them, whom he encountered so puissantly, as the Knight breaking his Lance, Olorico thurst his quite through his body: whereof Palmerin being glad, said.

To the rest noble Prince, soz we are sure two of them can doe vs no harm. With such courage did these Gallants beware themselves, as in less space then halfe an heure, ore moze of them were slaine: soz Palmerin never gabs stroke, but either he bryake an armie, head or neck. The two which were left, seeing the hard fortune of their fellowes, would abide no further danger, but tooke themselves to flight with all the sped they could. When the Lady saw herself delivered of her enemies, she came and humbled herselfe at Palmerins stede, earnestly desiring him not to leavo her, but that it would please him to convey her to her Castell neare at hand: wherenpon Vrbanillo alighting, holpe her to mount on one of the vanquished Knights hys-  
ses.

By the way she reharsed, how he that ledde her, had of long time loued her, but because he was proud and of evill conditions, her Father could not like of the match: but gave her to a young Gentleman his neighbour, who was a very vertuous and worthy minded Knight. This seemed displeasing to him that was resyned, so that he brought nine of his kindred and friends with him, and hid themselves in ambul neare my Fathers Castle, whereto I have intrusted you to conduic me. They layng there thus unknawne to any all the night, and the most part of this day, till my Husband, two of my Brothers and my selfe, tooke boord, Intending to goo hant at the Rivers side, they being vs far enough from any reskew, violently set on vs, kilde my Husband and Brethren, and brought me away with them, the Traytor himselfe saying, that after he had rabished me of mine honour, he would committ me to the like usage by the Groomes of his Stable, who when they had satis-

## The History of Palmerin D'Orva.

ties their villainous wills, shold put me to cruell and shamefull death.

Beleevs me Madame, quoth Olorico, you are happily delivered from such violence, and I thinke if all such like Russians were so serued as they are, Ladies might passe through the Countrey safely and without danger. By this time they were come to the Castell, where (because it was night) the Wylde was drawne: but when the guard heard that the Lady was comie, it was presently set downe, and one of them ranne to the Ladies Mother, who fearing she had lost her Daughter, was now greatly comforted, especially when she understande, that they which had slaine her Daughters, were likewise kild themselves: and certainly both the Mother and the Daughter reputed themselves so beholding to the Knights, as they knew not in what sort to entertaine them, whereby they might expresse their comfort.

Being very honorably used by these Ladies, after supper they were conducted to their Chamber, where they repased themselves that night: and the next morning came to take their leave of the Ladies, to the no little griefe both of the one and the other. All that day they travailed without any adventure, till at length they came to a goodly fountaine, where they alighted, to let their horses pasture awhile: and having refreshed themselves with certaine victuals, that Vrbanillo had prohibited for them, Palmerin laid him downe and slept, and Vrbanillo by him, finding themselves somewhat weary with riding all the day. Olorico being a young Prince, and denrons to see any strange occasion, walked about into driers places, regarding here and there the scituacion of the Countrey, the Mountaines and goodly Castells builded upon them. He was no sooner departed, but there arrived five armed Knights, two of them being they that escaped, when Palmerin so nobly delivered the Lady, they having that night past lodged at his

Fathers

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Fathers house who led the Lady, and whiche Palmerin first kilde with his Wace. And thinking now to revenge themselves, had brought thre of their Cozins in their company, and watched at the Ladies Castle the coming forth of the Prince: but their stomacks would not serve them to medle with them there, wherefore they followed them all that day, till they behelde them seperated as you have heard.

When they saw that Palmerin slept, one of them (fearing least the noise of the Wyses shold awake him) alighted, and drawing his Sword, came therewith to haue daine him: but by godes fortune there arrived a knyght, who had bene hunting there about all that day, and he cryed to him with his Sword drawne. Ah villaine, kill not the man that sleepes. The Traytour seeing this new come knyght so braue a person, beganne to be afraid, and therfore slept backe againe a little, at that time Palmerin, by the Knights cri, awaked: and seeing him so neare that thought to givis the moztall stroke, was greatly amazed, suddenly drawing his Sword to defende himselfe, not having the leasure to put on his Helmet, by which occasion he received a small wound vpon his head. The knyght seeing the cowardly villainie of them that assailed Palmerin altogether, bestirred himselfe so wozthily among them, as he that gane the wound, died sone after vnder his Sword. Whereupon the seure Knights diuided themselves, two against Palmerin, and two against him, who defended themselves so wozthily, and had brought their enemis into such danger, as they two that before escaped, seeing to what danger the fight would extend, gane the sparras to their horses, and galloped away so fast as the horse could pace. By this time h Prince Olorico hearing the Dwarses clamour, boeing greatly afraid of his Masters death: came running thither with all sped, whenthe knight that had sauied Palmerins life, said.

Noble Knight, well may you glise thankes to Heaven,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

in that your enemies, who thought to kill you at ping, are soiled: for if God had not permitted my comynge this way, without all doubt you had lost your life. But since it hath been my good hap to prevent your omiaous tortune, I will advise you hereafter to beware of like hazard: and may it please you to accompany me to a Castle within two miles distance, your entertainment shall be good, and your wounds cured by a Lady very expert in Chirurgery. I accept your offer gentle Sir (quoth Palmerin) with right good will, as well to have your friendly company, as to shield you from any other such like villaines, who happily may seek your harme for this noble fauour. So they rode on altogether, Palmerin remembryng the words of the City Lady, and could not imagin whom the Knight shoulde be, he had so honourably preserued his life: this made him m. re to marvel, that he shoulde be his enemy, whom (to his remembrance) he had never seen in any place before.

To put him from these cogitations, Olorico ashamed of his absence in such a nedfull time, came to Palmerin with these words. Certes my noble friend, I am henceforth unwearey to beare Armes, saying that in such danger I left your company: unhappy that I am, might not former experiance teach me, what sudaine aduentures doe often happen to Knights errant? what punishment may be sufficient for man bernaus offence? Leane such peches to women, (quoth Palmerin) for if we knew before what would happen afterward, never shuld we fall into any inconuenience: but it is sufficient that we haue so well escaped, and let God haue the glorie for so happy deliuernace. By this time they were come to the Castle, and entring the base Court, the Servantes came to take their Housies to the Stable: meane while the Knight himselfe went to advertise the Lady, of the other Knights arrivall, saying. faire Leonarda, I pray you banchase the best honoure and entercainment you can devise, to the two Gentlemen I haue here

brought

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

brought with me: for I imagine by their rich Armes and Courteous behaviour, that either they are Princes or discended of very honourable Parentage. Trust me my Lord, (quoth he) for your sake I endeavour my selfe to welcome them as they ought.

And comynge into the Hall to salute them, after many courtesies deliuered on either side, the Lady seeing Palmerins Armes besmeared with blood, by reason of the wound he received on his head, said. I scare my Lord you are very soze hurt: therefore the lower it be seene to, the better eale you shall find. Whereupon herselfe helpe to unarmes him, and afterward she brought him into a goodly Chamber, where when she had stanched his bleeding, and bound up the wound, he was laid in a maruellous Rich Bed prepared for him, she promising within ten dayes and lesse to resureeze him so well, as he shoulde at pleasure travell without any danger.

For this kindeste Palmerin returned her mansode thanks, and because he might the better rest without disturbance, she caused every one to depart the Chamber, herselfe likewise courteously bidding him good Night. Palmerin being alone, looked round about the Chamber, to see if by any Armes or device, he might know the Knight that so happily deliuered him: At length, hard by his Bed-side, he espied the bl. d. of Fryfoll, with theonne painted there-in, which he well remembred to be his Device, whom so Polynardes he loue he hated, according as you haue heard in the former part of this historie, which when he beheld, the teares trickling down his cheke, he thus began to himself. I perceve that the Lady which saluted me on the mountain is of excellent knowledge: For though the Knight be my chiefeſt enemys, yet for the honourable kindeste he hath this day shewed me: I will forget all former injuries, and loue him henceforth as he were my brother, and what I could neuer campaile by rigour and force of Armes, I will now

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

sake to conquer by loue and courtesie. While he continued these privat speeches, Fryfoll opened the Chamber doore, and entred to bid Sir Palmerin godd night; who not a little glad of his comming, sayd,

I pray you Sir Knight, by the honorable loue you bears to Chivalrie: to tell me your name, and if haeretofore you were never in the Realme of Englad. By name, quoth the Knight, which hitherto I never hid from any man, is Fryfoll, and two yeres I remained in the Realme you speake of, with the Duke of Gaule in his Court. You remember then a Knight, sayd Palmerin, with whom in lesse space then twelue dapes together, you had two severall Combats. Very true, quoth Fryfoll, and some good reason I haue to remember it, for the fight on my behalfe was so dangerous, as but by the fauour of a Lady and a Squire, I never haue escaped with life. Now hast thou in thy custo-  
dy, sayd Palmerin, the man that did thee such wrong, no moare an enemy, but soz euer they bowed, true and trusly Friend: and by the oþder I haue received, there is no man this day living, that shall withdraw me from thy friend-  
ship, because thou better deseruest it then any Knight in  
the world.

And bath by my meanes, quoth Fryfoll, the onely flower of Chivalrie bæue deliuered from death: and the resolute haten betwene vs, vnto now with loue moare then brotherlike: in an happy houre went I on hunting this day, and Fortune could never honoure me with moare desired successe. For confirmation of this new alliance, he ran and called Leonarda, O.orico and the rest, and before them all kissed Palmerin in the b.þ.d. to seal the perpetuall league of amity betwene them. When was recounted their aduen-  
tures and hazard past, wherat every one greatly meruailed, seeing this suddeine change to such surpassing loue.

Fryfoll also rehearsed, how after the rape of Agriola, the Duke Grenus his Lord went to the Court, where he

advised

## Emperour of Conantnople. PART.2

advised the King to pursue his Daughter, or to send him in search of her: whereto he could not say way perswade the King. Moreover, how his Paleyn would haue kept him still in his service, whereto he myght not grant, for the promise he made the Lady that came thither, whom after he had brought to her Castle: he travailed by the Emperour of Almaine Comte, where he certaintly understood, that Tryneus and Agriola were not as yet then arrived, nor could any newes be heard what became of them.

Yet during all these speeches, he concealed all his owne noble acts of Chivalry in England, Almaine and other places, so vertuous and debonair was this gentle Knight, coveting in nothing to exalte himself. He forgot not like wise to report, how that he caried him of a long and grecuous disease: soz which he had to givien himselfe to her service, as soz eber he vowed himself her Knight. Palmerin not a little contented with this discourse, said, I think the King of England would not send his Ships after his Daughter, remembryng her happiness to come, being now the espousal wised to Lord Tryneus, and the honour thererof had been already sum, but that the tempest of the sea was too much their enemy. Then declared he their troublsome tyme on the see, in what manner he lost them, and how he now travailed to find them agayne. Since Fortune hath so appoynted (quoth Fryfoll) that this loue and friendship shold be begun be-  
twene vs, to continue the same I will beare you company, and will not forsake you till you haue found them, may it like you to accept me for your companion.

If it like me, ( quoth Palmerin ) you neede not doubt thereof, and rather you then any man that I know: for which noble kindnesse, I think myself most fortunate. In this manner beganne the concord betwene Palmerin and Fryfoll, which continued with vertuous and perfect constancy, as in the Chapters following you shall perceive. Thus leuined these Knights there leualy togidier, till

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

Palmerin being recovered, and able to bear Armes: they departed thence, leaving the poore Lady Leonarda in great heaviness, because her friend Frisoll left her so sone.

### C H A P. XXX.

How Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, and Frisoll, went to Buda, thinking to finde the Court there, where being arrived, they heard newes how the Prince Florendos wastaken: whom they went to succour with all diligence at Constantinople.



Rysoll, because he would not hab vs his Lady Leonarda too much discon- tented, made promise of his speedy returns to her: Which words some- what pleasing her, he departed with his two new friends, and such quick halle they made in their Journey, as within sixe dayes after, they arrived

Buda. There wero they adVertised of the Kings death, whereof the Prince of Macedon was accused, and the Queen likewise: For which cause they were as Palme- ners conveyed to her Fathers Court, to the Citty of Constantinople.

At these tidings Palmerin was very displeasant, where- soe he said to his Companions. Believe me good Friends, My heart will never be at quiet till I have borne before the Emperour, who ought to be an indifferent Judge to Flo- rendos, and he is the onely man of the world, to whom most gladly I woulde doe any service: therfore let us make halle to Constantinople to the end we may succour him, if he stand in any need of our aide. I am ready (quoth Frisoll) and let us set forward when you please. Wherewith he re- membred his father, to whom the Crowne by right apper- tained,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

taine, if Tarisius deceased without any heire: whereto (by this means) he might attaine right sone. Perswading himselfe with assurance hereof, he was now more earnest to be gone, and hastned his companions in such sort, as they came to Constantinople, two dayes before the appinted time for the Combat. As they entred the Citty, they met a Knight riding on hunting, whom after they had saluted, Palmerin questioned withall, if he knew any thing of the Prince Florendos his misfortune, and what the Emperour intended to doe with him. Sir, (quoth the Knight) the Emperour hath resoluteley set downe, that the Prince and his daughter shall receiue their tryall by Combat against the two Pepheves to the deceased King: and furnished they must be of their Champions, before the limited time of ten dayes be expired, and nothing else as yet is done to my knowledge. I thank you god Sir, (quoth Palmerin) it is happy the matters are no further forsward. So leaving the Knight they prauded merrily into the Citty, and because it was too sone to take up their lodging, they rode to the Pallace, to know at full the certaintie of the matter: thus being all armed, except their Helmets, which their Hontres carried after them, they made a stately shew as they rode, in that they were all three of one nature, and very beautiful young Princes, they were especially noted, and followed by many Knights and Gentlemen, who imagined such persons went to the Pallace for other matters then Courtey dan- cing.

These three companions being entred the great Hall, whiche was hanged round about with black velvet, in signe of mourning, they marvelled what might be the occassion thereof: wherefore Palmerin falling on his knee besoys the Emperour, and having humbly kist his hand, thus spake. Most renowned Monarch of the world, my Friends heere and my selfe, within these few dayes, as we travellled through the Realme of Hungaria, were ad- vertised

## The History of Palmerin D'Olivet.

verisised that you keep in prison the Prince of Macedon, whom (so please your Majestie to vouchsafe) I would gladly see, in respect that he is my Lord, as so the desire I have to deale in the Combat appointed. If it like him to make chesle of me.

The Emperour perceiving Palmerin so faire, modest, and courageous, began with himselfe to conceiu well of him: and imagined that his Son Caniano was againe reviued, so neere bid he resemble him in countenance, stature, and all proportions of his body, wherfore he returned him this answer. It shall not in ought displease me my Friend, to let you see him, to the end you may conceiu no suspition of iniustice. He calling a Gentleman Aher, commanded him to conduct the Knight to the Tower where the Prince Florendos was: afterwards inquiring of the Prince Olorico and Fyfoll, what the knight was that so hardily did enterprise the Countee. Dear Lord, (quoth Fyfoll) he is called Palmerin d'Olivet, a knyght (in my judgement) of the very highest quality in the world. Then he and the Prince Olorico rehauised the vertues and deeds of Thys knyght by hym uncomplished in France, England, Almaine, Bohemia, and Turkie: whiche being heard by a Bohemian Knyght present, he came to Fyfoll, saying.

I pray you Sir, is this that Palmerin who killed the Serpent in the Mountaine Asturie, and brought the water from the fountaine, whiche healed the good King Primadon, Father to Florendos? It is he Sir (quoth Fyfoll) and no other. When dare I say, gracious Lord (quoth the knyght) that you haue seene the most valiant and vertuous Gentleman that ever came in Thracie. Whereupon he discovered the noble batay he obtained in Bohemia, against the two Giants Dornach and Mordago, whom he slew before his swyng Combat on the behalfe of Dyardo, Conquerour to the King and faire Cardonya: against the County of Ormecque, and his Coynas, in the Company of

Prince

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Prince Adrian and Proloine. Whereat were all the Princes and knyghts present amazed, so that the Emperour himselfe, said:

Well may Florendos now aduenture the triall of his cause, having the onely Champion of the world on his side: and in this manner they deuided of him, till his returne from the prison againe. Palmerin entring the Tower, Florendos was astured, because no person was wout to come to him: but thickly when he saw him on his knees to him, vling these speches. Alas my Lord Florendos, how grieuous to me is your impaiment: in unhappy time did you know him, that hath caused you to be so ill intreated. I pray you my Lord confort your selfe and take courage: For here you may behold your Servant Palmerin, who will be helued in a thousand pieces, but he will deliuer you from this misery. Florendos, whose eies and face were greatly swelne with weeping, earely with the sorrow he conceived for his Lacy, knowing him to be the same man indeed: was so exceeding toysful, an infinite embracings and kissings, he could not suffice to bewray his comfort, so such gracious welcomes, reverence, and comitie he shold, as Palmerin (bafull to be enterred with such honour) sayd.

It seemeth to it my Lord, that you shold thus much abase your selfe to me: For (under correction) it ill agrees that the Master shold honour the Servant. The poore Prince could not but still hold him in his armes, and with teares and marvellous affection, thus answered. As Palmerin, my onely hope and confort in trouble, wherre hast thou been? What sorcere hath kept thee so long from mee? My deere friend, how many rysosome thoughts haue I endured, expecting thy coming: so that when I saw thou didst not returne, and I could no way haire what was become of thee; the carelesse conceit of thy absence had neere slain me. Then crielesse whai bicaime of my selfe being depyt,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

despised of my lobe and honour of my life, I am fallen into thise miseries farre exceeding death: whiche Fortune I see hath permited, becaule I am perswaded, that thou must deliver me from all mishaps: and by thee shall I attayne my chiefeſt desires. A happy and ſoſtonate houre, well worthy ſoꝝ ever to be celebrazed with triumphe, finding the the onely caufe of my god, whom long ſince I feared was conſorted with the dead: but ſeeing now thou art ſo happily come, acquaint me with the fortunes that ſtates the thus long, ſoꝝ verþdetrouſ am I to know them. Palmerin was ſo grieved to ſee him in ſuch weak and ſickly eſtate, as he could hardly make any anſwer, yet ſtiring with himſelfe, ſaid.

Hynble Lord, the time requireth now other occaſon, hereafter ſhall I tell you the whole diſcourse. Grant me, I beseech you without farther intreating, that I may enter the Combat in your name againſt one of thone Traitors, who have accuſed you: for iuch is my hope in God, that I shall ſpede luckily, and bring him to the end ſuch a villaine deserves. With all my heart, (quoth the Prince) I am contented, affuring my ſuccesſe ſo well in your vertues, as it ſhould be hundred of my Knights did enter the field for me. And to the end, that without feare or doubt you may take my caufe in hand, I ſwear to you by the living God, that ſince Tarisius espoused Grima, I never ſaw her, till when the King came and ſouud me with her: which was ſo ſhort a time, as ſhe had not the leſure to make me any anſwer. Erne it is that I kilde the King: but how? I did it in reſpect hee was mine enemy, and abuſed my Lady and lawfull wife. What though they were eſpoused together: the mariage was not to be allowed, in that it was done againſt her will: ſhe being (as I have ſayd) my wifte, by ſolemn ſp̄ches before God married to me. It ſuffiſeth, (ſaid Palmerin) I haue enough. You ſhall likewife understand my Lord, that I haue brought with me another Knight, who

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

will gladly adventure the Combat on the Queens behalfe, nad ſuch a one he is, as that the other accuſer will ſcandice to ſtand againſt him: Wherefore let me intreat you to comfort your ſelue, expeſting our happy and ſoſtonate ſuccesse.

Florendos falling on his knie, gave thanks to Heaven for his lucky event, and having an indifferent while conſecred together, after Palmerin had adverтиſed Frenato of his honne Ptolomies health; and that in that time hee had good hope to find him, he returned to the Emperour, to whom making great reverence, he ſayd. Now my gra- cious Lord, I come to understand your anſwer. I pray you Hic Knight(qd.the Emperour) hold me excused, if I haue not welcomed you, as your Nobility, Bountie, and high Chivalry deserue: but after the Combat is ended, whiche for my part I grant you, what haſt wanted now ſhall bee ſupplyed, ſo that your ſelue ſhall rest contented. I thank your Maieſty for this extraordinary fauour, ſayd Palmerin, and ſeeing the Prince had committed his caufe to my Fortune: I beseech you ſend for the Kings Nephew, that the appoynted day may not be preuented by any further delaies. And if the Queen your Daughter be not provided of a Champion, this Knight (pointing to Frysoll) my vowed Friend and Companion, ſhall undertake her caufe, in that he came hither for no other busynesse: and ſuch good ex- perience haue I made of his valour and hardinesse, as if by kingly Chivalry her right may be defended: affure your ſelue my Lord, this is the man. I think (ſayd the Emperour) He is not as yet determined of any one, albeit full many haue made offer of themſelues ſo we will expect no further, this Knight ſhall be preferred before all that come. I humbly thank your Maieſty for this fauour, (answered Frysoll) yet would I be loath to preuume too farre, before I understand the Queens pleasure. The Emperour cauſed him to be condueted to the Queens Chamber, and his two

## The History of Palmerin Dolva.

two companions with him, who desired to see the Ladys: where being entred, Fryioll humbly upon his knee, began in this manner. Right noble and excellent Queen, so faire throughout Christendome, as by the report of your rare vertue and integritie of life, especially your innocency in the crime wherewith you are accus'd: as from farre Countries I am come to be your knight, if you will boushfafe me such honour as to accept me. Alas poor you, that bide by your commissioun, and in the company of my Nobla Grien, who undertakest the Combat for my Lord Florendos, right willing am I to adventure life and credit.

All is gentle Right, (quoth the Queen) this offer prockes both from your countee and country, not by any vertue on my part deserving: For to contrary hath Fortune evermeze let her selfe against me. But very ingratefull might I be accus'd, and never be reckoned among Ladys of re-gare, shewing taken such paynes for me, I should not accept you for my Knight, especially in such urgent occasion. Wherefore I entercaine you into this Service, and I desyre of God, that you may be as easly delivered from tho charge you take in hand for me, as my conscience is cleare from the fault wherewith I am accused.

I hope Madam (quoth Fryioll) that my Lord your Father shall ere long perceive, your loyall, perfect, and pure Robury, which never can keep company with scibble and detestable treason. All this while Palmerin beholding the Queen, seeing her smal face so strained and blubbered with teares, morded with natural remoule, was constraind to turne his head aside, to bid the teares y tickled down his cheeks.

The Queen likewise regarded him so earnestly, as when she beheld him weep, she imagined that one gaus a violent pull at her heart: which she distempered so well as she could, determining not to demand the cause therof, untill such time as the Combat were finished. So taking their leave of the Queen and the Princesse Armida, they returned

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART 2.

returned to their Lodging till the next Morning, when the Emperour sending for them to the Pallace, where Promptaleon and Oudin stayed their coming: the Emperour himselfe thus began. Now Promptaleon, here maist thou behold the two yong Knights, who speake the contrary of that thou hast reported: Wilt thou yet maintaine that my Daughter hath committed treason, and been disloyall to her Husband, thy deceased Uncle? I will my Lord (quoth he) and sweare by my Baptisme, for that cause she shall dye the death: and if any dare undertake the contrary, I am ready to prove it by force of Armes. I thinke it convenient (said Palmerin) my good Lord, that no combate shoulde be granted, without the presence of the accused.

Immediately Florendos and Griana, were sent for, and being come before the Emperour, Palmerin sayd to the Prince: Now say you? My Lord, doe you permit in maintenance of your right, that I give these false accusers such discipline, as their wicked and tiecherous dealings deserve? I doe (quoth the Prince) and Heaven prosper the enterprise. What say you Madam (quoth Fryioll) to the Queen, doe you afford the like to me? She answered as Florendos before had done: Whereupon Palmerin thus spake to the Accusers.

The two Knights will maintaine, that you beth are Traytors, and that by covetous and gracie desire of rule, and to enjoy the Kingdome, you would (against all Right) disinherit the yong Princesse Armida: for which cause you have shamefully accusid the Queen her Mother, to have committed murther, and more then that, charge her with disloyall subiecty. For if the Prince Florendos talked with her, when he founyd her in her Chamber: it was in no other sorte then honour allowed, and according to the dutie of honest Love, wherein all Princes are bound to their Ladies. Besides, if your King was slatac by the Prince, it was indecence of his owne life, and in repelling the intrusions

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

rious speeches he gave him : To approue what I say, we present our gages to the Emperour, & please himbut to receave them. The like did the two Brethren, desiring his Highnesse to appoint the Combat presently, in the wide and necessary place before the Pallace. Soz ( quoth they) we will teach these vain-glorious Strangers, the pride of such iniurious speeches, spaken to thise that know how to correct them.

I think ( quoth Palmerin) thou shalt need to teach thy selfe : but if thou have any n w reuerie, practise it well thou art best, soz I can tell the time will require it. The good Emperour Remicius comandred silence, and taking the Gages of these fourt Knights : bid them go Arme themselves, saying he would set the end thereof before he tooke any sustenance. The Duke of Menia, and the County of Rodona, ancient Princes of Greece, were appointed to be Judges of the Field: who comandred two hundred Knights to Arme themselves, soz the assurance of their owne persons.

## CHAP. XXXI.

Of the noble Combat in the City of Constantinople, by Palmerin, and Fry soll, against the two Nephewes of the deceased King of Hungaria, whom they vanquished, by which means the Prince Florendos and the Quene Criana were delivered.



Romptaleon and Oudin being departed the sumptuous Hall, Palmerin and Fry soll taking their leave of Florendos and the Queen, whom the Emperour caused to be shut uppe in their prisones agayne, went to their loodgings to Arme themselves, soz performance

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART 2.

maner of the Action undertaken. The Duke of Menia was an honourable Prince, descended of the most noble house in all Greece, with many other great Loxas went after them: and when they were Armed, the Duke would have beat Palmerins knunce, and the grand Esquire attending on the Emperour, carried Frysols. In this manner came they to the place appointed for the Combat, where the two Brethren were already staying for them, the eldest of them thus beginning in mockage. Belike we knyghts, for men that shewen themselves so hardy in a Hall, me thinks you have been very long Arming your selves. I think you came on your softcloth Mules to the Fields entrance, soz feare of falling to hurt your selves: but soon shall you be taught better horsemanship I warrant you. If there were in these so much wisdome and exercize of Armes, (answered Fry sol) as are high words and brauing behaviour, it would be a little better discerned then it is: notwithstanding, ere we haue done, I think they that come first into the field will tally lat here, unlesse some body for pity carry them out before. Wherewith the Trumpets sounded, and the Heraldis comandred the Champions to doe their deuote, which was the caule, that these hote words were changed into dares: and running fiercely against each other, they encountered with such puissance, as Palmerin cast Oudin forth of his saddle, with a very great wound on his left side, and Romptaleon was received by Fry soll so roughly, as he fell backwarden on the crupper of his Horse, because he was leach his Brother shold fall without company. The two Brethren enraged to be thus foild at the first, came with their swords drawn to kill their aduersaries Horses: so that they were constrain'd quickly to alight, when they assallid each other: it was a marvellous surp, for either side exerected soz, the one to keepe of a kingdom, the other to save their friends life.

Strange was it to behold this violent fight, yet the two

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

two Brethren seemed unable long to hold out, for they  
Arm'd was so cut and mangled, and themselves so driven  
forth of breath, as hardly they could sustaine themselves:  
so that Promptaleon desired Fryfoll to rest a while, who  
minded with anger, thus answered. May Traytor, now  
shall I teach thee how to defend thy selfe, and not one mi-  
nute will I grant thee to traverse with me: but will send  
thy soule to the Father of thy villanie, unlesse with speed  
thou denie the slander. With these words he laid so many  
livid strokes on him, as at length he fell downe dead at  
his feet, which when Odum perceiveth, he sheweth his  
sword at Palmerin, and caught him fast about the middle,  
thinking that way to get him downe, but Palmerin striking  
alway his side, caused him fall on his back, and without  
attending for his revolte, nobly stroke his head from  
his holders.

So comming to Fryfoll, he asked if he were wounded:  
So my Lord (quoth he) I thanke God, the greatest wound  
I have cannot withhold me to doe you further service, if so  
be you have any need. Then putting up their Swords, they  
demanded of the Judges, if any thing else remained to be  
done, for deliverance of the Prisoners. Nothing, worthy  
Lords, answered the Judges, and them will the Emperour  
now deliver, with all possible sped. The good Remicius  
heartily thanking God for his victorie, sent a Knight to the  
Champions, with request to come and lodge in his Pallace,  
as also that they shold presently come speak with his Da-  
ughters: yet could not the Messenger make such haste, but  
they were come forth of the Field, the Duke Mecena and  
the Prince Olorico bearing them company.

When the Knight had overtaken them, he said. Re-  
turne now by Knights to my Lord the Emperour, for he  
would conferre with you, and have your wounds attended  
by his owne Chirurgions. So turning again to the Pallace,  
they entred the Hall, where the Emperour meeting them,

said.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

said. Right welcome are ye my noble Friends, who have  
so happily defended my Daughters honor: for whose sake  
I shall make ye such recompence, as shall be henceforth an  
encouragement to all Knights, to adventure the Combat  
on the behalfe of any distressed Lady. Immediately in their  
presence, by sound of Trumpet he caused to be declared,  
that the Prince Florendos and the Ducheene Griana, were  
innocent of the Traytorous accusation, and thereforee in o-  
pen field had they shold be deliuered: commanding like-  
wise his most expert Chirurgions to give diligent atten-  
dance on the wounded Knights, causing them to be lodg'd  
in the most stately Chambers of his Pallace. Afterward,  
he suffer'd the bodies of the vanquished to be batte'd, gi-  
ving express charge on paines of death, that none of the  
Knights of Hungaria shold depart from Constantinople  
without his leave: because he shold whilie they stayed there  
provide for the government of the Kingdome, as appertain-  
ing to his young Daughter the Princess Armida. The  
Emperour was so joyfull for the deliverance of Griana,  
as he had soone forgot her Nephewes misfortune: the  
Duchesses Davies likewise were not a little glad, but above  
all, the young Princess Armida, her comfort could not be  
expressed, that her Mother was so graciously defended: and  
also the Duke of Pera, who had the Prince Florendos in  
custody, searching him forth of prison, said: My Lord, thank  
God and the Knights that brought the Combat for you: for  
by their meanes, the Emperour declareth you absolved and  
set at liberty.

The Prince lifting his eyes to Heaven, thus beganne:  
Oh my God, how happy is the man that trusteth in thy  
mercy: doubtless he that believeth in thy promises. Shall  
never perish. Noble Duke, in all mine afflictions, I have  
carried no small speciall favour: but if God prolong  
my life, I will not be unthankful of your gentlenes. In soch  
my Lord, quoth the Duke, for to giev a Prince, any benefi-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

mine would gladly endeavour himselfe : and if I haue pleased you in any thing, I did no more then my duty, which chivalrian amity requireth of each other. So taking him by the hand, he brought him before the Emperour, when falling on his knees, the Prince thus spake. If heretofore dyead Lord, both I and my people gaue our selues to trauell, and aduentured desperate hazard in your defence: at this time I count my selfe sufficiently recompenced, seeing your displeasure qualified, and the hard opinion you concouered against me, changed into princely and honorabile Justice.

Sir Florendos, answered the Emperour, when I remembred the wrong you did my Daughter, leaving such a scandalous report of her, at the same time you came to this City: I thinke your worthe of the sharpest death. But placing mercy before rigozous justice, I am desirous to let you know, that it liketh me better to be loued then feared: forgetting quite the offence against our person, the murder of our Son, without any regard to the murmur of the people, whose ignorance cannot consider of Princes mercys. Now will I talke mine aged yeeres with mine owne pockes per blod, or the death of a Prince so noble, whereby he should leave to my following posterity, as a Trophe of my life, an eneaslike memory of tyrannous cruelty: but rather shall my chiefeſt aduersaries stop their mouthes, with remembrance of my clemency and princely bountie, as your owne conscience shall tell witness with me. You therfore my Lord, the Duke of Pera, see that the Prince Florendos be lodged in the best place in our City, and kepe him companyng, till his traine shall come from Macedon. With great humilitie the Prince kissed the Emperours hand, acknowledging his manifold and princely courtesies: desiring the Duke likewise before his departure, that he might speake with the two Knights Fryfoll and Palmeria.

Being

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Being brought to their Chambers, the Embrazings and gracious courtesies he vsid to them, I am not able to utter, and very loath was he to part from them, but that he would no way prejudgete their health: wherefore giving them the good night, he was conducted to his Lodging, leving Palmeri in vey sad and penisive remembraunce what the Daunce of Thartus had said to him, how he shoulde deliver his Father from death, before he could know him, whch was likewise confirmed by the apparition of the Ladis to him, under the name of his best and dearest friends.

¶ that the Heavens did so fauour me (quoth he) that I were the Son of the Prince Florendos and Mucene Criana, then would I imagine me selfe the happiest man in the world. Yet can I not forget, that the Fayres told me on the Mountaine Artafaria, that one day I shoulde be Lord of all Greece, but God is my witness, that I covet not such honor and preferment, were it not for the love of my Lady, so the end her Father might not dislike of our contract. And hence will I not depart, before I understand the truth hereof, and to what end this aduenture will happen. Fryfoll on the other side, he devised how to make himselfe knowne to the Emperour and Empresse: because he had good hope when himselfe might be knowne, that his Father Netrides shoulde enjoy the Kingdome of Hungaria. The Prince Florendos likewise could take no rest, for his great desire to recover the Daunce Criana. Such were the passions of these three Princes, each one living in hope of good success, which happened according to their expectations, as you shall rede hereafter.

# The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

## CHAP. XXXII.

How the Queene *Triana* with the young Princesse *Armida*, went to visit *Palmerin* and *Fryfoll*, and how the Queene knew *Palmerin* to be her Sonne, to the no little joy of the Emperour, and the Prince *Florendes*.



Two daies after the deliverance of the Prince *Florendos*, the young Princesse *Armida* devising with the Queen her Mother, said. Methinkes gracious Madame, we are to be reprooved of ingratitude, in that we haue not as yet visited the peare wounded Knights, considering how greatly we are beholding to them : I beseech you let vs this morning goe see how they fare.

Alas Daughter, answered the Queen, hast thou the heart to bring me among such persons, when I am said to be the cause of thy Fathers death ? When the Princesse breaking forth into teares, replied. Welcome me Madame, if you remember your selfe well, you are in as little fault as I am, and so hath an honorable tracy declared : but had you bin any way culpable theron, yet now you ought to comfort your selfe, having had such a famous profe of innocency. In signe whereof, and to declare your thankfulness, to those gentle Knights: it will be counted a speciaall point of courtesie, to visite them that ventured for you. Go on then, said the Queen, seeing you thinke it so necessary, and are so desirous. So accompanied with many Ladies, clothed all in mourning blacke, they went first to *Fryfoll*, greatly thanking him for the paires he had taken, putting his life in danger, for the conseruation of their honore. Now to me Lady, answered *Fryfoll*, ought you to give these thanks

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

thanks, but to him that onely giveth strength to man: and if from my birth I had continually travellled in your service yet your graces are such, as I shoulde never deserue to bee reckoned among your meanest seruitors. The young Princesse thinking her selfe greatly bound to him, would not give him god morrow with so little talke : but sitting downe on the bedde by him, taking him by the hand, began againe thus.

I know not Sir Knight, how the Queene my Mother will proesse in requitall of your noble service, for mine alone part, not forgetting how the *Tartars* threatened me, whom (to their endless shame) you haue vanquished and quelled : I find my selfe so indebted to you, as it far exceedeth my power, to givedom you with answerable recompence. *Fryfoll* perceiving the young Princes affection, whos love had caught somewhat within his reach : knew immediatly by her sober balys, it looks, the cause why so many lighes were coupled with her wodds, himselfe likewise suddenly sick of the same disease, returned this answere. Madame, if Fortune, the friend to your happiness, would favour me so much, as the enterprize done by your commanding, might sorte to an ende fitting my desire : I shoulde then account my selfe more then sufficiently gratified in this, that the act is agreeable to your liking, and the favourable countenance of such a Lady, is more then so meane a Knight as my selfe can merite. Beside, from the day that the high rounstone of your prudence and gracious beauty, assured me of those exquisite gifts, wherwith Nature hath plentifullly enriched you : I tooke such a religions bowe of bondage on me, as (considering your high calling, and my selfe so far inferior) I shall never obtaine the fauour of liberty, if your benignity, regarding all things else, grant me not that speciall grace. The Queen loth to trouble this forme of confession, withdrew her selfe into *Palmerins* Chamber, where (as it fellent) she found ne body but him selfe :

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

selle : by which occasion, remembryng the loue he bare to Florendos, after he had humbly saluted him, he thus began.

Wilens me , gentle Sir, your knighthly Chivalry hath shewed it selfe of such desir, as the Prince Florendos, for desyce of whose hysnes, you haue not feared to aduenture your life, your dangerous wounds well wettynge the same : shall never deuise sufficient satisfacion. For in my judgement it may well be said, that gods, honour and life hath been restored him by your noble magnanimitie. Madam, quoth Palmerin, these wounds that for these two dayes haue made me kepe my Chamber, thanks be to God are not so dangerous, as if occasion were offered, either for you or my Lord Florendos , but full well could I be seene therin, to purchase entertainment into your gracious conceit. The Queene then setting downe in a Chaire by him, and viewing him very earnestly, his locks of haire kept downe by a gorgious wrought Cap , embreidered with Saphires and small Emeralds : She beheld the mole en his face like a Crosse, which mad her remember, that her Son had the like, and in the selfe same place, when Cardyna tooke him from her and caried him to the Mountaine. Whereupon she tooke greater occasion to regard his countenance, and imagining him very much to resemble the Prince Florendos, immedately she perswaded her selfe that he was her Son. Which conceit moued her to such alterations, as of long she continued silent, thogh Palmerin (in meane while) demanded many questions of her. These changes oueruled by reason and discretion, she commanded her Ladies to depart the Chamber, and to goe accompayning the young Princesse Armida: they being no swarre gone, but she began in this manner.

Let me request Sir Palmerin , to know your Parents and the name of the Countrey where you were boorne. Palmerin somewhat amazed at this demand, was now in the

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

midst of this onely desire, verily persuading himselfe that the Queene was his Mother , wherefore he thus answered.

Madame, I sweare to you by my faith , that I know no Rude this day living , to whom I would willingly reveale more then to your selfe : but so contrary was Fortune to me in mine instance, that as yet I could not get a ne knowledge either of my Father or Mother , nor of the Country where I was boorne. Yet thus I haue been certifie, that I was nourished on a Mountaine not farre from this City, which is called the Mount of Olives, wheres (as I haue been many times tolde ) my foster Father found me in rich swadling clothes, and more then this, so please you to credite me , cannot I bewray of whence or what I am. Madam, quoth the Queen, how greatly am I bound to praise your infinite bountie and pittie , so to sake protecting minis instant, whom I forsooke so cruelly : Ah gentle Knight , see here thy Mother, even he that commanded thou shouldest be caried to the Mountaine : and the Prince Florendos, whom so lately thou diddest deliver from death, he ( noble Palmerin) is thy Father. Notwithstanding my Sonne, I desire thee by the reverend loue thou bearest me, to conceale secretly what I haue said , untill I gaine the meane to discouer my shanie to the Emperour : yet such a shame, as never came greater god to thy Mother, nor can I now count the dede sinfull, in that my sorte hath brought me such an honorabile Sonne. So ravished with joy was both the Mother and the Sonne , as neither could expresse their inward contentation, for such was their alteration, as they reputed for an illusion or dreame, what was most certaine indeed : such wonderfull comfort brought this unexpected chance , wherewith the greatest endowments of honor or riches may not be compared. Wering in his exesse, the Mother of her Sonne, and the Sonne for his Mother: Palmerin having now againe recovered his forces, said

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

My God, I render thy name immortall thanks, in that  
I drew my breath from so noble and vertuous persons,  
as also for grauitating me knowledge of them in a time so  
fortunate: for heare then ( good Morger ) to misdeeme of a  
ny thing, so I will discouer the matter in such sort to the  
Emperour, as forgetting all things past, he shall receive  
both the Mother and Sonne with greater joy then you can  
imagine. But to the ende Madame, you may be more cer-  
taine of your Sonne, see here a Crucifix of Golde, which  
was tyed about my necke when I was bound, and hath of  
long time bene kept by the most perfect Lady in the world.  
The Queenes knowing it right well, after she had killed it  
many times, answered. Assuredly my Sonne, it is the ver-  
ty same that my selfe tyed about thy necke, when I was in  
the greatest griefe that ever distressed Mother might be:  
to see her instant vienciently rapt from her, so soone as Pas-  
ture had brought him into the world. But if my mishap as-  
then surpass'd all other women: yet now is it recompens-  
ed with such a fortunate houre, as no Lady may compare  
her felicity with mine. Ah my Sonne, by these are my sor-  
rows changed into joy, my Despaire into content, & from  
Death it selfe am I brought agayne to life: for if my Hus-  
bands hard hap made me despise life, now may you be assur-  
ed how much I desire it.

Then declared she, how to save the Prince Florendos  
life, whose faithfull loue brought him to such extremity by  
sicknes, she adventured her hon'ry for his safety & entering  
the paradise of loue, bestowed that Jewell on him which  
the most of all esteemed. And so maist thou ( quoth he ) re-  
port to the Emperour, yet in this manner, that not by ears  
vailly impudicitie I so consented, for God is my witnesse,  
that notwithstanding the perill wherein I saw him, no  
perswasion could cause me yaelo him that respectall remedy,  
before he had first solemnly vowed mariage to me, which  
against all right was broken by the Emperours coman-  
dement.

Madame,

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

Sir adam, (quoth Palmerin) Florendos is of such valour,  
and his honorabile actions so well received among men, that  
albeit he had made you no such promise, yet reason may ex-  
cuse you in this matter. But if by promised faith, and to  
safe the life of so gentle a Prince ( who happily by your re-  
fusal might have miscarried ) you honoured the Temple of  
Love with so sweet an offering: among people of good  
minded, it ought rather to be learned a vertue then any  
bad affection or unlawfull lust. And therfore Madam com-  
fort your selfe, for shortly I dare to assure your peace with  
the Emperour: and seeing I have soz my Mother, and  
the Prince Florendos soz my Father, I sole my selfe free  
from any griefe or vexation, assuring you, that I will dylve  
it to no further delay, but this morning will I confer with  
his Majestie.

The Queen being fearefull, that her long stay should  
cause any bad opinion, having killed her Sonne: gave him  
the god morrow, and so went to her Chamber, where she  
found Cardina her Gentlewoman, to whom she shewed  
the Crucifixe her Sonne had given her, saying. Tell me I  
pray thee Cardina, doth thou remember, that heretofore  
thou hast seen this Crucifixe, and in what place? Belike  
the Madam ( quoth he ) I thinke I have seuen it before  
now: but in what place I am not certaine: Why? For  
getsfull creature, knowest thou not, that this is the Crucifixe  
which was tyed about my Sonnes neck, when thy selfe didst  
carry him to the Mountaine? In gods fauour, the Knight  
is he, who fought the Combat soz my Lord Florendos.  
Now for the great mercy and bounty of our God, who  
preserved his life then, and from infinite dangers hath de-  
sended him hitherto. Notwithstanding, be thou secret, and  
on perill of thy life revele it to none, vairill the Emperour  
my Father be acquainted therewith. Cardina was so joy-  
full hereof, as she must needs goe presently to see Palme-  
rin, and finding the Chirurgions with him witting his  
wounds:

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

hounds : he fethched a gorgeous Mantle of purple Velvet, bordered round about with Pearles, Diamonds and Rubies, as well might besm the greatest Prelach to weare. As Cardina holpe him to put on his Mantle he noted the Warke on his face, which he removid since the time of his birth : and in this manner goes Palmerin chearefully to the Emperour, whom he found conferring with his Lords and Warons, but his presence caused them to break off talk, imagining him the godlyest person that ever they beheld. The good old Emperour Remicius, rejoicing to see him in so god and able plige, demanded of him how he fared : Right well (quoth he) I thank God and your Highnes, ready to aduenture on any occasion shall like you to command; And now am I come to adverstise your Majestie of such matters, as will met a little glasye in the hearing, so please your Grace to boushase me pribat audience. Whereupon the Emperour commanded every one to depart the halle, and they being now alone, Palmerin thus began. My Lord, and Mighty Emperour, till this day haue I frequented the Courts of many Kings and Potentates, without desyre of requesting any thing, vntill this present : when saue would I request one boone of your Majestie, the geant wheresoever shall returne you both profit and honor. My noble friend Palmerin, answered the Emperour, what euer thou pleasest, demand, and on my woord it shall be granted.

Palmerin, with humble obeysance kissing the Emperours hand, said. In sooth my Lord, all that I haue to require, is onely to desire your Highnes : that all offences committed by the Prince Florendos and Madam Griana your Daughter, may not only be forgotten, but also forgot. So sayth Palmerin, quoth the Emperour, I forgive all their offences whatsoever. Hayt then please your Majestie (quoth he) to remember, how when Florendos came to doe you service during your Warres against Gamezio,

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART 2.

because you denyed to give him your Daughter, he was so sick, as every houre his death was expected? It then so fortuned my Lord, the Prince were your Daughter, acquainted with the cause of his sickness, to gye him some comfort, as also to send to gow a Prince from death : by gracious spaches we gaue him some hope of Recue, and such (for truth) as before they parted, a solemyne promise of Marage was conclude d betwene them. I know not the conditions of their agreements, but it sermed the Articles conclled on no difficult accord : for each received of other the swet desires of Recue, insomuch as that night was I begotten. And for a truthe my Lord, I am Sonne to the Prince Florendos, and Madam Griana your Daughter : who (as I understand) by the Empresse peiswallon, against all right you compelled to Marry with the Prince Tarisius. Florendos, notwithstanding my Mothers wrong was very great, hath continued so loyall, as he would never accept any other for his wife, nor as yet will, but onely her. Now my Lord, that this matter is ay not seeme a fantall, call invention, I can resolute you of the place of my birth, which was in the Tower, where my Mother remained Prisoner by your Commandement, vnder the charge of a Lady named Tolomestra : who to defend your Daughters honor, caused me to be caried to a place not far hence, which is called the Mount of Olives, from whence my surname is likelike derived, & in that place was I found by a Country Peasant vndir a Palme-Tree, who in signe therof named me Palmerin d' Oliva. By sorrowfull Mother, having one day to see me again, diligently noted vivers marks I haue, and hung about my neck a golden Crucifire, which this day I gaue her againe : and by this Warke on my face like a Croesse, she well remembred me to be her Sonne. In this respect my Lord, that your Daughters offence was occasioned by rrus and faithfull Loue, and having likewise promised to forgive al causes of displeasure: grant my father now

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

now at length to enjoy his lawfull wife, that I being their Sonne, may not be esteemed as Illegitimate, the doing whereof, will renoune your name for ever, and lobe tryed in so many afflictions, shall be crowned with his long and desired reward.

The Emperour amaz'd at this strange discourse, could not imagine what answere to make: Wherefore having steten a prettie while silent, lifting his eyes to heauen, he thus began. O mighty King of Kings, onely god and full of mercy, I render thy Name everlasting thanks, for thy gracious regard to the distressed Empire of Greece: for though in our last distresses thou tookest away my Sonne Caniano, thou hast at this instant sent me another, who well hath learned to defend this State, from the proud invading Governeur of Turkie. As my Sonne Palmerin, right well doe I believe what thou hast said, and albeit thou haddest not shewne such probable arguments, yet doest thou so perfectly resembly my Sonne Caniano, as easily may be conjectured whence thou art descended. Whatsoeuer thou demandest my Sonne, is already granted. And with these words, the teares trickled down his spylke white Beard, such was his inward earnest conceit of joy: and embracing Palmerin in his armes, he called his Lords, who marballed not a little at this event, and thus spake the Emperour.

Here my Friends, your Liege Lord and Soveraigne, the Sonne of my Daughter Ciriana, and the Prince Florendos: How may you applaud the bounty of Heaven, proffiting for you such a noble Prince? The Lords all wondering at these speeches, came and entertained him, with many signes of honour: So that it is not registered in any ancient memory, that ever King or Prince had such sudden and gracious welcome.

By this time these newes were spr. dde throughout the whole Palace, and the Empress hearing thereof, sent one of her Squires for Palmerin: when the Emperour taking

him

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

him by the hand, brought him to her Chamber, saying: See here Madam your Sonne, whs by your meanes hath long since bere ne banished our Court: hereafter looks he be better used.

The Empresse surprised with incredible joy, loyningly embracing him, said: Welcome my Sonne, forget my heinous offence, when I would not suffer the Father to enjoy the Prince Florendos, which fault Heaven hath revenged, with the death of my thre nephewes, whereof I now make no reckoning, seeing God hath sent vs such a gracious comfort. The Emperour on the other side welcomed the Queen his Daughter, which as yet he had not done since her comming from Hungaria. Lay by (quoth he) faire Daughter, these blacke garments, the witness of your inward Mourning, and deck your selfe presently in rejoyning habitts: for now before all my Lords of Greece, will I have you espoused to the Prince Florendos. So departed the Emperour and the Princes, leaving the Queen with her Ladies, who disraved her of her Mourning garments: his Majestie commanding Palmerin, to go seeke the Prince of Macedon his Father, accompanied with all the Noblemen of the Court.

In the mean while he caused all the ornaments of blacke to be ta'en downe, and the Pallace to be hanged with sumptuous Cloth of Gold: and gave in charge to the Empresse, that the Queen, the Princess Armida, and all the Ladies should adorne themselves, as to receive the very greatest Prince in the world. Likewise he said to all his Knights. Rejoyce my good Friends with me: for God tooke away my Children, and hath doubly restored them, for those that be dead, he hath raised vs moze. Palmerin babing with him all the Emperours Knights, went to the Lodging of the Prince Florendos, and by the way the Citizens of Constantinople, Nobles, Merchante, and Artezians, welcommied him very honorably; making Bonfires and  
Carlandes.

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

Garlands of triumph, in every streate, crying; Welcome to this noble City our new Lord and Master: and such chearefull delights did they solemnize the time withall, as though it had been the Feast of Christmas, Palmerin & his Escaine, being come to the Princes lodging, found two Squires at the gate, sent thither by the Emperour, the one holding a Horle very richly Caparisoned, and the other celly Garments of cloth of Golde, whiche he caused to be brought vp after him into the Chamber, where falling on his knee before the Prince he said.

Now come I my Lord to kisse your hand, not as I have done heretofore, but as becommeth a Sonne to his Father: For I am your Sonne, begotten on the Queene Griana, whom the Emperour will now bestow on you in Marriage. Florendos was so rauished with these speches, so he was ready to swoone betwane Palmerins armes: but at length setting a great Agh, said. O celestiall Monstraigne, what am I, whom thou shouldest so respect, and lise to such surpassing happiness? Ad poore Florendos, not long since the most wretched among men: what man may now compare with the fortune, having such a Knight to thy Sonn, and faire Queene Griana to the certeine to with me Sonnes (quoth he, embracing Palmerin) For it is no reason to stay, when such happy newes hath sent for vs. And credite me, the very firste time I did behold thes, my heart was sollicited with greater joy, then I am able now to expresse: which euer since made me conjecture, that there was moze betwene us then friendly alliance. Then was he cleashed in the rich Garments sent by the Emperour, and his Cousin Renato in like manner: So comiting to horseback, the Duke of Pera reade on his right hand, and his Sonnes Palmerin on the left, with many Princes, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, riding both before and behinde them. In this maner came they to the Hallace, where the Emperour himselfe stayed their comming at the Galle: and after

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

they were alighted, the Prince making humble reverence to his Majestie, thus spake: High and redoubted Lord, I know not how to render sufficient thanks in that your Highnesse is pleased to honor me with your daughter, which is the thing I alwayes desired, notwithstanding, I hope to shew such deserts hereafter, as whether he shall be intencionted, nor your Majestie repent your gentle gift. Noble Lord (quoth the Emperor) well haue you deserued her, and mine Empire with her, in respect of your worthy Sonnes Palmerin, whom all Europe, Asia and Africa honours. Wherefore in the presence of all my Lords, I will give her to you: Desirring the day of solemnity, vntill the States of Macedon come, therefore Sonne Palmerin ges for your Mother.

Presently he departed, the Dukes of Pera and McCona with him: and soone they returned, bringing with them the Empress, the Queen, and his Sister the young Princess Arimida: whom he had schooled with such gracious speches, as he had now forgotten her displeasure towards the Prince Florendos, for the death of the King her Father. There speake in the Hall, by the Arch bishop of Constantinople, the Prince Florendos & Griana were assuained together, to their no little contentment: as also to the good likynge of all the Princes and Lords of Greece, who spent the rest of the day in joyfull dispaytes, and synapes.

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

## CHAP. XX XII.

How Frisoll declared to the Empresse, that he was Sonne  
to her Nephew Nerides.



In this pleasure of the Princes and  
Lords of Greece, so many joyfull  
and blythe accidents, might not  
be compared with the pleasures of the  
Prince Frisoll and Olorico, who  
wold now no longer keep his Bed, in  
respect of his joy for the good fortune of  
his friend, wherefore putting on his  
garments, and accompanied with Olorico, he came downe  
into the great Hall, as the Prince of Macedon was betro-  
thed to his Lady, when Palmerin kepping from all the rest,  
welcomed them with gracious cartes. After they had been  
generally saluted, Frisoll came before the Empresse, and on  
his knee began in this manner.

Most excellent and gracious Madamo, may it please  
you pardon mine offence in shedding the blood of your kin-  
man. Notwithstanding, as the law of judgment and rea-  
son exhorteth me, of two evils I chuse to take the least: so  
then I rather thinke it good, to bathe my hands in the blood  
of mine owne Sozia, then permit him (by the Prince Flor-  
endos' cause) to suffer open violence. This speaks I  
to you, as being the Sonne to your Nephew Nerides,  
whom long since his elder Brother disherited, and banis-  
ched him his Country, to a little Isle, wheres at this  
time he remaineth in good disposition. Now judge which  
of these Events is most admirable: that of your noble Son  
Palmerin, or that which I have now rehearsed. But may  
it be (quoth the Empress) that my Nephew Nerides is  
yet living? And can it be possible that then art his Sonne?

LXXX

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

True me Dame, said Frisoll. I have told you truth,  
and by Gods leave, you shall have more ample proove ther-  
of within these few dayes.

Whereupon the Emperour, the Empresse, Florendos,  
and Palmerin, with inexpricable rejoicing, embraced Fri-  
soll, noz a little extolling their fortune, that such hardy  
knights were descended of their Linage. Then Frisoll re-  
hearsed before them all, the three Combats he had with  
Palmerin, and what great honour he wanne at the Turney  
in France, which report greatly contented the Prince Flo-  
rendos, bearing the honourable Chivalry of his Sonne,  
nor would he consent to joyne therewith his conquest on the  
Mountaine Artifaria, with his Combats both in Bohe-  
mia and Durace.

At these reports the Emperour somewhat amazed, said  
before all his Lords, I believe my Friends, that the mar-  
vellous and rare fortunes, of thse two Cezins, Palmerin  
and Frisoll, with the strange adventures they haue ant-  
ched in their youth: promise greater matters in their fol-  
lowing years. Then an ancient Knight of Hungaria,  
who was named Apolonio, said to the Emperour, how in  
time past he had been Page to the Father of Tarisius, by  
which meane he knew Nerides right well if he might see  
him. And if he be yet living, quoth he, in regard of his ma-  
nifold princely vertues: the Realme of Hungaria needs  
no better Gouverner, noz will the people themselves mis-  
like of so good a change. Wherefore may it so stand with  
your Highnes pleasure, to grant me company beseeching  
the cause, I will do my duty in the search of him, and bring  
him hither with me to the Court. Willingly the Emperour  
consented thereto, and the other tolde the Prince Flor-  
endos, that Cardina with her Brother and other Gentle-  
men, shold goe to the Mountaine of Olives, and enquire  
for Gerard, Palmerins Foster-father, Marcella his wife,  
and Dyosena their Daughter. Palmerin seeing all things

so

soft

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

soxt to so god end, falling on his knee before the Emperour and his Father, said. Seeing it hath pleased God, to make me knowne for your Sonne, I will not conceal a matter from you, which concerneth me very niderely: and although it be of great importance, yet will I not further proceede without your aduise. So discoured he all his seuerall apparitions, while he continued with his supposed Father, wherby he was prouoked to goe seeke the Lady, who by fatall destiny was promised him: nor did he hide his troubles in her search, but therewith bewrayed that her name was Polynarda, Daughter to the Emperour of Almaine, and his wife by solemnis boves passed betwene them. He declared moreover, how he travelled to find the Prince Tryneus, whom he lost on the Sea with the Princesses of England, and them he would recure againe, in respect of his fauful promise to his Lady. Notwithstanding, quoth he, if you thinke it convenient, I would gladly send to aduertise the Emperour and my Lady his Daughter, of my present good sorte, that his Majestie may confirme our private agreement: because I doubt the Prince of Fraunce, whose Ambassadours haue beene there to conferre on the matter, may otherwise preuent me of mine onely choyse. In like manner, if Nerides shall be soone, to be made King of Hungaria, and the Princess Armida to be bestowed in marriage on Sir Fry soll, who is such a Knight in my judgement, as well deserves one of the chiefe<sup>e</sup> Ladies in the world.

So God helpe me my Sonne, quoth the Emperour, no reason were it to disappoint what thou hast so well contrived: for seeing things haue beene so appointed by fortune, wch's folly it is for men to contrary them. And because I haue heretofore heard, that the Emperours Daughter is the fower and choyse Lady among all other, whose vertues challenge the man beyond compare in Chivalry: I will send mine Ambassadours to the Emperour, as well

so

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART 2.

for the perfection of the mariage, as to comfort her in her despatres, with certaine assurance of our health and welfare, and so shall your intended travell not be hindered. But notwithstanding, before you begin your journey, you shall receiue the homage of all Princes and Lords of Greece, as their liege Lord and supreme Gouvernour: which being done, I will likewise take order for my Nephew Fry soll, so soone as his Father shall come to our Court. Then calling for the Master of his horse, commandement was given for speedy dispatch of messengers to all parts. So leauing the Emperour busied in these affaires: Florendos and Palmerin went to the Drunes, who causing them to sit downe by her, after she had very gracio. ly welcommned them, said.

I pray ye tell me, which of vs thare is most beholding to Fortuno: the Father, the Mother or the Son? Doubtlesse, who so considereth the condition of our adventure, will finde it such, as seldom hath the like beene seene heretofore. And in sooth my Lord Florendos, the gretous tormentes I haue endured since the losse of my Sonne, and my great disloyalty towards you by breach of my promise: I judge may be equalled with the burthen of mine offence. Neverthelesse, if you excuse not your selfe satisfied, let your noble regard excuse what Nature hath perfected, which is, to endure much more then as yet we haue done. Madamie, answered Florendos, in time of joy, remember not our past misfortunes, but thinke what now is done, our happy Carres haue graciously furthered and limited to this end, that my loyalty, with the bounty and professe of our Son, would be laid open to every judgement. Here had the Prince occasion to rehearse his afflictions in loue, endured twenty yeres space and more for her sake, which Palmerin hearing, either fearing to offend them, or induced by modest bashfulness, he went to his Sister the Princess Armida, whose thoughts he sounded by such subtillties and dissimula-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

dissimulations, as he found the effect of her desires, which was to enjoy Sir Frisoll to her Husband. He not a little contented herewith, confirmed her chiose to be commendable, sealing the assurance thereto, with an honourable report of his knightly deeds of Armes. Then the Empereur called for the Duke of Mecœna, and the County of Reifort, as also his principall Secretary, whom he commanded to write to the Empereur of Almaigne, touching the Marriage of the Princesse Polinarda and his Sonne Palmerin, shewing by the secret agreement betwene themselves, and committed the rest to the discretion of the Ambassadores.

The Letters sealed with his great signet, was delivered to them that had the charge of this Message: who could not so speedily depart from Constantinople, because the Wind and weather was not navigable. Now had Palmerin promised Frisoll, that he would speak to the Princesse his Sister, and solemnly resolve upon their Marriage: wherefore (meeting with this earnest Lover) he thus laboured to please him. Unto me Cosen, I have so surely imprinted your especiall generosity in my Sisters minde, as the Characters can never be defaced: but remain moze persisteant by your speedy Marriage. Frisoll rebuked with these names, as all pretenders of lobs may well imagine: offered to kill his hand, which Palmerin would not suffer, whereupon he thus proceeded. Ah my Lord, how am I moze and moze indebted to you: right wise was he which said, that affability and liberality, are continuall companions with Noblenesse and Magnanimitie. And though by all my services I cannot deserve the honour you do me in accepting me for your brother: yet am I so faithfully beloved yours, as the honours of my Father, nor love of the Princesse your Sister, can separate me from your company, till you have found your long desired Friend Trienus. And for this cause my Lord, I earnestly intreat you, to ha-

ve

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Den Apolonio towards my Father, for I will send him to the place, where he shall be assured to find him. Palmerin accordeed thereto immediatly, and so labored with the Empereur, as the Letters were delivered: and the oathes taken of all the Hungarians, they were sent home into their Country, with a Lieutenant appointed to gouerne them untill the coming of Nerides, to whom Frisoll wrote the truth of all his fortune, with earnest request of his speedy presence.

And to induce him to the greater hast, he seigned that many Princes laboured for the Crowne of Hungaria, and were in likelihood to obtaine it: all which was but to enjoy the faire Princesse Armida. The same day Florendon sent to the King his Father at Macedon, that he should send the chiefeates of this Realme against the day that Palmerin shold be sworne the Prince of Grece.

## CHAP. XXXIV.

How Cardina the Gentlewoman attending on the Queen, accompanied with her Brother and diuers other Squires, brought Gerrard, his wife and daughter to the Court, and what entertainment Palmerin made them.



Ardyna, with those that were commanded to kepe her company, in whose time came to Gerrards house, whom he found sitting at dinner with his familie. The good man was at first amazed, seeing such courtly personages enter his house, a matter esteemed rare among the persons dwelling on the Mountain: but seeing they came in decent and modest Array, not proffering any discourse, he entertained the very friends,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

le, when Cardyna taking him by the hand, said. Good Father, are you the man that is called Gerrard? I am the same, quoth he, gentle Mistresse. You are then the man, answered Cardyna, that I seeke, and thereforee I pray the tell me what thou didst with a Child, that twenty yeres and moze stace, thou soundest in swadling clothes vnder a Palme Tree on this Mountaine: for certaine I am that thou didst take him houie with the to the house? Ah Mistresse, quoth the good old Man, you haue kild my hart in remembryng me of him, whom I loued dexter than any of mine owne. The infant whereof you speake, I found not farre hence vnder a Palme Tree, for which cause at his Baptisme I named him Palmerin. From that time forward I nourished him as he had bene mine owne Sonne, till he came to full stature, and as he grew in yeres, so did he in vertuous and noble qualites, which made him not a little beloved in these parts: for when he attended my castell, he tooke pleasure to course the Wolfe, Hart, Bears, Boars, and Lyon, and oftentimes would kill them when bluslisted, which none of mine owne Children durst at any time adventure.

Ah sweete Mistresse, when I remember his many seruices, the fullall reverence and loue he bare me: I am ready to dye with conceit of grieve, that it was my ill hap to come to lose him. Yet comes not this misfortune alone, for mine eldest Sonne, who loued him as he had bene his owne Brother: immediatly went after him, and yet could I never heare any tidings of them. Notwithstanding, Mistresse, if you know of whence he was, I can shew you all the clothes wherin I found him. I shall be contented to see them, quoth Cardyna; but what will ye give the party that can tell ye where he is? Gerrard, at these words fell on his knee before her, and with the teares trickling downe his gray beard, said. Be my teeth Mistresse, if it shall like you to do me so great a pleasure, of all my substance, I will

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

gives ye the one halfe: of all my herd of Beastes, which ye saw steding on the Mountaines as ye came, beside my continual seruice while I lye. Gramercies Father, said Cardyna, but call to your wife and Daughter, and then shall I tell ye newes that will content you. As for him, whose stately Parents you were so long time, he is now at Constantinople, & is the Sonne of Madame Criana Daughter to the Emperour: who commandeth you thereto come to the Court, that he may content ye so nourishing so well the noble young Prince. The old man exceeding joyfull, without ordering his attalles, or appointing his Servants their course of labour: sayd to his wife and Dyosena his Daughter.

Make ye ready presently in your best garments, and let vs goo see that noble Gentleman: for all the gold in the world cannot make me stay, now I haue heard so happy tidings. The good woman and her daughter trickt vp themselves in their Country types, and taking the rich swadling clothes, set forward to Constantinople so merrily, as sometime did the foster Father of Paris, Alexander, his wife, and their Daughter Pegasus, when they brought the Cradle and acoustrements of the infant royall, to the City of Troy, after he was known by his Father King Priam, and Queen Hecuba his Mother.

Palmerin being aduertised by one of the Ladies of honор attending on the Empresse, that Cardyna had brought Gerrard: to psonke greater contention, he would needes gooみて him, and so went downe into the Court, accompaned with many yong Knights lately come to the Emperours seruice. Gerrard seeing this godly troupe, among them all knew Palmerin percully, wherefore alighting from his Horse: and without glutting him in charge to any Page or Lacky, ran and fell downe at his feet, but Palmerin staying him in his armes, said. Father Gerrard and my deere friend, the God of Heauen be emeroye praised, in

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

that by bringing me to the knowledge of my parents : I haue the meane to satisfy your paine and trauaile for me, sauing my life in my yongest yeres, and nourishing me to the state of discretion.

Ah my Lord, quoth Gerard, I thinke in all the world is no man so happy as myself, having descended from perill so noble a person, therfore needes it is to make offer of money for your nurture ; in that I prize your golde and siluer losse then droffe, such is my content to see you so well. Palmerin likewise, whose match might not be found in courtesie and nobility of hart : lovingly welcommcd Marcella and her Daughter Dyosena, walking along with them vp into the Pallace, wheres in this sort he presented them to the Emperour. Be here my good Lord, they that from mine infancy, with exceeding kindness and loue nourished me : let me therfore intreate your majesty so to conceiu of them, as their paines and charges may be sufficiantly repaid. The Emperour taking great pleasure to behold them, said they shold continue in the Court with him, commanding them to be brought to his Daughters Chamber, who entertained them very graciously : but when they came to unsold Palmerins little pack of clothes, hardly can you imagine the inward joyes of the Mother. For Tolomestra well knew the Scarlet mantle, which her selfe had all embayded with certeins knots of Gold, and all the other pretty trinkets, saying. Doubtlesse Madame, it cannot be but that Palmerin is your Sonne : for well I know he was wrapped in these clothes, when Cardyna carried him hence to the Mountaine. Then did Gerard discourse before all the Ladies, in what manner he found yong Palmerin among the Trees : not forgetting to report every thing, from that day till his departure without his knowledge.

Many sweete smiles did the Daunes intermingl with her forced teares, hearing the sondy bangers her Sonne.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

had endured : and for the great loue she bare to Marcella, she made her one of the Ladies of her Chamber, and gaue Dyosena a worthy dowerie to her mariage. As soz Gerard himselfe, the Emperour made him one of his chiefe & Barons, and dubbed his Sonnes Knights, who proued afterward of hardy courage, as hereafter in the History you may perceiue. This done, the Emperour brought Florendos and Palmerin into his Treasury, saying. My Friends, take, beare away, all is yours, dispose thereof as you please, furnish your selues with all needfull things against the day of my Daughters marriage. Give boantifully to the poore Knights, that they may likewise prepare themselves inreadines, all which will rebound to your perpetuall honour.

In sooth my Lord, answered Florendos, it is against all equity and reason, that during your life I shold presume so farre : well worthy were I of the sharpest reprehension, to usurpe that, which by right appertaines to him who gaue me life and honour. When the Emparour saw he could not perswade them, he sent a sumpter Horsle loden with Gold, to the Prince Olorico and Frisoll : beside divers other Jewels of inestimable value, that they might the better furnish their estate against the solemnite of the Macedonian Prince. On which day, these two Knights determincd a Triumph at Armes soz the loue of their friend and companion Palmerin, who the same day shold be sworne Prince, and sole heire to the Empire. Upon this occasion, and by his highnes commandement, the Herolds were sent abroad to publish the Tourney, which shold endure tenne dayes together : with the excellency of the prize to them, that shold bear the hono: of the Joust each day. These disports so provoked the Lords of Grecce, as neither King, Duke, Count, Baron or Knight, that was able to manage Horsle and Armes, but repaired to Constantinople, in such troupes, as though a new world had been to be conquered.

CHAP. XXXV.

How the Knight that *Florendos* sent to Macedon, referred to the King *Primaleon* the effect of his charge: and how *Palmerin* entertained his Fathers Princes and Knights.



Lorédos having set one of his Knights to Macedon, in very short time the Messenger arrived at a Castle of pleasure, where as then the King remained for his delight, with the Princeesse Arimena his Daughter, to expell such contagious thoughts as daily troubled them, for the absence of the Prince, of whom they could understande no tidings. The Knight being come into the Kings Chamber, where his Majestie satte bawling with his Daughter: and setting his knee to the ground, in this manner began his message. Right high and mighty King, I bring you the very strangest tidings, yet replete with joy and speciaall comfort, whereof your Majestie never heard the like. My Lord the Prince Florendos your Sonne, with humble duty saluteth your excellency, and the faire Princeesse Arimena his Sister, certifying you, that the aduenturous Knight Sir Palmerin, euen he by whose meanes your health was recovered: is his owne Son, begotten on the Princeesse Criana, Daughter to my Lord the Emperour, to whom he is now betrothed, by the consent of all the Princes of the Empire, and Sir Palmerin your Sonne shall be Emperour, after the decease of his noble Grandfather. The good King Primaleon old and decrepiti, was so surprised with these newes, as he imagined he heard some fantastical illuding voice, rather then matter of truth and certainty: with which inward

ward opposition of conceit, his weake estate unable to support it selfe, being ouercome with joy, doubt and suspition, as hardly could Arimena his Daughter keepe life in him, so often he swooned with hearing this reporte, yet at length taking the Knight by the hand, he said. My god Friend, God I trust will blisse thoe with honor and prosperity, for bringing me the tidings I haue long desired. Now may I well say, that never any Princes age was moze beautified with happiness, then minetis, hauing my Sonne allied in such an house, and another Sonne exceeding all the Knights in the world. But if the Heauens vouchsafe me so much grace and fauour, that I may once see him before I end this life: It will be such sufficient content to me, as then I force not though I liue no longer. Then calling for one of his Secretaries, to reade the Letters his Son had sent him, and hauing heard the contents thereof: commanded present dispatch of Messengers, to aduertise the Lords and nobilitie of his Realme, who likewise were so glad of these newes, as each one prepared himselfe against the day appointed. The King hauling written Letters to his Sonne, as also to Palmerin, whom he intreated to come and see him: gaue them to the Messenger, and withall such an honorabile gift for his paynes, as well might content a greater personage. He returning to Constantinople, effectually discharged his answer: and Palmerin reading his Grandfathers Letters, vowed to fulfil his request, and afterward to follow the search of Tilius.

Now the day being come, when the Lords of Macedon shold set forward to Constantinople: they came to take their leaue of the King, who beganne to them in this manner. Ab my god Friends, God is my witnes, with what god will I would bearre you company, if my aged yeres did not forbid me: nevertheless, let me desire you to behaue your selues in such sort, as if I were in person with

## The History of Palmerin D'Olivet.

re, and honor Prince Palmerin no less then myselfe. So creating the Duke of Pontus his Lieutenant in this Embassage, because he was a brave and comely young Prince, b[ea]ng reache[n]d them to happy fortune in their journey, commanding a Knight to passe before them, that Palmerin might be first aduertised of their comming. On the same day as they should arraine at the City, Palmerin accompanied with the young King of Sparta, the most subtil and sagacious Prince of his time, (as well instructed in the maners and conditions of the auncient Kings his predecessors, especially imitating cautious Vlisses) and divers other young Princes and Knights, rode to meet the Lords of Macedon at the Gates of the City. There alighted all the Lords to kisse his hand, which he would not permit them to doe: but casting himselfe likewise from his Horse, embrased them all one after another. And mounting on horsebacke againe, entred the City which was so plentifull stroyed with Knights and Gentlemen against the triumph, as the Prince Olorico and Frisoll were appointed by the Emperour, to see the Lords lodged according to their estate, and to erect Tents and Pavillions without the City, where the rest of their traine might be decently entertained.

This chiose made the Emperour of these twaine in this matter, because in all his Court were not two more courteous Princes: beside, they were the only men in the world so affable and gracious entertaining Strangers. All this busines ended, and Palmerin devising with the Queen his Mother, Frisoll being in his company, saw her enter the chamber, to whom he had vowed his seruiciable druitons: wherefore seining some occasion at the window where the Princes stood, he went and stood by her a pretty while, and at length entred into these speches. Madame as yet in all my life I never requested any thing of a Lord, and now would I gladly moue one sute to you, (as

## Emperour of Constan[n]tynople. PART.2.

to her that is the only Princesse of my heart) if I should not seeme over-bold in this petition: assuring you, that having obtainid this favour of you, you shall not command any thing, how difficult soever it be, but I will gladly enterprize it for your sake. Belove me, Sir Frisoll, answered the Princesse, you speake but reason, demand then what you please, and you shall obtaine it: because I hold this opinion of you, that you will not request any thing, that shall in ought be prejudicall to mine hono[r]. A thousand thanks good Madam, said Frisoll, this houre (I hope) hath boorded me good fortune, and this is my request: that you would so much honour me, as to permit me enter the Turney vnder the name of your Knight, because I wulo enterprise nothing but by your commandement. And this (in my judgment) is such an especiall favour, as I durst not presume to sollicite y. a. without, without the grant my Lord sent Brother Palmerin made me: with this addition, (that according to my deserts in the Turney (if you can so fancy) to accept me as your Lord and Husband. With these words the Princesse was touched to the quicke, in that her desires were that way adduced: and her colour changing with her private concit, she shadowed so artificially as she could, and with words searesfull and trembling, thus answered.

In sooth my Lord, as her was I moved with any such sute heretofore, but my Brother may so farre command me, as what like[n] him I would be loth to gainsay. As for your demand, to enter the Field vnder the name of my Knight, with right good will I grant it: assuring you thereof with this Jewell, which h[er]celforth so please you to weare, shall remaine as token of my love to you. So taking a goodly Emerald from her finger, killing it, with great curtesie gave it him. Now am I sure Madam, quoth Frisoll, to have part of the prize, seeing I shall adventure in your service: nor is this Ring of so little value, but when in the

Combat

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Combat I shall behold it, my forces will be redoubled, and never enter my fainting spirit. Whichever I dare say, that never did the King et Giges bring him more honour, then this will to me: for that could not profit or advantage him, but onely by being invisible. On the contrary, I haue no pleasure but in your presence: ney shall I think my selfe at better ease, then when among Lances and Swords I may labouir for your love. Then entred the Empresse, with other Ladies newly come to the Court to see the Jousts: which brake off their talkes, wherefore taking leave of each other, they departed the Chamber.

## CHAP. XXXVI.

How the Duke of Mecena and the Countie of Reisort, arrived in Almaigne at the Emperours Court, and after their Ambassage dispatched: the Imperour sent backe with them to Constantinople, the Duke of Lorraine, and the Marquess of Licena, as his Ambassadors.



Now is the day come, when the Fleet appointed for the Embassage to Almaigne, shalld depart, wherefore being furnished with all things necessary for their voyage, the Wind and Sea like the very serviceable: they came to advertise Palmerin therof, to know if he woulde command them any further service.

Palmerin walked with them to the Haben, and by the way givē a Letter to the Duke of Mecena, saying. Worthy Duke, present my humble dutys to my Lady Polinarda and give her this Letter, whereof I pray you bring me an answer. And plased God that I might go with ye, never

could

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

sould any voyage better please me: therfore let me intreate your returne so soon as possible may be. The Duke promised to accomplish his desire, and taking leue of each other, they went aboard, where hoysing their sailes, with a merrie wind away they went, and attured in Almaigne sooner then suspected. When they were come on shore, they sent a knight before to the Emperour, that he might be acquainted with their coming: yet could not his Majestie spy vns marquise at this Ambassage, because in all his time he never had the like, and therfore thought this strange occasion woulde sorte to no strange end. At length, to doe them the greater honour, he sent all his Knights and Gentlemen to receve them, who conducted the Duke of Mecena and the County of Reisort to the Pallece, and afterward to the presence of the Emperour. When the Duke entered the Chamber, he saluted his Majestie with great reverence, yet not kissing his hand, because he came from as great a Rāte as he was: afterward he beganne in this manner.

Right and redoubted Monarch of Almaigne, the most high and excellent Emperour of Constantinople my Master, Understanding the losse of your Bonne Tryneus, grēteth you with heath and continual happiness. Giuing you to understand, that within these few daies such god fortune hath besallen hym, as in all his life time he never had the like. And albeit in his last waire with the Turkes and Moyses, he lost both Sonnes, Perpheles, and many great Lords of his kindred, and since that time hath borne troubled, with the hard hap of his Daughter Griana Queen of Hungary, and the sudaine death of her husband the King: yet hath his Majestie changed all these gretches into joy by knyghte of the good Knight Sir Palmerin, whose renowne liues as well in Heathenelle as in Christendom, being now found Bonne to my Lord the Emperour, and therfore created sole kyze to the Empire. And the noble

Prince

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva

Prince Palmerin on his behalfe, humbly saluteth your im-  
perial Majestie, being the Lord to whom he is most affec-  
ted in service, so that to finde out your Sonne Tryneus and  
the faire Agriola Daughter to the King of England, whom  
two yeares since and moxe he lost in the East leas: he aban-  
doned all hopeable preferments, untill his crabb shall be  
finisched, and he hath brought him hither before your High-  
nes. And having already searched in many Kingdomes, at  
length he knowe too that they were living and in health, al-  
so that himself shold in the end recover them: he thought it  
necessary to acquaint you herewith, because he doubted of  
your extream sorrow and heavinesse. The Emperour al-  
most to heare the good fortune of Palmerin, as also the losse  
of his Sonne Tryneus, could not subdue his passions, whiche  
moved the teares to rynke downe his cheekes, with con-  
cert of joy and griefe together: yet shadowing his alterati-  
on so well as he could, thus replyed. In trouth my Lord  
Ambassador, I always imagined by Palmerins woxly  
actions, that he was descended of noble & regall lineage, and  
greatly it contenteth me, that he so happily hath sound  
the house of his descent: expelling altogether (considering  
his promise and pswesse) what hath been long imprinted  
in my heart, concerning the losse of my Sonne Tryneus. For  
so favourable are the Heavens to Palmerin in all his enter-  
prises and admirable aduentures: as one may imagin, that  
Dods of heauen and account are reserved only for him, chie-  
ly the recovery of my Sonne, which I hope he will effectu-  
ally bring to passe. And truthe me, not without great and  
sufficient reason, both the Emperour your Master reporteth  
himselfe happy: his only good fortune being of soþe en-  
ough to discharge his minde of all sorowes and cares, that  
former occasions misched him withall. Now know I how to  
recompence his princely kindness, honouring me with so  
good and happy things: but that it may please him to ac-  
cept of me hereafter, as his loving Brother and faithfull  
Friend.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Friend. No other thing my Lord (quoth the Duke) doth  
his Majestie deale, and to begin this amity and alliance  
betweene you, he requesteth, that if his Sonne Palmerin  
hath hereofe founy such favour in your eyes, you would  
now confirme it, by giuing him to wife the Princesse Po-  
lynarda your Daughter, whom he will not marry, untill he  
hath brought home your Sonne Tryneus. As soþ the other  
condicions of the marriage, these letters shall certifie you:  
so killing them, he deliuereþ them with very great reue-  
rence.

And her shall he haue with right good will, said the  
Emperour, for a sicker Husband can we not haue: I think  
likewise her selfe will conent thereto, for the good opinion  
she had of him while he remained in our Court. And be-  
cause I will not displease the King of France, who in like  
manner requested her for his Sonne and heire: I will con-  
serue with the estates of the Empire, and then deliuere you  
certaine answere. So the Ambassadors withdraw themselves  
to their lodgings, and the Emperour caused the Let-  
ters to be read before all his Princes and Lords, who  
could no way mislike of this mariage; and therefore great  
joy was made through the Empire, in hope the Prince  
Tryneus shold soon be recovered. These joyfull newes  
soon spreading through the Court, at length were brought  
to the Princesse Polynarda in her Chamber: who neþt a-  
ble to conceale her sudden joy, ranne to Brionella, saying.  
Sweete Friend, now maþt thou resoyce with me, in that  
our loves are now attaiued vs, whereas besyþ we vtterly  
despaied. Ah my Brionella, Heaven hath now confirmed  
our fortunate successe, in that my Palmerin is fympt to bee  
the Emperors Sonne of Constantinople: whereof he hath  
certified my Lord and Father by his Embassay, and how  
Palmerin hath heard tyding of my W<sup>e</sup>l<sup>e</sup> Tryneus,  
whom shortly he will bring home again, yet not the Lent  
þe Ptolomie I hepe. Therelze (my enely copartner in

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliver

lour and fears) let us abandoun all griece and sorrow, which greatly may prejudice our health and welfare : and now dispose our selves to a contented resolution of life, attending our long desired fortune. God graunt it may be so, quoth Bryonella, yet my minds persuades me, that we shall not see them so stane as you wene. The Emperour having conferred with the Lords of Allemaigne, who very well allowed the marriage of his daughter with Palmerin: determined to send to the Emperour of Constantinople Ambassadors, to perfect confirmation of the marriage. And by generall consent, the Duke of Lorrain and the Marquess of Licens, were chosen for this present Embassage. Which being done, the Emperour went to the Empress Chamber, and sent for his daughter Polynarda, who was so joyfull of these happy newes, as she shold scartime, glas how to dissemble her content, when she shold come in her Fathers presence, yet shadowing it from any open suspect, after she had saluted her Father with great reverence, the Emperour thus spake.

Daughter, you have hitherto refus'd so many noble fers, as hardly can I permit to moue you with any other: yet once more will I try you againe, in hope you will stand upon no moe refusals, but soone with me in opinion, as beyond all other best beheming you. The man of whom I speake, is noble Palmerin, of whose honorabile behaviour you have some knowledge: and for no other cause hath the Emperour sent his Ambassadors, advise your selfe then to haue you a swer, so all our rightfull allow the match, and thereto haue generally subscribed their consent. The Princess covering her fulbred joy with mode & bashfutnes, thus answe red.

If heretofore my god Lord, I excused my obeysance to your commandement, especially for taking a husband, it was only for the promise I made to my Brother Trynous: but now, seeing it is your pleasure, and the good king

## Emperour of Constantiopole. PART. 2

king of all the estates, as also that the mariage shall not be solemnized till my Brothers presence: I will not disobey your command, assuring your Majestie, that moe content am I to match with him, then any other you named heretofore. And this on speciall cause, that he laboureth to bring home my noble Brother, which Heaven graunt he may: otherwise can I not marry, without very great impeach to it the honour.

The Emperour well perceiv'd by the grace of her answer, and her countenance note nothing sad or melancholly: that she was nothing offend'd with this wosten, wherfore he said. Happy may I count my self faire daughter, that among all the Christian Princes you haue chosen such a Husband: wherefore appelle your selfe to morrow in the best swit you may, so then shall my Lords the Ambassadors see you. So departed the Princess to her Chamber, and no moe speeches were vs'd till the next day, when the Emperour sent for the Ambassadors of Constantinople, and in the presence of the principall estate of the Empire, ratified the mariage betwix Palmerin & his daughter. And for further confirmation thereof, promised to send his owne Ambassadors with them, to settle (on his behalfs) the Emperour, Florados and Palmerin. For which exceeding gentlenes, the Duke of Mecena (in the Emperours name) thanked his Majestie, earnestly intreating him to dispatch them thence so soone as might be, because their charge was to returne with all possible sped. This resolution absolutely set downe, the Emperour (for the greater hono) caused them to dine with him at his eten Table, & grace being said by the Lord Almoner, the Duke of Mecena desir'd his Majestie, that he might see the Princess Polynarda: whercol he made promise so soone as dinner was done, when taking the Duke of Mecena, by the one hand, and the Count of Reilout by the other brought hym to the Empress Chamber, where they sound

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

the Princes in such sumptuous ornaments, and accompanied with such rare grace and exquisite beauty, as they judged her rather an Angell then any earthly creature. And greatly was the Duke abashed at such a singular spectacle, not knowing how to frame his opinions: but having humbly saluted the Empresse, came to the Princesse, and on his knee reverently kiss her hand, with these speeches. Let it not displease you faire Madam, that I doe this honorable duty to you: so I doe it in this respect, as to the gracious Lady and Empresse ( hereafter ) of Constantinople.

By this meanes he secretly conuerted Palmerins Letter into her hand, so which the Princesse gave him many devout thankes, which were coupled with such maiesticall gestures, as neither by Nero or Galba were done the like, no not by Constantine himselfe to the Pope. And the Dukes words had rased a sweete blush in her cheeke, yet could he with such choyse answers excuse the same, as gave greater countenance to all her behaviour. Then turned the Duke to the Emperour, and smiling, said. Trust me my Lord, now doe I verilz helpe what hath heretofore been told me of the Prince Palmerin, that he is an speciall Judge of the beauty of Ladies, so in mine opinion he hath chosen one without a second: and of her may truly be affirmed, what the Poets described of Helena, terming her the Goddess of beauty. With this rare Princesse to be matched an Husband so famous, well may be laid: the couple to be without compare, so the faire forzoid Paris may not be equalled with Palmerin. So the Ambassadors departing, the Princesse withdrew her selfe to her Chamber, where reading her Friends Letter, her joyes and pleasures redoubled, because she might now boldy credit her fortune.

And before she would forget the inuention her spirit offered, she presently wrote an answer: earnestly increas-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

ing him to hasten his return, to abuentate her languishing delasses, which now made her life but a shadow of death. Having close sealed her Letter, she sent it to the Duke by one of her most trauie Ladies, with divers other rich gifts and presents. The Duke of Lorrain and his company ready, departed thence with the Ambassadors, and wind and weather serving so well, they arrived at Constantinople the day before Florendos his Apptals. Hemes being brought hereto to the Court, Palmerin accompanied with many Princes and Knights, went to the Haven, and at the Landing of the Ambassadors, Palmerin embrased the Duke of Lorraine, and the Sparquello of Licena: and so ryding to the Pallace, beguiled the time with divers discourses, whereamong, the Duke of Lorraigne thus spake. Sir Palmerin, I alwayes did imagine, that those strange aduentures attchived by you, during the obscurity of your younger years, would in the end rebeale your honourable parentage, and make your name so veray famous: and were the Prince Trineus with you now, on the very best condition in the world would I not leave your company. Gentle Duke, answered Palmerin, if I did not perforce my selfe, how greatly I shoulde comfort your mind, by recollecting your Prince Trineus, I shoulde account my life so unhappy, as presently I wold desire my death. God grants (quoth the Duke) that you may finde him againe, so that will be the greatest good that euer came to our Empire: considering the vertues, magnanimitie and speciall Chivalrie, whiche is as currant in our young Prince as in any other. And thus they spent the time till they came to the Pallace, where the Duke of Lorraine after he had saluted the Emperour and the Princes, delivred the Message committed to his charge. Wherewith Palmerin was not a little pleased, considering what he had read in his Ladies Letter, which discovered the sorowes she endured for his absence: but being assured of her armes loyalty, as also that

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

He was now promised him in mariage, his cares were the less, commanding the Duke to be lodged nere his owne Chamber, that he might the better conser with him of his spylcrele, whom he loued as vere as his owne life.

### C H A P. X X X V I I .

How after the Prince Florendos and Queene Criana were espoused together, Palmerin was sworne Prince and heire of Greece and Macedon, by the consent of the Lords of the Empire and the Reelme.



Ye Ambassabours of Almaine being now come, the Emperour was aduertised therof, and considering that the Princes of Thrace and Macedon had expected their presence soz the space of sixtates: it was appoyneted, that on the morrow the Prince Florendos and Criana shold be maried. And the day being come of this long desired wedding, she was clothed in such rich and costly vesture, as though she had borne still a Wyxgin. And here to set downe the sumptuous vesture of her, her Husband, the Emperor, the Empesse, with diuers other Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, also the solemnities and ceremonies, both at the Church and at the Pallace: would waste a great deale of time in vaine, and without any pleasure or profit to the Readers, and therefore I will let it passe under your conceit, and speake of such things as are most needfull.

After that the Prince Florendos and Criana were espoused by the Patriarch of Constantinople, the whole traine returned to the Pallace, where before the Gate was created a goodly Theater, hanged round about with cloth of Golds, and therin wers set many Chayres and Cana-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

bles of estate. There was the Prince Palmerin placed in the chaldest seat, the Emperour and Florendos on the one side, and the Empresse and Criana on the other: then was Palmerin sworne Prince of Greece, with all the observations in such causes accustomed, by all the Lords of the Empire, from the Emperour himselfe to the very meanest Gentleman. In like sort did the Estates of Macedon, his Father Florendos first beginning, the Duke of Pontus next, and in the selue same order as the Imperialites had done. This done, the Tables were covered, and all the Princes placed according to their dignities: the Emperour and Empesse at the chaldest, the new married couple at the second, and the Prince Palmerin at the third: so consequently the Kings, Princes, Dukes, Marquesses, Countes, and all the rest in order. As for the magnificence of y service, the royall order observed, the Extrumpthes, Pomeries, Pasques, and Dauncing: would but all payer with nedolesse reportes, in that your judgements can conceive therof sufficently. But the Tables being withdrawne, the noble Gallants went and Armed themselves, and entred the field which was appointed without the City, and furnished with Scaffolds and standings soz the Lords and Ladies, where the afternoon was spent bravely at Tilt and Tourney, with dainty chivalry performed by Fryfoll, Olorico, the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus & many other Knights. When night was come, and Supper ended, the Brides and Bridesgrome were honorably brought to their Chamber, and Florendos being alone with his Lady, thus beganne. Ah swete Madamie, how many sorries haue I endured, in expectation of this long desired yore: but having at length compassed my wish, I hold my self sufficently satisfied: giving credite to the ancient proverbe, I hat true love neuer wanteth his reward, and that which I thought wold have been my death, hath now returned me greatest honours and profit. In sooth my Lord, answered y Dame, I was

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

evermore perswaded of your loyalty : but where necessity ruleth, reason bath no place. And if by the exerterour action I have bens disloyall to you : yet my harte, which is of all I gane to you, never diminished in will to lione you firmely. For which Tarisius very often reproched me, notwithstanding in the end, and by the sufferance of God I thinke, he received the reward, that the surper of another mans right deserbeth. But why shold we (my Lord) call now to me: many things past, & remember matters which bjaue nothing but heabinelle: it is soz you to excuse me, and soz my selfe to lobe and honour you. All the points of theys former Dibozie debated betwene them, to such effectes theys pleasures, sorted in the end, as that night he conceyved with a daughter, which proved to be beyond all other in beauty.

On the morrow the Prince Palmerin entred the Lytto Mayall, because this day he desired to Joust. Before him went the chieffest Princes of Grecce on foot, and sixe Trumpets to make him way : he managing his Hoysle with such losy Voltages, as every one delighted to behold him.

Aftor he had done his reverence to the Emperour, he gane the spurras to his Hoysle to encounter Fry soll : But when they came to mecte, Fry soll threw by his Lance, and woulde not touch him. The like did the Prince Olorico, and divers other Knights: whereat Palmerin somewhat angry, drok his Lance into the ground, and bjaue it, and cauffug himselfe to be unarmid, went up to the Emperour in his stanting to see the passime of the other Knights : and he was no sooner come, but the Emperour thus spake unto him.

We not offendid my Sonne, because you have unarmid your selfe without tryall of the Joust: soz the Knights have down as well belovid them, not to aduenture on their Lord and Master. But if you would so faine have som spozie with them, you must hereafter disguise your selfe from being known: otherwise I see you shall but loose your labours. When Palmerin heard these words, to the end he might somewhat

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

somewhat delight the Emperour and the Ladys, especially, such as never saw his behaviour in Chivalry : he was determined the last day of the Tryumphs, to come suddenly among them, and to be armid in such sort as none shoud knowes him. In biuse, now is the last day come, and the Emperour wardening that Palmerin would enter the Lystes disguised, went to his Rarding, and Palmerin secretly entring his Chamber, found there a white Armour, such as the yong Knights was accustomed to weare, which his Warden had there provided for him : Armed himselfe presently therewith, and mounted on a Hoysle of the same colour, entred the Field on the Assalants side, because he had heard, that this day the King of Sparta would encounter the Duke of Pontus, Fry soll, Olorico, and others of the most gentle Knights in the company. The Emperour knew Palmerin among all the rest, and said to Florendos: What thinke you (Sonne) of the white Knight? Do you know him? No my Lord, (quoth the Prince) I know not what he is: but me thought he entred with a folly countenance: It now remaines to know what he can doo.

At the encounter, Palmerin unhoysed the Prince Olorico, afterward the Duke of Pontus, and five other Knights afterward: then having broken his Lance, the Emperour sent him another by a Squyre, willing him (for his sake) to employ it as he had done the other, but he woulde make no answer because he feared to be knowne. Now was Fry soll much offended at the Prince Oloricos misfortune, therfore he shoulde revenge his friends cause: but the King of Sparta esteemed a hardy & approued Knight, stopt between him, and being cast off from his Hoysle, was so hurt with the fall, as he was carried swarth of the Field to his Chamber.

When Fry soll gane the spurras to his Hoysle, and encountring Palmerin with such puissance, as he made him lose his Hyslops, and had he not caught fast hold about his Hoysle Necke, he had fallen to the ground: but Fry soll, his fortune was

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

was so bad, as his Horse Rumbling fell down, and his Master under him, whereupon the Emperour said to Florendos, that the Knight in white Armour was his Son Palmerin. In sooth my Lord (quoth the Prince) his fortune is good if it be he, and well may he be esteemed the worthiest in the company. The Duke of Lorraine hearing their talk, said.

Verbaile not my Lord that Prince Palmerin bath so good successe, for in Almaine have I seen him do much more then this, and so much, as my Lord the Emperour hath beene constrained to command them give over. Palmerin seeing himselfe Sparker of the Field, departed as secretly as he came thither, and so did the Emperour, Florendos, Griana, and all the other Ladies, among whom the young Princesse Arimida was most penitive, for her friends misfortune, so that by her countenance her inward affections might easily be discerned. But on the morrow, when Palmerin sent for all the Knights of name with whom he had Jousted, and every one knew that he wonne the prize of the last dayes Triumph: the joyre of the Princesse Arimida was converted into pleasure, reputing it an honour to her Knight to be vnhorsed by her Brother.

When the Emperour understood that Palmerin was jousting with the Knights; he came into the Hall, and taking him by the hand, merrily said. Here haere my Friends the White Knight, whom you all were so desirous to know, but if you finde your selves agreed with him, you must lay the blame on me, for I was the only cause of his enterprise, to the end that having made open proofe of himselfe, you all might witnessse his valour and bountie, who after my decease must be your Lord and Governor.

Now were all the Knights well contented againe, especially the Prince Olorico and Frisoll, who though he was

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

was somewhat bruised with his Horse falling on him, came and embraces Palmerin, saying. In sooth my Lord, the strength of your armes and Launce yesterday, hath given us good experiance of your vertue: yet our desire to revenge our compantons sorte was such, as had you bene our father we shold not have knowne you. It may be (said Palmerin) that ye made no reckoning of the Knight, who handled ye in this rough manner: or that you thought him not worthy to beate a Launce, because you refused to Joust with him the other day. A kinde slient (quoth Fry soll), perceiving how Palmerin jested) and quietely delivred, to this your recompence to the Knights that friendly spared you: If I had knowne so much before, I shold have cryed quittance with you before we parted. Whels moys Fry soll spake in such sort, as Palmerin imagined he was in choller: wherefore he thus answered. Good brother I pray you excuse me, if in doing my devoire I have offended ye: when you please I will doe penance for it, if it be but to please her, who cannot hide her good will towards you.

Whereupon all the three Friends embrased together, taking leave of each other till the next Mornynge, when a new Journey was begun againe, and continued for five dayes together: the hono: wherof (to make shoit) happened to Fry soll, until the last day, when a strange Knight came into the Field, and brought one with him resembling a Gyant in stature, who with a Turkish Bow and innumerable arrowes, slew and wounded very many. So that Palmerin seeing the spoyle of his Friends, was constrained to Arme himselfe, and desyng the Gyant, overcame both him and the Knight that brought him.

Some haue reported this Gyant to be a Monster, in forme of the Centaures, that encountered Hercules at the Paptals of Hippodania: but such ridiculous follies are not here to be inserted, and though the Spaniard in his History

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

No<sup>r</sup>e affirme it, yet carries it no likelyhood, wherefore leauing such impertinent discourses, let us proceed as occasion both leads vs.

### CHAP. XXXVIII.

How the aged Knight Apolonio, found Netrides Father to Frisoll, and brought him to Constantinople, where he was made Governour Generall of Hungaria: and how Frisoll espoused the Princesse Armida.



Polonio having received Frisols Letters, and a bytles direction for his journey, to the place where he shold finde his Father Netrides: he followed his intent with such diligence, as he came to the Castle where he remained, and found him sitting at the Gate, being newly returned from Hunting in the Forrest. So sooner had Apolonio seen him, but he presently knew him, wherefore feigning that he and his company were Knights errant: saluted him, and demanded if he would give them entertainment for that night, because they knew no place of lodging neare at hand. Netrides, who was ever of a most noble mind, welcomed them very curteously, commanding their Horses to the Stable, and themselves to be honorably feasted at Supper. All Supper done, Netrides very earnestly biewed Apolonio, persuading himselfe that he had seene him before: and Apolonio likewise well regarded Netrides, neyther daring to question with other for feare of misconceipt.

In the end, Apolonio shozowly resolved that this was the man he sought, and seeing two yong Gentlemen sitting at the Table by him, he thus began. I pray you Sir tell me, are these two Gentlemen your Sons? They are Sir, answe-

### Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

answered Netrides. Have you not one m<sup>r</sup> Je(qd. Apolonio) elder then these? Then Netrides remembred his Sennie Fryfoll, whom he judged to be dead because of his long absence: wherefore breathing forth a very great sigh, said. In trut<sup>r</sup> Sir, I know not whether I have or no, so it is long since I lost mine eldest Sonne by great misfortune, and hitherto heard no tydings of him, nor know I whether he is living or dead. By what mishap I pray you Sir (quoth Apolonio) did you loose him? Whereupon Netrides discoursed the whote circumstance, in selfe same manner as Fryfoll had reported: whereby he was now assured that Fryfoll was his Sonne, and so withoute dissembling any longer, said. I can resolue ye my Lord, that he is yet living, and in very god disposition. O my God (answ<sup>r</sup>ed Netrides) if these newes may be true, then am I the most happie Knight in the world. And so are you, said Apolonio, for he is living, recovered of the disease he had when he departed from you, and is now one of the most esteemed Knights in all Greece: so that having delivered the Queen Greana from Wilson, whiche victory he obtained in the company of noble Palmerin, against the two nephews of King Tacilius, he is found to be neare Minister to the Empresse. For which cause he hath sent, and I am expesly hither come, to bring you with me to Constantinople, to the end you may receive your owne by right, I meane the principall Regiment in the Realme of Hungaria. Ah heavens, answered Netrides, soever be your prases, in redressing the wrong my Brother did, when causid he banished me my Native Countrey: but that I may be resolved in one doubt, I my selfe will me, were ye not sometime of my Brother's Court? Yes truly answered Apolonio, and to your Father I served as a Page in his Chamber: now in respect of the manerly courtesies I received at your hands, soever I valued my selfe to doe you any service, desiring you with all possible sped to hasten your departure:

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

parture : for I greatly doubt we shall not else finde your Sonnes at the Court, because he determineth to journey with Palmerin in the search of Trineus, the Emperours Sonne of Almaigne.

Hereupon Netrides leaving the charge of his house to one of his Cozins, departed with his wife and his two Sonnes : making such spedie dispatch in their journey, as not in many daies after the Exequyph, they arrived at Constantinopole. Whiche when Fry soll vnder stood, he went to meete them : being accompanied (for the greater honor to his Parents) with Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and many other yong Princes. There were many salutations and welcomes, given with great joy by the Sonnes to his Father, Mother, and Wisthen, and by the Parents likewise to their Sonne, with such exceeding signes of loue, as you can better conceyue then I expresse. After all these courteous greetings, they went to the Court, where began a feli occasion of joy, betweene the Empresse and her neophyte Netrides : she then embracing him in her armes, thus spake.

Oh my noble Neophyte, how haue the Heavens blessed me with speciall labour, in sufferinge me before my death to see my chieff Friends, whome I was out of all hope to behelde againe : especially you, whose long absence from your Country, hath rather deluerted my imaginations of your death then life. Nevertheles, it is the p[ro]vidence of the highe God, that after al the troubles you suffered in your youth, you might receive the recompence in your age, by the knighthly hono[r] and bountie of your lineage. In sooth Ma-  
dame said Netrides, not so pleasant to me is high preferement, as that I live to see my Herme againe, for having contented myselfe in my little Castle, with a life free from  
solitude and soluarie, I did account it to exceed all other : but now seeing in my declining yeares, the God of Heaven hath thought good that I might profit his people, the  
theough

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

thought were base and abject in me to make refusall. So long were they debating on these and other matters, as the good night being given on all sides, the Emperour caused those new come friends to be conducted to their Lodgings.

But on the morrow, when Palmerin came to bid the Emperour god morrow, he thus began. You know my Lord, that a Common-wealth without a head and Governor, (as for example is the Realme of Hungaria) cannot long endure without seditious tumults or Rebellion: wherefore under your Maiesties reverend regard, I thinke it expedient that my Sister Armida, shold be given in mariage to Mr Fry soll, because in p[re]dictio[n] of minde and p[re]fession of judgment, hardly may so good a Knight be found, nor the enoy a better Husband, and so may the Realme finally descend, from Netrides now ages, to his noble Sonne.

The Emperour liked well of this aduise, wherefore the same day were Fry soll and the Princess Armida espoused together : to the godliking of all, but especially of the ladies themselves, whose secret desires were now manifestly requited. After the seale was ended, Netrides instituted Governor of Hungaria, departed with his wife and Sons to his Kingdoome, where he was received very honourably by his Subjects, who had not forgot their former loue to him : and the uniuall dealing of their King his deca-  
red Brother.

CHAP. XXXIX.

How Palmerin tooke his leave of the Emperour, his Father and Mother, to follow the search of the Prince Trineros.

**C**ertaine dayes after the solemnity of this honouorable Marriage was ended betwene Fry soll and the yong Princesse of Hungaria. Nerides likewise gone to his seat of government: all the Lords and Princes of the Empire, except such as continually abode in the Emperours Court, returned to their owne homes, the like did all the strange knyghts that came to the Triumphes, except the King of Sparta and the Lords of Macedon. Wherefore Palmerin now remembryng his promise to his Ladie, and how long he had steyned at Constantinople, determined to depart, and vnderstanding that his Father was with the Emperour, came to them with these speches.

My gracieus Lords, it is no v thre moneths and moze that I have remayned here by your comandement, contrary to the promise that I made my Ladie: wherefor (with your leav:) I am now determined to depart hence, before the Duke of Lorraine returne backe again, that he may tolle my Lord the Emperour, that I am gone to seeke my friends. My Sonne (quoth the Emperour) unwillig am I thou shouldest leaue vs so soone, but if the matter may not be contrarie, in respect you are bound to her by faithfull promise, who above all other deseruesth loue and service: I neither may or will gainsay you, but intreat your returne soone as may be. You shall therefore take with you a good company of knyghts, who may prevent any straunger occyssion, whiche your traueil in strange

Count

Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Countries happily may offer: that my hearte enjoying life by your presence, may once moze set you before my daie be exprest.

I beseeche you my Lord, answered Palmerin, grēve not your selfe by my absence, whiche shall not be long I hope, neyther will the multitude of knyghts abafe in my enterprise, so, moze by fortune then by force of Armes must the adventure be faithe. Doe then as you thinkes good answered the Emperour, in meane time I will cause provisyon for your traueil. Palmerin having now licence to depart, perswaded Fry soll so earnestly as he could, to abyde at Constantinople, as wel for the loue he bare his sister Armida, as because he was loth to parte the new married couple: but all the circumstances he coulde use, might not persuade him: for his religiouse loue to his friend, excused his affection to the Princesse, so that for a flat resolution, he answered, that nothing but death shold separate their company. Palmerin seeing Fry soll continue in his company, and that the deare which conquers all men, could not prevaile in his noble minde: rejoiced greatly therat, determining to recompence his Princesse kindnesse, if fortune did not contrary him in his enterprised journey. And fearing least any new occasion shold arise to delay this intent, dispatched presently his Letters to the Emperour of Almaine, and his Ladie Polynards, honouring his Highnesse Ambassadours with many sumptuous gifts. Having soe ordred all his affaires, and every one being ready to mount on yssabache, he came to bid the Daunce his Mother farewel: so well he knew, that if she could any way hinder his departure, his souerayn shold be soone prevented. The Daunce with motherly loue embracing her Sonne, said: Ah my Sonne, hast thou bane so shorte a tyme with me, and wyl thou now leaue vs? trust me it is a paine of great ungentenesse to deale so hardily with thy mother: but seeing the Emperour and my Lord habe given

V

their

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

their consent, may gainesay will be to little purpose. And nothing would it availe me to set before thine eyes, the inconstancy of Fortune, her sleights and trechery, commonly against great persons : when they are in the way to prosperity, honor, and renowne. Wherefore my Sonne, I commit thee to the protection of Heaven, desiring thee to regard mine honor, which by thee ought to be defended, and now may ruine in danger of common reproach, in that the vulgar soft judge after their owne humours, not according to the quality and estimation of vertue. For this cause let thy returne be the sooner, as thou tenderest my life and thine owne god.

All which Palmerin promised to doe, and so comming downe into the Court, found there the Emperour and his Father mounted on horsebacke, who bare him company two miles from the City : where after many courtesies betwixne them, the Emperour and Florendos returned to the Court againe, whereto the Duke of Lorraine stayed their comming, when taking his leave likewise, went aboard and sayled with so god a winde, as in shorftime he arrived in Almaine, where he was graciously welcomed by the Emperour, and especially by the Princesse his Daughter, to whom he reported the honourable behaviores of Palmerin, and how he was sworne Prince of Greece and Macedon. Whereof was she so joyfull: as never could she be satisfied with the discourse, making many demands to the Duke, as well of the Triumphs, Courtesey and disports, as also of the mariage celebrated at Constantinople: whereto the Duke returned such fit answers, as nothing wanted to extoll her Friends honor, yet with any occasion of jealousy to the Princesse, whereto amorous Ladys are commonly subject.

But now returning where we left before, you must note, that Palmerin being departed the Confines of the Empire, entered his Fathers Realms, where in every Cit-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

ty he was entertained with great triumphing : especially in the City of Hermida, where the Merchant dwelt that was Palmerins Master, for whom he sent, but he was aduertised by his wife, that her Husband was gone to the Sea, and his two Sonnes with him, wheresoever he gave her many Rich gifts, and Letters for his Masters fr<sup>e</sup>e enfranchise and liberty. At his departure from thence, he came to the place wheres Urbaino his Dwarke was borne, whose Father was there living a p<sup>r</sup>ote ancient Knight, and his Sister of as tall stature as Urbaino, whom Palmerin (at her Brothers request) sent to Constantinople, to his Mother. And for the hon<sup>r</sup>e of the Order his Dwarke Father had receyved, he gave him the Village wherin he dwelt, and in the presence of the Macedonians put him in posses<sup>s</sup>ion thereof, who not a little commended the discrete and liberall minde of the Prince.

From thence he journeyed to the chiefe City of Macedonia, where remained the Aged King his Grandfather: but how the Citizens entertained him, and what honourable Triumphs were made at the Court, I list not here sette downe, because it would be moze tedious then beneficall. As for his Aunt the Princesse Arismena, she at his coming met him in the Palace court, with all her Ladys: and as Palmerin fell on his knee before her, to kisse her hand, she stayed him in her armes, saying: God forbid my Palmerin, that the Knight of greatest fame in the Worlde, should reverence so simple a Damosell as my selfe: but rather am I bound by duty to honor you, as the man by whose especiall vertues our Lineage is this day crowned with perpetuall memory.

Sayre Aunt (answered Palmerin) if before I knew you to be my Fathers Sister, I dwelted my selfe to your Service, with much more Affection shall I desire to follow it now: wheresoever Iesse (whom Padame) to kisse your hand, as being the Lady to whom I rest continually bound.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

den. I beseeche you my Lord (quoth the Princesse) to pardon me, for never shall a Macedonian Wardeyn be so reproched, but that she well knowes her duty to her betters. At these speeches came the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus, and Mecana, and the Prince Eustace, whom the Princesse welcomed with exceeding honour. After all courtesies ended, Palmerin sayd,

I understand Madam, that the King your Father is crazed and sickly: if it be so I am verily sorry, I pray you therefore let vs goe so hewe his Majestie sareth. When you please my Lord (quoth the Princesse) for I thinke it heretofore he receyves health by you, Fortune may at this time afford the like: and yet (as I have read) there is no remedy for troublesome age, but onely death it selfe, which is the Gate to Immortality, and cureth all Diseases whatsoeuer. So entred they the Kings Chamber, and the Princesse going to the Bed side to her Father, said: My Lord, see here the god Knight Palmerin your Nephew, may it please you to speake to him, and bid him welcome: Well know I that he is right welcome to your Majestie, were there no other cause then the happy recovery of your souerain health, which his Adventurous Travell heretofore brought you.

The good Old King, whom the Wardeyn caused to shake and tremble: raised himselfe by a little, and beholding Palmerin, with weake and feeble voice, thus spake. Come neare my Noble Sonne, that these armes halfe dead may embrase thee, and my lips now drye and withered, may once kisse thee before I die. So holding him between his armes, and lifting his eyes to Heauen, said. O my God, for ever be thy name honored and praised, in bouchsailing me to see my Sonne before my death. Ah sweet death, the end of all sorries, and beginning of felicity, now art thou welcome, forsooth are not thy strokis, in that I have now seene the honourable deſtincion of my Subjects hereafter, yea ſuch a worthy friend

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

friend for them, as never had they the like. Ah my Son, how dreyly ought I to labe this: how gracious hath the remembrance beene of me: yet feele I my selfe so weake and feeble, as nature cannot prolong my life thys daies. Alas, I know not which of bothwarne hath greatest caufe to rejoice; either the Father ſitting his Sonne, when he is ready to leaue hym, or the Sonne finding his Father alſo tending his comming before he give up the ghost. I hope my good Lord, said Palmerin, that you shall not leave us foſome, therfore take a good hart, and that no doubt will prole long your life. Alas my Sonne, quoth the King, daibidis age hath so weakened my body, and when dyed by my vital blood, as longer I may not liue: and had no hope to ſee thys lengthened my languishing daies, then haue ſound my boþy breathles, which yet ſustained ſtable life, onely by thy presence.

Sow that I may leaue this world with content, and ſtabatle with better quiet to mine end: tell me (good Sonne) the whole matter concerning the father Florendos with the perfect discourse of thys owne fortunes. The Palmerin rehearsed every circumſtance, both of his Fathers deſtury, how he had married the Queenes Grimes, and in what ſtate he left them both at his departure.

CHAP. XL.

How the aged King *Primaleon* of *Macedon*, Grand-Father to *Palmerin*, dyed: and how the King of *Sparta* espoused the faire Princesse *Arismena*; Sister to Prince *Florendos*.



At two dayes had Palmerin stayed in the Coffre of his Grand-Father, but the aged King resigned his life to the celestiall powers: say whicheasle, all the Triumphys ceased, and generall sorrow entretayned for the losse of thys good King. Arismena whys so reverently loved her Father, as in his life time she would not match in Marryage with any one, because it was his will it shold be so: nevir shewed her selfe discontented therewith; but her Father being now dead, she committed the whole Maneris of the Realme to the Countis Roldin, who appointed for that office by generall good liking. With such honourable pompe was the funerall obsequies executed, and the Princesse gracious behabour therownd espacially commended: as the yong King of Sparta became amorous of her, and discovered his minde to Palmerin, intreating him so to laboure the cause, as he might make Arismena his Daunce.

Palmerin very joyfull of the Kings motion, in that he was one of the chiefeſt Estates of Grece, acquainted his Aunt with the Kings request, and what an honoꝝ it was to her to be so matched. Now was the Princesse hart so cold by her Fathers death, but seeing the yong beautifull King loved her so well, it began to warme againe: so that conſidering her owne estate, being now in yeares past fourte and twenty, she made ſome excusſes by her Fathers late deceafe,

Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

deceafe, but Palmerin percerued by her modest yelding looks, that the heart consented, although the mouth was loth to bifer it. Wherefore the next day they were espoused together, by which means the King was more affected to follow Palmerin, as he determined before he came from Constantinople: as well for the great kindnes he found in him, as for yis fauour in furthering him with the end of his deſires.

Now was the King moore impreſſionate on Palmerin, to accept him for his Companion in his Travell: who at longe he diſcended, althoꝝ he imagined, that his Aunt had rather have her new Husband farre with her. The day being appointed for their departure, Palmerin concluded with the King of Sparta, that he ſhould ſend Arismena to Constantinople, there to ſay his returne with her Brother Florendos. For her ſafe conduicthither, all the chiefeſt knyghts that camis thence with her were chosen, excep Prince Euface, Sonne to the Duke of Mezena. And Palmerin fearing his Warape would be longer then he expeſed, commanded Urbanillo his Dwarfe to return to the Daunce Arismena: and if I ſay (quoth he) longer then a yere ſooner Constantinople, go then to Almaigne with this Letter ſo comfort my Lorde, and take with the þy Dicker, whom I ſent to the Daunce my Mother.

The Dwarfe (alſoough he had rather have gone with his Master, then attēnd on Ladies) not dauring to galy ſay him, returned with Arismena, who in þowz time after arrived at Constantinople, where the Prince Florendos beſt joyfully receivedher, being not a little contented that ſhe was ſpared in Marryage with the King of Sparta, yet his Fathers death he took very hevily. How welchye ſhe was to the Emperour, Emprefſe, and Queen Giaana, I doubt not but you can ſufficiently imagine, who continuallly conſortco her till her Husband returme. Before Palmerin departed from Macedon, he eſtabliſhed all things in

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

due and decent order, creating the County Rouldin Lieutenant Generall for the Realms: commanding as fullfull obegiance to him, as to their Sovereigne Lord the King his Father. Afterwards he tooke order that his Shippynge might be ready, because he would delay no longer the search of Tryneus.

### CHAP. XLI.

How Palmerin and his Companions sayling on the Mediterranean Sea, were taken by Olimacil, Admirall to the great Turke: and of their fortunes in Greece, where Palmerin saved Laurana the Princelle of Durace.



D<sup>r</sup> Roldin being establisched in the Government of Macedon, and the Shippes ready which Palmerin hadde apppointed: He went abroad with his dearest Friends that would not leave him, viz. Fisoll, the Prince Oriorico, the Duke of Pontus, the King of Sparta, and Bustace Romme the Duke of Mecena. These are habing sworne theyr endevours in the search of Tryneus, committed themselves to the mercie of the Winde and Seas, not knowing where they shold first take Landynge. Hving thus sayled sixe of sea-ven dayes together, & the Seas nothing rough or tempestuous: they clifted up to the matas top, so farre if they could discry any shye. And as they were habylling merrily toghether, they suddenly spedy a great flote of Shippes, which with winde at will made apace towards them: but because you shal understand of whence and what they were attend the sequell and you shall be resolued. The Name Olimacil, as you have read in the former part of this History, after he had given the Princelle Agriola to the great Turk, entered

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

into so great credit, as in recompence of his gitt, he was made high Admirall of Turkie: so that being removved for a Knight of poreesse deserf, the Turke gave him the charge of his great Army, wherewith he shoulde continually disturbe the Christians. This Olimacil was Generall of this huge flote desyred by Palmerin, wherent somwhat aircyd, he called one of the Pilots, demanding if he knew the Cattigne of whence they were. The Pilot had no sooner he held him, but he presently sayd they were Turkes, and no way was there for themselves to escape, because he saw his light Gallopes were made out to him, and the rest came mainly by them. But Palmerin as a Prince experient in dangers, thus spake to his Companions:

Deble folowyn, where knyghtly force or bounuty can not availe, it cometh more to us to be fit, we are but five, and all in our shippes, and therefore we cannot fly before we shall be taken: I think it well therefore that we bis sound dis-tilation, and so expat where foyonne will better teach vs the way to recover our shippes, and rebuke vs in our Engages to their confusyon. Departeth with them, and leane me alone to talke to them, because I can well speake the Arabian language. Yet thinke not that cowardlie or feare of death makes me do thespis chys: for in an instant invincible, hardiurde and longely but we will be esteemed as folly and indiscretion. Have then patience, my good Friends, I hope that all shall turne to our good.

No maner had he ended his speches, but he heard the Captain command them to fylle, or else they shoulde die. Dye: (saith Palmerin) that goes very hard: assure vs our lves, and we yeo, otherwise not. I promise ther, said the Captain, neyber than now thy company shall have any harme. So leaing upon the shipp, they broughte it to the Admirall Olimacil, presenting to him all the knyghts they took therin: so which he heartily thanked them, saying.

Zell

Well me Gentlemen and dissemble not, are ye Turkes or Christians? Fair, quoth Palmerin, seyng Fortune hath bane so contrary to vs, you shall haue stand truly what we are. We are Christians and yowre Knights, searching appetures to gaine honor and profit, in some Princes service, be he Heireben of Christian. And because we cannow now shew you what we are able to doo: so please you to suffer vs enjoy our liberty, and graunt vs the benefite of our Armeour, we will proprieze you herall and faithfull seruice. Olimacell, who was by nature sterne and austere, saide these fire Knights so yong and brave accomylshed persons imagined their amylance would greatly abatle him wherefore he thus answered; Gentlemen, if you will shew to me by your fath, that you will not depart from us without my licence, but will loyally emploie your selues in what I shall command: you shall habe your Armeour gaine, and I will not use you as my Rabes and prisoners but as my honest compaynes and Friends. Whiche paille they all tooke to him, wherefore they were examently armes againes, and remained in the Galler with Olimacell who seeing their armour so rich and costly, esteemed them to be of noble blode, and therfore caused them to be ver honorable intreated.

So sayng on, at length they came nere to the greate Cittie of Albania, when Olimacell commannded his Appelles, to goe vnderstand in what estat the Cittie was: who were aduertised by certaine Frenchmen, the people were unprovided of any fortifications, so the waining the Postes, the whiche Cittie might easly be conquered. These tynges caused them sorribly to enter the Cittie, whiche setting all the shippes on fire, they were oulboare, and mordering the Warders at the Gates, took the Cittie at the first assaile, wheron Palmerin and his noblie Friends (to therre great sorrofe) declared how well they could shal of such assayres. The Cittie thus overcome, as

the chiefeſt Citizens therin taken prisoners, the Turke following their Fortune, marcheſ further, and came to the Cittie of Durace, where the faire Princeſſe Laurana abode, of whom Palmerin was ſometimes Amoures: when he imagined by her excellent Beuty, that it was she who ſo often ſollicited him in his Dremes. Palmerin being there coms on Land, preſently knew the Country: wherefore he ſaid to his compaynes.

I now perceybe dorey Friends, that Fortune forzeth vs from ill to worse: This ſpeakē I in reſpect of this Cittie, againſt which we muſt be compelled to fight, and not many yeares late, with the pice of my Blod I labored to defend it. But, becauſe the Dykes Daughter is as wox than a Lady, as in my deare I reverence and honour: I beſeech you ebery one to ymploy your ſelues, to preſerue both her and her Ladys, and demandē them of the Admirall for our part of the ſpoyle.

Whiles Palmerin thys conſerued with his friendes, Olimacell underſtood by certayne Prisoners, that the Cittie was very ſtridely defended, and therfore no great maſtry to winne it quickly. Yet at theyr firſt Assaile, they were ſo valiantly repulſed, as Olimacell and his men beganne to deſpayre of victorie: wherefore he made open proclamation, that he who ſhall Enter the Cittie, shal be fulliche of hym any Blode he wold request. Palmerin, loyall of this pro-miſe, cauſed ſixt ſtrong Dealing Ladys to be taileſ up againſt the wall, wheron he and his Friends ascended, and on the wall cryed, the Cittie is ours: wherewithal the people within were o diſmayed, haſing endurid a long and ſorribly ſhyrouſh, as they all fledde out at the furder Gates. The Turkes then barred the Gates on the ſide, and cōting the Cittie, put olde and young to the Dyeſt. But, Palmerin and his compaynes ſeizing ſo purpule ſtein that ſader, ranne straight to the Wallace, at the entranſe wherof they ſound many Moors, who had taken the Dyke, where-

## The History of Palmerin D'Olivet.

soo they went to finde the Princesse Laurana, who sat in her Chamber, well nere dead with greate, because she heard that her Father was slaine. Her he committed to the custody of the King of Sparta, Fryfoll, Olorico, and Eustice, desiring them to comfort the Princess, in that neither the oþ her Ladies should fall into the Tyrants power: and so comynge to Olimacell, on his knes he began in this manner. You know my Lord the promise you made to day, be vertue wheþ of, because I did got over the wall into the Cittie: so my wexe I request the Dukes Daughter, and so my friends that followed me, her Ladies and Gentlewomen, so other spoile of the riches and treasure we desyre not.

Olimacell graunted his demand, charging his people on paine of their lves, not any way to offend the Ladies. In this manner was the Princeesse saved, whereupon the Duke of Pontus presently went to her, and taking her by the hand, acquainted her with these joyfull newes, whereto with she than replyed. Can it be possible that Palmerin, who heretofore bensured his lfe in my fathers defens, againt th. County Passeco of Mezena, shal now become so familiar among Turks and Mozeys? hath he so forgot his bones to God, that him selfe is not only a daſſale to the enemies of his faith, but doth likelike ſeekes their deſtruction that herbe Christ Iesus & Be silent good Madame, and ſpared the Duke, ſo if his name be knowne we all perishe what hath he done, to ſo the ſafety of your lfe, and our owne likelike, which he hath obtained of the Generall of the Army.

With those wordes ſhe was ſomewhat pacified, and the old clinders of lode, which now began to ſpread aboude, cauſed her returne this anſwer. In ſouth my Lord, ſaying I am become Palmerins pypſoner, I think my honour in better aſſurance: and my fatthers death is the leſſe grievous to me, in that this matter may ſoote to better effect

they

## Emperour of Conſtantinopole. PART. 2.

then I can conceiue. By this time was Palmerin come to her, who entreated her to kepe all things ſecretly, for he woulde endure a thouſand deaths, before ſhe ſhould be any way diſhonoured. In time (quoth he) we may be delivered from theſe Hellhounds, as ſay you and your Ladies, the Rountall hath openly commanded that you be reverently vید.

A thouſand thanks my Lord, quoth the Princeſſe, and ſeing matters are ſo come to paſſe, yet doe I rejoyce that I fall into your power. The Cittie of Durace left in the ſame rate as Albania was, the Turkes went aboude, taking no priſoners thence but Laurana and her Ladies, whom Olimacell intended to give to the great Turke. So paſſing along the Coaſt of Theſſalie, they ſpoiled many Citties on the Sea ſide, took the King and many Noble men: ſo that now they were ſtored with a number of Christian pypſoners. Now Olimacell ſearde, that the Christian Princeſſes hearing what ſpoile he made in their dominations, would raſle a mighty power againſt him, wherefore he gaue charge to his Pilots, to order their course towards the Cittie of Tubant, whereto then the great Turke kept his Court.

The King of Theſſalie threates daies beſoße his taſting, ſent his Dame (who was great with Childe) to one of his Caſtels, a good daies journey from the Sea: but when ſhe heard her Husbands miſfortune, the grete ſhe conſidered, cauſed her preſently to fall in traualle. When ſhe was deliuered of a goodly Daugter, named Francelina. At this time the thre Magiſtral Sisters, who appeared to Palmerin on the Mountain Arctaria, and one of them afterward in his going to Buda: made their aboude in an Isle thereby named Carderia. When they (by their hidden Philoſophy) heard how the King was taken, and ſhould be kept in perpetuall priſon, without the helpe of his Daugter which was newly borne: they concluded to ſtrame ſuch an enchantment

## The Hitory of Palmerin D'Oliva.

chantment, as maugre the Turke and his power, as he that wold not deigne to kille his shwo, shold be delibered from imprisonment. Hereupon the youngest of these thre Sisters went to the Castle where the woesfull Queene remained, where she was very honourably entertained; because the Queene desired to know, if the King her Husband was dead or alive, and if any hope might be expected of his deliverance.

The Damosell Enchauntresse adverstised the Queene, that in departing with her Daughter Francelina, the King her Husband shold enjoy his liberty, and in time to come, she shold be married to one of the best Knights in the world.

We neve nor doubt that the Queene was hereat amased, yet the love of the Mother to her Infant, cannot conquer the love of the wife to her dore Husband: which among all babes is the most honest and loyall: So that in hope to free him againe, on whom depended her wealth and welfare she gaue her Child to the Damosell, intreating that she might be vied as besmeared the daughter of a king and as the swete beauty of the Infant deserved. She returning to Carderia, with the Child, made her Sisters very joyfull by her comming, who there nourished the Infant till she was three yeares old: when the beauty of the young Princesse began to shew it selfe, as faire Cynchia dooth among the Starres.

Now did the Sisters enclose her in a strong Tower, made of purpose so young Francelina, wherein was the most goodly Garden in the world, there was she attened by her Nurses, and ore wayting Gentlewomen: and such Enchauntments were imposed in the Tower, as no man should ever see her, unlesse he were the best Knight of his time. The Entraunce into the Tower was very straite and narrow, barred uppe with a great Gate of Iron and Guarded by two furtous Lyons. Over the Gate stood a huge image of Copper, holding a mighty Pace of Steele, wrought

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

wrought by such cunning, as if any Knight but he that was destined to end the adventure, shold essay to enter, hardly might he escape to returne againe. Moreover, the conqueror shold not denie the first demande of the Princesse, whiche was the deliverance of her Father: and soz this cause the Sisters enchaunted the faire Fiancelina, whose history we must yet sozbeare, proctecting where we left before.

Olimaell being thus on the sea, laden with Christian spoyles and prisoners, at length entred the port of the great City of Tabant: where he made such a chearefull noyse of Drummes, Trompetts, Clarions and Cornets, as though the greatest Monarchie in the world had come to take landing. The great Turke marvailing at this sudaine melody, sent ens of his Knights to understand the cause, who being certified by Olimaell, what great victories he had obtained against the Christians and the number of prisoners he brought with him returned, to the Wallace, where he told his Lord that the Admirall Olimaell was come, and had brought with him great spoyles from the Christians, wheres among (quoth he) is a Christian King in personne, many worthy Knights and Gentlemen, and a young Princesse of incomparable beauty. Not a little joyfull was the Turke at these newes, wherefore comming into his great Hall, where the imperiall scates of majestie are erected, himselfe sat downe in the one, and faire Agriola of England in the other, expecting the comming of Olimaell: who in triumphant manner set forward with his prize, bravely mounted on a lusty Courser sumptuously caparascued, and adbaunting his sword brayne in signe of victory. Being come to the Wallace, Olimaell saluted his Lord with great reverence, standing by him to make report of his conquest, and make present of his prisoners after their estate and calling.

First he caused all the riches to be brought, and all the meanest

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

meanest captives one after another to his the great Turke sote : then commanding them to be carried thence , he began in this manner . It is not to be doubted, most high and mighty Monarch, that this victory gotten on the Christians, enemies to our Gods, hath bene obtained onely by your satour: therelze it is great reason, that to the pynct, pall head of this enterprise, the great and chaste honoure should be done. The witnes hereof are the treasures present, and their prisoners abyding your mercy : who from the very meanest to the highest, shall humble themselves at your Majesties sote. When every man had done their reverence, and the King of Theflalie should next sollo, who though his armes were piniond behinde him, yet had a Croone of Gols on his heade to shew what he was althoough he saw himselfe in the Tyrants power, and Olimaell had commanded him to kisse his Masters sote, boldly made this answeare. Noz will I so much displease my God, backreamys d' Tirant as thou art in such sorte to abase my selfe, being a King, & administrator of Justice to faithfull Christians : to kisse the foot of the most nastie and uncleane creature in the world: profatning the worship whiche I onely owe to my maker. It is in thy power to take my life from me: but not to constraine me do the thing wheresoever in constis my damnation, and a thousand deathys I will endure, before I pale so much as in thought to thise. Villaines (quoth the Admirell) dares thou speake so basely in the presence of my Lord? did not my regarde of him withhold me, soone shold I separate thy cursed head from thy shoudlers. With these wordes he gaue the King such a blow on the face, as made him fall on his knytes the ground.

At Trayteur, quoth the King, well hast thou showne the nature of a villaine, that without command stikest a King cap'tive, and vassalized of Armes: but might it so please thy Lord, in open field will I prove thee a d' Oly.

all

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

all and unchristened Curse, that thus abusest the blood royal. The great Turke seeing the King so moued and angry, the blood likewise trickling from his nose and mouth: commanded him to be carried thence, to one of the strongest Castels in Natolia, where he shold be enclosed without any company, that this captivitie might be the moxe greevous to him.

When the King of Theflalie was departed, Palmerin approached, leading the Princesse Laurana by the hand, he and his five companions being Armed, except their Hel-mets, Gantlets and Swerdes: wherat the great Turke mervailing, demanded of Olimaell why he suffered them to be Armed? My Lord, quoth he, these are Knights were the first prize I took, who ( after they had given me their oathes) have done such service to your Majestie, especially this, pointing to Palmerin, one of the best Knights that ever I saw: as full well do they deserve liberty, which in recompence of adventuring their lives in your service, under your high correction. I promised them. By Mahomet, answered the great Turke, so thy sake I lithawise conrme it, and if hereafter they will abide with me, I will make them greater then ever they were. While the Turke was making these promises, Agriola having well noted Palmerin, knew him, and with the suddaine conceale the rest was ready to swoone: but laying her selfe on her Chayre, sayd. O sole beauty, who is this? are not mine eyes deluded and my thoughts beguiled? At these words Palmerin knew her, which before he did not, by reason of her strange disguised apparel: yet thought he best to conceale his inward joy, least crooked Fortune shold now againte present him.

The great Turke seeing Agriola look so pale and wan started from his Chayre, and taking her in his armes, said. Alas Parame, hath any suddaine ill besallen ye? hath any one in this company offended ye? by our Gods if I knowe

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

knew him, presently should he die the death. The Prince, celle trembling wth scare, seeing Hippolyta was not present, spake thus in English. What will my Lord and Husband Trineus say, if he be in this company, seeing I have so flately forsaken him, and thus (though God knowes perforce) in stede of him, have taken the enemy to him and ou. farr? Yet one comfort have I that this infidell hath not carnally knowne me, soz which protection I thanks the heavens daily. At these speches Palmerin was so glad, as no teate of de it could not with holde him: but in the same thing iug. he trus and veted.

It are not good Madame, Tryneus is not in our company: vnto please you to say I am your Brother, you may happily save my life, and practise your deliverance. The Turk insouciant by Palmerins persuading, that he had caused this subdaine alteration: imagining him to be her Husband of whora he had heard her talke so often, in a great rage sayd, Knight, how darst thou presume my Ladys presence, knowing the right of these would any way displeas her? By the Prophet Mahomet thou shalt immedately die, that all such audacious villaines may take an example by thee.

Agriola knowing the Turks censures were very perempcioze and commonly no sooner laid then executed, embracing him thus replied. Ah my Lord, doo not the thing in haste, soz which afterward you will be sorry, soz I assure you on my honor, the Knight that spake to me is my Brother, and bath left his Countrey onely to find me: and him doo I love so effectually, as if you put him to death, impossible is it soz me to live afterward. When the Turk heard her speake with such affet in qualisying his anger, said, I promise ye Madame, for your sake, he shall have no harme, but be entartained wth love and honour: conditionall ye, that you forget this melancholy, and henceforthe shew your selfe more pleasant, soz in seeing you sad I am more grieved

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

graved, then if I had lost y most of my dominions. In sooth my Lord answered Agriola, now shall I be merry, seeing you intend to lobs my Brother, soz greater god cannot happen to me then his gentle entreatance: and henceforth shall I reade vnder scote, the said remembrance of my Countrey & parents, having him wth me, by whom I hope to gaine my greatest comfort. So the Turke allying from his Chayre, caused Palmerin and Laurana to accompany Agriola, and the other five Knights having kis- sed his hand: he went to his Chamber, commanding Olimacil (sozyis greater honour) to vsher Agriola, who as she went, thus spake.

Believe me Admyrall, if I was offendred when thou broughtest me Prisoner hither: thou hast now made me sufficient friends, in that by this I enjoy my Brother, whom I was out of all hope to see againe. Alas Madame, (quoth he) little did I thinke him to be such a one, soz had I: his blage should have been much better which fault I hope hereafter to recompence. I commend him to thy conserue, said Agriola, let him and his Friends have all things they want, according as my Lord bath appynted. So taking her leabe of them, she entred her Chamber, where she and Hippolita conserued with Laurana, of all her fortunes passio, and the aduentures of her Brother. Now was Palmerin and his companions, by the Markes commandement, lodged neare the Wallace, and to each of them he sent a goodly Housse with costly Furniture, thinking by these meanes to conquer Agriola, and purchase that of her whiche he long had desired, and talking with Palmerin, said. Right well may you be Brother to my Lady Aariola, in that your beauty and complexion delibers great likelihood: Seeing then our Gods have permitted, that soz her comforthe wch old be brought hither: perwade her I pray ye, that she be no longer repugnant to my will, soz could I have a Childe by her, I would think my selfe the happiest Lord on the earth.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Well, I would have you for sake the folly of your Christanity, and give your selfe to our Law, which is much better then yours: and you shall see how our Gods will labour you, likewise what great good you shall receive thereby. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) I will labour with my Sister, so much as lies in me to do, as for your Law as yet I am un-acquainted therewith: but when I shall finde it to be such as you assure me, easly may I be drawn thereto, and to serve you with such loyalty, as so great an estate both worthily deserve. I confesse my selfe likewise greatly bound to your Majestie, in that you have accepted my Sister as your wife, and to me a poore slave givon both Life and Liberty, which I beseech you also graunt the Partners, in whose Mischell it was my chancce to be taken, in so doing sh: may be greatly moved by your magnificent liberality and mercy.

The great Turke presently gave his consent, causing theyr safe Conduct to be openly proclaimed: So Palmerin and his friends humbly departing to their Longing, the Turke went to Agriolas Chamber, where sitting downe by her, he thus beganne. Now shall I perceve Madame, how much your Brother may prevaile with you: for he hath promised me so to order the matter, as you shall grant my long desired state. My Lord ( quod she ) my Brother shall command me nothing, but I will do it with all my heart: as for your request, it is not in my power, but in the hand of God, who defendeth me as best him pleaseth. Now can I change the opinion I have held so long: though by having my Brother with me, I enjoy farre greater content then I did before.

It sufficeth me ( saith the Turke ) to see you so well pleased, and as for your Brother, that you may perceve how well I love him: before one Moneth be expyed, I will make him the chiefeast Lord in my Court, next mine owne person: so killing the Princess, he departed to his Chamber.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

ber. The day following, Palmerin said to his companions Youse my Friends, howe kindly Fortune smileth on vs, but least she change, as ebor moze she is wroght: we must practise some good means to escape from these Turkish In-fidels. Beside, seeing we have found the Princess Agriola I hope Tryneus is not so secretly hidden, but we shall heare some tydings of him. Of her therefore will I enquire, if she know what became of him & Ptolome, when I left them: in meane while you may closely conclude with our Partners, that they be ever ready at an hours warning, for I hope we shall set hence before eight daies be past. Palmerin went to Agriolas Chamber, and there by good hap he found her alone: whom after he had humbly saluted, the Princess thus spake to him. My noble Friend, you must be carefull how you speake to me, especially before the aged Lady you saw here yesterday, for she understandeth all languages, and if we be discovered, there is no way but death: therefore when you see her with me; confesse rather with Laurana, and say to her what you would have me know, because she is a Lady both vertuous and faithfull. No lesse ( Madame ) have I alwates found her, quoth Palmerin: therefore I beseech you make account of her, and acquaint her with your greatest affaires, for she is Daughter to one of the most gentle Princes in the world. But Madame, I would gladly know what became of Tryneus, al-tesz that so unhappily I departed from you: The Admirall Olimaell, quod she, came with his Galleys so lone as you were departed, who tooke vs and than separated vs in sun-der:scant permitting me to speake to him & Ptolome, nor know I what is become of them. It suffiseth then Madame, answere Palmerin, that I have found you, so you dependeth the life of Tryneus, who shall not long ( I hope ) be concealed from vs: therefore adisse your selfe on the day when you will depart, for I have a ship ready to carry you from this scorne. Thanks be to heaven, quod she,

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

As, soj so good Fortane, I will be so ready as you shall not stay so me. Now entred Hyppolita, who bakes off their talkets other occasions, where we will leave, and returne to the Prince Trineus.

### CHAP. XLII.

How Tryneus being Enchanted into the shape of a Dog in the Isle of Malfada, there came a Princesse of the Moores, who requested him of the aged Enchantresse, to whom he was given: and what happened to him afterward.

**G**ODFREY. Thinks as yet you remember, without repetitions of the former discourse, in what manner the Knight, Cosen to the Admirall Olimaceli, to whom the Prince Trineus was given: arrived by Compell in the Isle of Malfada, and how he with his people, were transformed into divers shapes of Beasts, among whom Tryneus had the likenesse of a goodly Dog. Being thus disguised, a young Princesse named Zephira, Daughter to the King of the same Country, came to demand counsell of the aged Enchantresse Malfada, for the cure of a certaine Disease, which by strange adventure happened to her in this manner.

This young Princesse one day being pleasant in her Fathers Courte, among many other wayting Ladies: entered a goodly Garden, which abounded with great diversity of sweet flowers, and after she had walked a pretty while in an Abour of Huske-roses, she espied a Gilley-Gower, which seemed so faire and beautifull in her eye, as she was provoked to ges crepit from the Balke. Hiving this delicate flower in her hand, wherein (by misfortune) a venemous worme was except, she took such delight in smelling

### Emperour of Constantioplc. PART.2.

it: as her breath drew by the worme into one of her Palachys, not being able to get it out againe. So the worme and poison of this little worme engendred a putrefaction, and other like wormes, which gave a smell so filthy and loathsome, as hardly could any abide to stand by her. Her Father not a little grieved at this mischance, sent for the most skilfull Physitions, to know what remedy might be concluded upon: but all their paine and travell was in vain, for the Disease continued still without any amendment. In the end, the King fearing it would turne to a Canker incurable, and having heard what strange things the Enchantresse Malfada performed, sent the Princesse Zephira to her, where she being arrived without any danger, because she would not hurt any inhabiting in the Isle, declared to the Enchantresse the whole manner of her misfortune.

The Enchantresse answered that she could give her no remedy, and hardly shold she finde any at all, except it were by an ancient Knight, who remained in the Courte of the King of Romata and Grisca, Realms subject to the Seldan of Persia, and the Knight was named Muzabelino. The Princesse was so displeased at this answer, seeing her intent frustrat, as she would receyde no successe: wherefore walking in the fields, to expelle her anger, and so to the Seashore, where the Ships lay confusid, she beheld the Dog which was the Prince Trineus, and so farre in liking was she with him, as she desired the Enchantresse to give him her, and having obtained her request, returned to her Father, who lay sick in one of his Cities called Nabor, wheresof the whole Kingdome bare the name.

When the King saw his Daughter returned without cure, his melanchalike conceit so crook to his hart, as within three daies after he dyed. Having made his Willament before his decesse, he gave his Daughter as her portion a

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

City called Elain, one of the greatest & surest Strengths in the Realme, with all the Signories belonging thereto. To Maulerino his youngest Sonne, he gave an other like position, which was a daies journey distant from Elain. After the Kings Funerall rites were sollemnized, the Princeesse with her Brother Maulerino, went to their owne pcessions: doubting the sury of the Prince Tyreno, their Oldest Brother, who alwaies had shewne himselfe proud and contentious.

She being thus in good quiet by her selfe, tooke no other pleasure then in plaiing with her Dog, because he seemed very subtle and politique, so that she prepared a Couche for him at her Beds side. Tyreno being crowned King after his Fathers decesse, began greatly to despise that his Sister shold enjoy the fairest City in the Kingdome: for which cause he cunningly practised all the meanes he could to put her to death. And that he might the better compasse his mischievous purpose, he secretly sent a Messenger to the Master of the Princeesses Horses, that if he would but condiscend to kill or povson his Brother and Sister, he would give him fiftie thousand Heraphes, and make him Gouvernour of Elain. The wicked Noble man, gredy and covetous, seeing the large promise of the Tyrant, consented thereto: so that one night the Princeesse being a sleep, he entered her Chamber with his sword drawn, there to have smothered her, and afterward the Prince her Brother.

Tryneus, who had lost nothing belonging to a man, but bodily shape and voice, seeing the Traitor enter his Ladies Chamber with his Weapon drawn, started vp presently, and setting his two foefets on the Villains breast, bit him so cruelly by the face and throat, as he being unable to help himselfe, was constrained to cry out alood. With this noise the Princeesse awaked, and her Brother likewise, who lay in the next Chamber, comming in hastes to see the cause of this outcry: and knowing the Traytor, beat him so sore with

the

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART 2.

the pomell of his sword about the Stomack, as in the end ensyced him to confesse his treason. Whereat Maulerino not a little myghting, and wrathfull at his villainous intent, smote his head from his Shoulders. In the mozung he appointed such guard in the City, as no stranger might enter without great examination. The Princeesse knowing how her Dog had saved her life, lobed him afterward so tenderly, as she would sete him at her owne Table, and none but her selfe might give him any food. Here will we likewise pursue a while, and declare the deliuerance of the Princeesse Agriola.

### CHAP. XLIII.

How the great Turk became enamoured with the Princeesse Laurana, by meanes whereof he was slaine, and Agriola delivered.



Almerin being upon a day in his Chamber with his compantons, practising some meanes for the deliuerance of Agriola the Princeesse Laurana of Durace, came to them, frauding her speeches in this manner. Gentlemen, if any of you be d'arsus to deliver vs from this cruell enmy, who holds vs in this thrall and bondage: I have devised the best meanes that may be, and thus it is. The Turks, the most luxurios and unchaste man in the world, not contented with infinite number of concubines, hath many times made lobe to me, so that to compasse mine intent, I have made him promise within threates to graunt his request. In this time I have intreated the Prince Agriola to shew him the most disdaignefull punishment that may be, whch he hath faithfully performed, and so this cause hath sent me to you, conbyage hence

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

hence all the riches he hath given ye, and which the her  
selfe will likewise send ye: so that when the houre is come  
for me to full all his pleasure, one of you being privately ar-  
med, shall in my place murder him, in revenge of the ill  
Christendome hath sustainted, by the last unhappy voyage  
of Olimell, whiche determineth very shortly, as I under-  
stand, to goe spagle: he Ills of Rhodes. Palmerin very glad  
of the Princesse notable invention, thus answered. Be-  
cause (Madame) I lately ppointed th. Turke, not to re-  
paire his Count, but to keape hym company, when he denysd  
his Admirall, that I and my compaions shd goe with  
him to the Rhodes: I cannot be the man to end this wo-  
thy revenge, therefore one of you (my Friends) must re-  
solue to perforne it. In meane while, you Madam Laur-  
ana may retarne to the Turke, pleasing him with faire  
and friendly speches: for if never so little suspition be ga-  
thered, not one of vs can escape with life. Feare not, said  
the Princesse, I will use the matter so carefully as you can  
desire, right well know I how to entame his hart with  
quent looks, coy distaines, faint yeldings, and other such  
like ceremonys used in love: as feare not you to prosecute  
the stratagems, in that a beginning so good, mch nedes  
so: to a successiue end. The young Duke of Pontus, who  
began to grow affectionate towards the Princesse Laur-  
ana, saij.

In sooth my Lord, so please you to commit the charge  
hereof to me: so well hope I to execute the same for her  
sake that is so worthily intent it, as I dare warrant to  
deserue no reproch therfore. For my first earnest to gentle  
Love, shall be so gracious, as in qualifying to be unlesswell  
beate of our enemy, I will bide my selfe never to le be a  
ny other: and her fatch received, if I bring not his head to  
Madame Laurana, let vs be accounted as one of the most  
foolsall knyghts that ever bare Armes. Adverte me  
therefore of the place and howze, and doubt not of my faith-

full

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

full performance. At this pleasant answer they all began to  
smile, whereupon Palmerin thus spake. Welobe me noble  
Duke, considering your youth and brave disposition, I knowe  
no one in this company moe meet for the Princesse Lau-  
ra, then you are: but I thinke when the appointed houre  
shall come, you will be a little more angry with the Turke  
then ter, if she have you in that subjection as it seemes she  
hath. Yet let vs not now trifle the time in vaine, when  
such weightie occasions commandeth our diligence.

So returned Laurana to the Princesse Agriola, acquain-  
ting her with the Knights determination, when not long  
after, the great Turke entred the Chamber, accompanied  
with Palmerin and the King of Sparta, and that he might  
the better speake to her he so earnestly desired, he caused  
Palmerin to sit betwene him and Agriola, then turning  
to Laurana, he began to devile familiarly with her. Whiche  
when Palmerin and Agriola perceaved, the better to be-  
guile him, he made a sygne to the King of Sparta, that he  
would enter into some talke of hunting: whereat the Turk  
presently arose, and taking Laurana by the hand, led her to  
the window, with these speches. My deare of my heart, and  
the very fairest creature that eber milc eyes beheld, will  
ye grant the request I made to you yesterday? Ha: you  
not what great honour I habe done to Madam Agriola?  
Notwithstanding, if you will lo ve me, I will make you my  
wife, that I may habe issue by you to succeed in my King-  
dom, and your honours shall be nothing inferiour to hers.  
And though she will deny me the labour, which with long  
and continuall pursuite I have desired: yet doe you con-  
sider my grise, and in shoit time you bechase me no pit-  
ty, the extreme afflictions I endure for your love, are ra-  
ised at the price of my life. God sozbid, quoth Laurana, that  
so great a losse would come to the Oriental Empire by  
me, rather will I forgo the accustomed regard of mine ho-  
nor, to be accepted into your grace and labour. And the  
causa-

## The Hitory of Palmerin D'Oliva.

cause that made me deserte so long from this answer, was the feare I haue of Madam Agriola, and her Brother, to whom I was given by your Admiraull after my Fathers decesse.

But to the end my Lord, that none of them may suspect our love, I thinke it convenient that Hyppolita, who alwaies lieth in your Chamber: resiode her selfe to the Ladies attending on Agriola, and her selfe you command to give me the Keye of my Ladies Chamber, which hitherto she hath used to carry. By this meanes may I the moe safely, and without suspition of any one, come in the night to fulfill your desire. The Warke imagined he had gained the Princesse lob: indeeoe, was not a little joyfull wherefore he said.

Sweete Lady, you shall haue the Keye as you request, nor shall she longer lodge in my Chamber, whom you seare so much. Moreover, this night will I perswade Agriola, that I keele my selfe not halse currant: and thereso to keeps her selfe in her owne Chamber, and so may you come boldly to me this night. If any one chaunce to meete you, say, that I sent for you: and if they dares be so bolde as to hinder your comming, in the morning shall my Janizaries putt them to death, whatsover they be. So taking a Ring from his finger, wherein was a Stone of incimable value, he gabs it to the Princesse, saying. Woles Madamis, take this as a pledge of my promise: for whiche Laurana humbly thanking him, thus replited. My Lord, I see Agriola hath soare or five times earnestly noted you, I thinke it god therefore that we breakes off talke: assuring you that I will not taile at midnignt, when every one is fast a sleepe to keape my word, and in the Mantle whiche you sent me yesterday, I will courrily enter your Chamber, conditionallie that you keape your promise to me afterward.

Drawe not therof, said the Warke, and so taking his leafe of her, went presently to his Chamber, where finding Hyppolita

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Hypolita, he commanded her to take thence her Bed, and carry it to the Ladies Chamber, likewise taking the keye from her, he sent it by one of his Pages to Laurana, who having it in hand, came laughing therewith to Palmerin, saying.

Woles say you my Lord, haue I not handled the matter as it shoulde be? The Turke moved with pitie of our Cratle impyslement, hath given me the charge of Madam Agriola: soz by his Page hath he sent me the Keye of her Chamber, and Hypolita shall lode new among other Ladies. And because this night the action must be fulfilled, dor you adverte the Duke of Pontus, that at midnight he saile not to come, to use drunken Holoternes as he bath deserved. Palmerin and the King of Sparta, praiising God that their affaires went sooward so luckily: returned to their Lodging, intreating Agriola to be ready at the houre, that their intent might not be hindered by her. Afterward they rehearsed to their compaines, what was concluded by the Princesse Laurana: wherefore quoth he to the Duke, prepare to bring your Arment secretly to Agriolas Chamber, where you shall finde the King of Sparta and my selfe. Meane while, Fryfoll, Olorico and Eustace, see that all our Baggage be combayed into our Shipp, which may safely be done without suspect, consideringe what great multitude of Souldiers are Embarking, and therfore provide all things readyp against our comming. The houre being at hand, Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and the Duke of Pontus, went to the Princesse Chamber, where the Duke was immediately armed, excep his Helmet, whiche he left on the Table, covered with the mantle wherof Laurana spake, putting on the Armes the Princesse wrope upon her head, and so finely was he disguised in those habites, as in the dark he might be reputid rather a woman than a man, and being ready to depart about the practise, he said to Palmerin. I thinkes it best my Lord, that you and the King of Sparta, conduct

## The History of Palmerin D'Orva.

conduet the Ladies before to the Porte : for if in mine attempt, I shal happen to fail, yet shal you loose but the worst in your company. So impotunat was he with them to s. Now his advise, as he caused them to depart present by to the Haven, where they were joyfully welcommed by Briton, and the rest, without meeting any by the way to hinder them. When the Duke saw himselfe left alone, and no mane was to dispase himselfe to his intent, falling on h c knie he thus spake.

Dany God, that scattered the mighty Holofernes to be beheaded by thy Servant Judith : affoyd me at this time the like grace, and give me strength to worke his death, who is the greatest living enemy to Christians. This said, he went to the Turke Chamber, where he found the doore stand open, and approyng the bed: the Turke (who verily thought it was Laurana) railed up himselfe, and taking him by the armes, said. Welcome swete Lady, so ver long have I exp. a d. b. comynng. Ah Traitor, quoth the Duke. I am not the. hoa look. & so, regard of honour will not suffer her to come in such sorte. With which words he staid him to the heart, and pulling off his head, he appyed it in the scuttle that Laurana gave him: so going to Agriolae's Chamber, and clasping on his Helmet, went openly to his friends, whom he found in prayer for his good success, and shrowding the head into Laurana's cap, said.

O Dame, be that mrs so impotunat for your dishonour, as a witness of his love to you, hath sent you his head here by me: wherwith I present you so devoutly, as hence forth I dedicate my life & seruice to your dispouing. A thousand thanks my Lad, quod the Princesse, vnto beituous all hath made me so constantly to be yours: as in any thing that thou hast not the iuipach of mine honor, I remaine with my uttermost endeours to please you. As the Duke would have replied, the other Knights came to

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

take on the head, which when they had cast into the sea, they presently boised stale, and before day had gotten stale enough from th. rice.

In the morning, as the Warriors came from their Galleries towards the City, they espred the head flating on the water, and taking it vp, shewed it to their compaines, to know if they could tell whose it was. When they beheld it so dreadfull, the mustachoes strouting out like kisse bubbles, and the locks of haire hang shagging downe, they knew not what to thinke; and one of them having well markid it said:

We all our Gods, if I be not deceiv'd, this is the head of my Lord the great Turke: at which words all the other began to se zne and mock. Hyppolita seeing faire Phœbus let fowth the mooring light, came to the Princele Agriolae's Chamber, where not finding her nez Laurana, the chamber it selfe was full of many things: she doubted imediately that they were fled, whereof to be resolved, she went to the great Turke chamber, and seeing the Pages standing at the doore, said; Why enter ye not? the houre is past, and my Lord is not yet risen. Ladie, quoth they, as yet he bath not called vs, and you know that yesternight he forbad our entrance till we were called: it may be he slept but vndy this night, and therfore now is contented to take his rest. I feare, quoth she, some other matter then sleep doth hinder his calling you, so hursting open the doore, and entring the Chamber, saw the bloud dispersed on the ground, and the heablesse truncke hanging beside the bed, with which sight she made a very pittifull outcry, wherat many noble men and Gentlemen came, who likewise beholding what had happened, synged with them in sorrowfull complaints. Scone was the report of this murder blazed through the City, so that Olimaell hearing thereof, ranne thither in all hast: where he was no sooner present, but Hyppolita thus began. Ah Olimaell, thou

broughte

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

þe broughtest the traitors hither, that have slain my Lord, and by the means bath this Treason been committed. By all our Gods, said ens of the Turks þerþewes present, it is true: but because thou hast suffered Agriola, her Brother and the other Knights to escape, thou willain shalt abide there. So by twing forth his Demilary, killed Oliuæll therewith, saying. Such be their reward that fraterously betray their Sovereigne: mine Unkle of a wise Janizay made the his chiefe Admirall, and thou for his kindness hast requited him with death, but now thy Villany is wortyly recompenced.

Oliuæll thus slaine, his men ranne furiously on the Turks Arpheu, and slew him, with fifty Knights besides that defended his quarrell: and had it not been for an ancient Walla, who with an unhozed Shoulders came to part them, they were in danger of a greater sedition, because they saw none pursue Palmerin and his Companions.

The Walla that had thus pacified the tumult, by þe meanes perswaded the Janizaries, and prevailed so well with them: as the same day he was declared Yonger Warden to the Holdarie deceased, and great Empereur of Turkie. Many injuries did he to Christendome afterward, in revenge of his Brothers death: which yet we will forbear, to rehearse what happened to Palmerin, and his Companions, being on the Sea.

CHAP. XLIV.

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

### CHAP. XLIII.

How Palmerin and his companions met two Turkish Ships, from whom they delivered Estebon the Merchant and his Sonnes: and came to the Isle of Malta, where Palmerin lost them all, and of the sorrow he made for this mishap.



Aurana was so joyfull, that she had so joyntamente escaped the Turkes hands, and beside was so revenged of her chiefe enemy, as nothing could yield her greater contentation: but how much more would she have rejoiced, if she had knowne the daughter of the Wallace: As she sat discouling heron with Palmerin and the Duke of Pontus, Frisoll being alst on the decke, espied four Shippes coming towardes them with full saille: whereupon he called to his companions, that they shoulde presently arme themselves. For (quoth he) I see two Robing Shippes, and they have taken two other, or else my judgement faileth: let vs therefore labour to withstand them, lest we sustaine a further danger.

No sooner had he spoken these words, but they all put themselves in readinesse, so that when the enemy closed with them, and many entred the Shipp, thinking it was yalued: they had a sharper entertainment then they expected, so that not one escaped alive that came aboard, but either were slaine or thrown into the sea. In dede, they overcame both the Pirats, and left not one aliue to carry thynges hereof into Turkie. Afterward, as Palmerin searched the Cabins, to see what þrissenes the Shippes had taken: he espred his Master Estebon, the Marchant of Hermida, and his two Sonnes by him, with two other Merchants chaþned

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

chayned by the bands and neck, in like sort as are the poore  
blades in the Galleyes : whereupon he said :

Trust me Master, he that put this Collar about your  
Necke, was little acquainted with your honest humanity.  
So looking up and downe, for the bunch of Keyes, that open-  
ed the Locks of the chaynes, he espied a Turkish Marri-  
ter, who fearfull of his life had hid himselfe : to whom he  
said : By God villain, if thou shewest me not quickly where  
the Keyes are, I will send thy soule after thy fellowes. Spare  
my life most noble Knight cryed the Turk, and I will give  
ye not only the Keyes, but also shew you such secrets here-  
within, as no other man but my selfe can shew you, wherof  
to infinite wealth and riches.

Dispatch them ( said Palmerin. ) The Moore fetching  
the Keyes, opened the Locks, tooke off their Chaynes, and  
brake the Manacles round about their hands : when Pal-  
merin, lifting his eyes to Heaven, said : Thankes to my  
God, that so happily sent me to succour Estebon, by whose  
meanes I came to the knowlidge of my Friends and Pa-  
rents, and who first gave me Horsis and Armois for knightly  
service. Estebon hearing his words, and marvelling  
not a little, fell on his knee, saying. I beseeche you my Lord  
to tell me your name, to the end I may be thankful to him,  
by whom I have escaped those cruell Ingabels, and received  
such an unspakable benefit. Why Master ( quod Palmerin )  
know you me not ? I am your Servant Palmerin, who you  
first provokid to follow armes by your liberality : and sin-  
ce then haue I followed that profession, and now haue re-  
quitted some part of your kindnesse. Ah my noble Friend  
Palmerin, said old Estebon, suffer me to kille thy hand, for  
if heretofore thou didst deliver me from the Lyons threwe :  
what may I say of this danger, from which I am now de-  
fended ? In a happy houre was that Knightly Furniture  
gibben, and with successfull fortune haue you imployed  
them : but may it please you, to goe with me, I will proffers

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

you of all things necessary, and give you my Donnes here  
to be your Servants.

The King of Sparta seeing Estebon vs such zealous  
syntches, said to him. Father, you are very much deceived  
( imagine you the Donnes to the Emperour of Constantinople, a simple Soulionate : your age ( Father ) makes you for-  
get your selfe. At these wordes the good old man somewhat a-  
frighted, excused himselfe to the King, and turning to Pal-  
merin, said : Alas, my Lord, in not knowing you otherwise  
than one of my Servants, I have offered your excellency  
very great wrong : and great hath bene my deserte of pu-  
nishment, being the great Lord of Grecce so unmercifully:  
But pardon my boldnesse, noble Lord, and let mine igno-  
rance excuse the offence committed : soj unwittingly did I  
fall into this error. Content thy selfe, god Master, quoth  
Palmerin, in nothing hast thou offended me : but if thou  
wilt returne to thy Countrey, these Mallets belonging to  
the Moyses, and all the treasure of them, will I frankly  
bellow on thee. Ah my Lord, answered Estebon, since for-  
sore hath so happily brought me into your company, so  
please you to licence me, loth am I to depart from you : soj  
such stea of Thieves and Robbers are on the seas, as  
hardly can I escape their hands alide, and soj shoulde I  
be, said Palmerin, that you or those Merchants shoulde any  
way miscary, though perhaps your Thieves would glad-  
ly haue ye at home : but this I must tell you, that I cannot  
returne to Constantinople. I shall be contented, said Este-  
bon, to say your good leasure : soj a poore life is better to me  
in this company, then wealthy possesions among miseries.

Hereupon, Palmerin commanding all the riches  
in the Hores Whippes, to be combayed into the other, set  
sore on the Mallets, and boordg sail, rode on merrily. With-  
in these daies after arose a mighty winde at North East,  
which carried them with such violence : as the Pilots tolde

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

Palmerin they were now come on the borders of Persia and very neare the Isle of Malfada, where they arrived before the Sunne setting. They seeing the Countrey so faire and delitable, would needs goe one shose to refresh themselves : for the Ladies were so disempred with the rough storne, as they were very desirous to recreate themselves a little.

Palmerin not able to shun this fatal chancce, went on shose with his Friends and the two Princesses, all the other likewise speedily following them, where they had not long stayed, but they were all diversly enchaunted. Both the Ladies were transformed into the shaps of Hindes, the other to Dogges, Wolves and Leopards, all of them running with such swiftnes, as though the Furies had stod to chase them : but Palmerin could not be enchaunted, by reason of the gift he received of the thre wile Sisters on the Mountaine Artizaria, whereat he greatly grieved, for such was his impatience thus to lose his friends, as he entred into these lamentations.

Ah perbese and unconstant Fortune, how diuers and dangerous are thy treacheries ? Ah my brother tw eruell, why dost thou not exercise thy rage on simple and forsaken soules, but on such as excede in hono: and vertue ? Doubtless my Uncle hath caused this mishap, when I perswaded my Friends to goe against their Christian Brethren, only by feare of my wretched life. As he stood thus complaining, he beheld the Ladie of the Isle with her seruants, comming to take the spors of their boodey : whereof being joyfull, and thinking by hot miseries to find some succour, he ran apace towards her, and falling on his knee, thus spake. Alas noble Lady, if euer pley had power to inde ce: instruct me how to recov'r my companions, and two woyther Ladies transformed into boute Beastes. Malfada swelling with anger, tolde that he was not likebise enchaunted, answered. Wretched Knight, accursed be

thys

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

their power that defended the from my incantations, lise no: them in hope to find any remedy here : for these enchantments are of such strength, as they may not be broken, but by the most skilfull Magician in the world, which thou art not I am well assured, and therefore dooth thou but loose thy labour. But because by mine arte I cannot be revenged on the, some other meanes will I seeke for thy destruction. You therefore my servants, lay hands on him, and carry him to the darkeste of my prisons : that his following daies may be spent in greater misery. Unconscous and despightfull, quoth Palmerin, are these speeches, especially comming from one that wanteth of her knowledge, nor can they be measured by love or charity : and therfore shall I chastise such bad creatures, as refuse a matter no way hurtfull to themselves, but wherin their owne honour might be discerned. With which words he smote her head from her shoulders, and valiantly buckling with the other, in the end left not one to carry reporte of this massacre : afterward he fell into his lamentations againe in this manner.

Unfortunat Palmerin, seest thou not how mishap will never leave thee : for wheres thou thoughtest with comfort to finde the Brother Tryneus, now hath Fortune overwhelmed the with a whole world of mischaunes. Ah noble Agriola and gentle Laurana, two of the most modest Princesses that ever the earth bare, how may ye justly blame me by bring you from wher you lived in hono:, in this accursed place to be transformed to boute Beastes. Never did Circes Deale so cruelly with Grillus, and other Woodsters to the wise Ulysses : as this villainous old dog hath done with me. Had you yet bene altered to Lyons or Eggers, you might have defended your selves from the crueler of other Beastes : but this damned Magiceresse hath transformed you, to the most fearefull and timorous among all other creatures, and therfore subject to every inconveniance.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

By toyall companions who loved me dearer then your Father or Brother : from the Turks that cherished you with such kindness and love, have I brought you to the cruel and mercilesse Malfada. My noble Friend and Brother Tryfoll, what now will avale the haughty Chivalrie ? And gentle Prince Olorico, who for my sake forsooke Country, Parents, Friends and all : how malit thou justly condemnes me of infamious reproch ? what answer shall I make to mine Aunt Arismena, for her noble Husband the King of Sparta ? And vertuous Duke of Pontus, a Knight of high and especiall quality : greatly malit thou blame the foylours to be acquainted with me. Not forgetting the magnanious Prince Eustace, how can I excuse thy hard hap to the good old Duke of Mecena thy Father ? Had it pleased the Soveraigne Creator of all things, that among you my selfe had taken the Strange shape, my quiet wold have bene the better, to accompanay you with mishappe, as I have done in good fortune. Ah sweete Sister Armida, little thinkest thou what offence thy Brother Palmerin hath committed : and gracious Mistress Polynarda, what torment will this hac to your heavenly thoughts, when you shall understand the summe of my ill successe ? Wandering along in these meones, he came to the Enchantresse Castell, where at the Gate he saw two Damsels, who humbly saluting hym, said. Welcome, Sir Knight, here may you repose your selfe if you please. Alas Ladies, quoth he, it is not on me for me to rest, because the Ladie of this place I thinke, being the most ingrate and despightfull woman that ever I saw, hath depyded me of all my joy and comfort : but I hope I have so well paid her for her patnes, as he easer she shall doe no further harme. Yet if any of you have been so well instructed by her, as to knal the viblelich consercions, and will accomplish hit, or tell me, if by force they may be reduced to their former shapes, who remains enchanted here in this Island : soz ever will

## Emperour of Constantioplis. PART.2.

will I bde her Knight, and will preferre her in honour beyond all other of her race. The Damselfilles, (who thought theyr Ladies cunning had brought him thither, that she might abuse him, and afterwards transforome him as was her custome) being amazed at this answere, thus spake.

Accursed Willaine, of an evill death maile then his, whom our Mistresse by her Artificiall skill cannot transforome, now know we that thou hast murdered her: but assure thy selfe to finde vs thy two most mortall enemies, and though we can change thy friends to their former shapes, yet in despite of thy Willany, we wot not, nez shal then know how it may be done.

Away Trumpets (quoth he) get ye going, or else I will send your soules after your Mistresse : and were it not a disgrace to mine honour, to deckle my hands with the bloud of such wicked creatures : By Heavens I wold cut ye as small as fleys to the pot. Then came a Knight scorth of the Castell, who embracing Palmerin, said : My Lord Palmerin, what croile foylours hath brought you into this accursed Island ? Palmerin seeing such strange events succede one an other, knew not what to imagine : but at length returned this answere. You wot hold me excused Sir, for in truth I know ye not : Whyle my Lord (quoth the Knight) habe you forgotten Dyardo, whose life you defended in the King of Bohemias Court ? By Heavens (said Palmerin) I could not call you to remembraunce, But tell me good Knight, what aduenture brought you hither ? For my chance hath bene so unforunate, as the rehersall wold be most dolorous. Then Dyardo declared, how the King had sent him with some small assistance, to pursue the Foylle of the Prowle pyrates, who had done many injuries to his Subjects. And (quoth he) after I had long time chased them, the other Galleyes came, and joining with them, took us and thes all my men.

At length, by tempestuous weather, we were cast on this

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

Isle, where we lading to seek fresh Water, all the Moores were changed into Harts, Dogs, and Bozes: but the Lady sparing me in regard of amorous desire, hath kept me in this Castle a yeare and moze, abusing me at her owne pleasure, and never could I compasse any means to escape hence againe, for if I had but made offer neare the Gchte, by sorowle strokis have I been beaten backe, yet not able to discerne who swiste me.

Your hap (quoth Palmerin) hath bene very hard, but her exrilled head lying on the Chere Gde, persuades me hereafter she shall doe no moze harme. But tell me good Dyardo, is there no one within so I killfall in her Magicall Science, as we may winne to doe vs some good? Not one (answred Dyardo) therfore I am loth you should stay long here, in doubt of further danger. I will then (said Palmerin) go seeke such a one as shall end these Enchantments: and because you shall not be iniuried by any in the Castle, we will make them fall in portions till my returne. After they had so done, they went to the Stable, where Dyardo gave Palmerin a lusty Courser, and taking leave of him, set forward on his journey.

### C H A P . X L V .

How Palmerin departing from the Isle of Malfada, came to the Court of the Princesse Zephira, she that kepr Trynous transformed: where he was entertained to ayde her against her eldest Brothor, who vexed her with dayly troubles.

**I**mmediately after Palmerin had left the Island of Malfada, he passed through a dangerous Riser: the same Night he came to a little Village, where taking by his Lodging, he fell a talking with his Hoste in the Arabian tongue, (if he knew any one that was expert and skillfull in Algry)

## Emperour of Constantinople. PAK 1.2.

Pigromancy? I know none (quoth the Hoste) but an old Lady in an Island hard by, to whom our Princesse not long since went, for remedy of a strange disease, wherewith she is tormentted. Where abideth your Princesse (said Palmerin?) Not past thirty miles hence, (quoth the Hoste) in a City called Elain. Perhaps (quoth Palmerin) by her means I may be better resolved. So bidding his Hoste godd Night withdrawe himself into his Chamber, where many Imaginations passed him concerning the Princesse Zephira.

It may be (quoth he within himselfe) that the Enchantresse unable to helpe her, hath yet assigned her by direction, unto some other man, more expert in that Divilish science: who compassing her health, happily may gte me souke counsell to amend my misfortune. In this opinion the next morning he rode to the City of Elain, heauy and sad, yet in hope of comfort: and as he came neare the City, he was inclosed with two or three hundred Light Pavlemen, whom the Prince Maulerind, Brother to Zephira had there ambushed, to take all Abaunt-carriers and Knights passing by them. Yet observed they these condicions, that who so would take the Princesse Daye, and swere fathfull service, should sustaine no harmes: but such as refused so to do, were carryed into the City, theyre Hores and Armoir taken from them, and they inclosed in strong Prison. These Bozes were amazed to see Palmerin so richly Armed, and much moze beholding him so bravely mounted, wherefore they said to him:

Hold your self by Knight, and swere to maintaine our Princes quarrell: else be assured thy Death is present. The condition is very hard (said Palmerin) but so I have heard the wrong offered by the King to your Princesse: I will sustaine her cause, not as a Prisoner enured hereto, but of mine owne godd will, as all Knights Errant are bound by duty, to defend the just Quarrell of distressed Ladys. Presently was Palmerin brought to the Princesse, and her Brother,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Brother, who were conferring togeather about thys war, and assayres: when the Knight that combated Palmerin, kept to the Prince Maulerino, and thus spake. *My Lord,* a Knight lately taken, whom so that we have found honest and courteous, we have suffered him to remaines Armed and commit him to your opinion. While the Knight continued these speches, transformed Trineus, who lay at the Princesses Foot, setting Palmerin with his Deder open, ran and leaped on him, whining and laluting on him so loyally, as every one greatly marvailed therat. In biese, they might discerne by his cryes, tolling about his legs and plisfull mourning, that faine he would have spoken, and shewed his loyall friend his inward complai- nings. The Princesses marvelling at this strange occasion, said. I thinke (Sij Knight) my Dogge knowes you, so since Malfada gave him me, I never could see him so falone on any body. In sooth Spadame (answere Palmerin) to my remembraunce, I never saw your Dog before this present. Herepon he called him to her, and made many meanes that she shal come to her, yet he wold not leabe Palmerin, but shaking his head still luhned to his friend, as crabbing aside and succour at his hand, where with the Princesses mowed, thus spake.

I pray the Knight conceale not anything from me, so I perswade my selfe, that thou hast bene heretofore some great friend to the Enchantresse Malfada, seeing my Dogge is so loath to come from thee. Let me understand the trouth I pray thee, and if thou likewise wolt assist me against my cruell Brother, thou shalt be honorably beset, and thy ordinary pay redoubled. Madam (answred Palmerin) here you may behold the most distressed Knight living and a Christian, whose hard fortune hath bene such, as arriving in the Enchantresse Isle wheresof you spake: I haue lost five friends, my trus and honourable compa- nyne, and with them two Ladys, who in all the rives may

## Emperour of Constançinople. PART. I.

not be equalled. Yet haue I revenged their losse on the old Dugge and her servants, whose breathles bones remaine so swde to the soules of the arte. And because I haue (faire Princesse) your sole was not long since with her, so, counsell in some unhappy fortune besallen you, faine would I know, may it please you to graunt me so much labour, if she affigned you to any other moare skilfull then her selfe, by whom you not alone shall finde remedy, but me tormenting grieses may likewiso be conforted. Good Knight answered the Princess, the Gods themselves will travayle to helpe the, and it may be I haue learned of her, by whose death thou hast revenged the kyng of many noble persons: some hope of further good, to sole those pestilens which thy speeches bewray. True it is, that I stayed with Malfado the space of eight dayes, yet not learning one thing of her woddy the rehearsal, this onely expected: She told me that in the Kings Court of Crisca and Romata, remained an auncient Knight named Muzabelino, by whom (if my malady were curable) I shold finde helpe, and by no other man whither, so did she extoll him before all other. And had not the kyng my Father died soon after my returme, and by injurious brother ever since mis- led me: long ere this had I gone to that skilfull man, whom I meant to find, so sone as I can bring my trou- bles to any good end. By all our Gods, quoth the Prince Maulerino, setting Malfada to dead, Muzabelino may knut all the enchantments: but dairing her life, neither he nor all the Magicians in the world were able to com- plese it.

As soz the Kingdomes of Romata, it is very faire from this Countrey: the greater will your paine and danger be in travayling thither. Right pleasant wolt the paine be to me, saith Palmerin, so may I recover my dearest friends againe: and soz you sweete Spadame will I adventure my life, either to winnes you peace with your Brother, or a hap- pie

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

Ile, where he landing to seek fresh Water, all the Moores were changed into Harts, Dogs, and Boyses: but the Lady sparing me in regard of amorous desire, hath kept me in this Castle a yeare and moze, abusing me at her alone pleasures, and never could I compasse any means to escape hence againe, soz if I had but made offer neare the Gate, by soozable strokis have I been beaten backe, yet not able to discerne who swiste me.

Your hap (quoth Palmerin) hath bene very hard, but her earells head lying on the Moze Ade, persuades me heresafter she shall doe no moze harme. But tell me good Dyardo, is there no one within so I killfall in her Magicall Science, as we may wiane to doe vs some good? Not one (answered Dyardo) theresoze I am loth you should stay long here, in doubt of further danger. I will then (said Palmerin) go seke such a one as shall end these Enchantments: and because you shall not be injured by any in the Castle, we will make them fall in prissons till my returne. After they had so done, they went to the Stable, where Dyardo gav Palmerin a lusty Courser, and taking leave of him, set sozwards on his journey.

### CHAP. XLV.

How Palmerin departing from the Isle of Malfada, came to the Court of the Princesse Zephira, she that kept Trynew transformed: where he was entertained to ayde her against her eldest Brother, who vexed her with dayly troubles.

**I**mmediately after Palmerin had left the Iland of Malfada, he passed through a dangerous Rive: the same night he came to a little Village, where taking by his Lodging, he fell a talking with his Hoste in the Arabian tongue, (she knew any one that was expert and skillfull in Pigras)

### Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Pigromansye? I know none (quoth the Hoste) but an old Lady in an Island hard by, to whom our Princesse not long since went, for remedy of a strange disease, wherewith she is tormented. Where abideth your Princesse (said Palmerin) Not past thirty miles hence, (quoth the Hoste) in a City called Blain. Perhaps (quoth Palmerin) by her means I may be better resolved. So bidding his Hoste god right withys to him selfe into his Chamber, where many Imaginations passed him concerning the Princesse Zephira.

It may be (quoth he within himselfe) that the Encantress wants to helps her, bath yet assigned her by direction, unto some other man, more expert in that Witches science: who compalling her health, happily may gite me some counsell to amend my misfortune. In this opinion, on the next morning he rode to the City of Blain, heavy and sad, yet in hope of comfort: and as he came nere the City, he was inclosed with two or thre hundred Right Worsermen, whom the Prince Maulerind, Brother to Zephira had there ambushed, to take all Abaunt-carrriors and Knights passing by them. Yet obserued they these condicions, that who so would take the Princes Paye, and swere fathfull service, should sustaine no harme: but such as refused so to do, were carryed into the City, their Horses and Armour taken from them, and they inclosed in strong prissons. These Woyses were amazed to see Palmerin so richly Armed, and much moze bebolding him so bravely mounted, wheresoze they said to him:

Held your self by Knight, and swere to maintaine our Princes quarrell: else be assured thy Death is present. The conditions very hard (said Palmerin) but soz I have heard the wrong offered by the King to your Princesse: I will sustaine her cause, not as a Prisoner ensticed hereto, but of mine own good will, as all Knights Errant are bound by duty, to defend the just Quarrell of distressed Ladys. Presently was Palmerin brought to the Princesse, and her Brother,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Brother, who were conferring together about these mat-  
tressayres: when the Knight that contended Palmerin,  
swept to the Prince Maulerino, and thus spake. See here  
my Lord, a Knight lately taken, whom so that we have  
found honest and courteous, we have suffered him to re-  
maine Armed and commit him to your opinion. Whiles  
the Knights continued these speeches transformed Trineus,  
who lay at the Princesses foot, seeing Palmerin with his  
Saber span, ran and leaped on him, whipping and flogging  
on him so ladingly, as every one greatly marvellen therat.  
In breste they might discerne by his eyes, rolling about his  
legs and plottfull mourning, that satne he would haue spe-  
ken, and shewen his loyall friend his inward complai-  
nings. The Princessesse marvelling at this strange occasion,  
said. I thinke ( say ) Knight my Dogge knowes you, so  
since Malfada gaue him me, I never could see hym so falone  
on any booy. In sooth Madamis ( answered Palmerin ) to my  
remembrance, I never saw your Dog before this present.  
Wherepon she called him to her, and made many meanes  
that she shold come to her, yet he would not leaue Palmerin,  
but shaking his head still hynchid to his friend, as crasing  
aside and succour at his hand, where with the Princessesse mar-  
ved, thus spake.

I pray the Knight conceale not any thing from me,  
so I perswade my selfe, that thou hast bene heretofore  
some great friend to the Enchantresse Malfada, seeing my  
Dogge is so loath to come from thee. Let me understand  
the truthe I pray thee, and if thou likewise will affist me a-  
gainst my cruell Brother, thou shalt be honorably used,  
and thy ordynarie way redoubled. Madamis ( answered Pal-  
merin ) here you may behold the most distressed Knight  
living and a Christian, whose hard fortune hath bene such,  
as arriving to the Enchantresse Ide wheresof you spake:  
I haue lost five friendes, my true and honourable compa-  
nye, and with them two Ladys, who in all vertues may

## Emperour of Constanctinople. PART. 2.

not be equalles. Yet haue I revenged their losse on the old  
Dagge and her seruants, whose heathenish bodies remain  
to forme to the soules of the ure. And because I haue  
( saire Princesse ) your selfe was not long since with her,  
so comfelle in some unhappy fortune besallen you, satne  
would I knowe, may it please you to graunt me so much  
fauer, if she alledged you to any other moare shiffull then  
her selfe, by whom you mett alone shall finde remedy, but me  
comfelinge gretles may I the bette be confuted, Good  
Knight answered the Princesse, the Gods themselves will  
trabatid to helpe thee, and it may be I haue learned of her,  
by whose death thou haue revenged the wrong of many no-  
ble persons: some hope of further good, to ease those pain-  
es whiche the speeches bewray. True it is, that I stayed  
with Malfado the space of eight dayes, yet not learning any  
thing of her woddy the rehersall, this euely expected: she told me that in the Kings Court of Crisca and Romata,  
remained an auncient Knight named Muzabelino, by  
whome ( if my malady were curable ) I shoulde first helpe,  
and by no other man wherforer, so did she exell me be-  
yond all other. And haue not the King my Father died sone  
after my rebirth, and by injurious brother eber since mis-  
locked me: long ere this had I gone to that shiffull man,  
whom I meane to finde, so sone as I can bring my trou-  
bles to any good end. By all our Gods, quoth the Prince  
Maulerino, seeing Malfada is dead, Muzabelino may  
knith all the enchantments: but dairing her life, neither  
haue all the Magitatis in the world were able to com-  
plexe it.

As so the Kingdomes of Romata, it is very faire from  
this Countrey: the greater will your paine and danger be  
in trabatting thither. Right pleasant will the paine be to  
me, saith Palmerin, so may I recouer my dearest friends  
againe: and so you sweete Madamis will I aduenture my  
life, either to winnes you peace with your Brother, or a hap-  
pie

## The History of Palmerin D'Olivus.

pie victory by his death, that we may the sooner set forward to Romata.

A thousand thanks good Knight, quoth the Princesse, and this day well we know what our W<sup>r</sup>other intendeth: if peace it is welcome, if warre, we must defend our selves so well as we may. Will all the Dogge cling about Palmerins fete, so that he demanded of the Princesse, if she brought him from the I<sup>n</sup>l<sup>e</sup> of Maltada, so doubtlesse, quoth he, I think it be some Knight transformented by that cruell woman, who pretolozeth bath knowlene me. At which words the Doge howled exceedingly, when Palmerin, tooke an oath that he would search all the world over, to finde some means to bring him to his former shape, that he might know from whence this love proceded. The next day the King Tyreno assaulted the City, who was slain in the battaille by Palmerin, so afterward was Maulerino crownd King of Nabar, and all the Countrey enjoyed their former quiet: wherevpon the Princesse Zephira gave Palmerin her Dogge, who requited her with many gracious thanks, because he greatly suspected, that it was his friend Tryneus transformented into that shape: but now let vs returne to the Molossians of Babilon, understanding how his Army was discomfited at Constantiople.

CHAP.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

### Chap. XLVI.

How one of the Nephewes to the King of Balisarca, brought newes to the Seldane of his Uncles death, the foyle of his Arme, the losse of Palmerin and Olorico, And how the Princesse Alcidiana bought Ptolome, whom she greatly honoured for Palmerins sake.



The King of Balisarca, (as you have heard before) being Autus, his Arme discomfited, and all his Galleys burnt before Constantinople, one of his Nephewes that kept the Straite of the Bosphorus with two Foyles, left any succour shuld come that way to the Christians, by one Galley that escaped, heard all this misfortune: wherefore making hastes backe againe, fearing to be taken, at leng<sup>t</sup> barred in the Molossian Kingdome, where not flaging lang, he posted to the Court, and tolde Molosse reb<sup>al</sup>ed all that had happened. When the Molosse heard how his Army was thus overthowen, Palmerin whome he loved so well, and the Prince Olorico lost in the storme on the sea: vexed with greate and rage, he called his Lord Ambassador Maucetto to him, saying: Valte that god Maucetto to my W<sup>r</sup>other the Seldane of Persia, and desce him to leue us a strong Army against the Moneth of March next ensuing, to encounter with the Emperour of Greece: promising him the spoile whatsoeuer it be, reserving so my selfe nothing but the same of revenges.

Maucetto departed presently on his journey, and by the way met Sir Moores, leading two Christiane to the Molossian Court to sell, which were Ptolome and Colmelio, of whom he demanded wheresoever they were so bound in chaynes:

## The Hitory of Palmerin D'Oliva.

My Lord, quoth one of the **Moors**, they be Christian slaves, who not long since were taken at the sea by Oliveriell Admiral to the great Turke. And how came you by them said Maucetto. The Admiral, quoth the Moor, gave them to one of his cozines, now is dead, and his wife hating death to keep them any longer, sends them to the Court to be sold for money. Maucetto bought Colmilio of them, refusing Ptolome because he was somewhat sickly, and so passed on his Embassage. The **Moor**es coming to the Court with poor Ptolome, and placing him among other slaves that seemed to be false, there came a deformed **Moor**, far worse misshapen than was Thersites the Greek, and he would natures boy Ptolome of the Merchant: but Ptolome disdaining to be subject to so base a creature, gave him such a stroke on the Stomacke with his fist, as made him tumble over backward, saying; Thou monstrous Villaine, let me rather die, then come into thy subsection. At this instant passed by the **Princesse Alchidiana**, smiling to see the **Moor**e ly along: but when she beheld the good personage of Ptolome, she remembred her lover Palmerin, and was therewith moved thus to speake. How durst thou take such hardnes upon thee, being a bondslabe and a captine, thus to strike a **Moor**, son of this Countrey? Ptolome perceiving by the Ladies attending on her, that she was the Moldanes Daughter, falling on his knee, thus answered.

Allured Madame, rather deare I death, then to live at such an ill favoured villaines controll, my selfe being a Knight at armes. Are you then a Knight, saith the **Princesse**, I am good Madame, quoth he, although my seruitude hath very much altered me. Alchidiana without any further questions, delivered the Merchant two hundred **Meraphes**, and by two of her Wikkars caused him to be conducted to her Chamber, where he was presently disrobed of his baselye garments, and cloathed in such as well became a

Knight

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Night to ware, afterward, she commanded her attendants to depart the Chamber, and comming to Ptolome, she thus he spake,

Snow my Knight, I intreate you by the holy faith you owe to your best belovde, that you will truly tell me, by what misfortune you happened first into thraldom. Madame, quoth he, saving of your owne grace and bounity, you have delibered me from those villaines that made false of my life: I will not fable with you in any one point, but tell you a **Histoire** replete with wonderfull secretes. Having revealed the manner of his taking, and all the mishaps he endured ever since, the ladies trichling delene his chalnes, he saith. And yet sweete Lady, all these passed miseries, and still abiding your Babe, grieves me not so much, as the losse of my dere friend, the best Knight in the world, who went to see his falcon sike, when the Pirates came and un-happily took vs. Tell me your friend, quoth the **Princesse**, what may the Knight be called, of whom you make such estimation? Quoth Ptolome, he namelie himselfe Palmerin D'Oliva.

My soberaigne Gods, said Alchidiana, habe you been companion to the noble Palmerin? What have I in truth Madame, quoth he, and know more of his affaires then any other man doth. Unhappy that I am, saith the **Princesse**, now see I well that I am deceived in all my hope. Nay good Knight, may moze, I conjure thee by the faith to the soberaigne Creator of all things, to tell me, if the law of our Land, and bath binne summe of long, say no? By God Madame, answered Ptolome, your adiuration is such, as rather will I make a sacrifice of my selfe, then be untrue to you in any thing. He is a Christian, borne in Grece, and never had defaute in his speech, if discreet consideration of following events, either to escape captivity or death did not enforce him to scorne such a deceipt, for he is most expert among all other, in dissimbling any matter

say

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliver.

may turne him aduantage. When such hath been my fortune, quoth Alchidiana, as his baxnes, bounyn, and lone forsegut, veso so; the spise of a peare and mize in my fathars Court, made me so religioulye powred to him in love, as I never late, to make vther chyfie: and I stowre by all the Gods, if I heare not the vster cryngs of blis sy thys, my spirit will so lase this wretched pite, and I speke beter fortunamong the soules in Hellw. An impertious lobe, how wondervull is the strok: & my friend is contrary to me in law and pycision, a knyght errant, unknouyn, abisen from me, and lays me hys: soz these occasions, were I the onely Daugher to the great Emperour of Turkie, I neither can, or will change my former optynion.

Whiche is what shall, and let my Father make an oblation of my bloud to his secret Idol, I will not deist from lobing hym. And then my friend (quoth he) to Ptolome, because thou hast not hys trah from me, be thou at this instant free, and use thy liberty as thou pleasest: soz rather let me avide the trah, then the companion to my noble Lord lyster Hawke by me. Ptolome falling on his knee, hanlyk killed her hand, and began to reveale the knyghtly Chivalrie that Palmerin and Trincus sometime did in England: likewise how they brought the Kings Daugher from thence, who remained captiue among the Turks, and her Husband given as slave to the Admirals Cosen. It is enough said the Princesse, talk to me no more hereof, soz by the great God, the very remembryance of hym is greater griele to me, then the mercilesse servitude a poore slave endureth. The lobe he bare to you, to the other knyght, and the yong English Princesse, whose misfortune I cannot suffisiently bewaile: calleth me hence to travayle in search of hym, and may I find hym with them, right gladsome will the journey be to me, because he is the onely darling and labore of Hoylaine. And now shall I tell

## Emperouer of Constantynople. PART.2.

tell you how I means to colour mine intent. By Father met knowing your captiuitie, to him shall I say how you are the onely companion to Palmerin, and hitther are you come to take hym, as habing heard before that he remained in your service: of this I dare assur you his Majestie so dederly loueth Palmerin, that he will deliver you all things necessary for his search, be it by Land or See. And if your God shall favour you so much as in your travayles you happen to finde hym, or else to send me certayne tydings of hym: you doe me the greatest honour that other knyght did to distressed Lady. The syways was the Princesse in her amoyous deslie, and lathe to waste tyme with redius delay: that very day she acquainted her Father therewith, and so cunningly she plaid the Matris, as h' Holiane gave Ptolome Armoir, Horses, Merchants, and sevy knyghtis to attend on him. So doa, he surpised hym with two great shippes that he might acquire at all the poyses on the See, soz Palmerin.

The day being come of his departure, he took his leave of the Holiane, the Princesse Alchidiana accompanayng hym to the poyses, where soz her adies she gaue hym a swet kisse, saying: Sir knyght, if your fortune be such as to bring me the man, who only hath power to mitigate my tormentis; beside the continual labours of a Princesse, I will make you one of the greatest Lords in the Olyent. Maran (quoth he) I will doe my diligence, and till I returne let god hope perswade ye, So sayng Halle ther set to See, where we will leave hym till he meet with Palmerin.

CHAP. XLVII.

How Palmerin and the Princess Zephyra, departed from Elain towards Romata, to seek Muzabelino, and what happened by the way in their journey.



After that Maulerino was crowned King of Mabor, the Rebelleus Subjects brought to obedience, and the bodye of the slaine King Tyrno enterred: the young Princesse Zephyra and Palmerin, thought long to set forward on their journey, wheresoever the King allowing them a very honourable Traine, bequathed them to their desired fortune. Having passed many Regions, and sundry dangers incident in travaille, chiefly of a Ballisque, whom Palmerin with the helpe of the Dog Trincus bariantly overcame, at length they entred the Realme of Romata, where by commandement of the King Abimar, their entertainment was according to their estates, the occasion thereof being thus.

This King Abimar holding the greatest possessions in that Region, would never yield himselfe as subject to the Sigrayre of Persia: whereat the Seldane now growing offended, sent an Ambassador to command him presently to determine on his obedience, or else he would over-runne his Country with a mighty Army, and put both old and young to the Sword.

Abimar abashed at this Embassayre, demanded counsell of the wise Muzabelino what answer he shold make the Ambassador, whereto the Sagittan thus answered. Fear not my Lord the threatening menaces of the Seldane, for in that you have two noble Sonnes, to wit, the Prince Tomano and Drumino, Knights of high and speciaall account: yet come there two others, (one whereof may not

Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

be knowne) with the Princesse Zephyra, Daughter to the King of Nabor, who shall deliver you from his tyrannie, and make him your friend; therefore bis may not to send him a hardy answer, as well besmeth a Prince sute, and not be commanded. And though one of the Knights that commeth with the Princesse, shall a while be unknolynge to you, by the bounty of his compantons, with whom no other may well compare: yet ere long you shall know him, to your vs little joy and contentation. Abimar giving credit to Muzabelinos spaches, gav charge in all the Cities where through the Princesse shoulde passe, that she shold be entertained with honourable triumphes, as if himselfe had been in company. And though the Prince Tomano grieved hereat, who loved the yongest Daughter to the Seldane of Persia, yet the King answered the Ambassador: that he wold maintaine his right by the sword, and if the Seldane came to assaile him, he wold defend his Countrey so well as he could.

The Ambassador dispatched with this answere, Tomano came to Muzabelino, saying. Ah my deare friend Muzabelino, what yong haue you done me, in persuading my Father to hold Warre with the Seldane? Whiles Daughter you know I love in such sort, as if I obtaine her not in mariage, hardy can my life long endure. Content your selfe my Lord, answered Muzabelino: for if the two Knights that come bring fortune for your Father, you must expect the like for your selfe. But said the Prince, may I not know their names? Let it suffice ( quoth Muzabelino) what I haue laid, yet hereof I dare assure you, that they are Christians, and extract of the greatest lineage on the earth. In bounty, and valour incomparabile: whereof if you list to make experiance, and thereby to credit what I haue sayd beside, I shall shew you a meane availeable for the prince. I haue shalfe two Tents to be erected by the Cedar Gommeine, which is halfe a mile distant from this

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

City, in the one of them let your Brother Drumino be and your selfe, with some of the best Knights in your Fathers Court, and in the other let your Sister be, accompanied with ten of her chiefe Ladies, and about a Bow shot from thence towards the high-way side, you shall set by a Marble pillar; whereon let these lines be engraven.

Sir Knight, in these Pavillions doth remaine,  
A Lady faire, kept by a Princes Sonne :  
Forfeite him by Joust, and wiane her hence againe,  
Thou maist not passe before the deed be done.

If it happen that they passe by and see not the pillar, send one of the Ladies to them, to let them understand, that they may not passe, before one of them have Jousted with the Prince and his Knights. If they be vanquished by him, the Lady must be delivered to him: yet with this condition, that he refuse not to grant her one demand. By Mahomet, said Drumino, husband to the Lady, I will not meddle in this matter, he may be such a one, as if he hap to winnes my wife, he will be loth to rejoyce her back again. Feare not that (quoth the Pagitian) he is so courteous, and hath so faire a friend himselfe, as he neyther may, or will withdraw her. By heauen, said Tomano, I will cope with him, and to morrow let the pillar and Pavillons be erected, there will I with my compantons stay his coming. See here the cause why the King Abimar, commandado the Princesse Zephira and her Knights to be so honorably entertained. By this time is the Princesse come within a dayes journey of Romata, and Tomano with his Brother, Sister, Ladies and Knights, betake themselves to the Pavillons, hearing that Zephira was come so neare: and bearing themselves Armed, their Sister decked likewise in most sumptuous ornaments, they bowed to breake many Lances for her sake.

CHAP.

Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

## CHAP. XLVIII.

How Palmerin Jousted against Tomano, Drumino, and their Knights, whom he all dismounted, and what entertainment the King Abimar, and the wise Negro-mancer Muzabelino made them.



By this time is the Princesse with Palmerin and her company, come to the place where the Pavillons are erected, and not seeing the pillar, they passed on: wherefore Tomano sent a Damosell to declare the conditions of the Passage. Palmerin setting himselfe somewhat wearie, made this answer. Damosell, you may say to the Prince and his Knights, that the Princesse Zephira is not in our garde, as the Lady he fightes for abideth with him. No comes he hither to be fought for, rather doth he intreat him to spare vs the Joust, in that it will be small honour to him to conquer Knights overlaboured in trabble, and whose Horses are not able for that exercise.

The Damosell certifying the Prince of this answere, he grew into anger, swearing they shold not passe before they tried their fortune: wherefore he sent the Damosell againe, who thus spake to Palmerin. Sir Knight, your excuses may not serue you, you must either Joust, or leue the Princesse behinde you. Trust me Damosell, answered Palmerin, sooyt shold I be to accompany her so farre, and leue her in the custod of one I know not, did your Prince shew moze courtesie, it would agree much better with his order: but because he shal not thinke, that we refuse the Joust through saue or cowardise, say he shal have his desire both he and his Knights shall try their fortune ere we passe further.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

This answere returned to the Prince, Drumino first heved himself in the field, and by unpoztunate intrety, certaine of the Princesse Knights would first try their valour: but such was their ill fortune, as Crumino vanquished them one after another, Zephira somewhat offended herat, entreated Palmerin either to win them passage, or else with his successe she was content to stay prisoner. I ges Madame ( quoth Palmerin ) and Fortune syde me, as I regard the safetye of your hono. Muzabelino, having acquainted the King with this pastime, they came in habble of gnt to behold it, at what time the Prince Drumino encounred Palmerin. But not to hold you with tedious discourse, considering which was the victorye in fessured, the two Princes and all their Knights were manfully spoyled by Palmerin.

The Joust being ended, and the King returned againe to the City: Muzabelino came to Palmerin, and having saluted him with great reverence, thus spake. Worthe Lord, who onely deseruest the name of Chivalry, let me intreate you to excuse the Kings Son, who to make prouesse of your valour, by my meanes attempted this noble adventure, from which you have escaped with great honour, and to their shame that made the challenge. What are you Sir, said Palmerin, that know we so well, and the cause why I came into this Country? Your friend Muzabelino, ( quoth he ) whom yet have taken such paines to finde, and who knowing you to be a Christian, will kepe you from all dangers among these Mahomettes. Palmerin suddenly alighting from his Horse, come and embraced him, saying. Noble friend, suffer me to kisse your hand as a witnessse of my reverence to your honorable Age. Not so my Lord, answered Muzabelino, rather suffer me to doe my duty, to that incomparable person, by whose meanes ere like None be past, the greatest nobility in the world shall receive incredible honour.

While

## Empcrou of Constantinople. PART.2.

while these courteous Ceremonies endured, the conquered Prince with her Ladys cam from the Hamilton, and salutting Palmerin with great conreste, said. De hys Hys Knight the Lady, who trusting in your honora ble benignity, comoneth to submit her selfe as your dispostion, being wonne with more choyce Chivalry, then ever any other Lady was. Notwithstanding, I hope that you will not refuse to graunt me one demand, according to the conditions agreed in the Joust. Palmerin seeing her so discrete and modest, so sumptuous in Apparel, and accompanied with so many Ladies, judged that she was the Kings Daughter, and wile to the Prince Drumino, wherefore entertaining her very graciously, he thus replyed. Unfitting it is faire Lady, that a Princesse of so high and speci al quality and worth, shoule be subiect to a poore and unknown Knight: and though the agreement of the Joust be such, yet doe I humbly thanke you for this honour, bequeathing you to your former liberty, and referring you to him that hath best right to you.

A thousand thanks worthe Lord, said the Princesse, now see I that words of Muzabelino to my father are true, that the Knight who conduced Madame Zephira, as in Chivalrye surpasseth all other, so in franche minds and Liberality he hath not his second, which was the chiefe cause why I aduentured my self in this hazard of Fortune.

Madame ( quoth Palmerin ) if the wile Muzabelino hath used any spach of me in mine absence, and to my honour, it proceeded not by my vertue, but his good will in so doing, which if I live, I will one day acknowledge. Right welcome ale you said the Princesse, and faire Zephira the rather for your sake: and such be the houre of your arrivall here, as you may obtaine the end of your deßies. Zephira humbly thanked the Princesse, Tomano, Drumino, and all the rest embracing Palmerin, thinking it no diſhonest to be conquered by him: they mounted all on Horsebacke,

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

and comming to the City, they found the King there ready with an honourable traine to receive them : who saluting the Princesse Zephira very kindly, said. No marvell Madame, if you darst undertake so long a journey, having the onely Knight of Fortune in your company, as my Sonnes have good occasion to witness : and he that committeth her selfe to his charge, may be well assured of speciall desence. Zephira with humble thanks requiting the King, Palmerin and all the rest graciously welcomed : they rode all to the Wallace, where being entertained in choycest sorte Muzabelino still accompaned Palmerin, who forgot not his wanted kindeste to his loving Dogge.

### C H A P. X L I X.

The talke that the Princesse Zephira and Palmerin had with the wife Muzabelino : and how Palmerin departed from Romara, to the Castell of the tenn Rockes.



The Princesse Zephira, who had not as yet talked with Muzabelino, in the Morning sent for him and Palmerin : she causing them both to sit downe by her, beganne her speeches in this manner. My Lord, if your wisedome knowledges and great Judgement have acquainted you with the cause of my comming hither at this time, and that you be pleased to doo any thing for the labours of my Palmerin, let pitte parswade you, for in you onely consisteth my remedy. Madame ( quoth Muzabelino, we not such speeches, for what me Husband practise hath taught me, you must make no account of : but referre your selfe wholly to the Supreme Creator, who by the meanes of Noble Palmerin, will restore your health,

blm

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2

him will I acquainte with the manner how it must be compassed,

Your Disease happened by smelling to a flower, and by the smell of another it must be recovered. The flower appointed to give you Health, groweth in an Arbour in the Castell of the ten Rockes, and kept by the Enchantment of a Lady moze skillfull in all Magicall Artes, then ever was the skillfull Medea. This Lady deceaseth a hundred yeres since and moze. She setting before her death the vertue of this flower, and of a Wyrd which is kept there by the selfe same means, having Enchanted them in a Garden, the most sumptuous in the world : raised tenne Rockes of Marble without the Castell, each one ascending higher then an other, and by these Rockes was the Castell unmed. Such Enchantments did the Lady Exercise on them, as when any one thinketh to passe by them, presently starteth out of each Rock an Armed Knight, who returneth the adventurer so sorely, as to this day they have not borne passed by any. Couragious therfore must he be that passeth these Rockes, which if Palmerin by his bounty and prudence doe not accomplish, no man living can end the Adventure : for by force not cunning, must the Enchantment be ended. When the Princesse heard , that by the dangerous travell of Noble Palmerin her health must be restored, she thus sorrowfully complained.

Oh Gods, ye suffiseth it not that heretofore this good knight adventures his life, in the dangerous Battell when my W<sup>r</sup> her was slaine : but now he must abide the diuellish Conjurations, where Death is daily and hourly expected : Shall I consent to offer him such wrong , and be guilty of his Blood, who surpasseth all other in Chyualry : rather let my death be a warrant for his safety, then Noble Palmerin should endure such perill for me. Lament not Madame, quoth Muzabelino, before you have cause, he that am Malfada and her Servants, is so highly and special-

ly

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Ig fauoured of the Heavently powers, as no Enchantment whatsoeuer hath any power to hurt him. Why Madam, (said Palmerin) thinke you my good will is like to do you service, when when I was first brought to your Court? Forbeare these teares I pray you, and offend not your self: for such is my hope in God, that what is done by man shall be destrayed by man: besides, it will be great reproach to me, if comming into strange Countries to seeke Adventures, I shall depart without tryall of my fortune. Muzelino hearing him speake so couragiouly, tooke him aside saying: Noble and hardy Knight, whom feare of Death cannot dismay, happy shall I account my selfe to see the any service.

And to the end thou maile with better affliction follow this Enterprize, assure thy selfe to passe the Rockes with safety, and enter the Castle with happy victory, where ending all the Adventures therein contained, thou shalt finde a part of remedy for recovering thy companion, but not all, for the rest is in the C. wer of Mallada, where as yet thou canst not enter, but at thy retурne shalt easily open, and in the end soysally finds all thy Companions and Friends. For the rest, feare not my discovery of thy secret loves and Parentage, which is the most noble in all Christendome: for rather will I be torn in a thousand pieces, then so gree a Knight shall be injured by me. Seeing you know so much (qd. Palmerin) I commit all to God and you, let me therefore right soone crabe leave of the King for my departure because I long that the Princesses were eased. Right soone was the King to part with him so sone, yet the hōpe of his retурne somewhat pacified him. And when the newes were spred abroad that Palmerin shold travaille to the Castle of the tene Rockes: Tomano Drumino and the Princess Zephira would needs beare him company, which he being not able to gaue way, because they were importunate on him, gave his consent. So departing from Romata,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

Romata, they made such haste in their journey, as within few dayes after they arrived at the Castle: and comming to the first Rock, they beheld a goodly Sword, enclosēd therein up to the Creste. The two young Princes marvelling thereat, alighted from their Horses, and attayled to by strenght to pull it out, which were they not able to doe: wherefore Tomano entreated Palmerin to try his fortune, who after many courteous refusals, offered to pull it forth, but a searesfull flame of fire suddenly issued forth of the Rock, whch compelled them to retyre back, wherefore Palmerin said to the Princes: This Sword I see must be none of ours, wherefore it is vaine to strive any further.

### CHAP. L.

How Palmerin passed the tenne Rockes, vanquished the tene Enchanted Knights, and entered the Castle, where he finished all the Encharaments: Trynens returning to his former shape, and what happened to them afterward.



Palmerin when he had failed in drawinge the Sworde out of the Rocke, he prepared himselfe to the Combat with the Enchanted Knights, whom as yet he could not any way discerne: but first he began his Orisons in this manner. O Soveraigne Creatour, who evermoys hath succoured me in all my aduersities and fortunes: this day give me strenght to confound this diabolish Enchantment, and let thy Name have the honour of a glorieus victory.

Chengiving his Horse the Spurres, galloped onward, saying. Sweete Miseresse Polynarda, if ever your remembrance gave me ayde and labour, now let your divine regard

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

gud comfort your Servant. Being then betwene the two soymost Rocks, a mighty Knight unarm'd on a lusty Courser, with a huge Launce in his hand, called to him, laping.

Courte Soyt Knight, you may passe no further : then surly encountering one another, they met so roughly togerther with thir bodies, as they were both cast sooth of their saddles. Ei. Dog, that still followed Palmerin, sittig his Friends horse offer'd to start, caught the hysle by the regnes vnto his teeth, and would not let hym passe any furthe. In the meane while, Palmerin having fought with hi Knight, rid after a long and cruell combat, smote his head from his sholders. In thise he was so savoured of Fortune, as having vanquished all the ten Knights, he pass'd thos ten Rockes : and no sooner was he mounted on the soymost, but a dark Cloud compassed him about, so that the two Princes, Zephira, and their Knights, to their great amazement, left the sight of him, yet his somer victorie, i tempted all faire from them of bad successe. There stayed they Palmerins retурne till Danne setting, when the two Princes demanded of Zephira, if she wold be part chace, or stay there all night? Depart, quoth she, by my life, here will I bide the god Knights retурne from the Castle : whereupon her Servants having erected their Pavilions, they there took vp their Lodging for that night. By this time Palmerin was come to the Castle Gate, where looking on his Armour which was hacked in pieces, his flesh cut and mangled in many places, breaking sooth a bitter sig; said. If yet this travaille may availe the Princesse, and my Noble companions that are Enchanted; let happen to me what please the Heavens, for their liberty is mox dore to me then life. Then looking on his Dog, who all this while held the Horses hysle in his mouth, he rememb' d that he had not demanded of Muzabelino am' thing concerning him, wherefore he said. Ah gentle Dog

## Emperour of Constanctinople. PART.2.

get no Dog (I thinke) but rather some knyght thas transformed, how sorghfull have I bin of thy service in my necessity? why did I not demand the truthe of Muzabelino, what thou art? But maist thou proove to be my god Friend Tryneus, when all the enchantments in this Castle shall be brok, thy former shape I hope shall be restor'd.

No striking at the Castle Gate, to see if any way he could get it open : at length he looked vp to the battlements, and beheld an ancient knyght, with a long beard so white as snowe, who furterly thus spake to him. Wrood knyght, who mad'st so bolds thus to beate on the Gate & enter, unto thy forder ill I hope, with these wordes the Gates opened of themselves. When presentlē Palmerin with his dog entred, and the old man, who seemed overspent with yeres and weatnes meeting him in the Gate taking him by the arme, threw him violently against the ground, laping. Then that hast overcome the ten Knights young and Armed, what canst thou doe to a old man without defence? A jected villane, answered Palmerin wherefore hast thou stroken me? by the living God, did not thine age excuse thes, swae wold I lay thes breathless al my foote.

Hott and faire, said the old man, thou shalt have workes enough to defend thy selfe. So catching Palmerin, about the middle, he wrong him so cruelly, as one might hear his bones crack. O my God cryed Palmerin, defend me against this cursed devill. At length he soz'd the old man to let goe his hold : when began such a furious fight betwene them, as never was Palmerin in such danger, in that every blow was given him, he thought did breake all his bones in pieces. The dog seeing his master in such extremity, caught the old man by the throte, and never left haging till he got him downe, when suddenly he vanquished away, and was no more seyn afterward. For this victory,

Palmerin

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Palmerin thanked God, and having cherished his dog, entered suddenly into the Castell. Where he beheld most stately Galleries, erected on great columbes, of Porphyry and Alabaster, as never did he behold a more sumptuous spectacle.

In the midst of the Court was a goodly Combe, enclosed with baires of beaten Gold, and over it stood a goodly Table of Chrystall, upheld by faire Natures of Agatha : and on the Table was pictured the perelance of a Lady, drawne by such curious arte and workmanship, as hardly could it be equalled through the world. Palmerin approached to behold the counterfeite, which held in the ens hanc a Wake fast Shute, and in the other a kere of Golde, pointing with the key toward the Gate of the Pallace : whereupon he imagined, that this was the Tombe of the Lady Enchantresse, whereupon Muzabelino had told him before, and putting his hand betwene the Golden barres, the image presently cestered him the key. Whereat being somewhat abashed, he judged that this happened notwithstanding great cause, wherefore taking the key, he went and opened the Pallace Gate, and entring the great Hall, he found it so richly paved, and garnished round about with such costly Tapistry, as the greatest Monarch in the world had not the like.

Looking behinde him for his Dog, he beheld him suddenly changed to his former shape, and running to embrice Palmerin sayd, Ha! p<sup>r</sup>e the bowre of thy coming deere friend, to whom I remaine for ever bound, in acknowledging the speciall graces and fauours received. But Palmerin deceaved with so many illustres before, would hardly give credite to what he now behelde : reputing him rather some hellish surp<sup>r</sup>ised, onely to entrap him with further danger, whiche Tryneus perceiving, spake againe. Ah my noble friend Palmerin, for Gods sake doubt no more, I am thy Brother Tryneus, who since thy coming

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

ming from Blain, followed thee in the enchaunted forme of a Dog : resorce then with me, for since thy long drearie hope hath now so gud an end, doubt not but the residue of thine affaires will prove as fortunate. Palmerin being now thorowly resolved, I leave to your judgements the kinde gratulations betwene them : who well can conceive the wonderfull joy of long absent friends, especially of such as live to die for each other. Ah my Lord, quoth Palmerin, why did I not sooner acknowledge thee? the great succour thou gauest me by the way, might well have perswaded me : yet though I still imagined thee my friend transformed, hardly could I resolve thereon till further ex-perience.

Ah fortune, if heretofore thou hast ben envious towards me, yet now hast thou recompenced me in such sorte as now I haue no cause to exclaime on thee. So sitting downe together, Tryneus revealed the manner of his laking, and all that behel him til his transformation. Which Palmerin to requites, discoursed the knowledge of his parents, how he was betrothed to his Lady Polynarda, and how he recovered the Princeesse Agriola, who afterward was likewise enchanted in the Isle of Malfada. Tryneus at these newes, was ready to die with griesse, but Palmerin perswaded him of the wile Muzabelinos promise : that shortly he shoulde returne againe to the Isle, and they finishe all the enchantments whatsoever. Whiles they thus conferred together, they saw sudainly sette before them a Table furnished with all kind of meates, and a hand holding two great golden Candlestickes, wherin burned two faire ware Tapers : besides, they heard the trampling of their foote that brought the meate to the Table, but they could not discerne any living creature. Trust me, quoth Palmerin, I thinke some body knowes I haue an hungry appetite, & downe with me good friend : for these two moneths had I not a better stomacke. After they had well refreshed

## The History of Palmerin D'Ourva.

refreshed themselves, the Tables was presently taken away again, and they entering a good Wardrobe, where under a Canopy of Cloth of Gold, they found two marvellous costly greene Armours, so beset with faire Emeralds and great Orientall Pearles, as never proud Pagan wore the like in Heathenelle. By them stood two goodly Shields of pceele, in the one being figured the Armes of Constantinople, and in the other the Crest of Almaigne: whereat Palmerin not a little marvailing, said to Trineus. I think my Lord, that these Armoires were provided for vs, let vs try if they be fit for our bodies: so helping to Arms each other, they found them so fit as they had bene purposly made for them. There found they likewise a Silver Casket, wherein were two sumptuous Kingly Crownes of Golde, and between them stood a rich Golden Cup, having in it a King, with the most beautifull stone in it that ever was seen.

Mondring at these events, and doubtfull to take thence these rare presents: immediately a Damzell came before them, and humbly on her knees thus spake. Most mighty and magnanimitous Princes, the Jewels you have found in the Casket are yours, and them must you carrie to the Ladies of your affections: because they were purposly made for them, as these worþy Armoires were for you. As soþer that devised them, in this she accounted her selfe right happy: that this day they are faine into your power, and by you shall all the Adventures here be finished.

You my Lord (quoth she to Trineus) must take the King that is in the Cup: and leave it not whereforer you come, lest you be changed to the Shape of a Dog againe. And you my Lord Palmerin must take the Cup to put the flowers therin, whiche you must bear to the Prince Ze-phira: assuring you that no one must drinke therein, but he to whom you must carry it. Faire Damzell, said Palmerin,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

merin, tell me how I shall find the Garden, wheres those flowers grow of such soberaines vertue, and how I may come to the Arbour, wheres the Strange Bird remaineth perched: likewise if any other then your selfe is in this Castell?

My Lord, quoth she, the Lady of this Castell at her decease, left all the persons in this Castell a Sleep by enchantment, except my selfe that am her Nere, and such coniurations hath she charmed them withall: as they shall not stirre till you have taken the Birds you aske soþ, at whose fearefull cry they shall all awake, in all this long time no whit consumed. And hero habs I ever since remained, soþpointed by her to doe you service, in shewing you the manner how together the flowers, and to take the fatall Bird perched in the Arbours whether I will bring you at the appointed houre. In meane while rest your selues in this rich bedde, which hath bene prepared onely for you, and hers repose your selfe till my returne. By my Wwoþ Damzell, quoth Palmerin, you tell vs matters full of wonder: notwithstanding, seeing we find some part of them true, we gibe credite to the rest. So bidding her god night, there slept they till the next morning, when the Damzell came to call them: conducting them into the Garden, the most brake and bately that eber they beheld, and after she had shewed them the Arbour, departed. Palmerin looking round about him, marvelled at the ingentuous foundation of the Castell, the surpassing faire Galleries, and the beautifull Fountaines in the Garden, where he heard an exceeding pleasant harmony of Birds. Then calling Tryneus to him, entred the Arbour, where taking the fatall Bird by the wings: she gave three great cryes so loud and fearefull, as made both the Princes greatly amazed.

At this instant were all the enchantments there ended, and the Servants restored to their former liberty, when

Palmerin having tide the Bird to his fist with a thred the Darkelt gabe him, and elling his cap with the soveraigne flowers: they came sooth of the Garden, and in the great Hall met them the Lord and Lady of the Castell, so olde, withered and decrepit, as it seemed hardly they could sustaine themselves, casting themselves at Palmerins feete, they said.

Ah noble Prince flower of all chivalry, the highest God hath blessed the from the Cradle, and in the end shall make thee the happiest in the world, for the especiall god thou hast this day done, restoring all them to life that here liuished, except the aged Lady my Wives Sister, who so these hundred yeres past hath slept in her Tombe. After many courteous speeches passed betwene them, Palmerin and Tryneus departed the Castell, and as they went downe the Rockes, Tonano and the Princesse Zephyra came to meete them, he courteously embracing her, said: Holmeates my noble Lord: greatly did I despaire of your health: for this morning I heard such a scarefull cry from the Castell, as we were out of all hope to see you agayne. By the aide of God, Madam, answered Palmerin, and this Knight my deare Friend, whome in the shape of a Dog you brought from Malfada, I find my selfe in perfect content: and here have I brought you the soveraigne remedy for your so long and unfortunatе disease. But may it be, quoth the Princesse that sa faire a Knight shoulde be so transfoymed: No leste do I rejoice for his good fortune, then minne owne. So entred they the Princesse pavillion, discouering all the marbells they had seene.

CHAP. LI.

How the Princesse Zephira was cured of her disease, and how Tryneus ended the aduenture of the enchaunted sword in the Rocke.



Afier that the Princesse Zephira had sett the sweet odours of the flowers Palmerin brought her, the embened wojnes which so long time had tormentid her, fell from her head dead to the ground, and the lothsome smell of her Canker began to cease. Yet all the scarres on her face were not thoroughly healed: but the subdaine ease that she found by the flowers, gabs her hope that in time they would weare away. Meane while the two Princes of Romata, conserued with Palmerin about the Strange Bird, as also of the costly Armoures they brought with them from the Castell: which being pass over with no little admiration, they remembred the Sword enchaunted in the Rocke, whereupon the Prince Tonano entreated Tryneus, to try if that aduenture were reserved for him.

Say quoth Tryneus, if you have already failed, hardly may I hope of better fortune: yet can I but loose my labours as you have done, and shame were it for me to passe hence without tryall. So taking the Swor by the handle, with very great ease he pulleth it out of the Rocke, being the godliest Swor in woymanship that ever was devised. Trust me, quoth Tryneus, he that made the weapon doubtles bath tried the vertue thereof. That may bee answered Palmerin, but had he likewise knownne the valour of the knight, who now is worshiply become Master thereof, of greater count would he have esteemed his labour, and to

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

thy perpetuall honour deere friend maist thou employ it. But now worthy Lord, seeing the Princes Zephira hath found so good ease, and my loving Brother Trynecus hath borne this Sword: I thinke it best that we set forward to Romata, which ( after they had seene the sumptuous buildings in the Castell, the rich Tombe, the be autisfull Garden, and all the other monuments worthy view) they did.

Being come to Romata, and there received with speciall Agnes of hono, the wisse Muzabelino, caused the faire Bird to stede of the flowers, whiche Palmerin hadde brought from the Castell of the tenuis Rocks. As soone had the Bird tasted the flowers, but presently the delited red sach melodius notes, as sweter harmony was never heard before: and during the time of her singing, fell so many dropes of precious water from her beake, as besoone dinner time the Cuppe was well nare filled. Whiche when the wisse Algomancer perceaved, he brought a very faire Lute to Palmerin, saying. I beseech you my Lord play some exquiste piece of Musique, that the Bird listning to your melody, may cease her songe recouer: els shall we loose the souveraine vertue contained in the Water. Palmerin taking the Lute, plaid thereon so artificially, that the Princesse of Romata, whom he won in the Joust, was enforc'd to vs these speeches. How can we sufficently marvaille at the perfections of Palmerin: soz if in proesse he surpasst Hercules of Libia, who overcame Tyrants and Monsters at his pleasure: well may we name him an other Amphion or Orpheus of Thrace, who with their melody tamed the sties, Beastes and Birds. Trynecus taking the Cup, brought it to the Princesse Zephyra, who dipping her handkercher therin, bathed her face therewith: the precious vertue whereof was such, as well the envenomed scarres the wome had made, were presently washed away, and her face so delicate as ever it was before.

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

soze: whereupon the Princesse sailing at Palmerins state, joyfully thus spake. Doubtless my Lord, I am greatly beholding to the Prince Trynecus, who saved my life when the Craytour would have slaine me in my bedde: but I must confess myselfe much more tempted to your worthynesse, by whose paines the venomous parracionis extinguished, whereby I endured tormentes farre exceeding death.

Sadame, answere Palmerin, your happy recoverie will not be imputed to me, but to the souveraine Lord that so practised for you, and seeing your health is so wondrously restored: I think best that we set forward to our townejourney, that we may finishe the Magicall conseruacions of Malfada, as we have already done those at the tenuis Rocks. The Princesse of Romata hearing these words, presented the casuer of Zephira, and comming to Palmerin, said: I beseech you Sir Knight, in honor of that God which you reverence, that you will not deny me one demand, according to your promise made me, when you overcame my Brother and his Knights in Joust. Ashe Lady (said Palmerin) what you will, and you shall not be denied, so the matter consist in my power to performe. Well may you perforne it (q. o' h sye) and to your endesse honor: I hope. The summe of my request is, that you will not forsake the King my Father till his warre against the Mediane of Persia be finisched. And that you would entreate your Friend to accompany you therin. Deny me not good Sir, soz no greater shame is to a Knight then breach of promise: nor will I ferte from your state, untill you have granted what I request. In sooth Madame, answere Palmerin, although my Friend and I have great affayres in our Countrey, yet (in respect of my promise) we will assit your Father: let us in meane whiles intreate you to be Sen our returne with the Princesse Zephira, who thinks the same long desuze she came to Naber. Doubtless

Palmerin having tide the Bird to his fist with a thred the Damsel gave him, and filling his cap with the sovereigne flowers : they came sooth of the Garden, and in the great Hall met them the Rose and Lady of the Castell, so olde, withered and decrepit, as it seemed hardly they could sustaine themselves, casting themselves at Palmerins fete, they said.

Ay noble Prince flower of all chivalry, the highest God hath blessed thee from thy Cradle, and in the end shall make thee the happiest in the world, for the especiall god thou hast this day done, restoring all them to life that here liymbred, except the aged Lady my Muses Master, who so these hundred yeres past hath slept in her Tombe. After many courteous speeches passed betwene them, Palmerin and Tryneus departed the Castell, and as they went downe the Rockes, Tomano and the Princesse Zephyra came to mete them, he courteously embracing her, said : How faires my noble Lord : greatly did I despatre of your health : for this morning I heard such a scarefull cry from the Castell, as we were out of all hope to see you againe. By the aide of God, Madam, answered Palmerin, and this Knight my dere friend, whom in the shape of a Dog you brought from Malfada, I find my selfe in perfect content : and here have I brought you the sovereigne remedy for your so long and unfortunato disease. But may it be, quoth the Princesse that so faire a Knight shoulde be so transfigured ? No lesse do I rejoyce for his good fortune, then mine alone. So entred they the Princesse pavillion, discouering all the marbells they had seene.

Chap. L.I.

How the Princesse Zephira was cured of her disease, and how Tryneus ended the aduenture of the enchanted sword in the Rocke.



After that the Princesse Zephira had sent the sweet odours of the flowers Palmerin brought her, the embrowned wosomes which so long time had tormented her, fell from her head dead to the ground, and the lothsome smell of her Canker began to cease. Yet all the scarres on her face were not thoroughly healed: but the soudaine ease that she found by the flowers, gav her hope that in time they would weare away. Meane while the two Princes of Romara, conserued with Palmerin about the strange Bird, as also of the costly Armoirs they brought with them from the Castell : which being past over with no little admiration, they remembred the Sworde enchaunted in the Rocke, whereupon the Prince Tomano entred Tryneus, to try if that aduenture were reserved for him.

Say quoth Tryneus, if you have already failed, hardly may I hope of better fortune : yet can I but loose my labours as you have done, and shame were it for me to passe hence without triall. So taking the swor by the handle, with very great ease he pulle it out of the Rocke, being the godliest swor in workmanship that ever was devised. Trust me, quoth Tryneus, he that made the weapon doubtlesse hath tried the vertue thereto. That may be, answered Palmerin, but had he likewise knownne the valour of the Knight, who now is worshiply become Master thereto, of greater count would he have esteemed his labour, and to

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

the perpetuall honour bese friend maist than employ it. But now worthy Loys, seeing the Princes Zephira hath found so good ease, and my loving Brother Tryneus hath wonne this sworde: I thinke it best that we set forward to Romata, whiche ( after they had seene the sumptuous buildings in the Castell, the rich Tombes, the be autifull Garden, and all the other monuments worthy view) they did.

Being come to Romata, and there receaved with speciall signes of hono, the wise Muzabelino, caused the faire Bird to singe of the flowers, whiche Palmerin hadde brought from the Castell of the tene Rocks. So soone had the Bird taiked the flowers, but presently the bellidred sang melodius notes, as sweter harmony was never heard before: and during the time of her singing, fell so many droppes of precious water from her brake, as before dinner time the Cuppe was well nere filled. Whiche when the wise Pigmancer perceved, he brought a very faire Lute to Palmerin, saying, I beseech you my Lord play some exquisite piece of Musique, that the Bird listning to your melody, may cease her owne recordes: else shall we loose the soberaigne vertues contained in the Water. Palmerin taking the Lute, plaid thereon so artificially, that the Princesse of Romata, whom he won in the Roast, was ensoozed to vse these spashes. How can we sufficiently marvaille at the perfections of Palmerin: soz it in proesse he surpasses Hercules of Libia, who overcame Myants and Monsters at his pleasure: well may we name him an other Amphion or Orpheus of Thrace, who with their melody tamed the Atthes, Beastes and Birds. Tryneus taking the Cup, brought it to the Princesse Zephyra, who dipping her handkercher therein, bathed her face therewith: the precious vertue whereof was such, as well the envenomed scarres the wormes had made, were presently washed away, and her face so delicate as ever it was before.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Sore: whereupon the Princesse falling at Palmerins forte, joyfully thus spake. Doubtlesse my Lord, I am greatly beholding to the Prince Tryneus, who saved my life when the Traytor would haue slaine me in my bedde: but I must confess my selfe much more inobedient to your worthy wille, by whose patnes the venomous putrefaction is extinguished, whereby I endured tormentes farre exceeding death.

Madame, answere Palmerin, your happy recoverie must not be imputed to me, but to the soberaigne Lord that so proheded for you, and seeing your health is so woe, shalp rebezid: I thinke best that we set forward to myn towne our journey, that we may smite the Magicall coniurations of Malfada, as we haue already done those at the tene Rocks. The Princesse of Romata hearing these wordes, presented the answer of Zephira, and comming to Palmerin, said: I beseech you my Knight, in honor of that God which you reverence, that you will not deny me one demand, according to your promise made me, when you overcame my Brother and his Knights in Roast. Albe Loys (said Palmerin) what you will, and you shall not be denied, so the matter consist in my power to performe. Well may you perfome it (quod she) and to your endesse hooe; I hope. The summe of my request is, that you will not forsake the King my Father till his warre against the Moliane of Persia be finished. And that you would entreate your Friend to accompany you therin. Deny me not good Sir, for no greater shame is to a Knight then breach of promise: nor will I vire from your forte, untill you have granted what I request. In sooth Madame, answere Palmerin, although my Friend and I haue great affayres in our Countrey, yet (in respect of my promise) we will assit your Father: let vs in meane while intreate you, to keepe our resurme with the Princesse Zephira, who thinks the same long before she came to Nabor. Doubtlesse

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

my Lord, quoth Zephyra, rather then you and my Lord Trincus, shall bzeake your promise to the Princesse, in giving succour to the King Abimar her Father: I can content my selfe to stay here more willingly, then to returne to the King my Brother. Madame, said Muzabelino, aske your selfe, that Palmerin is the onely manne whereby you have attained your present felicity: and by him shall you with honour see your Countrey againe. In sooth my Lord, said the Princesse, full well I know his owne gracious nature induced him, to adventure his life for the safety of my Countrey, then to passe strange Countreyes with danger, onely to stade you, I am fassly, his rare fortune at the Castell of the tennis Rocks, from whence he brought those pretious flowers, and the lastall Wyrd, whereby my long infirmitie hath bene cured. To offer him sauer, or all my possessions in way of recompence of so great patnes, they are not comparable: for though I mabe him Lord of my selfe, and all those territoriies my Father left me, yet doth my conscience tell me they are too base. In bzfuse, I know his deserts so exceeding my reach: as well may I sit downe to imagine, but never bee able to contrive a sufficient reward. Believe me Madame, answered Muzabelino, you have spoken truthe, and his noble magnanimitie will onely helpe my Lord: and this I assure you, that were it not the danger of his honyes, and hazard of the whole Monarchie of Asia, hardly might the Knight be staled here, of such waight and importance are his other affaires. The calling Palmerin to him, whose inward thoughts were busied with the remembrance of his Lady, he said:

Let not your stay here my Lord offend you, though well I know the walte of your g.iele, for that God who hath called you to this present state, hath soe peynited things that you cannot shan, in recompence whereof, before your departure from this Countrey, great & viciozous honours

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

honors are appynted you. Believe, for a perfect resolute in your farther daubles, take you no care for nourishing your Wyrd, for when your spusque made her cease singing, at that instant I thde so such a charme on her, as henceforth she shall live without taking any food. And when you returne to your City of Constantinople, let her be searched in some convenient place, in the great Hall of your Palace and there shall she remains as a certayne Oracle untill the day of your death, to delidle tidings of good or bad. If any Knight or Lady shall enter your Court, either with intent of treason, or bringing ill newes, the Bird shall give such starfull shikes, as she did at the time when you tooke her in the Arbour: but if the newes be of joy, and for your good, then shall she sing more sweetly, then when that Madame Zephyra was cured.

In bzfuse my Lord, at the time when you must leave this life for the gloriouse habitation among the blessed, she shall foretell such strange occasions, as shall dismay the most resolute courage. By this meane shall you be guarded from all inconveniences, and your godd Fortune continued in such sort, as you shall be the most peaceable Emperour that eber libed in Greece. Certes my Lord ( answered Palmerin ) not by any desert in me, am I thus honored with so high a present whiche I will kepe so chare as mine owne person: but that the name of Muzabelino may soever be imprinted in my heart, give me some one of your names or kindred who eber moze may be nearest to my person. My Lord ( qu. Muzabelino ) to you I will give one of my sonnes, begotten by me on a Christian Lady, agrating with you in faith and opinion: whereof I am not sorry, yet doe I feare that the King shold know so much, leaff his Religion might cause his death.

Dare Friend, said Palmerin, for Gods sake give him me presently, and him will I love, as he wers my Brother.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Your request (quoth he) can I not yet satisfie, untill we goe to my Castell where he is kept, which because I will not longer deferre, to morrow will I perswade the King to journey to his great City of Grisca, there to take viewe of his Army, when I shall compasse the meane to give him you, upon this conclusion they departed to their Chambers.

### Chap. LII.

How Muzabelino gaue Palmerin his Sonne Bellechino, entertaining the King and all his company Royally at his Castell : and how the two Armies the King of Abimar and the Soldane of Persia encoun-tered, with the successe thereof.



Vzabelino perceiving by his Arte, that the Soldane of Persia with his power, was neare at hand, thinking to raigne the great City of Grisca: abvertisse the King thereof, willing him with all speed to scatter his Army, and prevent the Soldane's cruell determination. The King not misliking this god aduisement, set forwardes presently to Grisca, and by the way, at the earnest entreaty of Muzabelino, the King with all his Courtly company lay at his Castell : where many rare deuises were shewne them by Enchantment, which I passe over, as matter altogether impertinent. There did the Magitian giue Palmerin his Sonne Bellechino, one of his daughters likewise to the Duke, and another to the Princesse Zephira.

Afterward they journeyed to the City of Grisca, where all his Army was ranged in readinesse, being numbered an hundred thousand fighting men : the Ruannguard he committed to the two Princes Palmerin and Tryneus, com-m  
king

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART 2

King of twenty thousand Horsemen, his two Battell's of 10000. Archers on Horsebacke, the two Princes Toinano and Drumino had in charge, and the Kereward was governed by the two Kings of Savata and Garara. The Soldane's power being exaulted in Battell-wise, within fewes daies after the fight beganne: which continued with such danger on either side, as the victory hung very long in sus-pence. In the end, after a mighty Massacre made of the Persians, among whom was Donadell Prince of Siconia daies, with many other great Califfes and Lords: the Soldane himselfe was taken Prisoner by Palmerin, and sent bound with fetters of Gold to the Princesse Zephira.

The Messenger comming to the Princesse Chamber, declared unto Palmerin had sent her that Prisoner, to intreat him as her selfe best liked. In sooth ( my Lord ) quoth the Princesse to the Soldane, you are right welcome for his sake that sent you : here shall your entertainment be at his your calling, and dislike not your mishap, in that the Knight who sent you better, is wont to conquerre where himselfe pleaseth. The Soldane angry at his hard Fortune, yet seeing he was Prisoner to a Lady so beautifull: was immedi-ately so surpized with Love, as he was not able to answer the Princesse one word. But the perceiving her was very soyle wounded, caused him to be conducted to a goodly Cham-ber, commanding her best Chirurgions to attend him Diligently.

At the moore she came to see how he fared, when Love ouer-makering all his sensess, made him forget his hatred to the King Abimar, resolding to become his friend, by Marriage of the Princesse : and unable longer to say-yesse his weighty passions, which moore troubled him then his dangerous wounds. In this sort he beganne. Fairst among the Daughters of men, tell me I beseeche, if you be the Child of the King Abimar, or else of Iohance you are : to the end I may one day acknowledge this fauor, which your kind

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Kinder and milde nature affoordes your Prisoner. Heirunto the Princesse answered, how she was daughter to the King Onodus of Nabor, coupling therewith all her passing fortune, concluding in the end, that in all actions agreeing with honour, she remained his amiable Servant. Fortune (quod he) never constant, but in vanconstancie : once yesterday was I the greatest Prince in the World, and now none in me lieth come so amiable as my selfe, being brought in subjection to my infirmitie, and snared in Love with my balsalls Daughter. Welsch said the Poet, that hardly doe love and Majestie agree together. For though the height of mine estate so fyllides my bloud content, yet Love and mine owne liking are two such severe enemies, as I must not now stand to dispute the cause. Happy is the Knight in whose power remaines a Lady so excellent : but much more happy is the Lady that can commande so great a person, by whom such honours are this day affoorded you faire Princesse, as well may you vaunt to bee the greatest in Persia.

If by a Knight surpassing in prowelte I was conquered in battell, by one in beauty and courtesie incomparable, am I again overmastered, so that I am ensoyced to present you my hart, and all the signories I possesse, to bee at your pleasure, boving (for your sake) perpetuall peace with Abimar my hatefull enemy. The Princesse abashed at this unexpeted offer, a swete blush coloured her dainty cheeke, and fearing to be impated too indiscret, shaped her answere to the just point of all the Soldanes speches, as thus, In faith my Lord, well could I like, that Peace were concluded betwene the King and you, though not by any meane in me, but by the Omnipotent power of the Goddes : who letting you know the weaknesse of your owne Strength, would not have any Warre between you and the King Abimar. And if it like you so much to abase your selfe, as to like the amiable Daughter of a King, who whilste he liveth, was your

## Emperour of Conistantinople. PART. 2

Highte Subject: well may I with modestie give consent, for if my father in all his life-time obeyed you as his Lord, infirmely were disobedience in his Daughter. By the holy Alcaron of Mahomet, answered the Soldane, your benigne humilitie hath more conquerred me, then the prouest enemy in the world could doe : doe you therefore appoint the Articles of our Peace, and I as unpartiall will agree thereto.

This began the Peace and the promise of Marriage betwix the Soldane and the Princesse Zephira, which being thorooughly agreed vpon, the King Abimar, Palmerin, Trineus, and all the Knights subscribing thereto : the Camps on either side were discharged, and the Soldane with his great Seneschall openly in the City of Grisca, protested peace in this manner. That the Soldane shold espouse Zephira, and Tomano the Princesse Belfina the Soldanes Daughter. Beside, he renounced all preiended rights to the Realms of Grisca and Romata, nor would he demand any tribute of them afterward, or enter his Confines with any violence, but allit the King continually against all his Enemis.

Moreover, within two moneths, he would deliver tenne thousand tallents of Gold, and two Millions of Herbaphs, in recompence of his wrong done to the King of Abimar. All this my Lord, quoth the Soldane, will I faithfully performe, and all the things my Subjects shall subscribe thereto : on this condition, that you accompany the Princesse to the City of Harano, there to honor with your presence our espousall, where your Bonne Tomano shall likewise march with our Daughter. To this the King willingly consented, wherevpon the Soldane sent his Seneschall, to cause his army to march homewards into Persia, except sixe thousand men at Armes, to guard the Soldans person : then openly in the field was the peace proclamid, and the Captaines on either side friendly embracing each other.

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

other. Afterward the Soldan comming to the King Abimer and in the presence of Palmerin and Tryneus, thus spake. Nobles were it now ( my Lord ) to remember our past displeasures, but generally to consistre of love and peace; yet hereof I can assure you, that the Princesse Zephira, and these two strange Knights, nevraile mozo against us them all the rest of your Arme. But least your people shoud thinke, that our concluded Peace is not thoroughly grounded, so mozo will I be openly alliance to the Princesse Zephira, and afterward set forward to Harano, that my Squires may be present at our Capitalis: In the meane while our Soneschall and the six other noble Lords, shall remaine with you as our hostages. These determinations fulfilled, the Soldan poket to Harano, where he heard of the death of the Prince Domedell, and the Kings Towne of Rosilia, with divers other Princes at his hundred halfe in the Battaille: but the heate of his new lobe caused him make small account therof, preparing all things ready for the solemnity of his mariage.

## CHAP. LII.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART 2

### CHAP. LIII.

The conference that the Soldane of Persia had with his Sisters, thinking by their meanes to stay Palmerin and Tryneus in his Court, and the honourable entertainment he made them at the arrivall of the Princesse Zephira. And how by good fortune Palmerin recovered his Squire Colmelio, from the Ambassador Mancuso.



Sooner was the Soldane come to Harano, but he presently dispatched messengers to his Sisters, that they might be present at his honourable Marriage: and calling for his Daughter the young Princesse Belfina, he thus beganne. Fairie Daughter, I thinke you are not ignorant, for report flyeth quickly farre, that I have promised you in mariage to the Prince Tomano: therefore I account it very requisite, that your solemnity be on the same day, when I shall espouse the Princesse Zephyra.

My gracious Lord and Father, quoth he, I remaine altogether at your highnesse direction, and if so conclusion of peace you match with so faire a Princesse as is Zephira, it were against reason I should refuse the worthy Prince Tomano of Romata. When he perceiveth the ready goodwill of his Daughter, and his two Sisters by this time were come to the Court: after he had welcomed them in most gracious manner he entered into these specheb. I thought it very expedient (faire Sisters) since you understand the peace concluded betwene the King of Grisca and myself, to acquaint you with other matter greatly concerning you.

There

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

There comiseth hether in the company of the Princesse Zephira, two strange Knights of very rare perfections to whom I would willingly have you vise such especiall behaviour, as we might purchase the means to enjoy them continually in our Court, for no other intent I promise you, but onely that they may match with you in mariage. You Sister Lizanda, (quoth he to the eldest) I commit to the chiefeſt Knight, the very ſame man that moft valiantly tooke me priſoner in the battell: and you Aurecinda, for ſo was the youngesſt named) I bequeath to the other, who is one of the goodlieſt personages that ever nature ſtrained.

Whereunto they were right ſone entreated, especially Aurecinda, who though her elder Sister were grane and well aduised, yet was ſhe pleasant, quaint and ſo ſubtil, as eaſily could ſhe practiſe the meaneſes to deceiver the moft valiant man, whereal ſhe made ſome expeſience, as you shall her after perceue in the Chapters following. The Holdane having ſent for all the Kings, Princes and Lords his Subjects, to be preſent on the day of this great ſollemnity: the Prince Tomano, earnestly detirring to ſee his beſt beloved, reſted Palmerin Tryneus and the Princesſe Zephira, that they might ſette forwarde to Harano. But Muſabelino, who knew what troubles woule ſuccede the marriage, advised the King Abimar not to goe: and conſecled the two Princes Tryneus and Palmerin, to kepe themſelves continually Armed, because the Holdane was a man continually ſubject to incortayne chaunces. So going to each of them a Cote of Armes, of Crimson Velvet moft curioſe embroidered with Pearles he departed from them, returning backe againe to the City of Grilca. Now ride theſe Princes ſoyfullie to Harano, where they were receiued by the Holdane with inuenſtall pompe and honor, each one admiring the rare beautie of the Princesſe Zephira, who was certayned with ſuch a rogall traine.

when

## Emperour of Conſtantinople. PART. T

never was the like ſene before in Harano. At the City Gate the Holdane met them, and in a ſumptuous Coach, accompanied them to the Palace, where aler many ſolemne courtesies one each were deliuered, and ſuch magnifi- call royalty beſemming the time and place, the Holdan came to his Sisters, who had not yet talked with the two Strange Knights, and thus ſpoke.

Sisters, to the end that hereafter you shall not be begalled, the Knights that accompany my Lady the Princesſe, and whom I haue ſo much commended to you, are Christians: notwithstanding they be ſuch, as they twaine deserbe greater honoř, then I am any way able to expreſſe. As ſo; their comely features, after that your eye hath conſerred with your heart, I referre my opinion to your iudgement, regard then that they be loved and esteemed, as their perfections doe worthily deserbe. Aurecinda the youngesſt and moft voluntary Sister, having her eye continual- ly fixed on the Prince Tryneus, thus conſerred with her ſelfe.

My Brother very lightly commaundeth vs to loke these Strange Knights, I know not what my Sisters opi- nion is: as ſo mine owne, the beginning already of my love is ſuch, that if I do not quickly obtaine my deare, I ſcarce that my affection is rated at the price of my life. The time is paſſed over with many delights, and daily paſtymes after the Persian manner, but all this while Lizanda and Aurecinda are tormented with love; ſo that all patience was utterly vented them, yet bearing this weighty bur- den ſo well as they could, at length the two Sisters came to the Princesſe Zephiraes Chamber, where they found Palmerin and Tryneus conſerring together, ſeigning the cauſe of their coming to bid the Princesſe god morrow. Palmerin perceiving that Lizanda ſuddenly changed her colour, imagined the cauſe of her ſecret diſease, and being loth to be tempted with any ſuch occation, diſsembling that

he

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

he saw her not, take Zephyra by the hand, and leading her to the window, found some cause of conference, which Lizarda perceiving, in anger flew forth of the Chamber, yet Aurecinda would not follow her: so she being thoroughly conquered with love, neither regarding fears, shame, or other such likely behaviour sttemely in Maidens,ooke Trineus by the hand, and causing him to sit downe by her, thus began. I do not a little marvaille Sir Knight, that when Ladies come to see you, their entertainment is no better. It is not the manner of Gentlemen to be so solitarie, without having some friend or beloved, which you shall soone finde in this Court of higher calling then you imagine, if Ladies may discerne some syne of your savorable liking. In good faith Padam, answered Trineus, if to you and your Sister, I have not done such duty as beloveth, it proceded by forgetfulness, or my mind carried away with other occasions, so nature made me obedient to Ladies. If these words Sir Knight (quoth she) proceed from your heart, I can assure you to be loved of such a one, who is not unworthy the like god will: and of such account is she with the Seldane, as he shall create you one of the greatest Lords in Persia, so please you to stay in his Highness Court. That may not be (quoth Trineus) so to sone as the Seldane and the Prince Tomano shall be espoused, I must needs depart with my companion, about affaires of very great importancce. Palmerin who with one care listened to the Prince & Zephira, and with the other to the words of Aurecinda, after she was departed the Chamber, thus speake to Trineus.

Good Friend, be wares of this Ladie, that the cause you not to offend God, and violate the loyaltie you owe to Madame Agnial. Such experiance habe I had in these actions, as when Ladies have enterprised their amorous partie, if they cannot compass it by the meanes of men, they will adventure it with hellish Familiars, that can deceas the

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

the very wisest, especially in this wicked Countrey, where is no knowlegge of God or his Lawes. Wchade you know, that such impudent love, cannot be carried about without such apt messengers, and from whence procedeth many inconveniences. Brother, answered Lynkus, scare not my constancie: so my Ladies love hath taken such sure foundation, as death cannot make me false to her, yet proved his words contrary in the end, and so which has repented afterward.

While these delights continued, Maucetto, Ambassador to the Seldane of Babylon arrived at the Court, where the Monarch of Persia received him very honorably: willing him to conceale the newes till the marriages were past, which on the morrow was performed with maruellous royallty. As the Princes and Lords accompanied the Seldane to the Temple, it happened that Aurecinda was conducted by the Prince Tryneus: whereof she being not a little glad, by the way entred into these speeches. Ah my true Friend and Lord Tryneus, when will the day come that I may be thus led, to espouse the man whom I love more deare then my life? Madame, quoth Tryneus, I cannot marvell sufficiently to see you thus changed, considering the greatest Lord in the Orient may be thought too simple for such a wife: yet did you choose one that perhaps would not espouse you, my Lord the Seldane being your Brother, may constraine him thereio. Her hencie (quoth she) procedeth my sorrow, for he whom I love, is not the Seldanes Subject, nor hath he any in faith and opinion: he will give no care to mine hurtles, much lesse to such a one, as can make him one of the greatest Lords in Persia.

But thinke you my Lord that I can conceale, what you may plainly discerne in mine eyes? Who are the surer man my hart hath chosen, and whom the Seldane loves more then his Brother. Alas Madame, quoth the Prince, unsitting

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

unkilling is it that a Knight errant, shoud espouse the daughters of so great a Lord, as is the Seldane of Persia. And would his Majestie so much honoure me, yet the contrarietie of our faith is such an impeach, as flatly it may not be: so rather will I be borne in pieces, then match with a Pagan, or renounce my faith for her love. No, no, my Lord, said the Princesse, I will renounce mine for your love, and worship Jesus Christ the Son of the blessed Virgin. Well worthy then were I of reproch, quoth Tryneus, if I shoud not requite you with love againe, considering what you adventure for my sake.

As they would have proceeded further in talke, Colmelio, Palmerins Roquette, whom Maucetto had bought, standing to see the traine of Persian Lords and Ladies passe by, espied his Master and the Prince Tryneus, wherefore pressing through the Guard of Archers, he came to the Prince, and taking him by the mantle, laid: How happy be this houre my noble Lord, to find you and my Master Palmerin. What fortune hath brought the hither Colmelio, said Tryneus, hast thou yet spoken to thy Master? No my Lord, answered Colmelio, he condicteth the Prince with the Calise of Siconia, wherfore I durst not presume to trouble him.

Beseeue me, said the Prince, but thou shalt speake with him, and while the Arch. Flamin was performing the Ceremonies in the Temple, Tryneus presented him to his Master Palmerin, who was therat so joyfull, as it he had gotten the best City in Persia. He demanded by what meanes he escaped the P. rats hands, the true discourse whereof Colmelio rehearsed: and how Maucetto the Ambassador bought him, as Ptolome and he were brought to the Seldane of Babilon his Court to be sold, and there doth Ptolome finde great favour as I have heard, of the faire Princesse Alchidiana the Seldans Daughter, onely for your sake. Thou tellst me wonders said Palmerin, depart

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

not from me till after Dinner, when I will see to thy Master Maucetto to demand thee: which I hope he will not deny, because when I was Knight to Alchidiana, he was one of my speciall good friends. After the solemnity of the mariage was ended, and Dinner ended at the Wallace for preparation of passtime: Palmerin calling Colmelio, went with him to the Ambassadour Maucetto, who not a little abashed to see him, that was generally reputed dead into the Seldans Court, came and embrased him with those speeches. My Lord Palmerin, what great God hath raised you againe? The Seldane was credibly informed, that you and Olorico were drowned in the Sea: so which both he and Madame Alchidiana moe lamented, then for the like of his whole Army before the City of Constantinople.

Palmerin dissembling as though he knew not thereof, seemed to marvell therat very much, and the better to shadow his conceit, said: that after the tempest was ceased, which cast him very farre from the Seldans Army, thinking to returne to Constantinople, he was by violent windes brought to the Isle of Mallada, where the Prince Olorico, quo he, and all the rest of my compantons 18. matne enchaunted, whom I hope to recover againe after I can get hence. Little thought I my Lord, answered Maucetto, to find you in this Countrey, but did Madame Alchidiana know so much, her sorow would soone be converted into joy.

But what news with you my Lord? said Palmerin: What may be the cause of your Ambassage? I will not conceal the truthe therat from you, quoth Maucetto, I come to demandre alde of the Seldane of Persia, for a fresh invasion against Constantinople. I marvell, quoth Palmerin, that he will enterprize the voyage againe, which hath cost him so much, and returned so little profit: rather would I counsell him to forbearre, and so will I walte to his No.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

selfe before your departe, as also to Madame, Alchidiana his Daughter. But yet I would request the court, sic of you Sir Maucetto, that you would give me your Dame Colnelio, who in time past hath borne my Squarie. Ymme shall you have with all my heart, quoth Maucetto, and not onely him, but whatsover else is mine beside; so please you to accept thereof.

I thankie you good Sir, answered Palmerin, and I doubt not in time to requite your gentlenesse. While they thus talked together, the Soldane came to Palmerin, saying : Will not you make one my Lord in the daunce? the Ladies say they cannot haue your company. In sooth my gracious Lord, answered Palmerin, little do I delight in any such exercises, very earnest affaires haue I with the Ambassador Maucetto, which crave succedane and speedy dispatch. Besoe, saine would I know some tidings of him from my Lady Alchidiana, from whose service I haue now discontinued a yere and more. The Soldane abashed at these words, said : I pray you tell me the truth, are not you he that slew the Prince Amarano of Nigrea in combat, and afterward two other of his Brethren, of which examples remaine still famous through all Turkie? In sooth my Lord, answered Palmerin, being vowed to my Ladies service, I never could suffer her hono: to be any way dishonored, and in that duty I will continue, for the manifold courtesies I haue received by her. By the living God, said the Soldane, notwithstanding I my selfe the happiest Prince in the world, having the man in my Court, whose very name makes the stoutest to tremble. But seeing we are thus far entred, tell me : is the Princessse Alchidiana so beautifull as Fame reports her? That is she my Lord, quoth he, and much more then Fame is able to dexter: beside, she is one of the most gracious and affable Princesses, that ever I beheld in any Kings Court.

Now is night come, and after the Courtly pastimes were

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

were ended, the Wydergrome went to receive the honour of his Wyds, commanding Palmerin to be intreated as his owne person: which not a little contented the Princessse Lyzanda, thinking hereby (alas too latelij) to obtaine him for her Husband, but herein she was Deceived, so that her rash love procured her miserable death. Aurecinda likewise continually courted Trineus, as though she had alwayes bene trauised by in his company: wherefore one day, after he had been warned four or five times by Palmerin, he thus spake to her. Madame, if your honestie and vertue hath imprinted in Noble mindes, an especiall conceit of your Continency and Chastity: I marvelle now what many will think, in that you shoulde not shew any such shewes of love to me, so it serues ye yetto the Cittie before any assault be given. All these speeches could not qualifie her humour, so love had so imboldened her with such unchamessantnesse, as she made no conscience of following the cause, giveng credite to one of her Ladies persuasions : That by godes pur-suit, all things enjoy a happy end.

### CHAP. LIV.

How Asancetto the Ambassador to the Monarch Misos, of Babylon, declared his Message before the Soldane, and all the Princes of Persia. And of the Combate betweene Tryneus, and the King Orzadine of Galappa.



After the Marriage Feast was fully ended, the Soldane sent for the Ambassador Maucetto, who in the presence of all the Persian Lords, thus began to deliver his Message. Most high, mighty, and illustrious Monarch of Persia, the Soldane of Babylon my Lord, and Master, having evermore continued in faithfull alliance

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

to your Majestie: lets you know by me his great and damageable losse, whiche he sustaine before the City of Constantinople. For recovery whereof, he humble intreate: h  
your highnesse most labourable assistance: which well you cannot deny him, in respect of the great straige he hold in Turkie, as also for the establishment of our faith and generall destruction of the Grecian Empire. A nobastour queth he Holdane, I will better consider hirton, and answer you accordingly. So calling all the Princes presentlie to counsell, divers confusid judgements were amongst them: wherupon he sent for Palmerin, and before them all demaunded his opinion, whereto he shapd this answere. Right it stand with your highnes likynge, and the god concerte of all these noble Princes, gladly would I be excused in this matter: wheren I may not speak without suspcion because the entent is against mine owne native countrey, and those whom I agree withall in faith and Religion.

But seeing your Majestie will natess know my iudgement: pardon in speaking boldy vhat I wold be loth to stirmble. I think no one of you my gracious Lords, but well remembres the great warres against h King of Granca: since which tyme the Hoolidours are hardly recovered, and extremity were it to endanger the lives of wounded men. Moreover, if the Holdan of Babilon who now demaundeth succour, sending his Army into Greece, where raingnes a Prince so mighty and puissant, as well could repalle them with shamefull confusyon. Perswade your selbes as yet there is no other, but he that trumpled in conquest before, I feare can doe the like againe, and thus my Lords is mine opinion.

Well habe you answered, quoth the Holdane, and this peaceable conclusion liketh me best, so arising from counsell, they went into the great Hall: where before their comming, as the Prince Zephyra was debilling with many Lords & Ladies, entered an Armed Knight, accompaniued with

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

with his other in Armour, and twelue Squires, who sining the Holdane not in his Chayre of Estate, demanded of the Queen where he was / Knight (quoth she) he is in counsell with the Princes and Lords of his Realme, and long it will not be before he come: in meane while you may passe the tyme in conference with the Ladys. Madam (said Trynus, to the Queen, I thinke he scant knoweth how to consecre with Ladys, so his indiscret behavion shewes him to be the worst nurised Knight that ever I sawe: Hye you not (quoth he to the Princess Zephyra) how unmannerly he late downe, without vking any reverence to your Maj. sy.

The Knight sitting strotting in a Chayre, and habing vncalped his Helmet (said to the Queen) I pray you tell me Madam, are these two strange Knights in this Court, that were against your Husbande in the Battell and tooke him? They be hys Knight (quoth she) well and in good disposition thanks to the Soveraigne Create. I aske not of their health (qd. he) How ars they callid: The one (said the Queen) is named Palmerin, the other Trynus. And I (quoth he) am O-zodine King of Galappa, to whom Fortune hath bene more labourable in Love, then in Riches: making me Freinde to the faire Oronia, Daugther to the Califfe of Siconia, and Sister to the Prince Donadel, who was slaine in the Battell against the King Abimar, she in my iudgement, nor habing her second in Beaulte, at whose request I have travellid the greatest part of Asia, to spread her Name, and honorabile reputation, which I have done to her perpetuall Name: and returning to her when my Labours were finisched, in stead of joy and pleasure, I found her sad and penkue for the death of her Brother. These newes were harde to me then death, and to comfort her, I promised to revenge her Brothers misfortune: and this is the enely cause of my comming, so having combatted with hym that slew the Prince, her Love to me will be the greater

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

ter, and mine honour shall be spread with moze advantaiges. I believe well (quoth the Maene,) if you escaps with life from the Combat: but tell me Sir Knight, why bears you such ill will to him that slew the Prince? considering that it was done in plaine Battell, and he by enemy who would have done as much to him if he could. Not soz this cause alone will I enter the Combat, said Orzodine, but soz I am desirous to let him know that I am moze favoured in Love then he: and as I am one of the most happy Lovers, so am I the best Knight in the world, which I will maintaine against any that dare gainsay it. Happy lover, Dieu vous guard, said Tryneus. If the Peerts had hitherto spared the description of Cupid, Sonne to the Goddess of Love, now might they fully have set him downe for blinde: yet is he most worthy to be condemned, that he would vouchsafe an labour to the most scoldish among men, he having Dedicated me to the service of a Lady, to whom your gentle Irinia, Oronia I should say, doth not deserve the name of her Servant.

For the rest, whereas you brant your selfe to be the best Knight in the world, your great folly is too apparent, soz there are many Knights Errant in the world, who can give you a hard Canvizado at the Launce: and after they have soyled you in the Joust, bestow a little paines to take your grene head from off your grosse Shoulders. By selfe that slew the Brother to your Goddess of Beauty, will do you so much pleasure as to heale the incurable disease wherewith you are Day and Night tormenteth. Divine spirits, cryed the Pagan, favour me so much, that this Knight may but dare to enter the Field with me. Yes I dare (sayde Tryneus) and before we part, I doubt not but to make this quiet enough.

Orzodine presently thrwe his Gantlet as his Gage, and Tryneus a Golden Bracelet, which Aurecinda had givden him, entreating Zephyra to kepe them, which she refused

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

saled to see, fearing the danger of the Prince Trineus. Whereupon the Holdane entered the Hall, leading Palmerin by the hand, but when they saw the Armed Knight thus to contend with Trineus, they marvailed greatly what might be the occasion thereof. When O: zodine saw the Holdane was set, he entred into these speeches. Holdane I am come hither to accuse thee, of a villanous Act which thou hast committed. Harboiring in thy Court, the man that slew the valiant Donadell, whose murther thou canst not so evaningly cover, but that the treachery will be openly discovered.

What art thou (said the Holdane) that darfst speake thus presumptuously in our presence? Orzodine King of Galappa (quoth he) of whom thou hast heard heretofore, and now have I presented my Gage against this Knight, which I will maintaine in despite of the preudest. The Holdane abashed at this Event, sought to dissuade them from the Combat, because he had heard great speeches of the Kings Prokresse, but all was in baine: for O: zodine was so obstinate, and Trineus so earnest, to revenge the Larkes proud blasphemy against his Lady, as they would not be pacified till the Field was granted them. Let us have Judges presently (quoth Orzodine) and the Field assur'd for our Combat, that I may discipilize this glorious stranger.

Make not such haste (sayd Trineus) soz I feare thou wilt thinke thy coming too soon. Immediately were the two Combattants arm'd, the Judges placed in their Tent, when the Holdane and Palmerin with many other Princes, went to behold this exploit. But such a mighty man was the King of Galappa, as Palmerin feared his Friends succell. The Trumpets sounding, the Knights brake their Lancs bravely, and met together so furiously with their bodies, as they were both thrown out of their Saddles: but they quickly recovering themselves againe, drew their

Sabors,

## The Hitory of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Swords, and marched against each other with like ex-  
rage, as old Achilles against noble Hector. Long continued  
the fight with danger on either side, but the R. of Galappa  
struck such weighty strokes, being a man of equal stature  
with a Giant, as he wounded Tryneus in many places:  
and such was his ill fortune: after long traversing a-  
bout, he set his foot unavertly on the tranchyon of a Lance,  
whereby he fell downe backwards to the ground. Oizo-  
dine taking a vantage of this fall, set his foot on the  
Princes brest, striving to pull off his helmet from his head:  
but God knowes in what agonie Palmerin was now, when  
he breake off so many speches to him selfe. Ah heavens  
(quoth he) have I taken such paine and travayle to finde my  
friend, and must he now dye among his enemies? Au-  
recinda, likewise, ready to yield vp her ghost with griesse,  
seeing Palmerin ready to swoone as he did. Alas (quoth  
she) is it not enoughe that my friend must die, but his  
dear Companion will bearre him company? Whilte this  
doubtfull scere was among the Courtiers, Tryneus had so  
well scasseled with Oizodine, as he lay along by him like-  
wise, when diswing a pocket dagger, he stabb'd through  
his helmet, into one of his eyes, so that he nayled his head  
to the ground. Oizodine seeing himselfe wounded to the  
death, gave a boistroudry cry: when Tryneus having gotten  
his helmet off, presently smote his head from his sholders.  
If the Knights of Galappa were now diuined, and the  
bold one, Palmerin, Zephyra, Tomano, and all the rest joy-  
full, I leabe to your judgments: especially Palmerin, who  
rejoycing that Tryneus had thus conquered his enemy, en-  
ter'd the lists, and embrac'd him, and judging hym sooth  
the field, he was welcommed to the Wallace, with won-  
derfull honour.

The body of the dead King was delivered to them that  
came with him, with marbarous reprehension of their ma-  
racts most audacious Challenge: and so with great heavi-  
nesse

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

when they returned home againe. Nor would the Soldane  
longer stay in his Court the Allyian Embassador. But  
excused himselfe to the Babylonian Mylos, that he could not  
give him any assistance, covering his answer under his  
unfortunate Battaille against the King Abimarr, Maucetto  
seeing that to stay longer would not availe him, tooke his  
leave of the Soldane, saying. Albeit my Lord you cannot  
gibe my Master any assistance: yet let Palmerin returne  
to him at his departure from your Court. What I can doe  
hererin, answered the Soldane, your Lord shall be assured  
to finde, although I thinke his minde be otherwise addic-  
ted: but you were best to knowe his minde your selfe, be-  
cause I heard him say he would write to Madame Alchi-  
diana.

Maucetto departing to Palmerins Lodging, the Sol-  
dane went to see his Sisters, of whom he demanded, if  
they had as yet perceiued any thing with the Knights. My  
Lord, answered Aurecinda, who in all things was more  
prompt then the Eldest Sister, I have fired my love on the  
Knight Tryneus, with full resolution never to love any o-  
ther: but he doth not intend to stay here in your Court,  
much lesse I feare to make me his wife. As so my Si-  
ster, she cannot compasse the meanes, how to impart her  
love to Mr Palmerin. Right strange is it, quoth the Sol-  
dane, that the promises you have made them, and so appa-  
rantly signes of Ardent affection, cannot dissuade them to  
make chioce of you: Doubtless they be some great pyn-  
nes, whereto see the fashions of the World have thus dis-  
ciplined themselves. Continue your love as you have begun:   
and if by other meanes you cannot stay them, aduen'tore  
your honours as a meane to entrap them. And now doth  
occasion well serve you Sister Aurecinda, so by curteous  
intreating Tryneus now he is wounded, you may more  
profit in one houre, then you have done during this tedious  
pursuit.

Next.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Middle was it for the Soldans thus to persuade her, in that she laboured for no other matter, keeping Trineus compaine both day and night: but Palmerin offendeth therat, secretly thus rebuked the Prince. What meanest thou my Lord? If you mend not this order I will be angry with you. You see this Prince doth exceed in her desire, and you give her occasion to continue it: I know not what will happen betwix, but my minde persuades me that you will hardly depart hence with honour. We advised I tell you and take this of me: that if the wised man will lend his ears to wise persons, and follow their affections: he shall become more unreasonable then a bruto Beaste, regarding nothing but what is object to his eyes, and what the flesh, (the onely mortall enemy to the spirit) shall soonest persuade him.

## CHAP. LV.

How Aurecinda Sister to the Soldane of Persia, pursued the Prince Tryneus so neare, as in the end, she had her desire, and what followed.



Palmerin having thus schooled the Prince Trineus, that he should give no ears to the enticements of Aurecinda: Lizanda came to his Chamber, and seing bygent busynesse with him, took him aside, deliveringe her affections in this manner. Right happy would I thinke my selfe Sir Palmerin, if you would deigne to continue in the Soldans Court: who doubtlesse would advance you to the highest degree of honor, and give me to you in Marriage that am his Sister, and a Lady worthy some reckoning.

Palmerin offered to depart the Chamber, but Lyzanda stayed

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2

Stayed him, proceeding thus. Alas my Lord, will you never vouchsafe to speake to me? Now I see well that you are the most dilligent Knight in the world. Madam, answered Palmerin, rather will I doe then one iota of diligencie shall be found in me: nor can I graunt your importunate requests, without committinge noxious treason to my Ladie, and offending my God, whom foolish I be shall never make me to displease. So without any further speeches, he went to the Prince Tomano, leaving the poore Ladie well neare dead with this unkinde refusall, who going to her owne Cabbinet, thus began to breath sooth her sorowes.

Ay Ladie, the most cruell passion that euer entred the heart of any Lady, how great and marvaileous is thy power: howe thou enforcess to desire and intent, without being heard or regarded: others thou caulest to be happily servid, esteemed of their Fiuende, Servants and Lovers. Unhappy that I am, but much more unhappy Brother, accursed be the houre when thou diddest command me to love the most ciuell and unkinde ameng men. Can there be any Lady in the world more disgraced then I am? Had I not revealed my love to him, some comfort I might thereby enjoy among my sorowes: but his frozen minde knowing my love doth hold me in the greater contempt. My Sister told me, that by too long concealement of love, many have lost them they most esteemed: but I (alas) doe finde it cleane contrary. How was Aurecinda (by chance) in the Chamber next her Sisters Chamber, and hearing her thus sorrowfully complaine: she came to her, and thus spake.

Good Sister disconsol not your selfe by your friends refusall: I shold not thinke my selfe worthy the name of a woman, if I could not winne you the man that thus tormenteth you. As sooz me, I have found the means to compass mine owne desire. Yet could not all these speeches appase her,

## The History of Palmerin D'Orva.

her, wherefore she left her, and understanding by one of her Ladys, Tryneus shold this Night suppe in the Holdeans Chamber: wherupon he went to the Ladys houise, and there prepared his Bed, and lach sweet delicate Bathes, as might move the spirites of a very clayed Gentleman. In his bower, he came to one of the Pages of boare, Whereto the Ladie she most of all trusted: saying.

I pray the g d Page, goe to the Prince Tryneus his Chamber, and there attend till he come forth: then feigning that come one hath done the Injурie, thou shalt intreat him to helpe us against him that abuseth the. If he com to us, as ouer leste we will: bring him to the bath, wher I will haue his company with the Doctor, and so seuen as he is entred, make fast the dooze on him, and get thes gone, but in any case de secrete herein, and I will recompence thee to thine owne content. The Page was so well instructed in his art, as he layred not in any one point of his charge. What as the Prince Tryneus came alone from his Chamber, fell on his knees before him, saying. My Lord, if ever you pitied a Gentleman abused, let me intreate you to revenge my cause, on a Villaine that hath too much wronged me.

Tryneus, who had often seen the Page in his Chamber with Aurecinda, answerd. O Belove me Page, it were piti to deny thy request, considering thou doest demand it so earnestly: shall I need to be better provid then I am? No my Lord, quoth he, your swerd is sufficient. So was he conduct by the Page, along the Gallery, and being come to the appointed place, he opened the doore thus speaking: O the Prince My Lord, the partie you must deal withall is in hi Chamber, accompanid but with one Ladie, whereto you may enter score from danger. He was no man in, but the Page clapt to the dooze and departed. Now was Tryneus not a little amazed, when he saw

## Emperour of Constançinople. PART.2

no body but the Princesse with her Ladie, he being come ther to bathe her selfe, and lade in her Bed: but in such surpassing brabery, as Jupiter with his Lightning, Neptune with his thre forked Pace, and Pluto with his Cerberus, would stand and wonder therat. So surely had she tress'd the golden wress of her haire, and her head attyre embellished with such godly Orientall Pearles, as made her same a beautifull Angell, being coveted wth a gorgeoue Canope, resembling the Sunne vnder a faire Cloud. Between her bain ie Breasts hung a pretious Carbuncle, which supplied the office of Venus her breake: when she saw Tryneus stand so agast, she sayd. Why: my Lord, are you more afraid of a naked Ladie, then of the most puissant knyght in Persia, armid cap a pe? I can judge no lesse, lesting you dare approach no nearer. In sooth my Lord, quoth the Page stiller. You may take your selfe happy to be delrid of such a Ladie, whom mighty Kings and Princes haue earstly sought, and voulting gladly habe had the least favour she beloues her son. So taking her by the hand, she caused him to sit downe in a Chairre by the Windowe, and girding her selfe wth her Harp, she departed leaving hem together. At night (quoth Tryneus) how hast thou occyd me? What? said the Princesse, you forgot where you are, you must at this time somewhat pittie my Honolyses, and h are a Dillie whch I have made for your sake. When taking her Harp, she thus began to sing as followeth.

The

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.



### The Dittie sung by Aurecinda to the Prince Tryneus.

**T**He God of warre, fierce, sterne and rigorous,  
When he beheld faire Venus his walty beauty,  
Said in all account of her dignitatis,  
But suddenly became full amorous.  
  
Beauty had then her power vigorous,  
Changing rough looks to sweetest seracie.  
But he I love incens'd with cruelty,  
Doth not regard my torments languorous.  
Why should I then furue that stuborne minde,  
That with excuses kille my hope out-right?  
Yet if he helpe not, death must me acquite,  
Ah mighty love in nature most unkinde,  
That doth it constraine me to affet the man,  
That neither favour, love, nor kindness can.

What have I fait? The Knight of my desire,  
Is meere divine, and furthest from compare:  
Whose Eagles eyes can well discerne my care,  
And with sweet pitie drops allay this fire.  
The little bird hath made him gracius,  
His Mether milde, turns the Ladies smart:  
That brines his lovely Image in her heart,  
Then to despaire beseeches no vertuous.  
Requit sweet Friend the p'sons of thy Friend,  
Whom God and nature hath appointed thine:  
Give to me his due, and then thou must be mine,  
And shall to morrow have a happy end.  
The Palmer Mayd, far boldly thou hast wonne;  
That Monarchs, Kings, and Princes, ne're could done.

## Emperour of Constantiople. PART.2.

With excellent cunning did he handle her instrument,  
but with far better grace and affection delivred her ditty,  
gracing it with such sad countenance, mournfull looks,  
and renting sighes, as it forced the Prince Tryneus to be-  
come exceeding amorous. And buring in this new cleris  
impression, beheld the singular beauty of Aurecinda, which  
ravished his senses in such sort, as (trembling like the As-  
pen leafe) he sat downe by her on the beddes side. The  
Prince laying her Harpe from her, embrased him very  
lovingly with these speeches. Alas my Lord, will you still  
continuall in this rigour and cruell inhumanity? your hart  
is more hard then Adamant, that will not be mollified  
with so many intreaties: I sweare to you by the Sunne  
that lightneth the world, valesse you graunt me one re-  
quest, before your face will I presently say my selfe. Full  
well doe I perceive, quoth Tryneus, that hardly can I es-  
cape misfortune: the Servant hath deservid me, and  
now the Mistresse stokes my death. Ah Madamis, quoth he,  
how can I graunt your request, consoiring mine offence  
to God, and he that loveth me loyally? Either be as good as  
thy word, quod she, else stand to the danger that may besafthe.

Why? Sir Knight, is my beauty of so slender account,  
as I am not worthy to be helpe betweene thine armes?  
Wilt thou suffer me to consume in this violent flame, which  
thou maist with such ease and honor extinguish? hadst thou  
rather see a lady spilo her hart before thee, then thou wilt  
vouchsafe to preserve her life? Come, come sweet friend,  
see how love and his mother hath made way for thee, re-  
fuse not opportunity so favourably offered. What ble-  
missh is on this body, that shold deserve disfaire? If the  
King of Gods would think himself honoured with this con-  
quest: much more estimation shouldest thou make hereof.  
In biese, she was so perset in her subtillty, and knew so  
well how to inbegle the Prince with queint speeches and  
sweet embracings: that he made him forget God, his Ma-  
dy,

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

dis, loyalty, and himselfe, so that of a Maiden, he made her the sayell Woman in Persia. When the time came that he shold depart, the Princesse said to him, Yet have I a further request, my Lord, you must promise to visite me in this place at times conuenient, and endevour with your companion, that he may likewise love my Sister. Trineus made promise he would, but rather he desired to stab him selfe with his weapon: then that Palmerin shold know his great abuse, so heinous did his offence seeme to him selfe.

Aurecinda perswaded her Sister, still to pursue Palmerin with her loue, and what had passed betwix her and the Prince Tryneus, she declared: whereupon her Sister grewe the greater, yet all was in bathe, soz Palmerin shold give no eare to her complaints, which was the cause of this mischance following. Lyzanda advertised by her Sister, that Tryneus still thus bled her company in the Bath: envious of her Sisters benefit, and despitfull of Palmerins obliuion resulall, she went to the Holdane, and with many teares thus delivred her greife. Ah my Lord, how much better had it bene, that we had never knowne these cruell Christian Knights: whose ingratitude will be the cause of my death: soz the younger of them is marvellously beloved of my Sister, who forgetting her faith, honor, and her audience to your Majestie, hath dishonored both her selfe and you, onely to make proue of the other Knights crueltie to me. The Holdane admiring his Sisters report, answered.

I dig not will my Sister to abuse her selfe, without promise of mariage: but seeing it hath so fallen out, by my fathers soule they shall both repent it. Durst the Graytour abuse me so much in mine owne Court? Why? my Lord, quoth Lyzanda, you are the onely cause thereof, and therefore you must be angry with no body but your selfe. Let me not live an houre said the Holdane, if I be not succintly revenged on him: Sister, be you but secret, and re-

serve

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

serve the rest to my direction. Then calling for the Captaine of his Guard, willing him to take fiftie Knights, and when his Majestie was at Supper, they shold goe take his Sister and the Knight with her in the Bathes, and afterward carry them to a strang prison. But see it done secretly, quoth he, soz if his companion knew thereof, it may arise to further inconuenience. And because Palmerin shold not misdeeme this treason, all supper time the Holdane held him in familiar talke: he hoping by this fetch, to say them still in his Court, but it fell out afterward to be the cause, that man of his best and chieffest Knights were slaine.

Not long had the Ambashed Knights waited where they were apppointed, but the Princesse Aurecinda opened the doore, and came forth with her Friend as she was accustomed: where they were suddenly taken, Tryneus not having the leisure to draw his Sworde, so was he carried prisoner to one of the strongest Towers in the Palace, and Aurecinda at the same time to another. Tryneus seeing himselfe thus betrayed, fell into shewlamentable discourses. Unfortunatly wryght that I am, have I solately escaped by my Friend, the cruell enchauntments of the hellish Malfada, when I endured so many paines and tormentes, and am now come to the place where they shall be redoubled?

Ah Palmerin my good Brother and companion, what wilt thou lay to hem thou hearest of my taking: but most of all when thou vnderstandest the cause thereof? miserable wyfch, how oftendis my Friend warns me of this inconuenience, yet had not I the grace to credit his counsell: doubtless my wary conceit of shame, when thou shalt be acquainted with my fonde offense, will be more grievous to me than death. What dishonour, paine, torment and punishment, shill be sufficient for my misdeeme? For loze and despised Cratife, could not the feare of God, which hath hitherto

hitherto so graciously protested thiz, nor the loyalty of Agriola, who loszooke Parents, Friends, and all for thiz: have kept thiz from this monstrous act? Determinal God, the man that loszaketh thiz is vile and abominable. When I had thy scars before mine eyes, I was at rest and quiet in conscience, esteemed and beloved of all men: but when thou gabest me raines of liberty, I became dissolute and forgetfull of thiz, as also of them that honored me so much. Ah miserable occasion, and those deceits, entisements, and subtill persuasions: how mighty are they in operation: neither men nor devils could bring me into such danger, as you have plunged me in up to the ears. Ah villainous Page that first brought me thither, and thou the falsest Lady in the world art cause of my shill. Soz are they to be accused but my wretched selfe, who seeking mine owne hurt, found it, and having found it, continued in it. Thus sorrowfully wailed Tryneus, whens on the contrary she Aurecinda rejoiced: soz when she considered the estate of her friend, she persuaded her selfe by this meane, that the Holdane her Brother would enforce him to marry her, which hope made her as joyfull, as Tryneus was sad and penitive.

When the Captainne had impysioned Tryneus & Aurecinda, he came to the Holdane sitting at the Table, saying: Will your Majestie command me any further serbice? I have enclosid the Knight Tryneus in one Tower, and your Sister Aurecinda in another. Why? quoth the Holdane, did you find them together? I did my Lord, quoth the Captainne, your Sister leading him by the hand out of the Ladies hot house. By Mahomet, quoth the Holdane, but that you speake it, hardly could I believe it, what shamefull villany is this committed in our Wallace: by the greatest God, the fact shall be so worthily punished, as it shall remaine for a perpetuall纪念. At these speeches Palmerin was not a little amazed, and dissembling his anger so well

as

as he could, said to the Holdane. I cannot be perswaded my Lord, that Trineus would commit so vile an act, without entisement thereto by your Sisters treason: this boeing (under your Majesties correction) the most shameles Critle that ever I saw, for twenty and twenty times have I seen her follow him, with gestures farre triffling one of her calling. Then starting from the Table, quoth he: Consider what he is, and what thou intendest against him, soz never was imprisonment so dearely bought as this will be, and before thou puttest him to death, it shall cost me my life, and the lives of an hundred thousand Knights beside, in rebenge of his wrong. Being thus evlanchid with fire, he could not so give over, but thus began againe. By God Holdane, thy treason is so manifest, as thou canst not hide it, full well doe I understand thy flatteries, whereby thou hopest to keepe vs in thy service, but farre art thou fro thy reckoning, for rather will I be toze in a thousand proces, than endure the reproch of such a mans service, who vnder colour of friendship impysioneth his Knights, and afterward threatneth them with death. Tomano Drumiano, Corax, and many other Knights belonging to the King Abimar seeing Palmerin in such a rage, as it seemed the fles did sparkle fro his eyes: endeavoured to perswade him, and Tomano thus spake to the Holdane. By Lord, under my safe conduct, and your faith promised, are these two Knights come with vs to your Court, and you habe now impysioned one of them, advise your selfe of speddy justice: for this shame done him is against all right, and soz ever shall you be noted with breach of faith: beside, I repute this iniurie as done to my selfe. The Holdane seeing the Knights thus incited, althoughe himselfe procured those fiftie Armed Knights to take Trineus, yet with swiche countenance he thus answered. Content your selves my Friends Trineus in right shall be defended: and if I find my Brother culpable, he shall be punished as he were a stranger.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

So I demand not, said Palmerin, so I am assured, that by her flatteries Tryneus hath been seduced. So departing to his Chamber, he met his two Squires, Bellechino and Colmilio, of whom he demanded, if they at any time perceived the love between Tryneus and the Princesse Au-recinda.

They answered that they did perceive it, and divers nights they saw him go to the Princesse Chamber. And why did you not reveale it to me? quoth he, worthily habe you deserved death, in concealing the shame of your Masters friends, wherein my selfe cannot escape untouched. Whereupon he Armed himselfe, and sending so to the Prince Tomano, said to him.

I thinke it best my Lord, that you kepe your ordinary guard about your person, till we know how the Moldane will deal with Tryneus. As so; my selfe, I intend (if your Brother Drumino and the Prince Corax will come with me) to kepe the field with the thousand Knights that comes hither with me, that none may enter into the City without our licence. In meane while, you may send a Courtier to the King your Father, that he presently send us what helpe he may. Sir Palmerin, answered Tomano, not onely my Knights shall enter the field so; you, but my selfe likewise, so please you to command me, and what you think best so; the deliverance of your friend Tryneus, I will be willing to accomplish to my uttermost. Presently will I send a Messman to Grisca, and conferre with my Brother Drumino, that his Knights and Gentle-men may be Armed that came from Savara, as also they that came with my Nephew Corax from Garara, which will be in number a thousand men: your selfe in meane time may get forth your necessaries.

Who then had seen the Knights Arming, the Boxes preparing, the bag and baggage carrying, would have said, that Palmerin was as much feared and beloved in a strange Country,

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

Country, as in his owne. Such was the diligence of the Peoples and Soldiers of Grisca, Savara and Garara, as they were right soon before the Wallace attending so Palmerin, who commanded Tryneus his Boxes and rich Armour should be brought forth by his Squires, leaving in his Chamber all the riches and treasures, that the Moldane and the Princesse Zephyra had given him, and meeting on his owne Courser, he came and embrased the Prince Carax, saying: Let us depart (my Lord) from these ingrates: foul people that never knew how to entertaine strangers: well may the Moldane thank the Princesse Zephyra his wife, else I had smitten his head from off his shoulders. There the Emperour displayed, the Dromours and Crampets sounding chirfully, as the wags was heard through all the City.

And in this manner went Palmerin to the field, which raised such a tumult among the people, and such scidion amongst the Peoples of Persia, as they boldly told the Moldane, that most braudly he had impazoned the Strange Knight and the Princesse his Master, and which might otherwise be defence so; a stranger. The Moldane perceived his solle well enough, but as the man delighting in his evil, without altering his humour, regarded not their speeches: commanding that they shold all Arme themselves, and charging each one expressly not to speake to Tryneus without leave. Why? (quoth he) the Geal that is gone, too much abused me in my Wallace: by my Crestone, I will punish both his pride and his cōpartions, meangre all them that dare say the contrary. And so he flieng from them into his Chamber.

CHAP. LVI.

How the Soldane seeing hec could not perswade Tryneus to marrye his Sister, condemned him to death, and whas followes afterwards.



Omano, who by the good counsell and entiment of Palmerin remained in the City, with two hundred Knights for the defences and safegard of his person: fought by all the best meanes he possibly coude for the deliberaunce of Prince Tryneus, and conuincing to the Queen Zephyra, thus spake Madame, seeing men can no way perswade the Soldane, syre what the pleasing speeches of Ladies will do: who (in my judgement) cannot come from him, without obtaining theys request.

The Soldane hanting forgotten the especiall fauour, whiche heretofore he receyved by Sir Palmerin, for whose safety he gake both faith and promise: at the ample report of Madame Lizanda, harkly this night past committed Sir Tryneus to prison in the Strengell Tower, saying he was found in the Bath with Aurecinda. And so earnestly dothe he prosecute this matter, as that notwithstanding the great intreaty of all the Princes and my selfe, he will not discharge him, but hath sworne that in despight of us all he shall be punished. What? (quoth the Queen) with me Lord so much forger himselfe: that he will take his harme who hath done him such honour? Believe me Madame, (answering the Prince) I have told ye the truthe: heretofore when you shall walke to his Chamber, which is the place where all demands are graunted to Ladys, you may put hym (in expenience of the Prince, and to give some good  
wordes

Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

words for him, that so willingly aduentured his life for you. Oh my Lord (said Zephira) I feare the Soldane will hardly heare me: for when such mighty persons are in anger, little accouint make they of Love or vertus, yet will I willingly doe what lyeth in me.

So bidding the Prince godd night, he went weeping to the Soldanes Chamber: which his Spouse perceiving, came and embrased her, demanding who had any way offendes her? Then you my Lord ( quoth she ) and in such sorte, as if presently you doe not helpe it, I doubt the daunger will be very great. I understand you have sent Tryneus to prison, and wot shall sworne that he shall dye: if you suffer such an infamous daunger, thinks not but that my life will shortly followe him. Palmerin (answered the Soldane) what I have done is to no other ende, but to say him and his company in my Courts, because theys renowme is so famous in Turkie. With this excuse he so qualifid the Queen, that she durst not make any further questions.

The next day he sent for the Prince Tomano, and with many other great Royses went to see his sister Aurecinda, framing his speche to her in this manner.

Sister you have shewne your selfe of godd government, and great estimation made you of honestie and vertue, in dairing to thinke so soule a thought as you have committed in me. Dost thou not consider the place of Venaret in my Courts: what harme hast thou done to the house of Perria, which hiderlo never sustaineid blemish: and now is sayled by thy immodest dealing with a stranger. So much doth this heinous fault offend me, that if he make her not his wife, thou shalt dye the death as the Labo hath ordained.

Soldane (answering the Palacelle verely) in vaine sayest thou to recall the Acte committed. Dost thou thinke my fault so offendre, which first was perpetrated by thy pernicious? The Lady a Gentlewoman, faire, well spoken, comely, stately, gracious, and bonigne, and who is of high-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

e it desert among all other : is it a matter deserving death: chiefly to a Prince's, whose youth may well excuse her trans-  
passe? If it be worthy the name of a King, it is more to  
that then me: for thou didst first intreat, persuade, and  
command me to Lobe him: yea, thou diddest induce the  
maene how to lyme him.

By thy devise first did I make prayer of that, which is  
the only sweet sollace in Love. If thou therefore will put  
me to death, my care is the less, seeing that with the most  
perfect among men I have obtained my deskes. And so  
the fault shall not be laid on the best knyght in the world,  
my self provoked him thereto, I called him, I deceived him:  
and in dede, moe by fayre then Love I constrained him to  
yield, to easse those passions that horely torment me.

When the Souldane beheld the impudencie of his knyght,  
he thus replied. Very true it is, that I commanded thee  
to Lobe him, but not in this sort: wherof I can request no  
better excuse then thine owne shameles sprachas, which  
I will severely correct before it be night. So departing  
from her, he went to Trynous with these wordes. My  
knyght, I did never think that a man wise and valiant, as  
thou hast been esteemed, having lyes and frequented many  
princes Courtes, could imagine an met so fowle and detest-  
able, in his pallace that hath so highly honored thy. It  
behoveth thee therefore to take thy espouse of this thinges re-  
ther to amende thy fault by espousing my knyght, whom I  
frankly give thee, and therewithall to renounce thy Mar-  
riage, or suffer crull death in reward of thine offence. Sul-  
dane answered Trineus, thou abusest thy selfe in thinking  
to beguile me.

My G D D, first came me with patience to the death,  
rather then so wches and Honors momentante, I shold  
forsoke my faith to my knyght, by whom I hope to enjoy  
everlasting happynesse. As so the fact thou thuldest me  
withall, well may it be executed: for I haue neither rauished

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

or violated, but by force of Love erred, with her that thre-  
ned her owne Death before my face, except I consented to  
her desire: yet in respect of mine Honour, much better had  
it done to have suffered her dye: but to shonne the reproach  
of too lechers and inhumane Nature, I yielded to her Amo-  
rous petitions. Nowthwarting, if thou therefore wilst  
put me to death, thou canst not doe me so much shame as  
thou imaginest, but shalt cause me to perfore the Debt  
we all owe to Nature, and soz which we enjoy our Byth  
in this world.

To conclude, thy flatteries and menaces cannot make  
me thinke, much less hers, that bath so falsly deceived me.  
By the Starres (quoth the Souldane) the audacious beha-  
vour of these knyghts maketh me to wonder: the one hath  
willainously injured me in the presence of my Barons,  
and the other (for nothing I can say) will chanunge his  
opinion, which he shal full soon and barely repant. So cau-  
sing the Tower to be fast locked, he went to the great Hall,  
and there before all his knyghts, said. You haue heard my  
Lordes, the confession of them both, and withall haue seen  
their great obstinacy: wherefore by sentence irremovable I  
condemne them to death, and this day shal they be burned  
in the place accustomed, none of you all moove me to the  
contrary, for I will not be otherwise perswaded. By hea-  
ven, said the Prince Tomano, unhappy shold I be to stay  
with you any longer, wherefore at this instant I forsoake  
your alliance, and henceforth will shew my selfe your mo-  
tall enemy. Alas my Lord quoth the young Princesse Bel-  
fina, will ye so soone abandon my company? Follow me  
then answered Tomano, where I goe: for no more will I  
be scene in this tyrannous Court, where nothing but dishon-  
our and cruelty is v'ed.

Presently the Princesse and he mounted on Horse-  
backe, and with their traine came to Palmerins Campe:  
who having heard the Souldanes sentence, was ready to  
have

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

have slaine himselfe, but that he hoped to save the life of Trineus at the fatall houre. Alas my friends, quoth he, to his company, this day shall you assist me, to deliver the most gentle Knight that ever bare armes. Set sozwards courageously against the Tyrant, whom with the ayde of my God, we shall easily vanquish. Zephyra hearing that Tomano and Bellia were gone, and how the Soldane had judged Tryneus and Aurecinda to death: entred into melancholous regreates and acclamations, wherat the Soldane was so enraged, as he commannded that Tryneus and his Sister, shold presently be ledde to the place of execution, and vnder the charge of five thousand Houldiers, they were brought on horsebacke soorth of the Cittie: but when Aurecinda saw her selfe so hardly used, wringing her handes, and renting her comely locks of haire, she brake forth into those pitifull speches.

Alas Gentlemen, why are you the instruments to execute a Tyrants will: what recompence can you expect at his handes, that for grasy deare of my patrimony, sendeth me to death? So pierceing were these wordes in the eares of the Houldiers, as they very much lamented her case: but Tryneus, neuer changed colour, ryding on with resolute constance, not once looking to the menes of the Princesse.

When they were come with a sight of Palmerins powrer, they ranged themselves in battell array, committing Tryneus and Aurecinda, to sixt Knights, who shold convey them to the furnaces wheres their death was appointed, which was a good quarter of a league from the Cittie. Tryneus now seeing death before his eyes, and no succour where to receepe him: prepared himselfe to the last extremitie, and with many sorrowfull sartelles to Agriola and Palmerin was fully perswaded to endure the eximent. Palmerin knowing which way his friend shold be led to death, with a sufficient traine lay secretly ambaſsed, and espynng

## Emperour of Constantinope: PART.2

espynng opportunity, gave the summons to his men, whereupon they all issued forth very excellently. But as they rushed out from their secret ambushment, the ayre was suddenly obscure, and such thunder, hawle and rains fell, as never was the like heard or seene before: the Soldanes squadron seemed to be all in a flaming fire. The poore Persians thinking the end of the world was come vpon them, fled towards the Cittie: but notwithstanding all their hast, the greatest part of them remained dead in the field. If the naturall fire (prepared for Trineus) made him fearfull, doubtlesse this fire raised by conjuration made him much more affrighted, but suddenly came to him an armed Knight with his sword drawn, and mounted on a horse of mighty bignesse, who tooke the Hye of Trineus by the bridle, saying.

Come Sir Trineus, in despight of the Tyrant, thou shalt not die. At these wordes arrived Palmerin, whch embracing Trineus, said. Ah my dere friend and brother, what villanous mindes beare they that would doe you this outrage? Alight, and put on your Armour whch my Squire hath brought hither, that we may with honour revenge this shame. As they thought to goe les on the enemy, the Armed Knight, whch was Muzabelino, thus spake. My Lord, let vs not tarry扯yng time here, but summon your people together, and set forward to Grilca, wheres you shall find better succour then in this place. The desolate Tryneus, wht with his sorwr seare, and present we to behold his friend, was not able to speake one word; but Palmerin having well noted the Armed Knight, at length knew him to be Muzabelino, wherefore embracing him, said;

Ah my Lord, for ever be he King of Kings prayed, in graunting me to have knowledge of you, let me be wothly condemned of ingratitude, if I doe not acknowledge this great fauour to my friend: which I account as deere as

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

as done to my selfe. After many curteous salutations pasted on all sides, they sette forward to Grisca with these men and provision : where we will leave them, to shew what afterward befell to the Soltan and his people. After a long and very dangerous tempest, with whirle-windes, lightnings, and strange apparitions, to the great discomfit of all the Persians, one of the Princea came to the Soltane, saying,

My Lord, the Lightning bath faine so terribly in the Court, as all the Dailes of honour are faine therewith. An other brought newes, that three parts of the Soldiers which combact, & Trincus and Aurecinda sooth of the Citie, lay all faine in the rough temp. &c. While these strange mischies were discouering, Aurecinda entred the Chamber, saying, Now Soltane mayst thou behold thy sin : Haste thou not that the celestall spirits, have revenged our wrong with the death of thy people : and for my escape I render thanks to the highest, not to tho that gave my life to the fire, yet much better would my death haue contented me, then to live without him whose absence is my torment : and did not the hope of his life give me some comfort, thou shouldest perceve how little I esteime of my life. Then entred the Maide Zephira, and she falling at the Soldans feet, thus began. Ah my Lord, the dishonour you haue this day done me is unspeakable. Ysbr my deserts bane so simple in your eyes, that I might not intreate the liberty of one Knight, who this day ( I feare ) hath perished by your ingratitude ? Never shall I see those noble Knights againe, whose lives haue beene endangered for my welfare. Ah my Lord, if you looke into the twight of your essence, you shall perceive my teares are not shed without great reason.

Madam, quoth the Soldane, and you faire Sister, at this time excuse my fault committed, and patiently hear what hath happened ? For I dole to you by the faith of a

Prince,

## Emperour of Constançiope. PAR T.2

Prince, that I will make sufficient amends for my trespass. When he now thought to be no further troubled, his Sister Lizaunda entred mad and raving, and snatching his Hatchion from his side, said. The villaine, so what happeneth by thy commandement, one of thy Sisters is for ever defamed, and the other will presently end her life before thee. Herewith she stab'd the weapon to her heart, and fell dead at the Soldans feet, to the no little sorrow of his Spouse, and all that were present : but Zephira causing the Body to be taken away, the Soldane commandeth she shold be honorably buried, and erected a goodly Tomb of sparke over her grabe, saving the manner of her death to be thereon described. Afterward, by the counsell of the Loys of Persia, he sent the Prince Tomano, and the strange Knights, all the riches and treasure they had left behinde them. The Princess Aurecinda remained in continual heauines, and with the short time she folt her selfe to be conceiued with Childe. Herein she somewhat consoled herselfe, though Fortune would not suffer her to enjoy the company of her friend, yet one day she hoped to see his lively image : which at the time appointed by Nature she did, being delivred of the godlike male Childe that ever was born in Persia, naming him Ryfarano, who carried the beautifull complexion of his mother, as he did the hardinesse and magnanimity of his father.

Chap.

CHAP. LVII.

How Palmerin and Trineus having sojourned awhile at Grisia with the King Abimar, departed to the Isle of Malfida, where by the meanes of Dulacco and Palmerin, all the Enchantments were finished.

**B**y the way as the Princes did ride towards Grisca, Palmerin used these speches to Trineus. How happy is the Prince that gives credit to good counsell, and will not be led by flatteries, or subject himselfe to his owne passions? and how unforlunate are they that fall into the contrary? Can ye have a better example hereof than the trayterous Holdane & Who fist (causid) disquieted the good King Abimar, and afterward at his Sisters incition imprisoned his friend: for your good successe herein my Lord, you must thank Muzabelino, and the Prince Tomano, whose power was so ready to defend you. Tryneus remembryng his follies past, was still so ashamed thereof, as he coulde make no answere, wherfore Palmerin thus spake agayne.

Alby: By Lord, bath the imprisonment for faire Aurecinda stricken you dumbe: leave this bathfulnelle to women, and remember your former courage. Stent Hercules, whose honours are yet so rise in memroy, did not he for the love of Iole, ware seminre garments, and spin among women? Did not Achilles the like, when he was with his faire friend in the Court of King Lycomedes? Muke Anthony the Romane Emperour, did not he follow Cleopatra before Octavius, although his Arme on the Sea, was two-fold the number of his enimies? And you, for a little familiar love to a yong Princesse, who conque-

red you only by impotunate fate, remaine thos conques-  
ted. Doe you imagine your selfe to excell in Strength, prob-  
esse and knowledge, Hercules, Achilles, and the Emperour  
Antonic.

Thus therre Brother answered Trineus, well may you  
boast of your especciall graces being able to triumph over  
concupiscence: but so yokesome is my offence in mine owne  
conciit, as I thinke my selfe unþowþþ to be lame among  
men of vertue. What shall I say to my Agricola, when  
she shall understand my heinous offence? how shall I dare  
to present my selfe before her? for that, said Palmerin,  
we shall doe well enough: but I woulde it were so wel come  
to passe, that we were with her to abide her censure. Contin-  
uing these speches, they arrived at Grisca, where the  
King being adverstised of their comming, came to make  
them, vsing these gracious words at their entertainment.  
Right welcome are ye my Noble Friends, no maruell  
though the Holdans sought to wrong you, remembryng  
how for my sake you used him in the battell. In sooth my  
Lord answered Palmerin, well both your nobility deserue  
our service, and his injurions dealing shalre revenge,  
which hapily hereafter he may faire to his cost, vsing trans-  
ggers so unenlyably: but here we present your Daugther  
Belsina to your Majestie, after whiche mariage all these  
strakes began.

Welcome faire Daughter, said the King, much better  
then my Bonne bath borne to your Fathers Court. When  
my father, quoth the Princesse, bath considered his farris,  
esabilitesse he will be hardy sayp therfore, and make sa-  
tissacion for anything misdone: till then I beseech your  
highnesse to concide the best. And accoiring as the Prin-  
cess had spoken, it came to passe, for within thys dates al-  
ter, the Holdane sent Ambassadours to the King Abimar,  
to excuse the imprisonment of Tryneus, and the sentence of  
death he gave against him: sending to him and Palmerin

## The History Of Palmerin De Oliva

alltheir treasure, and sumptuous presents in signs of satisfaction, and so his Daughter Belisha and the Prince Tomano, he sent two Camels laden with gold, as the dowreys of their marriage.

Now are Palmerin and Tryneus weary of their so long stay from their friends, wherefore they desired leave of the King to depart, who seeing he could not well intreate their longer abode, right thankfully yielded to their request, giving them all thinges needfull for their journey, as Horses, Armour, men, money, and divers other gifts of incalculable value. For which kindness they humbly thanked his Majestie, refusing to trouble themselves with such riches in their travaille, no; would they take that the Soldanis sent them, or what they brought from the ten Rocks: except the Bird and the two Crownes, giving all the rest to Muzabelino, desiring him to continue them in remembrance. Sir Lords, quoth he, no service can be lost that is done to such liberall Princes, as now you give me good occasion to conseil: and though both I and mine would spend all our following daies in your service, yet can we not recompence the very least of your courtesies, remeinding my Honne Bellechino once moze to you my Lord, in hope he will prove a loyall and faithfull Servant, other while I could part his head from his shoulders in your presence.

And because the way you brought Madame Zephyra, is very long, troublesome and dangerous: I have prepared a Shipppe for you, which without any perill shall spedily carry you to Malfada, and a yong knyght my Brother byme I appointed Pilot therin, who shall direct you how to kniue all the enchantments in the Isle, and afterward I desire you so to oder the matter with the King Maulerino, that my Brother may have the government thereof after your departure. Welbe me noble friend, answered Palmerin, your Honne will I intreat as well becomes

## Emperour of Constanſiople. PART.2.

belomes him, and your Brother shall not onely have the charge of the Isle, which I will surely give him: but I will so workis with the Brother to Zephyra, that he shall endow him with greater possessions. So taking their leave of all the Courtiers, Muzabelino brought him to the Shipppe: wherin they were no sooner entred, but it presently cut through the waters with such violence, as they were very quickly come to Malfada. They going on Shore, Dulacco Brother to Muzabelino demanded of the Prince Tryneus, if he had the King he sound in the Cup at the Castell of the tenne Rocks. I have it on my finger Sir, answered Tryneus. Let vs thare then enter the Isle, said Dulacco, as so you Bellechino and Colmelio, stay you in the Shipp till you heare the sound of a Cozett, and then may you safely deuenture in the land.

Dyardo standing in one of the Turrets in the Castell, saw when the Shipp came and cast Anker, wherefore he expected if any durst come sowth thereof on the Shore, and so amazed he was that the thare knyghtis were not transformed, as till Palmerin spake to him, he knew not what to imagine, but afterward he made hast downe, and letting downe the Bridge, came and embraced him, saying: Welceme is my noble Lord to Malfada: have you learned oþ brought any remedy with you, whereby to recover your friends here enchanted? in happy houre did you behewe your labour, if so it came to passe, but what may these two knyghtis be that came in your company? The one is the Prince Tryneus, quoth Palmerin, whom I so long time sought for, and the other is the man that must give us assistance.

After many friendly embracings, Palmerin demanded what was become of the two Damosells he left there. Sir Lord, said Dyardo, they remaine prisoners to doe penance for the hard speeches they gone you. So went they all to the prison, wheres Palmerin demanded which of the

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

had the key of the enchanted Tower: but they continuing in their former obstinate and mallice, would not answere one word. False harlots, quoth Palmerin, why speakes ye not? if you give me not the key quickly, all your sorte shall not save your lives. They being fearefull of death, presently fell on their knees, and one of them taking the key搜出 of her pocket, opened the doore of the Tower, saying:

Master Knight, I hope thou wilst report thy battynesse. Palmerin and his three companions went in, where they beheld a huge Doell of Copper, holding a Bow with an arrow ready drawn to shote: by him hung a goodly Coynet of Jewy, and on the other was faire Books. By Rose said Dulacco, we must have both the Coynet and the books: and if you faille in getting them, no one alive can end the enchantments. By God will strengthen me, said Palmerin, so drawing his sword, and covering himselfe with his shield, he boldly kept to the Tower. And in despite of the menials that fiercely strooke at him, he paid the blowes bloulantly from him: when suddenly such a sorefull cry was heard through the Castell, as made them all to shake and tremble. The Books and Coynet he easly reached, and giving them to Dulacco, willed him to finish the rest. That will I, quoth he, but you must be ready to kill me: let us now goe forth and you shall see marvelles: when I am reading the first leafe of the Books, doe you scand the Coynet so loud as you can possible. Palmerin did as he was commanded, and by the reading of Dulacco: and the sound of the Coynet, all that were enchaunted in the Island came running thereto: being so many as Palmerin was amazed therat.

Dulacco having ended his Lecture, they all returned to their former shapes, the first were the couragous Prysoll, the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus, the Prince of Mecena, the Prince Olorico, Laurana and Agiola, whome

Trineus

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Tryneus ranne and embraced, seeing her so perfect in beauty as ever she was.

Now the remembrance of his offence with Aurecinda, stopped the passage of his speech, and her favours shewing to the great Turke, made her likewise ashamed: yet kisses and embracings with teares and sighes, delivered there inward joy for this happy meeting. Here must we imagine the comfort of the other three Princes and Laurana, then which doubt. It could be no greater, seeing their noble friend that had delivered them, and beholding each other in good disposition. Now are all those which were enchaunted, brought to their former shape, as well Turks as Christians, and their Ships by Dulacco restored them againe: chiesely they that belonged to the Merchant Estebon and his sonnes, to whom Palmerin gaue such abundance of treasure, as afterward they had no cause of want, discharging each one to their owne country, who departed thence to their no little contentation. Agiola, Laurana and the other Princes, being altogether consering of their good fortune, Palmerin commeth cheerfully among them, and discoursed what had happened since the separation, wherein he revealed all that you have heard already, which to repeate againe would be but troublesome: it suffiseth you to conceive, that all the friends being met together, are so well acquainted with each others mishapse, as now they joyfully rejoice in this happy successe. The next morning, Palmerin called Bellechino his Squire, saying to him.

Thou must presently poste to Elaine to the King Mulerino, and having saluted him on my behalfe: deliver him these Letters, wherein his Majestie shall bee acquainted with all that hath happened, but make all possible spedde thou canst, because at thy returne we will sette to sea presently. The Squire being gone, Palmerin gave in charge to Dulacco, to see his Shippes victualled and provided, and that withall which Muzabelino had given him.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Afterward he went to his Agriola and Laurana good morrow, and then comming to Fryoll the King of Sparta, and Olorico, who were all pleasantly discouering together in their Chamber, he said to them. Aluredly my good friends, if Fortune had been so adverse to me, that I could not have found Tyuncus, or the meane to deliver you from the enchantment; I had ginen my farewell to Armes, riches and honour, and wold have haunted those pathes wher never man trode. For with what face could I approach the presence of the Sister and Aunt, having lost them whom they live onely to leve. And you noble Prince Olorico, have just occassion to complaine on me, that have caused you to endure such paine and trubble: but in recompence of this other great wrong, I will cause you to enjoy her, whom you haue so long faithfully labed, and so soone as I am arrived at Constantinople, I will send Ambassadors to my Lord the Seldan, that he may accept you as his Son in my stead.

My Lord, answered Olorico, the honour you haue done me in accepting my company, I account to exceed all other courtesies, who though for a time I haue been vns fortunate. I take it patiently, assuring you by the woord of a prince, that I imagine the man not worthy to take the swete, who cannot abide to seele the sorwr. By this time were Palmerins Letters come to the King Mulerino, who hauing understood their content, joyfull of Palmerins returne, and of his good fortune in finishing the enchantments: he came presently with his traine to Malfada: where to discourse the pleasure on each side conceyded, the honourable and gracious courtesies beseeched, with all the especiall labours becomming a King and so worthy personages, is sure beyond my capacity; and therfore I referre it to your gentle consideracion. But at Palmerins entry Dulacco was made Lord and chiefe Gouvernour of Malfada, and divers other territories neare adjoyning:

which

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

which mooved Palmerin thus to thanke the King. Haire your Majestye for my sake, hath bestowed this Island on my worthy good friend, to the end that the name of which kev Malfada may be utterly rased soorth: let us intreate that it may henceforth bee called the Isle of the two Lovers, because therin was enchaunted two, the most loyall Servants that ever Loue had, having endured wonderfull and bariable fortunes, and yet here met in the end to their no little comfort.

Let it be, quoth the King, as you haue appointed, and whosoeuer hencesoorth calleth it otherwise, shall be held among vs as an open blasphemer. Afterward the King accompanys Palmerin and his Friends to their Shippes, and there committed them to their prosperous voyage, so Palmerin, his seaven compaines, the two Princesses, with his Squires Bellcchino and Colmelio, entred the Shippes that Muzabelino gave him: & an hundred Knights which the King Mulerino had given him, were embarked in an other Shippes well appointed, so boylng saile, with a merrie gale of winds they launced into the See, and the King with his traine returned into the Courte, leauing Dulacco quietely possesed of the Isle of the two Lovers.

Chap. LVIII.

How Palmerin and his companions sayling on the Sea, met with Ptolome : and of the honorable entertainment the Emperour, Florendos , and the Ladies made them, when they arrived at Constantinople.



These dages sayled our Knights without any strange Adventure , and on the fourth, as Phœbus ganne enter his Chariot, to dispayle his radiant golden beames on his Uncle Neptunes Regions : Palmerin standing alst on the Decke, spyped a great Carrick, whiche with full haile made haste towardes hem, and by the Banners he discerned that it was of Turkie, whereto he cryed aloud to his Companions to arme themselves.

Suddenly were they all come alst on the Decke armied, and the hundred Knights in the other shipppe were like- wise in readyness : when the Carricke being come neare them, they myght beholde the Turkes strongly provided, and Ptolome their Captaine brauely incouraging them. At length they buckled together, and a dangerous fight beganne betwene them, so that seuen of the King Mauelinos Knights were slaine , the King of Sparta soye wounded by Ptolome, and Dyardo in great perill of his life. When Palmerin saw the King of Sparta fall, and that the Woress had dangerously hurt divers of his friendes , fearing the King was slaine , he came to Ptolome , and after many sharpe strokis on either side, at last gotte him downe, when pulling his Helmet surlyly from hir, thinking to have smitten off his head, Ptolome cried: Kill me not Sir knight, for I yield my selfe to thee. Palmerin knowing his friend,

said

Emperour of Conſtantinopole. PART.2

said to his companionis and the rest. Give over my friends and fght no longer, for false Fortune hath too much deluded vs.

Ah wrothy Ptolome , why have I dealt so hardly with the? Is it possible that any man may be likened to me in mishap? So soone am I out of one, but presently I fall into another: By Heauen (weare friend) if I haue slaine the, right swone would I haue borne revenged on my selfe. Then sweet Ptolome, how Palmerin gretues for his offence , more then if he had lost the best limme on his body. When Ptolome beheld his friend Palmerin , and by him the noble Prince Trineus, embracing them, he said. O Sabioure of the Worlde , how highly hast thou this day favoured me, permitting me to finde my dearest friendes? Then they brought him to the Princesse Agriola in her Cabbin , who was not a little glad to beholde the man, that endured with her some part of misery . and Colmelio was joyfull to behold hym Ptolome, in that their hap was to be parted when they were led to be sold as slaves: but Agriola would needs heare the discourse of all his fortunes, since y first time of they separation, whiche he and Colmelio truly recounted. Believe me Ptolome said Palmerin, I see we haue had our shares in aduersite, and hardly can we judge whose wrong hath bene greatest: But how came you thus to be Captainne aumong the Turkes? O Lord (quoth he) the Princesse Alchidiana bought me , and charged me to sake you, aswell by Sen as by Land: and for my defence haue me forty Knights, of whom there now remaynes but tenne alive. What lady am I highly beholding to (said Palmerin) and for the wrong I haue done her by the death of her Knights. I will excuse my selfe by an honorable Embassage, when I shall send the Prince Olorico to her againe. And that shou Ptolome maist know soms of my good happy, understande that I haue found my Falter and Mother , who are Florendos the King of Macedon , and Grizna the Daughter and

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

and wryte to the Emperour of Greece. I did ever per-  
twade my selfe (quoth Ptolome) that your Discent was of  
Royall lineage: But I intreate you for my sake, that these  
Knights whiche yore men have taken, may be gently vled,  
and enjoy theyr Liberty. Palmerin calling them to him,  
saith. For Ptolome his sake that was your Captaine, and  
her Love who commanded you to travell with him, I wish  
to you as to my selfe: yet shall you all goe with me to Con-  
stantinople, that you may helpe to conduct the Prince Olorico  
backe againe, whom I meane to send with you vnto  
your M:tre Greece.

We abide ray Lord (quoth they) at your Direction, and  
willingly obey your command, in that we have knowne  
how dearely the Holdane loved you, and better Fortune  
could not haue besallen vs, then so luckily to meete with you  
and the Prince Olorico: as for your Companions that are  
slaine there is no remedy, for such mishappes are common,  
where Fortune frowmeth. So sayled they on friendly to-  
gither, and on the See we will leabe them, to tell you of the  
returne of the Ambassadour Maucetto to the Holdane of  
Babylon, who hearing that the Persian had refused to assist  
him, was somewhat offendeth therat: But when he saw  
what Palmerin had written, he pacified himselfe, saying:  
Ah gentle Palmerin hast thou bene in the Battell at Con-  
stantinople, I haue not neede to demand help of him whom  
I judged my friend: but seeing Fortune hath shoune her-  
selfe in contrary I will not attempt anything, from which  
thou disswades me.

Maucetto declared, that Palmerin had likewise sent  
a Letter to the Princesse Alchidiana, whiche he coman-  
ded him presently to carry her: No sooner had she read the  
Letter, and thereby understanding his Knightly deede of  
Chivalry, but embracing the Embassadour, she thus spake:  
Maucetto, never couldest thou haue brought me better  
newes, then of the man whose name flourishest in all pla-

ces.

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2

res. Ah sweet Letter, written by the hande of the most per-  
fect knight livingfull of charity, and choisely will I keape  
thee. Ah Ptolome, whom my Noble friend loves so deare-  
ly, thee haue I sent in dangerous hazard of thy life: but may  
I once see thee againe, thou shalt perceue my Love for Pal-  
merins sake.

Happy art thou Princesse Zephira, habing with the  
the mirrour of Spunkinde. My Lord (quoth he) as though  
Palmerin had bene present) will thou wrong thy selfe so  
much as to tarry with her? Dare the Holdanes Sisters  
vaine that they love the? They be faire, as I understand,  
but yet not so faire that thou shouldest refuse me for them.  
What haue I said? Doubtlesse matter to kill me shone re-  
proach, for if thou wouldest, the vngly offers of my Fa-  
ther, and my impotunate miseries could us way mowbe  
thee: hardly may the Persians prevaile with thee, especial-  
ly in such a weighty cause as we be. Maucetto, what  
sayest thou? Is Lord Palmerin like to stay long in Persia  
with the Holdanes Sisters? No heada (quoth he) I heard  
him say very often, that he would depart thence before a  
Moneth was expyed.

In these and such like speeches they continued, wherein  
we purpose to leave them: For by this time is Palmerin  
and his Friends arrived in the haven of Constantinople,  
and Colmilio is sent before to the Wallace, to advertise the  
Emperour of these most joyfull tydings. As Colmilio en-  
tered into the great Hall, the first man he met was his Fa-  
ther Gerrard, who was nobly made Lord Chamberlaine  
to the King Florendos: Wherefore falling on his knee before  
him, he said: Father, little diu I thikke to find you exalted  
to such honour, happy haue the day when you found Prince  
Palmerin: and much more happiness is this day, in that I  
bring the most joyfull newes that ever man did to this  
Court. Old Gerrard was exceeding glad to behold his son,  
catching him in his armes, said. Welcome Colmilio to thy  
aged

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

aged Father : hast thou heard any tydings of the Lord and Master ? Goe with me Father, answered Colmilio, and you shall heare matter of merbaile. At that instant came the Emperoz with the King Florendos into the Hall, and all the Ladies going to heare churche service, wherefore Gerard thus spake to his highnesse. My Lord, see here my Sonne Colmilio, who long time hath travailed in search of Prince Palmerin, he hath some message of importance to deliver to your Majestye: Right welcome is he, quoth the Emperour, say what thou wilt my friend, thou hast free liberty.

Mighty Emperour, said Colmilio, your Son Prince Palmerin is arrived in the Haven, and with him the young Prince Tryneus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, the good Knight Sir Ptolome, the five Princes which went with him from Macedon, the two Princes of England and Durace, with divers other unknowne to me: and saluting your Majestye with his humble, duly intreated that Horses may be sent for them and the Ladies that he and they may come to kisse your highnes hand. The Emperour, Florendos and the Ladies, were ready to stroone with joy at these tydings, and having embrased the Passenger, commanded a togall trayne to goe maste his Sonne, and godly Palfrayes to bring them to the Pallace, some ranne on fute to the Porte, other on horsebacke, so that before the Emperours traine came, such sorte of Gentlemen and Merchants were there to receive them, as hardly they could stand one by another. After they were all mounted on horsebacke, with great joy and triomph they rode towards the Pallace, where Trineus falling on his knoe before the Emperour, said.

Long live your Majestye in health and happiness, here may you behold the man, for whom my Lord Palmerin your Sonne, hath endured such paine and travaille. The Emperour perceiving by his speches that he was Tryne-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

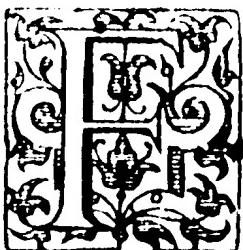
us the Prince of Allemaigne, thus answered. I hope my Lord that you will beare with mine age and weakenesse, which hindres me from entertaining you as faine I wuld, but I beseech you to arise, for it ill beserites so great a Prince to humble himselfe in such sort. Florendos & Griana (in this time) welcommes their Sonne, Arismena the King of Sparta, Armida her Fry soll, and the old Emperoz and Empresie graciouly entertained Agriola and Laura na, each adient friend so embrased and welcommes, as all the day was spent onely in those ceremonies. The next moring Palmerin dispatched his Servante Urbainillo to the Emperour of Allemaigne, that he and Polynarda might understand these long exected newes: and afterward comming to Sir Fry soll, he said to him; Brother, our Siborther hath enriched us with a Sibor since our departure, and my Sister Armida me with two Nephewes, I pray you let us goe see them.

Hereupon the Nurses brought the young Princes, the eldest of them being named Dytrius, and the youngest Aclcar, the young Princesse, Daughter to Florendos and Griana, was called Denita: so faire and comely were the Infants, as if Nature had studed to make them most exquisit. Beside me Sir Fry soll, quoth Palmerin, if my Sibor can continue as he begins, the Realme of Hungaria shall hardly want heires: what a two at a blow, sir Lady it is a signe of good fertilit. And when you are entred the estate of Wedlocke, answered Fry soll, if you Mege increase according to the greatness of desire: Madame Polynarda shall be as well sped as her neighbours. Thus sate the Princes together, attending newes of the Courtier, that were with Urbainillo to the Emperour of Allemaigne, who as that time was at Vienna.

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

## CHAP. LVII.

How the Duke of Mensa and the Count of Redona conducted the Prince Olorico into Assiria, where he was espoused to the Princesse Alchidiana.



¶ the space of a Moneth and more, Palmerin, Tryneus and Agriola sojourned at Constantinople, till all things were prepared for them to travell towards Allemaigne: during which time Palmerin shewed such signs of love to the Prince Olorico, as he would al-  
done ver forth of his company. And seeing that more and more his avarous passions increased, he said: Dear friend Olorico, although I am no way able to recompence your long continued kindness, or remunerate the paine and trUBLE you have suffered in my company: yet have I determined (so you like therselv) to send you to Assiria, and with you the Duke of Mensa, and the Count of Redona, as Ambassadors to my Lord the Soltane, with such an honourable traine beside, as Mylos shall have no occasion to complaine.

¶ so doe I this (swete Prince) as envious of your company, or that I stand in feare of the Soltane: but only to keepe my promesse, which was, that I would aide you to my uttermost, to accomplish the mariage betweene you and Madame Alchidiana, soz whom I see our mind intin-  
ctantly troubled. By Lord, answered Olorico, if ever perfect love might be discerned in a Princes heart, doubt-  
le we it is most simply deciphered in yours. Where can you find in any history, semblable affection? or that a Christian would so favour his enemy, that is contrary to him in Law and profession? It is the humanity, that so great a Prince

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2

a Prince would so much abafe himselfe, to accept as his companion in Armes, the poore Sonne to the King of A-  
stria: praizing for his goods, not the surety alone of the  
Christians, but the alliance of the greatest Lord in Asia.  
Wherefore my noble Lord, Once of your accustomed good  
nature you have meane this offer, of simple judgement  
shoale I shew myselfe to refuse it. I accept your gracious  
kindnes, and assure your selfe of his ready service, wher-  
your p[re]cious vertues hath so bound to you, as so eber I  
will name my selfe the servant to the Prince of Greece.  
Hereupon Palmerin wroote to the Soltane of Babilon in  
forme as followeth.

## The Letter of Prince Palmerin, to the great Sultane of Babylon

R ight puissant Lord of Assiria, if the obedience we owe  
to Parents and Countrey, are causes sufficient to call  
hous a Knight errant, with resall of all strange  
friendships and alliance: I hope your Maj. by will not  
mislike of my returne from Persia to Constantinople. And  
because I was there asverred by your highnes Ambas-  
sieur Mincetto, how you habe resolved to vex us with o-  
pen hostility: I will now reveale unto you, that by the  
grace and labour of the highest God, Since my departure  
from your Courte, I have obtained knowledge of my Pa-  
rents who are such, as if you shewe the wackes of Constan-  
tinople: you goe about to destroy that Palmerin, whom  
heretofore you habe so daintly loved, and is now become  
the onely betre to that Empire. Wherefore my Lord, if  
soz my sake you will graunt so much, as to forget revenge  
for your deceased Brother Gamezio: both we and all ours  
shall continually name our selves, your Friends and alli-  
ants against all your enemies. Contrariwise, if you wil  
follow

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

follow your former opinion, we must defend our selves so well as we may. And so I am no more (with credit) soe  
lase my Countrey, Parents and Friends, to returne at  
gatue to your service: I send you the Prince Olorico,  
a knight both valiant and hardy as any in all Turkie, with-  
out exception of your Court, the great Turkes, or the Da-  
vans of Persia, and he to serve you in my stead. Desiring  
your highnesse by that affection which you doth bear me,  
when the Prince Amarano wasaine in your presence:  
that you accept him as your son, and give him in mariage  
to your daughter Alchidiana, as the man that hath best de-  
served her, if ever Prince might merit a Ladies Love by  
bounty and chosse chivalry. So shall you perorme an ac-  
tion of mickle hono; and bind me continually to acknow-  
ledge this kinndece.

Yours Palmerin d'Oliva;

An other letter he wrote to the Princesse Alchidiana,  
the tenore whereof was thus,

## The Letter of Palmerin, to the Princesse of Assiria.

To your Madame Alchidiana, daughter to the great  
Sultan of Babilon: Palmerin d'Oliva your Knight,  
sendeth health condigne to your magnificence Madam,  
sending to your Father the Duke of Mensa, and the Coun-  
try of Redova our Ambassadors, to intreate of perpetuall  
peace & alliance between his Majestie and vs, whereto may  
it please you to give favourable assistance, I thought good  
by them likewise to write to your excellencie, with ear-  
nest intreaty to receive as yours, the Prince Olorico, helpe  
to the Crowne of Arabia. You know faire Madame, that  
never had he come to your Fathers Court, had not the pe-  
nillous

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

penillous battell agaynt the proud Brethren of Amarano  
provoked him, nor would he have adventured the dangers  
of the Sea, but in hope (at length) to purchase your graci-  
ous love. By these consideracions, gaud Madame, enter-  
taine him into your sober thoughts, who bath no more sea-  
red to spend his blood for your sake, and thvst his life into  
infinite dangers, then I have done to set my hand and pen  
to this paper. I know that your grace, beauty and great  
dowry, commandeth the chiesell Prince on the earth for  
your Husband, and (to sheld my selfe from blame) I know  
that I promised you my service, when I shold returne  
from Constantinople: but how hath it fallen out: your  
Palmerin to knowne by them that have like authority o-  
ver him, as your loue bath on he Prince Olorico. I am a  
Christian, a stranger, Sonne to the Ample King of Mace-  
don, and Daughter to the Emperour of Greece, before  
of very little or no desert at all. He is of your Law, your  
Neighbour, Sonne to the rich King of Arabia, a Prince  
of as high vertue as euer was in my company: witness  
whereof he made on the Phrygians, and in an hundred places  
since in my presence. Wherefore Madame, if noblenes  
of hart, and loyal loue deserve so great and alliance, I know  
no Prince this day living moze worthy then he. Alluring  
you withall, that moze gladly would I die thy death, then  
sollicite the cause of him, whom I shold but imagine un-  
worthy your person.

Your Knight, Palmerin D'Oliva

When he had sealed their Letters, he gave them to  
the Ambassadors, who accompanied with fiftie Grecian  
Knights, went to the Haven where there Ships was pre-  
pared: after them followed the King Maulerino han-  
ded Knights, the number being supplied with other, in  
steed of them that were slaine, and after them went the  
Knights

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

Knightes that came with Ptolome : then came the Prince Olorico and Palmerin , debiking by the way on many severall busynesses.

By Lord ( quoth Palmerin ) I imagine you now remember our taking by the Asmyzall Olimacell , and feare that like mishappe may againe besall you : I therefore (as your Gaurde ) gifte you the hundredth Knightes I had of the King Maulerino , and fifty other Knightes naturall borne in Greece , as able in Armes as any other whatsoeuer , intreating you to hold me excused if I give you not such estate becommes your nobility . Worthy Palmerin ( answered the Prince ) the greatest Lord that is might well content himself with the Honourable company you have given me .

Ano had not extreme passions overruled me , and calld me hence to her service whom I have onely chosen : I would forsake Arabia , and the Law of Mahomet , onely to live in your company . But in what place my Fortune guides me hereafter , neither Parents or Friends shall hinder me to say that I am your belovd and affectionate Servant . Like like also doe you receiue of me ( said Palmerin . ) So with fears they left each other , Olorico and all his company being aboyd , such labourable wind and weather they had , as without any danger they safely arrived where the Soldane lay : and first the tennes Knightes went on shoie , they that were left of the company which the Prince Alchidiana gave to Ptolome , and comming before the Princeesse , said :

Madame , your Knight Sir Ptolome humble saluteth , you by vs , sending your excellencie this Letter . Beside there is now arriued at the porte , the Prince Olorico , and certaine Ambassadours from the valiant Palmerin , Prince of Greece and Macedon , who come on his behalfe to kisse your hand . The Princeesse having heard these newes , and read the Letter which Ptolome sent , containing the great good soumes of Palmerin , was inwardly so ravished with delight

## Emperour of Constanctinople . PART.2.

delight , as a long space she remained silent , but at length brake forth into these speeches . Ah fortune , how well thou knowest to change matters which way thou pleasest , not according to the will & desire of passionate mindes , but on the behalfe of the highest in perfections . Ah Palmerin the man whom my heart shall ever love , how may faire Polyhilda fustly learne her selfe happy , having thee for her Lord and love : considering that the beauty and graces of so many Ladies conquered with thy deserts , noz the sumptuous riches continually offered thee , could once divert thee from thy firme affection . Ah Alchidiana , that which hath made so many Ladies and Knightes fortunate , in compassing the onely issue of their desires , both now remayne for the torment alone , making that the most unhappy creature under the Sun . Agriola , Griana , Arilimena , Armida , and Zephyra , are they ( sweete Knight ) by thy meanes in assurance of their loves ? Tryneus , Fryfoll , the King of Sparta , Maulerino , Abimar , Tomano , and others other : are their Realms quieted , and their Ladies triumphing in their joyes , onely by the price of thy blood , and danger of thy life ? And must I alone remayne disgraced , soever confounded , having lost the Knight I loved as my soule ? Whille the Princeesse continued these complaints , the Prince Olorico and the Ambassadours were come before the Soldane , and being entertained by him with very gracious countenance , they presented the Letters from Palmerin , which being read in the presence of all his Lords , the Soldane thus answered .

By Friends , I will impart these newes to my Sonnells and my Daughter , and afterward make you answere as I may . Whereupon the Duke of Mensa , the Counte of Redora , and the Prince Olorico withdrew themselves , and soon after the Soldane sent for his Daughter , thus speaking to her ; Daughter , our Princes think good , and have counselled me to make peace with Palmerin , who at

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

this present is heye of Greece : and requireth in witnessse of our truce , that I shold give you in marriage to the renowned Prince Olorico. Nowle your selfe hereon, soz Palmerin hath earnestly intreated it by writing , and here I have a letter for you, I thinke to the same effect. The Princelle having reade the Letter, returned this answere. It is very true my Lord , his request to me is for the selfe same cause : seeing therfore it liketh you, and the Princes of our Realme think it convenient, in respect of the common profit and god may ansae therby : it is not for me to make demandall.

Right glad was the Holdane of this answere , wherefor he said. Give then faire Daughter and decke your selfe accordingly , soz after Dinner in the presence of the Ambassadours, you shall be affained to the Prince. Olorico since his attual had talked but little with his Lady, wherefore he now determined to goe see her : and meeting her as she returned from the Holdane , he saluted her with great reverence , but the Princelle seigning that she knew nothing yet of their mariage, thus speake to him. I understand my Lord , that your companion Palmerin hath altogether forsoke vs. Madame, quoth the Prince, if he have abandoned your company, it is onely by the fauour of Fortune ; who hath bene a greater friend to him then any man besos : yet cannot the great honours and possessions he now enjoyeth , make him forget you, in that at my departure he said, soever he would live and die your knyght. God kepe him, said the Princelle, where ever he is, soz still is my hart bounde to his remembrance : and gladly can I doe as much for him as for my Brother, though his present advancement hinder him from my service. Such is his trust Madame, quoth he, in your fauour, that you will not refuse any honest request he makes to your excellencie , in which respect he hath sent me to intreate you, that you will be assistante to the peace he desyreth with your father, and

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

and that you would bouchsafe me so much hono, as in his Cled to enterteine me into your service, whiche to begin, I present you my heart, that never since the day of our departure from Constantinople, hath entred any rest, being absent from the onely meane of my comforte. If then I have lived all this while in some hope, by remembraunce of your exceeding graces and courtesies : beyond all other shuld I account my selfe in happietesse, if now at length you receive me as your Servant. I receive you, said the Princelle for Palmerins sake, and soz your owne deserts, which have bene so worthy : requiting you with equall affection, so that you deny me not one request. Nothing shall you be denyeid (sweet Princelle, quoth he) if by my life it may be compassed.

Now will I remayne anything of so great value (said he) this is the labour you shall graunt me: hereafter when time shall serue, that you will conduct me to Constantinople, there to behold the faire Princelle Polynarda, and the magnifcent Courte of Noble Palmerin, in recompence whereof, I give my selfe to be your wife, and accept you as my Lord and Husband. If Olorico was now well pleased , I referre to your judgements , wherefore confirming their promises, by kisses and embracings, with solemn protestations and irreuocable boves, they departed thence to their Chambers.

After Dinner , the Princelle attyzed in most sumptuous Garments, came into the Hall with her wayting Laides , when the Holdane sent soz the Ambassadours, and thus spake to them. My Friends, I now perceive the man to be euer foolish that trusteth in himselfe, I thought by my power to destroy Greece, where on the contrary my people are destroyed. I thought to continue unquenchable haire toward your Master, and now I am constrained to graunt him peace: yet makkenrayned, but by the wooke of the greatest God, I am mewbed so to do, which in the presence of all my Lordes I protest , and with as good a will as he

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

so h remade it. And then the power of that Majestie, which can subue and conquer where he list: and I swere to you by my Crown, that the good Fortune of Palmerin, contenteth me as well, as if he were mine owne Sonne. Righte Holane, answered the Duke of Mensa, if you re. solue to lobe the Prince Palmerin, both he and his will not fail to performe y like unto y: and on his behalfe we most faithfully promise, hat agaist all your enemites (Christendom excepted) you shall be assured of his succour assistance.

I request no better assurance (quoth the Holane) then this that he bath sent, and that you may witnessse I am his faithfull friend: at this instant shall the peace be ratified by all the Lords and Princes here present, and to seal the same, as he requested, I give my Daughter to the worthy Prince Olorico. Great joy was generally made for this good agreement, and the two Lovers were espoused together within some dayes after: and the time being come for the Embassadors returne to Constantinople, Alchydiana sent divers rich gifts to Palmerin and Polynarda, the like did the Holane and the Prince Olorico.

### CHAP. LX.

How Palmerin, Trynemus, and Agriola, accompaned with many great Lords and Princes, went to the Emperour of Allemaigne at Vienna, where great tryumphs were made, at the celebrating of the Marriage between Trynemus, and the Princess Agriola.

**N**ow Dvseone after the Prince Olorico, and the Embassadors of Greece were gone towards Assiria, Palmerin (although the Aged Emperour very much diswaved him) made provision, for his speedy voyage to Allemaigne; and having already conducted the King of Sparta,

and

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

and his Aunt Alismena some part of their way homeward: at his returme to the City of Constantinople, came to the Duke of Pontus, saying: I remember the time when you did cut off the great Turkes head, an act deserwing god and especiall coompence, and that you therby delibered vs, and performed it at the motten of the Paganesse Laurana: her habe you lobed ever since both on land and sea, and her Countrey is not farre hence, will ye now make her your Lady and wife: I promise you my assistance sofarre as I can.

My Lord, answered the Duke, fearing to offend you, I will deserter to move you in this cause: but seeing we are now so happily fallen into these fearmes, I will not conceale the truth from you. In sooth my Lord, when first I saw her, I loved her, and habe ever since continued in this hope, that time at length would favour my intent. It suffiseth, said Palmerin, and presently he acquainted the Emperour therewith, who thinking the match very mate and convenient: they were the next day married by the Arch-bishop of Constantinople, and in shott time after went to take possession of their Duchy of Durace, where they were received very honorably, and the whole State galued vp into the Dukes hand.

When Palmerin saw that the most parte of his compaunors were departed, at the earnest intreatance of the Prince Trynemus and Agriola, he set forward to Allemaigne, accompanied with Fryfoll and Arimida, whom he conduct-ed into the Realme of Hungaria, where Fryfoll was crowned King by reason of his Fathers decease, there went with him likewise Diardo of Bohemia, the Prince Eustace, Prolome & other Lords of great account. Much good spake they made in their journey, as in short time they arrived at Vienna, where the Emperour being advertised of their comming by the Dwarke, came with his courtly traines to mete them, and taking his Sonne Trynemus in his armes, said

## The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

Said I: I see it is the will of God my Sonne, that hereafter I shal haue as great joy by the, as in thy long absence I haue had griefe and sorrow, all which I patiently put up, for the love of thy Brother, the Noble Prince Palmerin, and faire Agriola of England, that well deserues it. But in good sooth my Chiloren, had you not come in so happy time, I should haue bene orluen to marvellous feare. For the King of France perceiving, that I would not give my onely Daughter in mariage to his eldest Sonne, demanded the King Reciade of Spayne his Daughter, who graunted his request: so that they twayne, with the ayde of the King of England, haue lauyed such an Army on the See, as never was the like sene to passe the Rheine. But seeing you returned in good disposition, the leste account I make of their angry monacos: yet are they the thre princall thinges of Christendome.

My Lord (answered Palmerin) be not you dismayd at their Enterpise, soz ere many dayes be espyed: I haue to see all matters quietly pacified, and that without any effusion of Blood. The leste is my doubt (quoth the Emperour) in that with such good Fortune you haue finisched your intentions, soz nothing you begin, but comes to lucky end.

Whimes hereof appeareth in the search of my Sonne Tryneus, whom the best Knights of Christendome haue laboured so haue: but all their travell I see hath bene spent in vaine. By this time they were come to the Wallace, where they were graciously receaved by the Ladies. Alas my Friends, said the Empresse, which of you shall I first embrasse?

Ah my Son Trineus, how sorrowfull hast thou made me since the departure from England! And cause hast thou to thankes the Heavens, who protected thee still in so many dangers, and forgot not thy Brother Palmeriu, who hath endured such trouble for thy sake. Faire Daughter (quoth she to the Princesse Agriola) welcome are you indeed. God send you better Fortune hereafter, then you haue hadde alreade,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

ready, whiche yet hath bene a Touch-stone of your loyalty, But while these speeches continued, how the other two Loders with piercing regard behold each other, and how many gracious Agnes passed as secrete Embassadours betweene them. Polynardia was clad in such costly Accouerments, for the pleasure she conceived the Duke to arraign at the Court: as she seemed another Iuno, when she stood to abide the Arbitrement of paris, or like Voluptas, following her Mother.

But fearing least this Amiable encounter, should decypher some parte of her former courtesies to her friend, which as yet was unknowne to any by Bryonella: She looked vp all secrets with so sweete a kisse, as would haue contented the rudest of the Gods, had it bene Vulcane or Neptune themselves. And comming to salute the Princesse Agriola, said. So maruell (faire Sirer,) if your Love wrought wonders in my Brothers minde, soz unlainedly I speake it, your exquite Graces deserue the greatest seruice in the world. Alas Madame, answered Agriola, te Nature, or they that had the charge of me in my youth, could haue painted me with such Beauty, as I see in you, or varished me with Misery, able to devise with my Lord when he came to see me: then could I haue said somewhat of the palmer he haile taken for me, but I know my selfe so full of imperfections, as the Love he beares me preceadeth of his owne god Nature, not by any merite he can beholde in me. Then Palmerin knelling before the Emperour, said. I beseech you my Lord graunt me one request, which shall be no way prejudicall to your Majestie. Arise Sir Palmerin (quoth the Emperour) aske what thou wilt, and thou shalt have it,

My Lord Tryneus and the Princesse Agriola, said Palmerin, are religiously married betweene themselves, let me intreate your Highnes to conserue it with open solemnization, before the Duke of Mezena here present: where I inseare

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

mean to send into England, that he may resolve the King how himselfe was an eye witnes of their Marriage. The Emperour liked so well of Palmerins motion as soon after the weddung was sollementized: and he comming to Bryonella, courteously taking her by the hand, said. My good friend Bryonella, I am now to be discharged of the promise I made at my last being here: in witness whereof I have brought your knight my ptoleme, and him I command to your further favour. So highly am I beholding unto you my Lord (quoth she) as never shall I be able to returne sufficient recompence: but were we e qual in joy with the Prince Trineus and faire Agriola, then wold I thinke no wrong vs.

Palmerin at these wordes presently left her, and perswaded the Emperour so well: as Ptoleme and Bryonella were likewise espoused together: when Palmerin conserning with the Princesse Agriola, thus spake to her.

Now may you judge shadams, whether I deceyved ye o; no: and if the Estate of my Lord Tryneus be any lesse then I tolde ye. Had I not given fathfull credite to your speeches ( answered Agriola ) I wold not haue so shaken my Parents and Friends so rashly: but I hope they will pardon me, in that I haue done nothing but to their hono.

On the morrow with exceeding joy and rare triumphs, were Palmerin and Polynarda espoused together: And thus was long and fathfull love worthily requited. Ptoleme was now Created Duke of Saxonie, and Dyardo tooke his leabe to goe for his wife Cordonya, whom he had not heard any tydings of, since he was first taken by the pirates.

CHAP.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

### CHAP. L X I.

'How Palmerin sent Ptoleme Duke of Saxon (as his Embassador) to the King of France, and the Duke Enfice of Alcena, to the King of England, to treat of the peace betweene them,



Certaine dayes before the departure of Dyardo towards Bohemia, palmerin in the presence of the Emperour and all the Princes, gave the charge of his Embassayre to the Duke Ptoleme: which he shold deliuer, not onely unto the most Christian King of France himselfe, but also to his yongest Sonnes who now had espoused the Duchesse of Burgundy.

He departed ptoleme from Vienna, accompanied with many worthy Lyes and Knights, and at length arrived at Digcon, whare the Prince Lewes (being made acquainted with the cause of his comming, thus answered the Embassador.

My Lord, somtimes I had acquaintance in Fraunce, with the most renowned Palmerin, and because he is the onely man of the world, to whom I owe all friendly affection: I will perswade my Father to signe in Peace with him. Now was Ptoleme in good hope that his travail would soote to successane ende, wherefore they presentlie journeyed to the King, who as then was with his Estates at Paris: and having heard Palmerins request, who now was wedded to the Princesse polynarda, and therefore his intentioun to warre to the Emperour, wold extend to the hurt of the man he loved, thus answered. Duke of Saxon, I am sufficiently acquainted with the bountry of thy Empere, and very well I do remember, that at his being in

France

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

France he combated for his Lady Polynarda, yet was I ignorant till now of that hath happened. But least he should conceive, that I seek to make a commotion to Cust. Rendome: let him enjoy his Lady and Wife in peace, although she was sometimes promised to mine eldest Sonne, respecting these conditions of our amity, that our first Neophytes and Pieces may match together in marriage; there by to continue the honour of their predecessors. As for the Kings of Spaine and England, who moved me to give them Assistance: on their behalfe I can make you no certaine answere, buttill my Messengers be returned home againe. Gracious Lord, quoth Ptolome, I dare assure you in the name of my Father, that he hath evermore esteemed your labour among the best Christian Princes, and will not resule the mariage betweene your Children hereafter. And this confirmation of your amity, will cause, that neither the Kings of Spaine or England will seek to molest him: but with your highnesse regne in love and friendship. With this answere Ptolome returned to Vienna, where the Emperour and Palmerin welcomed him with exceeding honour; and by this time had the Duke Eustace taken landing in England, where delivering the summe of his charge to the King, his highnesse returned him this answer. Although my Lord Ambassadour, both your Father and the Prince Tryneus did manifest dishonor, yet not to withstand peace, which will ought to be preferred before warre, I grant his request, and will presently call home my Garrison, making bands with him in honorable concord. As for the wrong done to my Daughter, I am content to excuse it, believing that she was not compelled hence, but with her will: thanking the Prince for the honor he hath done her, saying she would leave her Parents and Friends solitely. I thinke my gracious Lord, answered the Duke, that when you consider what your Daughter hath done, you will not touch her with want of wit or judgement: so

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

in respect of the long enmity betweene the Emperour and you, we desired that her mariage might sorte to this happy ende. Now would he have departed hence with the Prince Tryneus, without a faithfull and resolved promise of mariage: which is performed, with as great honor as ever was done to the Daughter of a King. Think you, quoth the King, that had not the great friendship of Tryneus, (when against his Fathers will he came with Palmerin to assist me) qualified the weight of mine anger against him: I recompence his service, to the judgements of my Lords of England, who perswaded me to revenge, which you well perceive as yet I have not done.

Prince Palmerin, quoth the Duke, is so vertuous, as rather would he have runne on a thousand deathes, then your Daughters honour shoulde any way have borne impeached: but being assured of this fortunate issue, both he and Tryneus adventure as they did. And sorry am not I, said the King, that all things are come so well to passe, but seeing we are entred thus faire in spach: tell me (I pray you) how Palmerin came to the knowledge of his Parents and how he kinched the adventures at the Cakell of the tenne Rocks, and the dangerous Isle of Maltada, which never any Knight could compasse before.

Then the Duke rehearsed every accident, how as meane the great Warke was on the Prince the Agriola, and each severall occasion as they fell out: at which report the Queen with her Ladys were present, who hearing the discourse of so strange and variable fortunes, said.

I thought my Daughter had learned more modestie, then leaving her Fathers Court, to follow a Knight unknowne to her in strange Countries: but seeing the ends hath fallen out so well, henceloth I shall remaine in better contentment, seeing a Prince of so great renowme hath now espoused her.

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

While this conference entred, the Duke earnestly beheld the Princes Sabinda, Daughter to the Prince of Sansuega, and niece to the Dukes : and of such excellent grace and beauty he esteemed her, as forgetting the death of his Father, who deceased since his departure from Allemaigne he became so amorous of her, that he demanded of the Dukes if she were her Daughter. She is not my daughter, quoth the Duke, but the daughter of my Brother, the Prince of Sansuega.

Might glad was the Duke thereof, and resolved to request her of the King in marriage : who knowing the honourable place he held among the Princes of Greece ; and what account Palmerin made of him : consented thereto, so that within few daies after they were espoused together. Whereupon, to accompany the Princesse, and to confirme the peace, the King sent the Duke of Gaule, and another great Lord with them into Allemaigne, the Duke likewise sent twelve English Ladies to attend on her Daughter.

Thus returned the Duke of Mecena to Vienna, where he was worthily welcomed by the Emperour Palmerin and Trynens, especially the young Duchesse, and the Ambassadours of England, by whom the peace was faithfully ratified and confirmed.

C H A P.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

### CHAP. EXII.

How Palmerin and Polynarda departed from Vienna toward Constantinople, where after the decease of the aged Emperour Remicis: Palmerin was crowned Emperour of Greece, and what joy was made at the birth of Polynarda her first Sonne.



After the Ambassadours of England were returned houie, Palmerin perceiving the Empire of Allemaigne was inquiet: tooke his leave of the Emperour, minding to conduct his Polynarda to Constantinople, not without many sorrowfull lamentations of the Mother to forgo her daughter, and faire Agriola her now acquainted Sister, yet the Emperour pacified them well enough, by shewing what benefit this contract would be to Christendome, and so proceeded to his Daughter in this manner.

Then goest Polynarda to the seats of a great Empire: but more pleaseth me the pereless name of Palmerin d'Oliva thy Husband, then the regalme of such a mighty Monarch. Farewell faire Daughter, continue in faithfull love and obediency, remembryng the reverend honor a wife owe to her Husband. Polynarda bearing with what earnest affection her Father spake, was so overcome with modesty of a Childe to her Father, as she was not able to answe one word: which Palmerin beholding, kissed the Emperours hande, embrased Trineus, and tooke a courteous farewel of all the Ladies, commanding the Pages presently to bring away the Princesse Litter, saying to her: Madame, the longer you stay here, the greater will be your conceit of sorrow, by absence y grieve will be forgotten: Let vs then merrily journey to the Cite.

tie

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

tic of Constantinople, wheres they that never saw you, will  
rejoyce more at your comming, then all the Allemaignes  
can sorow for your departure. With like comfortable pre-  
ches Palmerin frequented his Rote by the way, untill at  
length they entred the Kingdome of Hungaria, where Fry-  
soll with his chieffest Lordes attending them comming, to  
whom Palmerin in jesting, said:

Brother, I have aduentured to bring your Sister Polynarda into your Kingdome, take heede if you lay clyme to  
her now as sometimes ye did: because that I am ready to  
vend her against whomsoeuer daie. I perceyue my god  
Lord (quoth Frysoll) that you will haue my foly general-  
ly knowen, I pray you let no such youthfull prancks be now  
remembred: soz as you are the chieffest in Chivalry, so haue  
the destines given you a Lady, whom no one in the whole  
world may Paragon. Well may it be said that God and  
Nature soe poyncted this match: nothing inferiour vnto  
lovely Paris, and faire Helena, or puissant Hector and wise  
Andromacha.

Frysoll accompanied them sofarre as Alba, where most  
conteynously parting from each other, Frysoll returned to his  
Kingdome, and Palmerin soone after came to Constantino-  
ple, where no little syg was made for his safe arrivall, espe-  
cially for the Princesse Polynarda, who was a right wel-  
come Lady into Greece, the olde Emperour providing such  
rare devices and Triumphs as the Chzonicles to this day  
reconde the memory thereof. About tenne or twelve Mo-  
neths after, Polynarda was delivered of a godly Sonne,  
who was named Prymoleon, wherat the god olde Em-  
perour so inwardly rejoyced, as his spirite onely comforted  
in the god Fortane of his Sonnes, and fearing afterwards  
to see any sicker channege befall them, departed this fragile  
and transitory life, whose Death was signified thre dayes  
before by the Enchanted Wyd. His Funerall was perfor-  
med as bekened so greate an Estate: and latnz woulde Pal-  
merin

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

merin haue had his Father the King Florendos Crestoned  
Emperour, earnestly labouiring the Princes in that cause:  
But he desiring them to halde him excused, returned them  
this answe.

Great offence were it to God (my Friendes) that the  
Honour due to him, who gane me liberty, defended my re-  
gne and saved my life, shold be taken from him, and  
given to me: For if Merite, Authority, and good Fortune,  
are the properties whereby to make chiose of an Emperour  
Palmerin is verry many degrees before me. As for his Ce-  
nerosity, it is so well knowne to you, as that I were vell lost  
labour to make reporte thereof. For his Authority, the bar-  
barous Nations, among whom he hath lived, and conque-  
rtingly controlled, deliver sufficient testimonys. And soz his  
high god Fortune in all his Enterpryses, where is the man  
that may be equalled with him? O what hath he at any  
time attempted, but he hath finisched the same with won-  
derfull Honour? I could name Kings and Princes, that  
raigne onely by his meanes. To speake of the victories he  
hath obtained, either in Battell or Angle Combat, your eyes  
have beheld, and the whole world apperantly witnesseth.  
This dare I boldly say, and some of you doz know it better  
then I, that his onely Name will be more soared in Greece,  
then all your soe pated Emperours haue binne by theys  
greatest peccance.

So well did the people like what the King Florendos  
had said, as immediately was the Prince Palmerin pro-  
claimed Emperour of Constantinople, and the next day he  
was Crestoned according to the accustomed Rites and Ce-  
remonies. Not long afterward did the King Florendos  
say with his Sonne, but returned with his Queen unto  
Macedon, where he governed in loue and justice among his  
Subjects, daily sending Messengers to Constantinople, as  
wel to understand þ health of þ Emperour and Empresse, as  
also of þ King Prymoleon, who daily increased in Strength and  
Beauty.

CHAP. L X I I I .

How the Prince Olorico and Alchidiana pretending to travell to Constantinople to visit the Emperour Palmerin, and the Empress Polynarda, strayed on the Seas : and what sorrowfull moane she made, and how she was found by Palmerin.



**B**EFORE in one of the Chapters you have heard mentioned, how Olorico promised the Princesse Alchydiana, that he would bring her to the Emperour Palmerins Court, which she kept impri-  
soned in her Chamber, as but so the common Palladie, incident to young Ladies, which is to become great sone  
after they are espoused, he would have betaken her selfe to  
Errael, within thre moneths after her Marraige. Not-  
withstanding, within shorte time after that trouble was  
past, she came to begge a Boone of the Sordane, which he  
not deneged her, thinking she would demand no matter of  
weight. Father (quoth she) you must needs give leaue to  
the Prince Olorico, that he may guide me, and accompany  
me to Constantinople, so that I am desirous to see the  
Emperour Palmerin.

Daughter (said the Sordane) the travell on the Seas  
is very perillous, and oftentimes great Estates perishe by  
Shipwacks ; but seeing you are so desirous, and I unadvis-  
ably have past my promise, you shall not in ought be hin-  
dered, by me. Hereupon was presently prepared tenne  
Shippes and Galleys, the greater part whereof was laden  
with great Hoses, rich Tapistry, and other shings of much  
value, which would be given to Palmerin and his Polynar-  
da. In the rest were Embarged chosen Knights for her  
defence

defence, with Ladys and Gentlewomen to attend on her  
and herfull necessaries : thinking to shew her sumptuous  
magnificence in the Emperours Courte, which in conclu-  
sion fell out otherwise. For Fortune who is evermore va-  
riable and never permanent, at the instant, when Olorico  
and Alchidiana, building most on her favor, and were come  
within tenne dayes sailing of Constantinople : she alte-  
red their opinions in most doubtfull manner, as they expec-  
ted nothing but the end of their lives. The windes now art-  
seth contrary to them, a sudden storme and terrible Tem-  
pest overtake them, and with such rough Willowes their  
Shippes were beaten, as in their flighte of their Galleys  
were broken, the residue were very farre scattered from  
them, and the great Carricks wherein themselves were ad-  
gainst a Rocke, was split in the middest. Now were they left  
to the meray of the Waters, and Alchidiana wastyng on  
a Plancke for safegard of her life : and had not one of the  
Pyrates by swimming recovered a littile Squall, where-  
with he presently made to her and gotte her in, otherwise  
there had the Princesse unhappily perished. This Pilote  
was so expert and cunning, as cutting through the unmer-  
ciful wavyes, he gained landing at a poort distant from Con-  
stantinople about thirty miles, the Inhabitants where they  
came on shore, wondered to see her so godzonly attred, and  
had not the Pilote friendly perswaded them, that she was a  
Princesse travelling to the Emperours Courte, and by mis-  
hap had lost all her company on the Seas, they would have  
dealt with her very hardly. But when they understood  
the cause of her comming, they entertained her with shewe  
and ciuilite, causing her to be lodged at a very welthy Mar-  
chants house, where she wanted nothing she could desire.  
Alchidiana seeing she had escaped the dange of the Sea  
and was now in better assurance then before, comforted  
her selfe with this good sygnes : but when she remembred  
her losse, into what want & poverty she was now brought,  
and

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

and that through her foolish desire, her Husband was drowned, (as she thought) she was overcome with griefe that neither her owne noble mind, nor the daily presence of the Greeks that came to see her, could distract her from ceaselesse lamentations.

By mych that I am, quoth she, how well habe I deserued this toakefull adventure? Ah ill advised Alchidiana, what morbor thise to cross the Seas? if not insordinate desire to see him, of whom then maile expect no remedie for thy sorrow: or else to see her that is distresse of his heart, and so make thine own concerte moze languishing? My Lord and Husband Olorico, I am the unhappy cause of thy death, thy lobe hath euer bene to me sound and perfect: why coule it not then make thee forget the man, who alwaies disdained my passions, and never loved me but with diuination. If thou escape death as I have done: just cause hast thou to hate me continually. Could not I remember, how the people spent their blood for me, onely to witness thy never wanted affection? and I habe requited thy love with monstros Ingatitude. Why then doth not our Gods make me alone to suffer the deserte of my folly, but take reenge on them that never offended? Ah noble Ladies, how hard is your recompence in my service, that your tender and delicate bodies should be foyed for the fites? And you worthy Knights and Gentleman, in stead of purchasing honour and remoues with your Waller, you are lost so euer, to my no little griefe and vexation. The Merchant in whose house she was lodged, hearing her heavy and lamentable complaints, thus comforted her. Be of god chare Madame, your Husband (by the grace of God) will well enough escape this danger. As for your treasure, it is a matter soon gotten and soon lost: and to mourne for your Ladies and Gentleman, it is to no purpose, because it can no way benefit them. When we poor men lose our gods wifes and Children, we must with patience

## Emperour of Constanſiople. PART.2.

sience, please our ſelves: you then having knowledge of vertus, and that we are all ſubject to the tranſitory chan- ges of the world, to Despaire is farre unſemely your ſate

My Lord the Emperour is bountifull and liberall, and the moche vertuous Prince that ever reigned in Greece: he will ſo well recompence your loſte, as you shall not complaine of your comming. With the perwall as he was ſomewhat pacified, and having ſailed there nine or tenne daies, to ſee if any other of the Galleys would arride there. Vening none came: She ſold vivers of her preeuous Jewels that was about her, ſo hale the balas they were boþy, and provided her ſelfe of ſixt Poyles for her ſelfe, her Hoſtelle and her two Daughters, the Pilot that had ſailed her from drowning, and one of the Merchants ſervantes, with which company he rode toward Constantinople, having changed her rich attire into mourning tredes. As they were in a great Forrest ſix miles from the City, the Princess calling to remembrance, how paue and ample he ſhould come before the Emperour, having bene one of the wealthieſt Ladys in the world: was ſo overcome with this conceite, as hardly coulde her Hoſtelle kepe her from ſwooning, wherefore ſeing they were neare a godly Fountaine, there they alighted to refreſh her a little. And after he had walked in the cool Shadys of the Trees, he ſeaued her ſelfe in better diſpoſition, preparing to mount on his backe againe: but it ſo came to passe, that the Emperour Palmerin having bene Hunting in that Forrest, and by earnest purſuit of the Game, lost all his company, ſo that at length he came to the Fountaine where Alchidiana walked. His arrivall greatly amazed the Women, and before he would demand what they were, he alighted and dranke of the Fountaine water. Alchidiana earnestly beholding him, and ſeeling inwardly a ſtrange alteration, presently ſwanched againe in her Hoſtelle armes. Alas, ſaide the Em-

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

perour, have I so offendid the Lady, that the sight of me  
should enanger her life? tell me my friend, quoth he to  
the pilot, doſt thou knowe of whence ſhe is? Ho my Lord,  
auſwered the pilot, but I vnderſtand ſhe is a noble Princeſſe,  
who coning to ſee the Empereur, hath left her peo-  
ple and goods in the ſea. Me thinkis I have ſene her here-  
tofore, ſaid Palmerin, but I cannot remember the place  
where. Then beholding her more aduidely, he laid: Is not  
this the Princeſſe Alchidiana? that cannot be: my Am-  
bassadors tolde me, that ſhe was married to the Prince  
Olorico.

By this time ſhe was a little recovered, and ſaying how  
he held her in his armes, thus ſpake. Ah ſaint Palmerin,  
why doe you hinder the departure of miſerable Alchidiana?  
Thinke you ſhe can find her life in better time and place,  
then in this Country, and betwixt his armes whom ſhe  
loved as her life, yet never received courtoſie by him till  
this instant. Ah my Lord, here marcheth before the ſo-  
licy and indolente Alchidiana, who ſor the bath lost her  
Husband Olorico that loathed her dearly: Knight, La-  
dies, and inestimable treaſure hath the likewife lost, all  
which ſhe waketh no account of, but of her beloved, whom  
ſhe shall never recover. But may it be Madame, quoth the  
Emperour, that you are minded the Princeſſe Alchidiana,  
Daughter to the Sultane of Babilon, the flower of all the  
Ladies in Turkie? The ſame am I, ſaid ſhe, who loved  
the ſo unrepentably, and the loyalty of marriage, ſcere of  
danger of the ſea, nor the ſo rigorous refaſh, both in  
my presence, and by the Mefengers, could not diſtowide  
me from this chance, onely to ſee the Court, and the beauty  
of Polynarda. And that at length I might purchase my  
deſire, I brought my Husband with me, who I ſcarce the  
cruell waters had ſhalowed, and as brave Ladies as euer  
were ſene, with riches that well might decoleate an Em-  
perore. By heaven. Madame, quoth Palmerin, if the Prince  
have

## Emperour of Conſtantinople. PART.2.

have lost his life in this aduenture, never will my heart be  
merry againe. Now ſe I the unſpeakable love you bare  
me, which I haue in ſome part requited toward your Olo-  
rico: yet diſmay not sweete Lady, nor ſear his death be-  
ſide further tryall, ſo by mine honour I ſwear, no ſooner  
shall I come to Conſtantinople, but I will cauſe his ſearch  
preſently to be ſollowed, nor doubtting but he may be found  
againe.

"And now faire Princeſſe, tell what vertue or deſerſe  
you ſaw in me, that might value the leaſt paine you haue  
endured? committing your gracious perion to ſo many  
doubtfull hazards of ſeare, affright, perturbations, heate  
and colde, which your chaste nature coule hardly brooke in  
trabell: unwarthy were I the name of a man, if now I  
ould not pity you. And I ſwear to you by the living  
God, that if you miſhap ſet to an ſhillend, never will I  
weare my Diademē longer. Miss Madame, if heretofore  
I haue deluded you, conider it was a Knores deceit: that  
you bequeathed his harte to ſuch a Lady, miſlike you as if  
you were her ſister. But haue you, quoth she, among your  
amorous delights, acquainted her with my vndeſirly bold-  
neſſe? what may ſhe then conceiue of me, but me of a Girle  
gibbin to Iſſe, and laſh appelle? The love of the blocke  
ſainte Palmerin, ſaid Palmerin, cannot make me diſclose her  
preſence, that honoured me ſo much: let it ſuffice you, that  
for the labouer I obtained when you ſoud me in like place,  
she remaineth to recompence you with all poffible kinernes.  
Let us then depart hence toward Conſtantinople, that you  
maye ſee as befameth your high calling. More deſpit-  
ful that I am, quoth the Princeſſe, haſt I entred into con-  
cert of your former illuſions, never had I fallen into ſo  
great danger: but as for matters paſt, either of your ri-  
gours or diſfaine, your preſent affabilitie conſells me to  
forget, ſet on then when you please, and I will beare you  
company.

## The History Of Palmerin D'Olrye

The Pilote, the Merchants wife, and her Daugher, on they knees beseeched the Emperour to excuse them, in that they hadde not reverenced his Majestie as they ought. Woxly Honour I exspect not late the Emperour, come on and goe with me, that I may recompence your paines taken so; this worthy Princesse. So rode they forward, and as they issued forth of the Forrest, there layed the Knights and Hunters attending the Emperours comming, they all marvelling at the great courtesie he vied to the Lady: then his Majestie calling the Duke Bustace to him, said. Thou must presently with thy compantons, goo Arme ye, and travell to find the Prince Olorico, whom the tempestuous Deas hath separated from his Lady. Who brought these heavy tidings to your Highnes (said the Duke.) This Lady, who is his wife (quoth he) having miraculously escaped Shipwacke by the meanes of this Mariner. When they were come to the Pallace, the Duke of Saxon came to hold the Emperours Hoysle while he alighted. Ptolome said Palmerin, know you no better your selfesse Alchydiana? you must now remember her passed favours, when shee damed you from base servitude. And that shall not I see, get my Lord (quoth the Duke) while I habe a day tolke: I cannot thinke that this Lady is she. It is even she which, out farther question (said the Emperour) doe you and the Duke of Mezena halpe her from her Hoysle, and conduct her unto the Pallace, whiles I in meane time goo to ay, beresse the Empresse.

Madame (quoth Ptolome) yet can I not be thonghly resolued. In sooth Ptolome, (said he) I am Alchydiana, who to accomplish what thou and thy compantons could not, am come hither in this poverty: discouering my want of knowledge by an unconsenderable losse, except you my good Lords take the greater pitty on me. Thinke you Madame, quoth Ptolome, that my Lord Olorico is lost? never feare it I beseech ye, but thinke you shall finde as great favour in

this

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2

this Court, as it were with the Soldarie your Father. (Palmerin comming to the Empresse, said) Madame, as I was hunting this day, I found in our Forest the Princesse Alchydiana, of whom I have so often told ye, she bring wife to the Prince Olorico, that named himselfe my Dwarfes Brother, when I was last with you at Gaunt, I desyre you to intreat her, as her Walling desirbeth, because I am not a little beholding to her. So taking her by the hand, they came and met the Princesse, and Palmerin taking her courteously in his armes, delivered her to the Empresse, saying.

Faire Princesse, you shall remaine with my Lady, till our Knights have found your Lord and Husband. God will requite your kindnesse to a distressed Lady, said Alchydiana, although I leare for my selfesse his fortune will be much the worse. Madame (quoth the Empresse) so noble and debonaire is your Lord and Husband, as no danger can any way prejudice his life, but think him as safe as if he were here present with you, which doubtlesse will be right soon and in good time: therefore let me intreat you to be of good cheare, as if you were now in Assyria. And though we cannot compare with the Court of Babylon, yet here shall you be attened as helmesse to a great a Princesse.

I doubt not therof good Madame, said Alchydiana, (she moze am I indepted to the Emperour and you: yet can I not forget the absence of my Lord, being separated from him in a place so uncouth. He that is the defender of the Ile (quoth the Empresse) will send ye more againe in place moze comfortable, and in that hope I pray ye to perweare your selfe laying aside these mourning garments, the very sight whereof cannot but offend ye. These gracious spesches somewhat contented her, and expelled all private conceite of sorrow: yet would she not change her habit, till she had either good or bad newes of the Prince Olorico.

CHAP.

# The Hitory of Palmerin D'Okva.

## CHAP. LXIII.

How the Prince Olorico was reskewed from the Moores, by the young Knights that the Emperour Palmerin sent in his search: and what joy was made at Constantinople at his arrivall.



On the Emperours resolution for the search of Olorico, the Dukes of Meccina, and Saxon, with each of them fifty Knights, were prepared to see with two great Galleyes well appoynted: and Colmelis, Bellechino, Sergillo, Donato Cardino, and the Marchant Estebons two Sonnes whom, the Emperour had but lately knighted, with thirty hardy and valiant soldiours departed in aorder. Eight other Messells were sent on the Coast of Propontida, and the Bosphore, to sake the Prince.

It is come to passe, that the same day Alchidiana was pescibed his biforning, Alibarbanco a Pirato was sailing towards Nat. Ia, and passed very neare where the Prince Carde was spir, and him did he espye steling on a Chest, which was filled with Marlineskinnes, being then with pitte men to behold him in such danger, he caused his men to take him into the Shipppe, who ready to yield up his ghost he was bewynded with cold: When Alibarbanco saw him so richly Apparelled, and the Chest well fylled with things of such value: he imagined him presently to be some great Lord, for whom he shold haue some large Xanfone, wherefore he used him very courtesly. Olorico seeing he was so happily escaped, lifting his eyes to Heaven, said. Great is the mercy D'God, that so fabtably vouchsased to regard the poore creature, ne we

## Emperour of Constançinople. PART.2

I were my litle worthy reckoning, so my Lady Alchidiana were safe in Assiria. What angry Planet rayned when we betoke our selves to her? what answere shall I make to the Soldiour your father, that gaue me such charge of your person at my departure? hardly may I dare to come before him any more.

Alibarbanco hearing these complaints, rejoiced therewith. By Mahomet (quoth he to himself) was that than see him any moe, if I can hinder it, say I will present them to the great Turke, his moystall enemy: and so thy Xanfone I shall receyve a bountifull recompence. So thinking to strike towards Natolia, he hasted among the Emperours young Knights ere he was a ware: wherefore he thought to take theyre Shippes likewise, yet therin he found himselfe very much deceipted. For Bellechino (knowing them to be Turkes by theyre banners, said to his compaynes) we are now I feare in the danger of Turkish paynates: Let us therefore with courage vsurpe our selfe biference. Preceas theyre scurly attaled Alibarbanco, and dudled (a clately) that in the end they would hym making such slaughter among his men, and shydong hym likevile staine into the See, that none were left to resist them further Entrance, where they found the Prince Olorico, and being yet a littel gladdie of this their good successe, theyr each did embayced hym with gracious courtesie. Alas my friends (quoth the Prince) how knew you me being here? who gave you in charge to sake me swyth? who hath bene the messenger of my misfortune? My Lord the Emperour Palmerin, (answering Colmelio,) understand thereof by your Lady Alchidiana, whom he found by godly shippes as he rodes on Hunting.

But may I give credite to your wordes (said the Prince) is my Lady with his Matessy at the Court? She is in trouth my Lord (said Bellechino) and the Marchant likewise that saved her life. Whom the Emperour bath highly

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

highly recompenced for his fathfull servise. I beseech you quoth Olorico, let vs holde sail presently toward Constantinople, for my heart cannot be perswaded till I have seen her, so great is my doubt, considering our unfortunat separation.

He ver may I beare Armes in Battaynhood, said Bellectino ouerlyst my swerd in honourable Chivalry, if Alchidiana be not at Constantinople, where I both saw her and spake to her before our departure. So taking the vessell that belonged to the Pirate Alibarbanco with them, in short time after they arived at Constantinople, where their chearefull sounding of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions at their landing, delivred testimente of thir god successe. If the Emperour was glad for the recovery of his friend, the Princesse Alchydiana of her Husband, and every one generally for the man lost by such mishap, I, leade to your judgement, that can censure the rare toyes of love and friendshyp. What Tryumphes, Tournaments, bontres, Masques, gnomeries, and other delightfull exercices were performed, the joy of the Prince Oloricos safety whom the Emperour made account of, as you have heard before: it would demand a larger volume to set downe, you must therefore here imagine, that you beheld his safety highly contented, Alchydiana thorowly satisfied, and the whole Court well pleased by this happy event, gining themselves to expresse the same in open and maner, set signes, bofeming so great estates to prosecute, & thereforo of as great honour as may be devised.

The young Knights are especially welcommmed for their worthy servise, The Dukes of Saxon and Mecana likewise though they failed of bringing the Prince, yet they brought two foystes, belonging to the Prince Alibarbanco, richly laden with many worthy spoiles, which were giben among the young Knights in recompence of their pitnes. During the tyme of these surpassing pleasures

and

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2

and delights, there entred the Haven of Constantinople thre Ships, laden with maruellous sumptuous gifts and presents, from the Maide Zephira, and her Brother the King Maulerino, being sent to the Emperour Palmerin and his Empresse Polynarda, by two great Lords Ambassadours from Perisia, to request familiar loue and alliance with the Emperour, the Maide confessing his injury to Tryneus while he was in his Courte. When the persians came before the Emperour, who was honorably accompanied with Kings, Dukes, Princes, Countes, and many hyshe Ladies: they were greatly abashed, yet thinking on the arguement of their Embassage, one of them began in this manner.

It is no marvell, redoubted Emperour and Monarch of Greece, if thy Subjects both loue thee and visit thee, when thy behabition hath conquered the mindes of sayraine Provinces: who to enter amity and peace with thee, some have left their Countries to send their Ambassadours hither, other dare not stirre, or assemble their men in warlike manner, so is the name of Palmerin soured thorowall Asia. Peares of beare wimes the great Turke, the Califfe of Siconia, and the heyses to the Prince Amarano of Nigrea: not much inferieur in this condition, is the Maide of Babilon, whose Daughter with her Husband I here behold. The victorius Abimar, King of Romata and Grisca, the worthy Maulerino, and the puissant Maide of Persia my Master, Husband to the vertuous Maide Zephyra: who with their Brother have sent your highnes thre Ships, laden with the most wealthy riches their Countries can yeld. My Lord and they humbly kisse your Majesties hand, desiring you to forget his discourtezie to the gentle Knight Tryneus, when he became enamoured on the Princesse Aurobinda. But if their loue then sorted to a philosophicall strok or figure, it bath shewen proved es-sequall in procreation, to the no little joy of my Lord and Master.

Expo

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

The Princelle was delivered of a goodly Son, growing in such exquisite forme and feature: as it is expected he will one day resemble his Father in chivalry, as he doth already his Mother in amiable perfection.

Ambassador, quoth the Emperour, for the great vertue and nobility I have sond, as well in the Princelle Zephyra, as also her noble Brother: I grant the friendly alliance thou demandest. Yet hereof am I sorry, that the Sonne to the Prince Tryneus, shalld be nourished and spend his youth among Mahumetists, without knowledge of his God and Redemer: so in such sorte shalld he be instructed, after he is come to the yeres of understanding, that all the Alchowanis tales and fables, and doubtless God will so deale with him in tyme, as he shall imitate the steppes of his Noble Father. As soz the presents sent vs by the King Maulerino, the Holdane, and his Queens Zephyra, we accept them as from our Friends, and will returns them som remembraunce of our thankfulness. His Majestie commanded the Persians to be lodg'd in his Wallace, and continued still their former joyes and triumphes: but to alter thos Courtly pastimes and delights, this misfortune happened which hereafter foloweth.

CHAP.

## Emperour of Constantiople. PART.2

### CHAP. LXV.

How the great Turke refused to assist Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall Olimacell against the Emperour Palmerin: and what trouble happened in Constantinople, by the Traytour Nardides Nephew to the King Tarsius, Lycado, Menodino and their Father.



Whch was the humanity and pity of Palmerin, when he finished the enchantments of the Isle of Maltada, as he gave liberty to all the Turkes and Christians, which were before transfigured, as you have heard: among whom was Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall Olimacel, he that at the taking of Agriola, had the Prince Tryneus for his prisoner. This Lycado, seeing himselfe in his owne Countrey and out of danger, where he heard how the great Turk was Saine and his Uncle like wise: he came before the Sultane that then reigned, saying: Worshy Lord, as men are naturally inclined to bewone their losses, so are Subjects bound to abherrate their Sovereignes, of any shame or injury done to their Majesties. This speakes I my Lord, because you hab: not as yet revenged the death of your deceas'd Brother, now sleeping in the armes of Mahomet, albeit traiterously slain by Palmerin and his compaynions: at which tyme my nob: Uncle was likewise murdereed, with many Knights of chefe and excellall account. And least you shalld be ignorant in the truthe of the dafe, and who also carred hence the Princelle Agriola. It is credibly understood, that Palmerin is Nephew to the Emperour of Greece: one of his compaynions is the Counters Sonne of Allemaigne, and all the rest were Princes and

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

and Lords of Grecce, onely sent as Spyres into Turkie. Wherefore, seeing you now hold the state in such peace and quietnes, it were necessary you shuld leavy a mighty Army: and please you to commit the charge thereto me, I will lose my life, or make an absolute destruction of all Greece. I remember(said the great Turke, that your Uncle made like entrance into my deceased Brothers Court, as you by your speches now labour to do: but I will so warlike looke to such intrusions, as no Traptores shall rest here if I can hinder them. Your Uncle vexed the Christians, what followed theron? the death of his Master, and dangerous confusion. By you likewise may ensue as bad Fortune, depart you therefore from our Court: and but that we are louish to be noted with Tyranny, thou shouldest presently be draynes in pieces with horses. False Traptoor, thou that commest to counsell vs in a matter, wherein we cannot meddle but with great dishonour: it behooves thee first to regard the end of thy intent, and what he is that governes in Grecce. Goe Villaine gon, and on perill of thy life never presume before vs agayne.

Lycado was greatly astouted at this Harpe answere, and seeing he could have no better successe, he went to his Father the Brother to O'miell, being one of the chiefe Magitians in all Turkie: to him he made his complaints, saying, he would die in that resolution, but he would cause the Turke to know that he was no Traptoor, and this (quoth he) shall be the meanes whereby I will compasse it. I meane to disguise my selfe, and Travell to the City of Constantinople, where privately I will murder the Emperor Palmerin: So shall my Lord the great Turke touch me with no further suspicion, but will reward me with greater benefites then euer my Uncle had. Sir Honus (answred his fr: her) thinkest thou that thy devise will sort to effect? thy Brother Menadeno would helpe thee herein, but he is too young: yet when it ne serþeth so, thy departure, I will

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

not onely tell the, but conduct thee my selfe. I beseech you good Father (said Lycado) further me in what you may, for never will my hart be at rest, till I have payd Palmerin with the same summe the great Turke was. In meane while das you drayne, and search all your Books of Astrologie, Divination, Magique, and Magicianey, as Zebulon, Orpheus, Hermes, Zoroastres, Circes, Medea, Alphonius, Bacon, Apponius, and all the rest that wylle of the Turke Speculations; reade them over againe and againe, devise such Spelles, Processions, and Observations, as the very experts may speake of the greatest wylle made at the Cittie of Constantinople.

Whereupon, the Duke marchioness his Brother Menadeno knyght, and with Lycado betwix them selfes to Acre, saying, my sonnes, I will bring you to Constantinople, where (by herten of Sainte Marie) we will see the Duke of Acre shal be empited: remember your Master O'miell and shal be your selfe in such case, as you exhorte me to do: else, at this time and now labour you with such dñe. Mardonio, and therin shall you be assynd unto Christian knyghts before we shall finde ready: and thereto the same cause,

Thereofe taking his yewbow launch first the shipps, and cut through the water with such violence, as if the Duke himselfe were in them: so they came to the Landing at the same hour; as Nardides arrived ne Constantinople. To declare what this Nardides way, you remembre the two Traptores Promptaleon and Oudin, Propheters to the King Tarisius of Hungaria, whom Palmerin and Frysolli saw at Constantinople: he was their Wysper, and dwonne to the Duchesse of O'meda. The Duke, hearing the death of her two Daunes, could not conceale it from the Duke her Husband, who presently spred with very conceite of griesse: Whereupon, she to revenge this mischappe caused by her report, as also the death of her two Daunes, made promise to Nardides, (then being eightene yeres

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

yeares old) that so soon as he was knighted, he shold go to Constantinople, and there (if it were possible) to murder the Emperour and Fry soll. All this he woulde to perforne, and about some two or thre yeares after, having married the Kings Daughter of Polonia, he Embarked himselfe with soþy Knights, determining by a Combat for treason, to compasse his intent.

These weakefull ayers at Rebenge, landed all at one instant at Constantinople, when the old Magitian calling to Nardydes: said he would gladly speake w<sup>t</sup> him in secreete, as concerning matters greatly for his avayle. Whereupon they went all closely together, into the Masters Cabin, and the Old man entred into these spaches.

Say Nardydes, mādeleſſe it is for you to bide your affaires from me, say I know that you departed from Polonia with soþy Knights disguised like Marchants, ouely with this determination, to destroy the Emperour, in reþouȝe of certayne injurys done to your Wroþthen. But if you will give credite to me, and go to workes in such sort as I shall tolle you, yet shall happily obtaine the end of your intent. By God (said Nardydes) you tell me wonders there is not one in the ſhippe that knowes mine intent: yet have you ſaiþ the truthe. Wherat I cannot marke well ſufficteuytly. Nowing then you knowe ſo much, it were but follie to diſsemble, ſay then your mind, and I will heare you. This night (said the old man) the Emperour will ſappie in the great Hall, with the Prince Olorico, and the Princeſſe Alchidiane Friends, the King of Sparta, and his Daueine, with many other great Princes and Lordes: ſo that ſuch ſorts of people are in the Hall, as little regard wil be had of strangers or unþaleſſe servants.

You then with my Daueine Menadeno, being Armed as beþemeth a cause ſo weighty, ſhall ſuddenly enter, and kill the Emperour: my Daueine Lycado and I, will lay your returne here, and I that can commandas the windē

and

## Emperour of Conſtantinople. PART.2.

and weather will carry you hence without danger of folowing. And true it is, that there is a Wyd poached in the Hall, which the wife Muzabelino haþ to Enchaunte, as neyther god nor ill tyngs can come to the Emperour, but she botouȝes the ſame by her ſtrong or ſcrauele crye: yet doubt not you thereof, Strike herte, there will be none Armed, and ſo shall you depart againe at your aȝen pleasure. My friend (ſaid Nardydes, happy be the god þou art mette with this, aþere by ſelue, that if I can kill the Emperour, and thou afterward deliþer me ſafely ſuch recompence will I beþolm on thee, as both thou and thine ſhall ſay when reþember me.

Other recompence I demand not (ſaid the Old man) then the death of the Emperour: prepare thy ſelfe there, ſoþe to follow thine intent. The night being come, there traytors arm'd themſelues, and taking their Spandas, about them, entered the Hall, where among the þapes and Servantes, without ſuþpetion they came into the Hall: leaving Lycado and his Farber at the poȝt. Where he threw abroade ſuch Enchantments, that all ſuch as come ſouth of their Houſes, preſently fell downe adiuge in the ditches. No ſooner were the traytors entered the Hall, but the Wyd gaþe a horible and ſcarfull crye, beating her Weake against her Wydt with ſuch fury, as though he would haþe rent ſorth her heart. My God (ſaid the Emperour in mercy behold me: ſee the cry of this Wyd with ſoþe great misfortune. Look about my friend (quoth he to his Guard) and ſee if any ſtranger or unknowne body is entered our presence. Nardydes by these ſpaches, well knew he was the Emperour, wherefore drawing his ſword, he thought to haþe cleaved his head: yet he ſayled of his intent, for the Emperour ſeeing the blowe comming, with a great Golden Cuppe awardeþ it indifferently, not with ſtriking, the ſword in ſlipping from the Cup, gabe him a ſore wound upon the head. Olorico ſitting on the o-

## The History of Palmerin D'Olorio.

ther side of the Table, ran at the Craytour, but the Emperour, had received two strokes more ere he could come at him, so that his spaylly fell from his Chaire as he had bene dead.

As the Prince Olorico held the Craytour Nardides by the armes, Menadeno stroke at him so rigorously, as if Ptolome had not borne of the blowes with a great silver plate, Olorico there had lost his life. Duke Bustace seeing this unnessefull outrage, wryng the Sword out of Nardides hand, and gave him such a sound stroke therewith on the head, as made him tumble his helme upturne and by the helpe of Bellechino, who found the meanes to get off his Helmet, he smote his hand from his sholders. Bellechino who had bene newly baptised, loved the Emperour as he had bene his father, and coming to Menadeno where Duke Ptolome strongly hold in his armes, gave him so many stabs on his sholders, that he likewise fell downe at his side. The Compayn seeing her Lord so wounded, rent her garmentes, to see her countey locks of haires, & smote her faire face with mortallous violence. Ah my Lord, quoth she, thou art not wounded alone: for if thou die, us God forby, right soon will my ghost followe thee. Cease therefore your complaints, said the Emperour, and comfort your selfe so well as you may, say this is the hours whereth I must leade you: I have lost such abundance of my blod, as longer may I not live with you: Dnyr God forgive my sinnes, and receive my soule. In uttering these wordes he swooned agayne, and the Empresse with him for company, to the no little amazement of all the Lords and Ladies, whyn were well nere at their wits end to behold this unnessefull alteration. Alchidiana likewise was in wonderfull perplexity, fearing also that her Lord was wounded to the death: but to comfort this sorowfull and desolate Court, good Fortune sent this helpe ensuing.

CHAP.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

### CHAP. LXVI.

Now the wife Muzabelino knowing by his art, the cruell treaton done to the Emperour, came to succour him, and of that which followed.



Muzabelino the Alremancer, of whom we have already spoken, by chance this day was turning over his Books, and found the unnessefull treatyme devised by these Craytors, and calling his familiars together, demanded the danger that would ensue by this treason: whereto one of them repyled, that if he went not speedily to Constantinople, the Emperour, the Prince Olorico, and their Ladies would hardly escape that day with life. Then turned he himselfe, in selfe same manner as he was when he succoured the Prince Trineus, and calling two spirits of the ayre resembling Giants, their faces so ugly and fearefull as no human creature durst behelde them, them he commanded to carry him to Constantinople, and with a great flaming firebrand in his hand, he cut through the ayre with such horrifical thunder, as each one throught the world had bin endewd. When he behelde the old man that defended the poore, he said to him, False and diabolall Craytor, darest thou meddle with the man whome thou knowest to bee in my guard? take him to ye ( quoth he to his two spirits ) and convey him to your Court, and there kepe him alive for me, so I will give him a patoun thousand times worse than death: you know how to die my gentle guest, let him be dealt withall as his behabition hath deserved. The miserable old man abhated hercet, and thinking to helpe himselfe by his Magycke, was presentely transformed into a Serpent. Now then shalt perseue, said Muzabelino,

WB 3

that

that I am greater in power then thou art. So taking two great Golden chaunes, he tied the Serpent about the neckes therewith and his hands together: setting such a conseruation on them, as he shoulde never be changed to his former shape.

Then came he to the Wallace, where taking off his Helmet, he entered the Hall, laying to the Knights. Ah my bare friends, the Craytors that thus hath molested you is taken, rejoice therefore and be of good cheare, your Lord is not dead, he liveth, he must live, and in despight of enemis shall florish moe then ever he did. The Princes & Knights hearing him speake so friendly, and yet knew not what he was, notwithstanding his promises they were greatly amazed: but when he saw Bellechino and Colmilio so reverently embrased him, they began to conceave better opinion of him. Alas my Lord and Father, said Bellechino, in a happy houre came you hither, and your presence puts us out of all further feare,ouchlate to succor the Empress Polynarda, for pity it is to see her thus changed. Whereupon Muzabelino embrased the Empress, whose face was cold, pale and wan. Why Madam, quoth he, wheres your former wisehame and discretion? leave these base, late countenances to common people: your Lord is in no danger, but within thys daies he shall be well againe. Convey her hence, said he to the Ladies, I am alwaies to see your folly, suffering her to lie in this sorte, and no one helpe her. Then was she conducted to her Chamber, and Muzabelino with the ayde of his Son and Duke Euastace, caried the Emperour to his bed, wheres stanching his wimdes with a pycious Ointment: Muzabelino gaue him some of the water to drinke, which before had baptised the Prince Zephira, and which he had brought with him in a little viall of Chysall, when the Emperour being somewhat better recovered, lifting his eyes to heaven, said. How great art thou in mercy my sovereign Redemer, son-

dyn

ving Muzabelino from the furthest regions to helpe me in so great necessity. Ah my noble friend, what habbe I done at any tyme sojor, that might enduce thee to labour me so much? sayd Lo, and answered Muzabelino, so precius are your deserts in mine eies, as I can doe no lesse, except I shoulde be accounted the most ingratefull among men. So bathynge his wounds with the joyce of certayne vertuous herbes, he willed all that were present to depart the chamber, and on the morrow they shoulde see their Lord in better estate. So left they the Empress to his rest, & all the Princes, Knights and Ladies, came to welcom Muzabelino, who cominted the Prince Alchydiana, assuring her that the Prince Olorico, shoulde bee wel enough, for he had likewise bathed his wounds, and left him in his Chamber quietly sleeping. On the morrow he cominted the bodies of Nardydnes and Menadeno to be burned, afterward he leaved Lycade from his father, sending him to be put in prison till the Empress were amouerd: and taking the Serpent by the chaine, he brought him by the help of his two spirits into the great Court, wheres by his curring he exceded a goodly Marble pillar, and on the top thereof a strong Cage aspyon, saying to the old man transloqued. Accursed creature, to the enthy paine may be the greater during the Emperors life, thou shalt remaine in this monstrosus shape and ale thou shalt not, till the God of heaven call him hence whose death thou diddest contrive. Incantement the spirits thrust the Serpent into the Cage: and afterward banished away, leaving the monster casting scartfull flames of fire out at his mouth, and howling with strange and pitifull cries. Then went Muzabelino to the Empress, whiche still remained sad and perisue, and bringing her to the Emperour, said. My Madam, am I not so good as my word, your Lord is well and perfectly recovered, he can than pleasance and mourne no longer. Not a little sorowfull was she at this sight, embracing his highnes with such affection, as though

# The History Of Palmerins D'Oliva

We had bin absent from him a long time : but when the Emperour saw her face so marred with lamenting, and her sweet countenance so much altered. Alas Madame, quoth he, why doe you offend that seat of heavenly beauty, which God ordained to excell all Ladies living: albeit I had beene, yet shold not you have bin such tyrant on your selfe. It such a wretchedt chance had happened, answered the Empresse. None han my gheft followed my Lord. For my heart hath no comfort but only in you, and that once lost, fares well life and all. Then must you both, said Muzabelino, consider the mighty works of God, especially you my Lord, who as you are lobed of many, so are you hated His workes of a number: you must therefore hereafter stand upon your guard, babling before your eyes, that the more renowned creaturis, the more both spightfull enimis seek to deface it. Alexander the great, and Julius Caesar are examples therof. You Madame will wash your face with the water in this bason, which will restore your former beauty: as sometimes it do to the Princess Zephyra. Within few daies after, the Emperour shewed himselfe to his subiects, who were verballous joyfull to see him so well recovered, the Prince Olorico likewise was perfectly cured, and all things so well as if this had not happened. Then was Lycado delivered to the people, who in recompence of his treason, haled him into the market place, and there binding him in an iron chayre, made a small fire under him, and so by little and little boyled him to death.

Chap.

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2

### Chap. LXVII.

How the Soldine of Babilon sent for the Prince Olorico, and his Daughter Alchidiana, and of the sorrow the Emperour and Empress made for their departure.



The report of this mishap at Constantinople was so spred abroad, as the King Florendos of Macedon, and the Queen Griana hearing thereof, presently posted to Constantinople, wheres by the good meanes of Muzabelino, they found their sonnes in very sound estate of health, for which they highly thanked the wise Spanian, giving him many rich and honourable rewards. And Muzabelino saying all matters quieted, that the Persian Ambassadors were likewise ready to returne to the Holdeane, not a little contented with the league of peace, he tooke his leave of the Emperoz, and sailed home with them to the King Abimar of Grisca, whch he certified of all things that happened, and how fortunately the danger was prevented. Frysoll the King of Hungaria, came with his Queen Aramida to Constantinople, a messenger likewise came from the Emperoz of Allemaigne and Trinicus, to wonder and the health of the Emperoz: such was the bantz of this sudaine mischance. While all these Princes remained there at the Court, the Princess Alchidiana was delivered of a faire Daughter, who at the Emperoz Palmerins request was named Philochrista, and not many daies after . . . Empesse had a Daughter likewise, named Belliza, and the Queen of Hungaria had another, called Melicia: no little joy being made at the birth of these children. But now the Holdeane of Babilon seeing his Son and Daughter returned not all this whille, sent the young King

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

King of Balisarca to enquire of them, and no sooner was he entered the Haven of Constantinople, but newes of his arrivall was brought to Alchydiana and Olorico, who to honour the King, went and met him at the Post. The King being landed, seeing hymselfe vnaunes, and remembryng the death of his Father before that City; with the teares in his eyes, said: Wretched that I am, must I venture thus nakedly on the shoaze, where my father, brother, and dearest friends were slaine? Ah Constantinople, the enemy to our Law and Religion, dost thou flourish by the blood of the greatest Lords in Turkie? a day will come to abate thy pride and insolency. I hope King of Balisarca, said Olorico if thy father and brother were slaine, it was like worthy Princes in their Masters service, whose death if thou remember, and (withall) the valour of them that slew them: thou wouldest thinke how Fortune favours the Grecian successors in the Empire. Wherefore, thou commest now in peace, but ill becomes it this then to remember past troubles: say thy message to the Emperoy that thou commest so, and thinkes not on such pynous matters. By this time they were come into his Majesties presence, when the King began in this manner. Mighty and renowned Emperoy, the Souldan of Babilon my Master, perceiving that age hasteneth on his death, sendeth to intreat your highnes, that his son and daughter may returne home to him, that while he liveth he may instruct them in the Kingdome, to behold some part of their worthy government. I thinkie their absence, said h' Emperoy, is as irksome to him, as it is pleasing and contented to us, no; will I withhold them contrary to his liking: desiring you godly Princes to hold me excused, if I have not used you as your vertuous worthily merit. Alchydiana having heard her fathers request, brake fawth into teares, and though nature made her desire to see the place of her birth, and to behold her parents and kindred: yet piercynge affection whiche conquereth all things, dweleth in her mind

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART 2.

mind in such sort, as she could moare willingly have stayed in the Emperors Court. But beholding the wantfull sorte betweene Palmerin and Polynarda, was resolved to bise the like to her husband, and so get the sally that too much conuerced her appetite. When the day was come of their departure, maruellous was the sorrow at this friendly parting: yet sowing there was no remedy, he killed her daughter Philocrista, and courteously bidding the Emperour and Empresse farewell, with her Lord Olorico, who was as loth to leave his noble friend, went aboard, and boordyng saile attained safe arriuall at the Molasses Court. Great joy was made for their returne, the Pilot that saved the Princess life, the Souldane made chiefe Captain of his Guard: and be dying, Olorico was created Souldane, whereof soon after he aduertised the Emperoy, sending to him and the Empresse many pretious jewells, not forgetting somewhat to his daughter Philocrista. When Olorico, and Alchydiana sailed from Constantinople, the King of Sparta and his Queen Arismena, the Duke Eustace and the Duchesse Sabinda, with divers other Princes returned to their countries. The like would the King Florendos, Griana, Ptolome and Bryonilia habe done: but that the Emperour interreated their longer stay. Griana gafe her Dwarfe Acenada sister to Urbanillo, to the young Princesse Belliza, and the Emperoy gave his Dwarfe such wechy possessions, as he married with a rich Gentlewoman of the City, by whom he had a sonne of the stature of the Pygmees, named Roldeno, who afterward was given to wait on the yong Prince Primaleon. Now the Emperoy calling to mind his former paines and travell in search of adventures, so lobed and honored Knights errant: as from each place in the world they came to his Court, as wel to behold his magnificence, as the thre yong Princesses, Philocrista, Beliza, & Melicia whose beauties were renowned faire and rare. Great Jests and Triumphes were daily made in honouer of them, wheres-

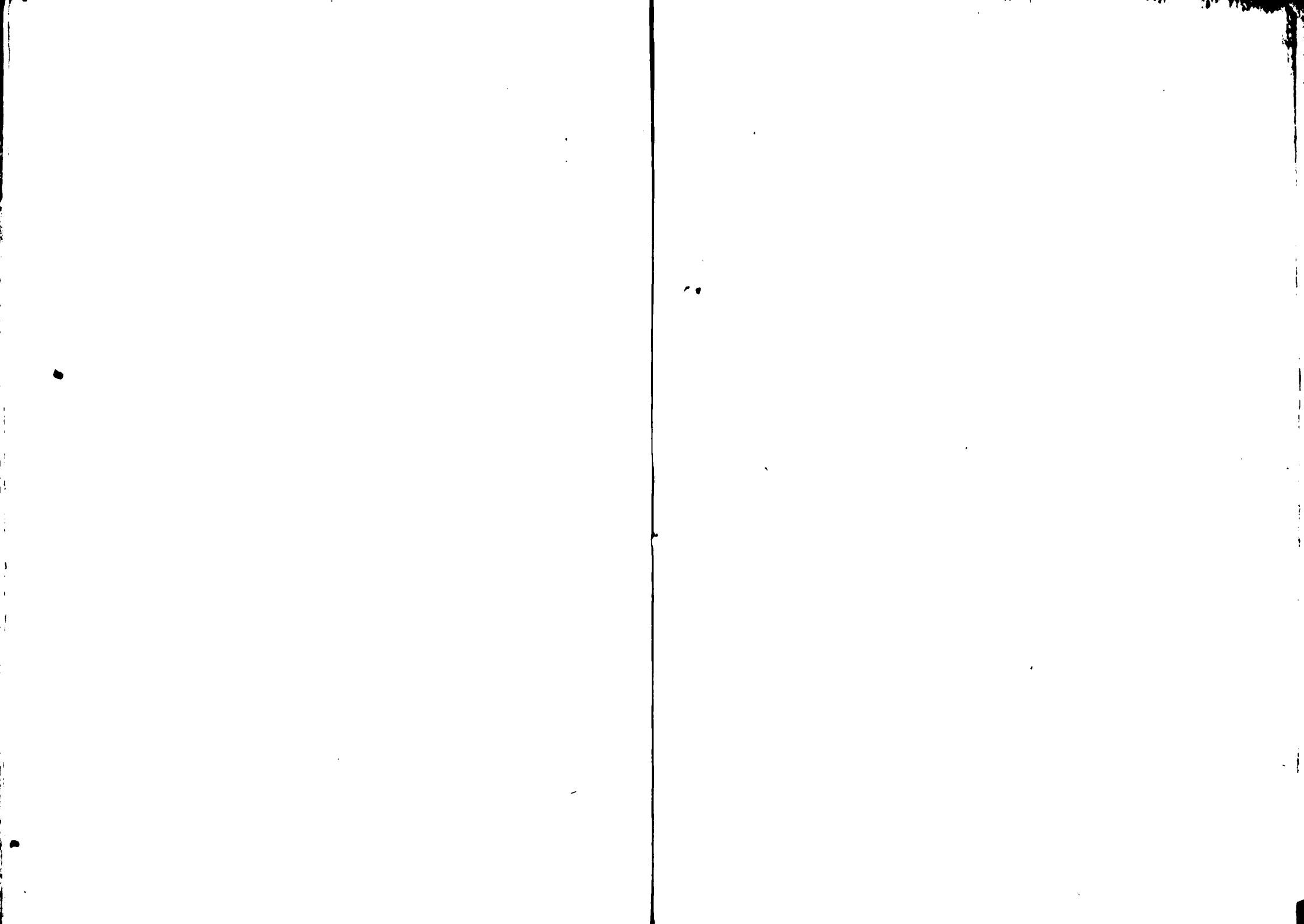
## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

wherein Belcar, sonne to King Fry soll, and Florendos son to Duke Eustace of Mecena, having received the order of knighthood, setwes themselves both foward and valiant. Daily came such soys of Knights to Constantinople from Allemaigne, Italie, France, and Spaine, as they exceded the number of them in King Arthurs time, when he made the great Courney to seize the Castell of Ladies. And one evening as the Empereur was debasing with the Dances, to censure of them that had best deserued: suddenly entred the Hall a Lady richly attred, who without saluting or speaking a word to any body, a god while stood viewing the Emperors & his Knights. At length making as though she would returne againe, she thus spake. Noble Emperors Palmerin, I have more delighted to behold thy Chivalry, then any of the Princes on the earth: but a time shall come, that the renowne of them and thise, shall be utterly aboltished by strangers, chiesely by one, whose vertue and beauty shall be such as thy selfe shall account him the best that ever bare Armes. So departing, she mounted on her Palstry, and rode away in exceeding great hast. The Empereur marelling at these words, said. All advised was I, in not demandinge of the Lady the Knights name, which shall surpass all other in prettynesse, gladly wold I know his name, of whom she made such a glorious report. These speeches so enflamed the minds of the Knights present, as many of them secretly Armed themselves, and rode after the Lady, among whom was Cardyno and Colmclio, whom we will leare in their journey till they finde her: and here conclude our History, till time bring on the following booke of Primalcon and Palmendos, desiring your favourable acceptations for these two parts, the better accencion I shall have to procede in the other.

FINIS.

My promise performed, and Palmerins famous History finished: for my long labour, Gentle-men, I request but your friendly speeches, an easie matter to be given by you, yet nothing can be more welcome to me. If I may speed in so small a request, Palmeros will leave his Mother the Queene of Tharsus, and Primalcon hasten his order of Knight-hood, that you may bee acquainted with their rare adventures: In meane while, the famous Palladine of England is arrived, and to seede you with variety of delights, his History by Easter terme next will be with ye: till when, vse such favour to Palmerin, as Prince Palladine be not hindered.

FINIS.



16 - 400

TO  
THE VVORSHIPFVL,  
MR. FRANCIS YONG, of Brent-  
Pallam, in the County of Hereford Esquire,  
and to Mistress SUSAN YONG his wife,  
and my most kind Mistress, health, and  
their hearts contentment, con-  
nually wished.



Being indebted to you both for your manifold kindnesses, I am bold to continue my promise began, concerning the course of these unuis'd Histories, this being the first part of PALMARIN D'OLIVA, ring-leader to all the rest, and therefore the Original from whence they which follow have bin deriv'd. Though in my translating they come last, I could have bin farre frome I haue good hope, that by the next time you haue me over againe, at length they will come to some order, and take their due place as their course describeth. The Second part of this will shortly follow when the third and last, that I am now in hand, is finish'd, which

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

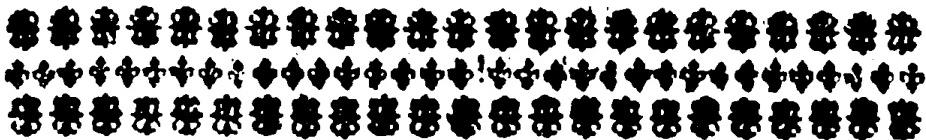
concluding with PALMIRIN of England, and PRY-  
MALION of Greco; their severall parts, will  
perfect the whole Historie, and make it compleat in eve-  
ry Part. As therell, so I commend this to your Worship-  
full protection, remaining alwayes yours with my reser-  
most endeavours, and praying that your Prosperity may  
never faile.

Your poore well-willer  
till death,

A. M.



10 CENTIMETRES



## To the Reader.



When I finished my second Part  
of *Palmerin of England*, I  
promised this worke of *Pal-  
merin D'Oliua*, because it de-  
pended so especially on the o-  
ther: to discharge that debt,  
for promise is no lesse accoun-  
ted, with the new yeare I send  
him abroad, a friendly com-  
panion for the long evenings,  
and a fit recreation for other vacant times.

But because some (perhaps) will make exceptions a-  
gainst me, that being but one Booke in other languages,  
I now devide it twaine: my awnswere is, That to glut men  
with delight, may make them surfeit, and so in expecting  
thanks for my paines, I should remayne condemned by  
generall misliking. Beside, a Booke growing too bigge  
in quantitie, is Profitable neither to the minde nor the  
purse: for that men are now so wise and the world so hard,  
as they love not to buy pleasure at unreasonable price. And  
yet the first Part will entice them to haue the second, when  
(it may be alledged) the cost is as great, though it had come  
altogether: yet I am of the minde, that a man grutched  
not so much at a little money, payd at severall times, as hee  
doth at once, for this advantage he hath, in meane time he  
may imploy halfe his money on more needsfull occasions,  
and raise some benefit toward buying the second part. A-  
gaine, the other part will be new at the comming forth,

## To the Reader.

where now it would be stale : For such are Affections now a dayes, that a Booke a sennight old, is scant worth the reading. Thus no injury is offered by dividing my Booke, but profit both to you and mee : Yours I have rehearsed, and mine is, that a little pause doth well in so long a labour; beside, this advantage would I take, that if my first Part deserved no liking, you should never be offended by me with the Second.

Yet herein I am encouraged, that what hath past with so great applyance in divers Languages, can hardly incite to be despised in *England*, being matter altogether of delight, and no way offensive : For Noble and Gentle minds, are farre from iniuring the Historie, that hath so highly pleased the Emperours, Kings, and mighty Potentates, as then the Inferior sort mislike : It is because they are not capable of so especiall deserving.

And yet I am perswaded, that both one and other will friendly entertaine *Palmerin D'Oliva*; because his History is so plentifully stored with choyse conceit, variety, of matter and exquisite conveyance : as nothing can bee reproved but my simple Translation, yet that I hope will be pardoned too, in that to translate, allowes little occasion of fine Pen-worke.

THE



# THE FIRST PART OF THE ANCIENT and honourable Historie of the valiant Prince Palmerin D'Oliva, Emperour of Constantinople ;

Sonne to King FLORENDOS of Macedonia,  
and the Faire GRIANA, Daughter to Re-  
migis, Emperour of Constantinople :  
a History full of singular and  
Courly recreation.

### CHAP. I.

Of the secret Love that the Prince Tarisius bare to the  
young Princesse Griana, and the arrivall of the Prince  
Florendos of Constantinople.

**T**he ancient Histories of the famous Empe-  
rours of Constantinople doe record, that the  
eighth Emperour succeeding Constantine,  
the Founder of that ancient and famous Ci-  
tyle, was named Remigius, who governed so  
lately, and with such exceeding honour, as not onely his Sub-  
iects but all the Kingdomes about him  
b

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

he was so feared and reverenced, that his Empire increased more large then in the time of his Predecessors. This Reginus was of such a princely and munificent mind that no Knight whatsoeuer came into his Court, without very honourable respect and bountifull rewards: expressing the good nature of a veriuers Prince, whose deeds were held of no small reckoning amongst his very Enemies. He married with the King of Hungarias Daughter, a Princesse for wit and Beauty, equal with any of her time, which caused her to be so especially loued of her Lord the Emperour, as he altogether gaue over the exercise of Armes: notwithstanding, his Court did not diminish one tote of the former glory for good and hardy Knights, but daily increased in such sort, as that he tooke great delight to haue young Princes, Knights and Gentlemen, murthered and educated from their Infancie in his Wallace, especially after the Empresse had brought him a Sonne, which was named Caniano, at whose Birth was no little rejoicing through the whole Empire.

Within two yeares after, she was likewise deliuered of a godly Daughter named Giana, who growing to fourteene yeares of age, was of such rare beauty and singular god grace, as those that beheld her, esteemed her for the chiefeſt piece of workmanship that euer Nature framed.

Hereupon it chanced, that Tarilius Sonne to the King of Hungaria (who had bieng brought vp in company with the young Prince Caniano) fell into such amorous conceit of the young Princesse, as he deuoted himselfe onely to her service, being vrable to concle the obiect of his affections, but that time made her acquainted with the cause of his alteration. Many meaneſſes he found to entice her good opinion towards him, but ſhe carrying a religious zeale to loue in ſome other Climate, made no reckoning of his impotunate and diligent ſervice, which drew a vell of ſouyonting thoughts vpon Tarilius, ſeeing his ſuite and ſervice ſo deepe-ly despised.

## Emperour of Conſtantinople. PART. I.

Neuertheleſſe (to compasse his intent) hee desired his Couzin Caniano, to cauſe a Tryumph be published wher unto all Knights might be ſummoned, as well Strangers as others: not doubting, but he ſhould ſped ſo well in deeds of Armes, as the reby he might deserue the loue of the ſayne Giana, and ſo afterwards make meaneſſes by the Emprefſe to demand her in mariage, all which hee concealed from his Couzin Caniano: who veri gladdly diſconſent to what Tarilius had requeſted, watching opportunity to finde the Emperour his Father at leylure, when he made hiſ higheſſe acquainted with the whole enterprize, of hiſelfe and hiſ Couzin Tarilius, deſiring him that all Knights might haue warning for preparation, againſt a day the next moneth appointed for the purpoſe. The Emperour was veri well pleased with hiſ ſonnes requeſt, accounting hiſelfe highly honoured by hiſ demand: whereupon hee cauſed Heraulds of Armes preſently to be diſpatched, to ſignifie hiſ intended Tournantient throughout all Countries farre and neare.

In the meane while Tarilius could not reſt day nor night, but ſtille endeououred to doe what he iudged might pleafe the Princesſe Giana, to whom as yet had not vittered the effect of hiſ longing deſires, albeit, by extremer actions he daily made ſhe w ſufficient of hiſ tormenting paſſions. But it ſo fell but not long after, that one day in her walking he had ſorted her alone from all the other Ladys and Gentlewomen, in a place conuenient for a Louers diſcourse, where falling from one argument to another, the fury of hiſ oppreſſions imboldened him ſo farre, that at length he brake with her in manner following:

Madame, you are not ignorant of the honorable aſſemblie, that is appointed at the Feaſt ensuing, when I hope to receiuē the order of Knighthood, and if it ſhall like you to thinke ſo well of me, as to grant me our request, eaſie enough for you to accord me, perhinde your ſelue that I haue imagine

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Imagine my fortune equall with the happiest Knights that euer lived, in that it may be the onely meane, whereby I shall enjoy the prize and honour of the Trymphy.

Griana knowing assuredly that Tarsius bare her great affection, as I haue before rehearsed, returned him this answere. In soth Couzin, it would please me maruellous well to be the meane of so good fortune as you promise your selfe: Neuerthelesse, I haue not learned so little modesty, as to grant any thing before I know what is desired.

When Tarsius understood her modest excuse, he perswaded himselfe that he shold obtaine that of her, whereof vntill that instant he had liued in despaire: whereupon the teeres standing in his eyes, he began in this manner. I humbly beseech you good Madamme, to take in worth what I am to acquaint you with: soz when I determined to sanothir my griefe in secret, the extremities of my affection grew to such a surplusage, as it brake the stings of my thoughts, almost vowed soz euer silent, to reueale that to you which my selfe dare but reverently thinke, such is my feare to displease you, otherwise, I know no meane can warrant me from sodaine and cruell death: so settled to the unspotted loue I bear you, which when I strue to ouercome and my selfe also, the more I would decrease it, the more it augmenteth, and that so strongly, as while you are in presence, my spirit loseth euery part of me, to live by you only. For which cause I haue determined (if you thinke it good) to request you of the Emperour your Father soz my selfe, and if he regard me with so much honour, the Realme of Hungaria may well challenge, and my selfe likewise, the highest room in earthly felicity, having a mistresse of such unspeakable quality. In the meane time, if you please to bestow on me any Jewell or favour, commanding me to weare it as your Knight and Servant: you shall well perceue how aduenturous loue will be in defense of my right, by the advantage I wall receeue in the vertue of a gaste so acceptable.

Griana,

# Emperour of Constantiopie. PART. I.

Griana, who made but slender account of his passions, and being not well pleased that he held her with such vaine discourses: modestly returned him this answere. If you had such regard of me as I well deserue, you wold not attempt me with speeches so vnbefitting my hearing: soz if your desire be such as you giue me to understand, you ought to make it knowne to the Emperour or Empresse, who haue greater authority ouer me then I haue my selfe. Wherefore I desire you henceforth not to aduenture the like on perill of your life, otherwise I shall let you know how highly you offend me: on which condicton I am content soz this time to pardon your want of discretion, in that I perceue my selfe to be the onely cause thereof, granting you time and leasure thus privately to assaile me, soz whiche ouer-sight, I repent me at the very heart. With which wordes shee flung away and left him alone, declaring by her Countenance to be offended with his request in that she desired rather to dye then accept him soz her husband, or to allow him the name of a friend.

If then Tarsius was driven into a quandarie, we need not maraile: wherefore troubled as he was, and not caring greatly whither he went, he entred the Empresse chamber, where she and her Sonne Caniano stood conferring together: without saluting the one or other, he satte downe in a Chaire, and gaue such bitter sighes, as the Empresse hearing, was somewhat moued therewith, doubting he had eyther received some great injury, or else could not prouide himselfe so sufficiently as hee would for the Trymphy, whereupon she left her Sonne, and calling Tarsius aside, thus began with him:

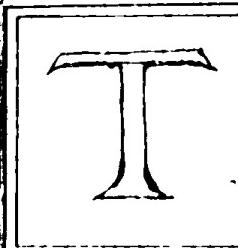
Nephew, I see you very melancholy, which makes me to judge, that you want some needful thing for the tourna-  
ment, which my Sonne hath caused to be published. With  
which wordes she beheld Tarsius more willy then she had  
done before, and perceiued the teares to trickle downe his  
cheekes,

checke, whch made her more desirous to know the cause of his griece, but his heart was so confounded and shut vp in anguish, as he could not speake one word vnto her. Neuer thelesse, the Empresse who loued him as her owne Sonne, found so many meanes to perswade him, as in the end hee disclosed the loue he bare to Griana, and the answer likewise whch she made him : whereby I am assured /quoth he/ that nothing but death can cease my tormentes. The Empresse who of herselue did many times determine to make that mariage, (perceiving now how fitly the occasion offered it selfe) began to resolute on the confirmation therof: and to content her Nephew, in excusing the Princeesse Griana, spake as followeth. Doe you Nephew mislike the answere of my Daughter? Belike me, therein she did but her dutie: for she cannot dispose of herselue, being young, and vnder controll, but by consent of the Emperour and I, whom you ought first to make acquainted with your request. But since I perceiue how you are affected, I promise you I will conserre with my Lord the Emperour: and hope to preuaile so well in the cause, as you shall speed of that you most desire.

As they continued these discourses, they were given to understand by a messenger, that the Prince Flo: endos the Kings sonne of Macedon, was newly arrived with a braue company of knyghts. But his comming to the Emperour was not as his Claiaile or Subject, because the Kingdome of Macedon was at that time no way beholding to the Empire, but onely to see the faire young Princeesse Griana; the renowne of whose Beauty and vertues had so pierced his thoughts, as before he saw her, he loued and honoured her, so that for this cause onely he journeyed to Constantinople, where he was very honorably entertained, both of the Emperour and his Sonn: Cariano as also of the Empresse and faire Griana, who oftentimes heard him reckoned and esteemed amongst the most honorable and gracious Princes, that liued at that day,

C H A P. II.

How the Empresse conferred with the Emperour, as concerning the Marriage of their Daugther Griana with Tarisius Sonne to the King of Hungary; whereof they both determined, and of whatch happened in the meane time.



Ye Empresse was not forgetfull of her promise made to her Nephew Tarisius, but endeauoured by all meanes possible to finde the Emperour at such leysure, as she might impart the whole vnto him: and because she had so hardily taken the matter vpon her, shée would gladly it should sort to effect, as commonly Women are courteous of their owne delires: Therefore no maruell if shewere earnest in following her intent.

Soone after, walking alone with the Emperour, and smoochly couering the baite she was desirous he shold sweat, shée desired hym to grant her one request, whereof she would not willingly be denied. The Emperour never before hearing her so imporlante, contented at thefirst to whatsoever shē demanded: Now perstrading her selfe, so speed, thus she began.

My Lord, haing often considered with my selfe, that our Daughter Griana is of yeares and discretionable for a Husband, I am the more desirous to see her honourably bestowed. And for that the young Prince Tarisius hath beene trained vp in your Court, and (which I little thought) some good-will appeareth to betweene them: I shoulde thinke it not amisse to wite them in Marriage together: for hardly shall we finde (in mine opinion) a Lord of greater blood and birth then hee, being heye apparent to the Crowne and King-

Kingdome of Hungaria: besides, they haue beeene so long  
time conuersant together in their young yeares, will enter-  
taine a more speciall regard of loue betweene them then can  
be in any other that may mooue the question to her. Ma-  
dame, answered the Emperour) shee is your Childe, and I  
doe not thinke but you woulde her good; thereto I like the  
motion well, soz that indeed I esteeme so well of Larilius,  
as of mine owne Sonne, and since we haue so happily fal-  
len into these discourses, we will soorthwith certifie the King  
his father by our Ambassadors, that we may understand  
his opinion herem. The Empresse gratified her Lord with  
very hearty thankes, being not a little glad she had so well  
prauailed, wherefore shee immediately aduertised Larilius.  
But soz Griana her affection was elsewhere, soz he bare a  
certaine secret goodliking to Florendos, so soone as she be-  
held him, fearing so great report of his Knightly bounte  
and prowesse, so that beholding them together, and their  
eyes deliuering the good content of each other, one might  
easily iudge, that Loue had so mighty mastered her  
thoughtes, as if shee consented, shee had set downe her rest  
for her choyse, and he on the other syde was drawne into  
the same compasse, notwithstanding each of them (for the  
time) concealed what they rather desired shoulde be knowne  
betwene them. Yet this hiddenire strooke to gaine place of  
issue; so divers times the Princesse Griana being amongst  
her Ladys, talking of such Knights as would shew them  
selues at the Tournement, the Prince Florendos was com-  
monly first spoken of, and so highly would the Ladys com-  
mend him beyond all the other, as Griana could not re-  
straine from changing colour, so that the alteration hee found  
in her Spirit might be euidently perceiued, howbeit none  
of the Ladys as then noted it: and thus she continued till  
the feast of Saint Mary d'Auguata, which was the Day  
appointed for the Tournement, on which day the Empe-  
rour knighted his Sonne Canino, and Larilius, & phe w to

the

the Empresse, In honour whereof, hee held a greater and  
more magnificent Court, then before times he had done: for  
he suffered the Ladys to accompany the Knights at the Ta-  
ble: Albeit they were not wont to bee so often till that time,  
yet full well it pleased the Prince Florendos, whoe alre expro-  
cite to the Princesse Griana; During whiche time of dinner,  
though many piercing Looks, and smothered Sighes were  
sent from each other, as messengers of their semblable opini-  
ons, yet curiously they shadlowed all from being discovered,  
and after the Tables were withdrawne, and each one prep-  
aring for the Tournay, Florendos so well behaved himselfe,  
as hee found the meanes to speake privately with his new  
Friend: and thus he began:

Madame, the Heavens have not a little favoured me,  
in sorting vs so commodiously together: That I may shew  
before I enter the Lyts Rogall, the occasion why I left the  
Realme of Macedon, to visite my Lord the Emperour. I  
swear to you upon my Knightly faith, that your Gracious  
selfe was the onely cause of my Journey: and while I live, I  
shall evermore adventure my selfe, in ought that may stand  
with your favour and liking; And the first argument of my  
happinesse, I should account, if you would command me  
this day to Arme my selfe for your Knight: Otherwile, I  
must be content to absent my selfe, being assured, that with-  
out your regard, it is impossible for me to doe any thing  
that can returne me estimation and Honour. And albeit I  
have not as yet done any service to you, whereby I shoud  
deserue to be accepted: Yet such is the hope I repose in your  
virtuous nature, as you will not refuse my honest request,  
being the first I ever desired of you, and not the last (I trust)  
shall doe your Honour. Now as you haue heard before, Griana  
earnestly affected Florendos: Nevertheles, as a modest  
and well advised Princesse, doubting least hee signed those  
Speches of course, dissembling her selfe to be somewhat dis-  
pleased, returned this Answer:

B

I did

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

I did not thinke n y Lord Florendos, that you would so  
faine f. yet your selfe, to hold me with Spaches not besee-  
ming the Daughter of so great an Emperour as I am; Be-  
sides, knowing you are a Stranger, and Ignorant (it  
may be) of the mōdestie which shoulde deserve Knights, deb-  
ting with Ladies, I will not bē such rigour towards you  
as I ought, yet must I tell you, that I finde my selfe offendēd.  
You desire that as my Knight, you may enter the Turney:  
for that I grant yee, to the end I may perceive the effect of  
the Profeſſe, which each one so much commendeth in you,  
the rest, it is my pleasure that you forbear.

Madame (quoth he) if I haue bēd any such Spaches as  
agreē not with your patience, for Gods sake (in my excuse)  
accuse my small compasse of libertie, which remaineth enely  
at your disposition. What quoth she, thinke you, that I will  
love any but he that must and ought to be my Husband? Ah  
sweet Lady, said Florendos, that is it that I so earnestly de-  
sire: and thinke not that I sollicite you with any other kind  
of love, but onely to make you the Mistresse of my selfe, and  
altogether to dispose of me and mine: for proue whereof, I  
will hereafter imploy my selfe in the Emperours service, in  
such sort (as if you like it) I hope to purchase his consent.  
Truly Sir, quoth she, that onely appertaines to the Empe-  
rour and not to me, to whom you are to make knowne what  
you intend: For he hath Authority to command, and I am  
bound by duty to obey. At which wordes the Empresse cal-  
led her away; when Florendos making her courteous re-  
verence, departed to his Chamber to Arme himselfe, so  
many Knights were entred the Lyses, and he in short space  
came thither for company: wherē he betwixt himselfe with  
such Valour, as he not onely got the Honour of the first day,  
but of the fourre dayes following, while the Turney endu-  
red, and wonne the Prize, which Caniano had prepared for  
him that best deserued it, which made him be greatly este-  
med of the Emperour, and of the whole Court in generall,  
especially

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

especially of the faire Griana, whose heart by little and lit-  
tle, Love brought in subjection, to the no small content of  
Florendos, which doubtlesse had the Prince Tarisius beheld,  
I imagine hee would haue hardly liked it.

But now during the time of these great Feasts and Tri-  
umphes, Fortune the swyne Enemy to all quietnesse, pre-  
sented the Emperour with other occasions, to cut off these  
pastimes and Courtly devises: for after many of the  
Knights assembled at his Court, had taken leave to returne  
into their Countreyes, Gamezio donne to the Soldane of  
Babylon, who was on the Deas with a mighty Armie, in-  
tending to conquer Alexandria, was by extremtie of wind  
and weather, driven into the Straights before Constanti-  
nople. Which when the Pilots and Mariners perceived,  
not one amongst them but greatly rejoiced at this great  
good fortune, but chiesly Gamezio, who perswaded himselfe  
that his Gods had sent him thither, that the most Noble and  
flourishing Citie of the world might fall into his hands:  
Whereupon the windes somewhat appeased, and the Deas  
calmed, he assembled the chiche and principall Captaines of  
his Armie, and thus he began to speake:

My good friends, I believe assuredly, that our great gods  
would not suffer vs to arrive in Alexandria, because wee  
went against them of our olde Law and Religion, but ra-  
ther it liked them better, that we should adjoyn our soules  
to this Countrey of Christians, either to ruinate it altoge-  
ther, or at least to bring it vnder our Obeyrance. Wherefore  
I am determined at this time, to deserre the revenge of the  
Injures, whiclh the King Calameno did to the Soldane, and  
as much as in me lyes, employ my Forces in Conquest of  
this Countrey: For which cause, I desirre that each of you  
would particularly incourage your people, assuring them (if  
wee can conquer this Citie) the Riches thereof will counter-  
balne their paines and tributie.

The Captaines failed not to accomplish their Charge to

# The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

the bitterinost, summoning every one presently to Armes : So prebiring their Shipes, their Ensignes, and all things else needfull for their defence, they hoysed their sayles, making towards the Shoare, where with such provision as they had they wike Landing, making such a noyse with their Drums, Trumpets, and clamour, as was heard with no small feare in every part of the Cittie. Neverthelasse, they were received with better resistance then they looked for, as following the Discourse, you shall at large understand.

## CHAP. III.

Of the Battell fought before the Cittie of Constantinopls, betweene the Emperours power, and the Armie of Gamezio.



Soone as this huge Armie on the Sea was discovered by the Sentinels of the Cittie of Constantinople, the rumour arose so great, as the people ranne on heapes to defend the Haben, where the Moores thought to have made their first entry. In the meane while, Caniano, Tarisius, and the other princi-  
pall Knights with their men at Armes, put themselves in Equipage, ordaining their Army in such warlike manner, as now they marchid sooth of the Cittie, to succour those places wher the Moores gaue most eager Assault. The Prince Florendos being left behind, mads no little hast to gather his Company : And as hee galloped with them by the Emperours Wallace, he espied the Princesse Grianz, standing at her Chamber window, calling many a ruefull looke to-  
wards the Gates of the Cittie, which so deeplye pierced the gentle Princes heart, as immediately he said within himselfe. By Heaven (Sweet Lady) either will I dye this day

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

day, or remoue the griefe that semeth so neare to touch you. And with this resolution hee putting spurres to his Horses ; it was not very long before he got among the thickest of the Moores, where he beheld the Enemy so Strong, and the Christians so weake, as the day was like to prove dangerous and dismall. For the Prince Gamezio was esteemed one of the best Knights through all Alia, and that day he behaved himselfe so roughlye amongst the Christians, as sooth to say, they were enforced to retyre towards the Cittie.

Whiche when the Emperour beheld, who remained with no great strength to defend the Cittie, he was not a little grieved to see his men turne their backs on their Enemies, and dispise them selfes in such fearesfull and dismaying sort. But Florendos and the Prince Caniano vsed such meanes, as they got them soone in Aray agayne, and returned on the Enemy with a steele and hardy charge. Tarisius shewed himselfe very valiant, and adventurous, Striking by all the meanes he coulde to equall the Prince Florendos, who that day gaue testimony of most rare exploits : As these thre noble Gentlemen past from rank to rank, sending all to the earth that durst withstand them. Gamezio seeing his men so bloodily slaughtered on every side, meeting with Tarisius, would take revenges on him, delinering him such a cruell stroke on the head with his Sword, as soone he fell to the ground so astonished, as his Enemy might euen then haue slaine him : and so he had done but for the Prince Florendos, who seeing the Moore advancing himselfe on his styrrops, to reach a full stroke at Tarisius on the ground, listed him quite out of his saddle with his Lance, and bare him so rudely therewith to the Earth, as breaking his neck with the fall, he gaue vp the ghost.

When the Moores beheld Gamezio their Generall slaine, and the Christians make such haueock of them, their hearts falling them to make further resift, and so fast as they could

towards their Ships, when had not the night too soone pre-  
vented them, not one had escaped death or taken prisoner,  
notwithstanding the greatest part were put to the sword,  
divers making hast to get away by Boates, were drow-  
ned in the Sea, and many of chise accompt brought backe  
prisoners; Thus with Victorie returned the Emperours  
power backs to the City.

So many of the Moores as escaped to their Ships, being  
not a little glad they were so farre from their Enemies : set  
sage and returned towards the Holdane, to whom they de-  
clared the summe of their misfortune, as also the Death of  
his sonne Gamezio; which tydings made him wel ne mad  
with rage and anger. But being old and crazed with sick-  
nesse, he could not goe in person to revenge his death, which  
made him bothe and swere, that in soone as his other Son  
came to yeares to beare Arms, he would send him with such  
a puissant strength, as easly he shold destroy the Emperour  
and his Countrey: in the meane time he sent the Ransome  
to redeme them that were taken prisoners: where we will  
leauie the Holdane, and returne to Caniano, and the other  
Princes, who being now come againe to the Cittie, the Em-  
perour having heard the worthy service Florendos had done  
that same day (and how he had receaved some few dangerous  
wounds in the Battell) sent for him in all hast that might  
be to his Pallace, because his owne Chyurjions and Physi-  
cians shold have care of him. So was Florendos brought  
very honourably to the Pallace, and conducted to a Cham-  
ber besyding his estate, where the Empresse and Griana  
came presently to visite him: to whom the Prince Caniano  
did declare, how Tarisius had bene slaine by Gamezio, but  
that Florendos kepped betwixt his death and him, but  
(quoth he.) the Moore excused Tarisius; so in my presence  
he gaue his last farewell to this world, so that no man  
may say the Warrioie is ours, albeit before it hung in hard  
Suspence.

While

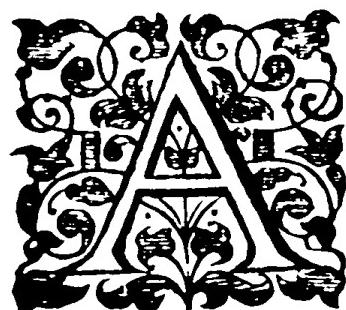
While Caniano continued these and such like Speches,  
Griana cast many a swart looke on the Prince Florendos,  
and he answered his object with the selfe-same messengers  
of his heart. Thns contented they their severall passions  
with modest and vertuous regard, as none present could sus-  
pect their secret meaning. The Empresse and her Daugh-  
ter courteously taking their leaue, Florendos and his Chy-  
rurgians leauie a while together, they to apply medicines  
to his wounds, and he the remembrance of his Mistresse to  
his hart. On the morrow, the Emperour with his Nobilitie  
rode forth of the Cittie, to see the slaughtered bodies, a-  
mong whom they found Gamezio, who was easly knowne  
by the richnesse of his Armeur, which Caniano caused to be  
taken from the dead Body, and brought to Florendos, as the  
desert of his travell; when the Emperour himselfe (the  
more to honour him) made present thereof to Florendos at  
his returns, with these Speches:

My noble Couzin, by your Valour and Knightly prow-  
esse, have I had the upperhand of mine Enemies: may I  
but live to requite thy good deserts, I shall account my  
selfe happie and fortunate: Notwithstanding, account of  
mee as thy Kinsman and continuall Friend, and bee there  
ought in my power shall like thee to demand, on the faith  
of a King I vow to give it thee.

Florendos most humbly thanked the Emperour, as well  
for the great Honour he did him, as also for his large and  
bountifull promise, wheron he builded so assuredly, as he  
almost accounted sayze Griana for his owne: who with the  
Empresse her Mother, came daily to visite him, by which  
meanes their mutuall Loue increased moe and moe, and  
Florendos recovered his health in the shorte time, which  
when he had obtained, he sollicited the Emperour with this  
late following.

CHAP. IIII.

How Florendos intreated the Emperour, to give him in Marriage his Daughter *Griana*, and what answer the Emperour made him.



After that Florendos was thoroughly healed of his wounds which he had received in fight against the Moors: finding the Emperour one day at leisure, and alone in his Chamber, he began to salute him, as hereafter followeth:

Most dread and soveraigne Lord, so Princely and gracious have your favours beeene towards mee, since first I entered your royll Court, as the King my Father and I shall never answer such exceeding courtesie. And to the end this kindness may rather increase then any way diminish, I beseech your Highnesse not to deny me one request, which among the infinite number of your Princely graces towards mee, I shall account it to exceed all other. In briefe, it is the Princesse *Griana* your Daughter, whose love and honourable Fame, made me forsake the Realme of *Macedon*, onely to desire her in Marriage, if either any desert in mee, or your owne Princely good conceit, might repute me worthy of so high a favour. And for I would not your Highnesse should any way misconceive of me, as that the motion proceedeth from a youthfull and unadvised head, or that I have enterprized it without the good liking of the King my Father: I humbly desire your Majestie to rest satisfied, both in these and all other opinions, in that my Fathers consent, brought me with no little speed hither, and the hope of yours during my abode here,

heere, hath taught me to place my Love with discretion, and continue it with honourable louetise. With this addition (under your Highnesse correction) that were free mine, as I am wholly hers, the faithfull service of a thankfull Son, would answer the gentleness of so good a Father, and the irrevocable vowedes of holy Love, assure *Griana* of her Florendos.

Right dærely did the Emperour loun the Prince Florendos, as hee had beeuen his owne Sonne Caniano: his knightly valour and manifolde other Vertues justly inducing him thereto: and gladly he would haue consented to his Request if his promise made unto Tarisius did not binde him to the contrary, wherupon hee returned him this answer.

Boleewe me good Couzen, I am not a little a-grieved, that I cannot satisfie your gentle Request, for that Tarisius, Nephew to the Empresse hath already prevented mee: to him haue I past my promise for my Daughter, and daily I expect the Ambassadours comming from *Hungaria*, to finish the Marriage, so that I had rather loose the best of my Cities, then it should be said I falsified my word. Notwithstanding, of one thing I can assure you, that you are farre higher in my grace and favour then hee: yet necessity is without Law, and the regard of mine Honour must intreat you to hold me excused.

Greatly abashed was the Prince Florendos, seeing in one instant that hope stricken dead, that had maintained his life, since his coming to Constantinople: and so nipt in the head was hee with the Emperours answer, as he stood a good while in a Stody, not speaking one word; at last he began thus. God soy'd, that so great a Prince should breake his promise by my occasion: Nevertheless, my truth and loyaltie to your Highnesse shall not any way diminish; but I shall remaine the most soylward in Duty, of any that owe Heribes or Allegiance to your Majestie. Neither will I (said the Emperour) imagine the worse of you, but

lose

# The Historie of Palmerin D'Olva,

loue you rather better then I did before. Then entred divers Peblemen and Gentlemen, which made them breake off from further spachess, and Florendos taking his leave, went to his Chamber, so full of griece and extremie heauinessse, as easly he could haue bæne induced to commit some violence vpon himselfe: but calling himselfe vpon his bed, he thus begān to breath forth the sturte of his passions, to ease the heabie burthen of his oppresse Spirit:

Unhappie wretched that I am beyond all other, what hope of life canst thou flatter thy selfe withall, saeling the mane that shoulde maintaine the continuance thereof, seydis thē (fond man) to hope any longer. What angry Pla-  
net governed thy Nativitie, that he to whom thou gauest life, shoulde this day be the cause to end thine owne. Welkinus Tarisius, had I made tryall of this inconuenience before, hardly shoulde I haue put my person in such danger a-  
mong the Moores, to sheld my life: but in defending the  
Sword out of thy chrate, I haue deseruedly thrake it in  
mine owne, so that by lengthning thy dayes, I haue expro-  
vaine owne hate, and that with a death so miserable and cru-  
ell, as no Enemy whatsoeuer would wish to another. But  
were it not that my Duty to the god Emperorour counter-  
mandeth me, thou couldest not with such ease eyther ou-  
bauen me in my loue, or thus vsurpe the gracious favour  
of my Higheesse Griana, were affection ballanced with de-  
sert, or ione measured by vertue, as it is by opinion. Yet  
withstanding, to dye for her loue I shall account my selfe  
happie, in that she cannot but pittie my unlucke death, and  
my spirit shoulde passe with greater quiet to his end, if she  
knew with what content I take my destinie: but sayde  
Griana, would God I had eyther not seene thē at all, or so-  
tune had bene fubstantiable to me in chosse. At which wordes,  
the extremitie of his passions tooke away the liberty of his  
speche, so that he could not shalsh what he would gladly haue  
spoken, but falling from his Bed to the ground in a swoone,

# Emperour of Constanſinople. PART. I.

amazed one of his Esquires that was in the next Chamber, who hearing the fall, ranne in immediately, where seeing his Master lying dead (in his judgement) ranne and called Frenato, who was Couzin to Florendos, and one that knew most of his priuate affaires, notwithstanding, he was ignorant in the cause of this accident, who taking him by the armes, with cold water and Vinegar cast in his face, at length he got life into him agayne: when Florendos opening his Eyes, and seeing his Couzin so busse about him, breathing forth two or thre bitter Ughes, said:

My deare friend and Couzin, I beseech you hinder not the end and issue of my life, soz being out of all hope to recover my Lady Griana, there is no meane left to maintaine my life. When Frenato heard these wordes, he doubted that the Prince had received some contrary answer from the Emperour, as concerning the marriage betwene him and his Daughter, soz whose Love onely hee left the Kingdome of Macedon: Wherefore, he perceiving that she must be the onely means to ease his torment, he began thus roundly to answer the Prince. And what of this? Spust you therefore dispaire? Alas said Florendos, what would ye have me doe? The Emperour hath long since past his promise soz her to Tarisius, as his Higheesse assured me by his owne wordes. Very well Sir (answered Frenato) but doe you know if she haue given her consent? I promise you I am perswaded that she labes him not, but that her favourable regard is much moze towards you then him: and soz you say so much, to morrow will I sound the bottome of this matter, so that (if I can) I will strakke the Emperors intent towards Tarisius. Use you in the meane time but learne to dilemble your griece, and shew not your selfe malcontent soz anything that hath bæne said: but be of good cheare, and reserue your fortune in this case to the successe of mine endeavours. These and such like persuasions Frenato b̄ed to the Prince, whome he thus left in his Chamber, and returned to the Pallace as was his manner.

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Olipa,

All this while the Emperour besought himselfe on the speeches that had passed between him and Florendos, which made him the night following to discourse thereon with the Empresse, persuading her, that hee could more willingly accept of him for his Sonnes then Tarisius. But shee who highly favoured her Nephew, reproved his opinion with many answers, so that by impotunate intreaties, teates, and other subtil fatches, which women are wont to use to accomplish their purposes, shee so farre dissuaded the Emperour, as hee promised her againe not to give her to any other, then to him to whom hee first past his word. Of which words, the Empresse was not a little glad, and therefore all that night shee devised, by what meanes shee might from that time forward so much as in her lay, to bladet Florendos from speaking to her Daughter : whereupon shee daily kept her Chamber of presence, and held a moze strict luke on Griana then before shee had done : which greatly increased the passions of Florendos, and brought him into so weake estate, as the learned Physitians could not delier the cause of his sicknesse, to the no small griefe of the Emperour, but especially of Caniano his Sonne.

Yet for all this, wold not the Empresse at any time visite him ; because shee would vnder the occasion of her Daughters seeing him, remembraunce what speeches had passe betweene him and the Emperour. And albeit, Griana made no outward shew thereof, yet in her heart shee was greatly displeased at her Brothers dealings, so that one day when her Brother Caniano came to see her, to recoment unto her in what extremity hee had left his friendly compaionate, and what griefe it would be to him if hee dyed, as hee greatly doubted : What my Lord (quoth shee) it is not so I hope : Pea certaine (quoth hee) and I feare hee will very hardly escape this day. At which words the water stood in her eyes, yet so well as shee could shee dissemble her passions : nevethelasse, hee could not hold it in, but said, I merueille much

## Emperour of Constanctinople: PART. I.

much that the Empresse my Mother makes so slender account of him, as since his sicknesse hee woulde not vouchsafe once to visite him : I feare shee hath forgotten what good hee did to vs, that day when hee valiantly slew the Turke Gamezio. Welcombe me (my good Lord and Brother) I am heartily sorry for his sicknesse, so, if hee dye (as God seyid, quoth shee secretly) the Emperour my Father shall loose moe then hee thinketh on : the great service hee hath done for him already, may give instance of my wordes, and hee being the Sonnes of so great a Prince as hee is. By this time had such extreame griefe overburthened her heart, as shee was constrained (feigning to bee to the Empresse Chamber) to leave her Brother, that shee might alone by her selfe beweare her Friends hard fortuns.

### CHAP. V.

How Griana sent a Ring to the Prince Florendos, by Cardina her Mayd, desiring him (as hee loved her) to comfort himselfe; And of the Answer hee sent her.

 Riana thus leaving her Brother, went unto her Chamber, where more and more shee lamented for the sicknesse of Florendos, and with her teares shee coupled these discoules. Nay it be, that any living Creature can deserve so cric-  
tens punishment as I doe, that endangers the Life of the  
workest King i in the world : Unhappy that I am, that  
Love, yea, the love he bears to me, shoulde bring so brake a  
Gentleman to so hard an exgent : But if hee dye, such just  
vengeance will I take vpon my selfe, as that I will not re-  
maine one houre alive after him, and let our Ghosts kee  
their owne quiet in Death, that Fortune woulde not affoord  
vs in Life. Yet will I thus farre fist adventure, and that  
before any Nape enter those Eyes of mine, try if it conesse  
in

# The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

in my power to ease his extremity, that buges my Loue at too dure a p[ri]ce. And in anguish of minds, he called one of her Damosels, the Daughter of her Nurse Cardina, whom above the rest he trusted most, and to her he began to speak in manner following :

Cardina, thou knowest the love I alwayes bare thy Mother, and for her sake how well I have thought of thee, I have knowne the a long time a true and faithfull Servant : but now Cardina, is a time beyond all other, to make tryall of thy truth, and to witnesse thy loyaltie to mee , onely as thou art sore, so to be secret, and so secret as I must put my Life and Honour into thy secrecie. Cardina, who was wise, and of good government, hearing Griana vse such earnest Spatches, imagined that he would commit no common matter to her with i[n]ch Conjuration, whereupon she modestly returned this answer : Madame, rather had I be borne p[re]cie-meale in sunder, then any thing you command for secret, should by me be revealed without your licence : and so assure your selfe, that while I live, you shall finde me as faithfull in ded, as I promise in word. I never hitherto (quoth the Princesse) had any other opinion of thesse : listen now therefore what I shall command thesse.

I haue vnder God for certaine Cardina, that the grieuous sicknesse of the Prince Florendos, is caused by very earnest Loue which he beares to mee, and for I account it great p[ro]tie to lyse so god a Knight ; doe so much as take the paines to goe to him from mee : and say, I desire him to be of good chere, and if ther[er] be any thing in my power may doe him good, I will gladly accomplish it, as she that leui's him as her owne selfe, and to assure him thereof, say, I send him this King, which I will hym to kepe as a pledge of my Loue.

Madame, answered Cardina, forasm[us] sp[ec]iall me so well, as my paines may giue ease to both your p[ro]issions : and might my sentence like you Madame, I know no Knight so worthy of your Loue as Florendos. So then, said Griana, and returns

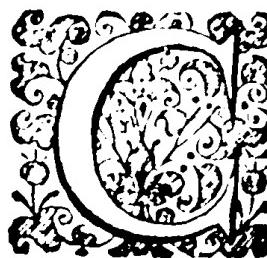
# Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

turne againe so soone as thou canst. So went Cardina straight to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, at the entrance she met the Prince Caniano so hearie and penitue as might be, because he perceived his friend to consume away every day moze and moze. But Cardina, who had well learned her lesson, stopt aside, and would not be seene of Caniano : who being gone, she went vp to the Chamber, where when she was ready to enter, she heard the Prince complain in this sorte. Ah poore wretch, must thou needs dye without any hope of remedy ? And as he would haue proceeded on, Cardina stepped to him, and after she had saluted him, said to him secretly, That the Princesse Griana had sent her to him, to understand of his health: And be la be me good Prince quoth she, I never saw Lady so sorowfull for your sicknesse as she is. She commendeth her selfe to your Honour most heartily, and hath sent you this King, as an earnest of the Loue she beares you, desiring you to bee of good chere and comfort your selfe, because she desires to see you, to conserue with you of matters that concerne you both nearely. These words so ravished the spirit of Florendos, as a good while he doubted, whether he dreamed, or that he might give credite to what he heard : for albeit he knew the messenger so well as any in the Court, yet could hee not persuade himselfe that he was so fortunate. At length, betwene hope and dispaire hee tooke the King, which hee entreated with many devout kisses , and embracing Cardina so well as hee could, thus answered : Alas my sweet friend, may it bee possible that my Lady hath such regard of him, who never was able to doe her any service; Doubt not therfore my Lord, answered Cardina, and if you will declare your Loue answerable to hers in vertus, you must giue testimo[n]y thereof, by comforting your person, that she may see you so soone as may be. Ah sayre Eli-gin, quoth he, let my whole life be imployed, in what shall like her diuine nature to command me : and I assure you, that these tydings hath breasted

shed such new life into my very soule, as already I finde my selfe wonderfully changed, yea, and that in such sort, as before thre dares be past, I shall attend her Gracions with serviceable diligence. In the meane while, I shall desire you faire Frier, to let my severaigne Mistresse vnderstand, that I kisse her Highnesse hand in humble dutye, and had ere this giv'n Farewell to this Life, had not her sweet regard called me agayne from Death. Thus parted Cardina from the Prince, taking her way speedily towards Griana, who longed not a little to heare from Florendos, whom she had made Lord of her gentle affections.

C H A P. VI.

How *Cardina* recited to the Princesse *Griana*, what Speeches had passed betweene her and *Florendos*; And of the Countell shew gave her Mistresse, to conferre with him in the Garden, to soone as hee was recovered.

  
Cardina thus dispatched from Florendos, made no little hast towards the Princesse, who remained all this while silent in her Chamber: and no sooner perceaved Cardina to enter, but she demanded if Florendos received her Token in good part or no. Welcome me Madame, answered Cardina, I thinke you never did any thing in all your life, whereby you could obtaine more Honour and applause, then by that you vouchsafed to doe at this instant; for in my judgement you haue performed a myracle, in giving him Life that was in the very lawes of Death. Then from point to point she recounted the talkes passed betweene them: First, how she found him in the middle of his regrets; and lastly, what Message he had sent her.

Thus while Cardina continued her discourse, every word took

ooke hold on the gentle heart of the Princesse, and wounded her with such pittifull regard of the Prince his torment: as what she desired inwardly, she shadowerd with indecie, as loath to receive shame in her Love, having carried her selfe with such Honour all her life, quoth she to Cardina. How might I (good Servant) eas this weightie oppression? Very well (said Cardina) when Fortune alloweth opportunity. But thou knowest (quoth Griana) a Princesse as I am, to be seyn secret with so brave a Gallant, doth greatly hazard my Life and Honour. As for that Madame, (said Cardina) my Sister can better advise you then I, for nothing that I know: By her meanes may you speake with your Knight, the bravest Gentleman in the world, and one whom I know to be farre devoted yours, as he will rather loose his life, then impeach your Honour any way: and otherwise then in leualtie to make you his Lady and wife, I am well assured he loveth not, which loue (Madame) you may well entartaine. Returne then Cardina (quoth the Princesse) to my Lord Florendos, and assure him that so soone as he is recovered, I will come and speake with him, in such a place where he may well adventure: And desire him as he loveth mee, that it may be with all condentent speed.

Cardina without any further delay, went with this Message to the Prince Florendos: Who heartened himselfe so well vpon these speeches, as within sixe dayes he found himselfe thorowly amended, whereof the Emperour and Caniano his Sonne, was not a little glad: But Tarisius was scant well pleased therat, for he had conceaved a secret Jealousie, because he was so earnest in affection towards Griana, who by her Mayd Cardina had warned Florendos, that the night following he shold come into the Garden, where into her Chamber had a secret entrance, and there shold he and she conserre of their Love, without suspition of any.

Florendos seeing these affaires sort to so good an end, purposed what ever happened, not to saile the time and place:

which made him think this day a yere in length, so long he looked and de-sir'd soj the plight. But now the wchid is come, when Florendos with his Cozyn Frenato (who was privie to the Prince's secret love) departed from their Luggings, and comuning to the Garden, they saw the wall was very high and hard to climb. notwithstanding greater things are possible to Lovers, chiefly when a cause of lach weight is in hand, so that in that time Florendos had got to the top of the Wall, and afterward went to the place where Griana stayed his coming, who had no body with her but Lerrina, Sister to Cardina, to whom likewise she shrowdly bewrayed her secrets. He having espied them, came and fell on his knee before the Princess, but she tooke him vp in her armes, imbracing him so sweetly: as Lerrina withdrew her selfe amongst the Trees, not with any intent of fears to displease them, but with a certainte kinde of griefe which overcame her, that she wanted a Friend to participate with her in Love, as her Mistress had, before whom Florendos being on his knee, said: Madame, by vertue of your commandement, I am thus bold to enter your presence, yielding my whole ability to you, as to the divine Goddess that hath deluded me from Death, which Grace saving your Princely nature hath asswad me, my life soj ever hereafter remaines at your Sovereigne pleasure: The unsign'd promise wherof, I binde to you by invocable vovels, but especially by my Faith, the onely ornement of a true knight, that I desir no longer to breath this ayre, then to Honour your Name with my continuall service, for life without your grace and favoar, is more yokesome to me then a thousand deaths. But by your favour my Lord (answered Griana) how or from whence hath this hot Love spryng, let me know I desire you: Madame (quoth he) as I have heretofore, so at this time I assure you, that in my natiue Country of Macedon, I heard the renoume of your excelling Beauty, at which very instant I dedicated my selfe onely yours:

and ever since continuing in this religious Service, I haue so confidently set downe my rest, in gracious regard of your sweet selfe, as being yours in service, I live: If otherwise, I dye. In sooth saith the Princessse, I see then you haue given your selfe whollymine, and so I am well contented to accept you. Then Madame (quoth he) to seale the assurance of this divine labour you haue done me, let me intreat to kisse those sweet Lippes that delivered the sentence I haue long looked for. Which to grant, though for modestie sake, at first she seemed dafty, yet at length Love had so surprised her, as he needed not strive when no resistance was offred. Thus with feares and cleane kisses, they breathed into each others soule the mite arguments of their Love, and faire Cynthia, amably favoring this delicate encounter, added such courage to the inlude of this louely Champion, as breaking his Lance in the face of Venus, he bequeathed the successe of his devoire to the gracious Aspect of that Planet. And among a number of soft and sweet loue Spaches, he discoursed to her his talkie with the Emperour her Father, how he had requested her in Marriage, and how he excused his consent, by the promise he had made before to Tarisius, through the dally and earnest perswallions of the Empresse. Notwithstanding (quoth he) in respect you haue not consented therunto, I hope they shall haue themselves farre beyond their reckoning. Now soj the Princessse, he never knew that Tarisius had laboured to haue her to his wife, because he made so light accounct of him, as he would rather dye then consent thereto: Whereupon she returned Florendos this answer. The Emperour my Father hath reason to thinke hardly of my Mother, and great discredite will it be to her, to procure my Marriage against my will, soj never shall I consent thereto: and therefore my Lord I desire your adice, how I may prevent this inuincing danger: Madame, answered Florendos, my vchice is layd already, so please you to accept thereof, I will convey you hence secretly

## The Historic of Palmeria D'Oliva,

cretly, and before the Emperour or any one know of it, into my Countrey of Macedon, where I had mine shall ente-  
taine you with great reverence and Honour, and you shall  
be our gracious Lady and Princessse. Welcomes me, said she,  
it is doublfull in such a Journey what dangers may happen,  
notwithstanding, having tolled my selfe enely yours, be it  
to the liking or disliking of my Father and Mother, I had  
rather breake throughe the straitnes of a greater hazard,  
then be forced to Marrie him, whom while I live I can-  
not like: Therefore doe yet expect the advantage of the  
time, and I will adventure with you whither you please.  
Madame (answered Florendos) continue you this resolu-  
tion, and reserre the rest to my charge, which you shall see ef-  
fected ere thre dayes be past: In the meane while I intend  
to take my leave of the Emperour your Father, with this  
excuse, that the King my Father commandeth my returne  
home: for which cause I will send my trayne before, reser-  
ving onely but tenne of my best Knights to accompany mee.  
Soz that (quoth Griana) doe what you thinke best, and with-  
out any further expecting me in this place, certifie me how  
things happen, by your Cousin Frenato, or my Ward Car-  
dina. But now you see the day begins to breake, where-  
fore let me desire you to depart, that no scandal or suspition  
arise of our meeting. Florendos kissed the Princesse hand,  
though longer hee would haue stayed, humbly took his  
leave, and by the helpe of Lerina, he got over the Wall a-  
gaine, where Frenato stayed his comming, to whom when  
he was entered his Lodging, he imparld the appointment  
betweene him and the Princesse, desiring hym to discharge  
his trayne, except ten of his best approued Knights, to helpe  
him if any hinderance preuented his intent: As soz the rest,  
they shoulde be going on before, and stay his comming at an  
appointed place, thre dayes journey from Constantinople.

In the Evening he awaited the Emperours coming a-  
boord, to whom he said, that he had receaved Letters from

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

the King his Father, with expresse commandment to make  
speedy returne home: Wherefore my good Lord (said he) I  
desire to depart with your favourable likynge, and in respect I  
may not contrary where I am bound to obey, I intende to  
morrow to set forward on my journey: assuring your High-  
nesse, that in what place I shall chance to come, I avi yours  
in loyall and faithfull Service. My good Cousin (answred  
the Emperour) I give you thankes with all my heart, for  
the honour you haue done me with your gentle presence: and  
if you haue occasion to vse me in ought, you shall perceiue  
how highly I love and esteeme of you. My Lord (aid Flo-  
rendos) I desire to deserue the great kindness I haue found  
already: So taking his leane, the Emperour embraced him,  
and as he issued forth to his chamber, he met the Prince Ca-  
niano, of whom he tooke his leave likewise, who desired him  
to stay thre or four dayes longer.

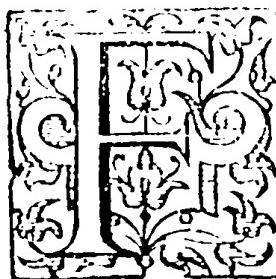
In which time, there came to the Court certayne Ambas-  
sadores, which the King of Hungaria had sent to the Empe-  
rour, to conclude the Marriage betweene his Sonne Tarisius,  
and the Princesse Griana, the Duke of Gramay being the  
chiesse of this Embassallage: Who was accompanid with  
many Knights and Gentlemen of name and account, to  
whom the Empresse gaue very gracious Welcome, in that  
she had privately procured this their comming. As these  
Ambassadors entred the great Chamber, Caniano and Tari-  
sius who accompanied them, perceiued Griana to withdraw  
herselle aside, very sad and melancholy: Whereupon Ca-  
niano came unto her (greatly abashed at her angry coun-  
tenance) and thus he began: Fairre Sister, now at this time  
when you ought to shew the most chearsfull Countenance,  
you are more sad then of long time I haue seen you: She  
thinkes you haue good occasion to be merry, seeing the Em-  
perour my Father hath proibid you to braue and worthy a  
Husband, as is my Cousin the Prince Tarisius, who I am  
sure leaues you as his owne life. Ah Brother (quoth she)

I know not what shuld moue him so to doe, saing I never thought so well of hym : and me re glady could I enterteine mine owne Death, then he constrained to Lowe where I cannot. These wrode did Tarisius easly understand : notwithstanding he made shew as though he did not : but going to the Empresse he desired her to stay there with the Emperour, saing the Ambassadeurs were come from the King his Father, that what was begun as concerning him and Grian, might now be finisched according to his promise.

Upon this occasion, the Empresse called Grian aside, and with smooth and sweet speeches began to breate with her, how for her good she had induced the Emperour, to gire her in mariage to her Couzin Tarisius, and what honourable advantage she should receive thereby : Wherefore faire Daughter (said she) resolue your selfe with Child-like obediency, to thinke well of that your Parents haue determined. All these persuasions could not draw one pleasing word from the Princesse, but she excused herselfe still, by the desire she had to remaine as she was, and rather then to charrge she would take a Religious life upon her : With which words she brake into such teares, as the Empresse was constrained to leau her alone, not doubting to finde her the next time in better tune. Grian then considering with her selfe, how she shuld at length be inforsed to yeld, whether she wold or no, if Florendos did not the sooner accomplish his entrapise : called Cardina vnto her, and sent her with this Charge to Florendos, that that present night he shuld not sayle to meeke her in the Garden, where he would be ready to depart with him, otherwise he shuld never gaine the like opportunity : With which message Cardina departed.

CHAP. VII.

How Florendos came that Night to the Garden, to conclude what hee and Grian had intended, and what happened to them.



Lorendos understanding the will of his Mistresse, with great diligence laboured to execute what they had intended, and taking his leave at the Court, saynd he wold returne no more, but take his way straight towards Macedon. Tarisius, whose jealousy increased every day more and more, set privie spyes to watch every night, who went in and out at the Princesse Chamber, and olbeit of long time his labours were frustate, yet at length he and his spyes percelded, how he whom he most envied, mounted the Garden-wall where the Princesse lay : For Florendos having left his company without the Cittie, accompanied with Frenato, and both of them well armed, he privily returned againe to the Wallace, thinking about midnight to carry her away, for whose Love he had chast himselfe into this dangerous hazard.

Thus having left their Horses without the Cittie with their Pages, and being come to the Garden wall, Frenato helping the Prince to get vp ; Tarisius and his men, who unhappily lay thers in ambush, ran violently upon him, crying all aloud, kill, kill these Villaines, that would dishonour the Emperours Wallace. At which words, Florendos and Frenato seeing themselves discovered, presently drew their Swords, and began to lay about them very valiantly : Florendos giving Tarisius so great a blow on the head, that he fell downe to ground as he had been dead, and thre or thre of his company with him ; which when the rest beheld, they got over

the Hall, and running with great clamour into the Cittie, cryed, helpe, helpe, Tariua, helpe Florendos (saking to rub the Emperours Palace) hath cruelly murthered.

This newes was heard by Griana, Letina, and Cardina: who were in the Garden steyning for Florendos: which did to amaze the hardiest of the thre, as they knew not well what countenance to set on the matter: especially Griana: Then this leare had stukken in a dead Traunce, but Letina, and her Sister, taking her vp in their armes, conveyed her into her Chamber, and sone after into her Bed, when recovering hirselfe, in extreme weeping, thus spakis. Alas miscreble wretch that I am, doth fortune employ all means she can for thy destruction? Well, let her doe the uttermost spight she can: so I am well assured before it be long, that Death shall triumph above all her discouertes. Cardina seeing her so wepe, and laying her hands, and as it were ready to fall into Dispaire, began to perswade her in this sort: Madame, it is no time now to vs these extremities: for Gods sake learie to cover your Passions, to the end the Emperour may not detect vs, being assured, that as yet woe were not perceived: And if you can but content your selfe, all this tumult will soone be overcome. I pray thee (quoth Griana) learie me alone, and goe see (if thou canst,) What is become of Florendos: that I may know whether hee be taken or slaine. So went Cardina, and standing amongst others, as one that knew nothing, beheld all. During this hote Tarant, Frenato seeing troubles increasing moze and moze, followed the matter with such diligence, as he got Florendos out of the towng, and the darknesse of the night was such, as they easly compassed to get out of the Cittie, where their Pages stayed with their Horses, wheron they mounted, and set on away. But the Prince Florendos would many times haue returned backe againe, so loath was he to leave her whom he loved so dearely: so being out of all hope to see her againe, he esteemed his life of no value of account.

In which impatience, he rent his comely Locks of haire, and haled his flesh with great violence, whereupon Frenato thus speake vnto him: O the holynesse my Lord: will you in seeking Honour wound your selfe with shame: or in arguing your Love to your Lady, endanger her life: Declare you to loose your selfe, and her also for ever? Meleeds me Cousin, this very hardly belmes you, that the subtil dealing of a cowardly knyght, shoulde make you thus to forget your selfe. No no, gaud Cousin, it is now no time to declare these helvess: Let vs therefore make sped to our Company, and if you thinke good, we will send one secretly backe to the Cittie, to understand the end of this troublous tyme, and we in the meane tyme may set forward towards Macedon. Ah sweet Cousin (quoth Florendos) you speake as the man that cannot comprehend my torment: Thinke you it possible for me to live, leaving that rare Creature in such perill, for whose Love a Hell of grieses hath marayed my soule? By my knyghtly faith I sweare, that Death is a thousand times more welcome to me, then to be murthered by this one creature, that I shoulde live an honore out of her Gracious service. Well, well Sir (said Frenato) what you may not doe now, reserue till better convenience, and let vs set on before the Daylicht descry vs: Otherwise, in seeking to defend Griana, your selfe shall be witness of her reproach and condemnation. Florendos perceiving his Cousin did advise him for the best, was well contented to be ruled by him: So giuing the spurres to their Horses, stayed not till they overtook the rest of their Company: when he dispatched an Esquire presently backe to the Cittie, commanding him straightly to direct soone to the King his Fathers Court, the successe of every thing that happened in his absence.

But now to retorne where before we left, Griana had not long stayed in this hurly burly, but she perceived the Emperour was risen, who in all hast caused his Guard to arme themselves to helpe Tarisius: For by this time had the two

same night, which escaped, adverntised it in the Court, that they saw Florendos as he was climbing the Garden wall, to goe to dishonour the Princesse Criana. At whiche report the Emperour was sauued, as that he went in great sorte to his Daughters chamber, where he found in her Bed, moze likely to bee then true : But necessity (whereof many doe often make a vertue) made her cover her weaknesse with a faire sheld of courage, so that when she saw him enter, shee wrapped her selfe in her right mantle, and came before him, to whiche he began in this manner :

Whon lewd Cycle, carest thou not to receive the thought to doe me this dishonour ? By thy Crayne, say this thy presumpton, I shall make thee such an Example to all other, as the Head from thy Shoulders will scant quitt thy fault.

Criana hearing him speake so roughly, answered him againe thus mildly : My Lord and Father, I beseech you to pardon me, you accuse me, and I know not whereof : If I haue done evill, it is in you to chassise me as you shall please : and if I be innocent, vouchsafe good Father not to condemne me. A baret (quoth hee) this excuse shall little profit thee. So taking her very rudely, he locked her in a strong Tower, whereof he carried the Key himselfe : Then went he to Tarisius his Lodging, to see how he did, soz it was told him, that he was in danger of his Life : Where he found the Empresse heavily weeping, but he caused her to goe to her Chamber, and commanded his Chyrurgions to looke diligently to his Nephew, and not to spare any cost to par-chase his health. Now because they which searched for Florendos, could not finde him, the bruit and rumour was quaillfed, and the Emperour went againe to his Chamber till the Morning, when the Empresse hearing that her Daughter was in prison, tooke it very heinously, and knelling before the Emperour, desiring him that she might fetch her sonth : But he was so angry, as her kynges could doe nothing with him, yet he granted that she should goo see her, and

and tooke with her the Key : When she entring the Tower, found her sitting on the ground so blubbered with teares, as was lamentable to beholde : But when she beheld her Mother, she arose, and doing her reverence, could not speake, her teares so overcame her. The Empresse that loved her dearely, seeing her in this griesous estate, had much adoe to discern what she thought, how be it, after a few light words passed betwene them, she said. I am sorrie Daughter, that you haue so lightly, thowne your affection upon a Stranger, and that you forget your Dutie, in not following your Fathers counsell and mine, who well knew the Loue Tarisius beares you, and no otherwise Daughter, then to take you to his wife. But you (are caried away with that leosenesse, which ill agrees with your credit and calling) haue rather thought besy, to grant Florendos entrance by your Garden, at such a suspected houre, as whils you live, your Honour will be hardly thought on : For two of Tarisius his Knights, who thought to take the Traytor, are slaine, and my Nephew himselfe dangerously escaped. Criana hearing him called Traytor, whom she so highly loved, and that she her selfe was accused, by that which ought to excuse her, answered : Madame, and my gracious Mother, as yet I am ignorant of the Cause, that hath moved the Emperour in such cholter against me : and be it soz this you speake of, In sooth I am offered very great infurie, for I know not whither Florendos, or any other haue entered my Garden : Well I am assured he came not whare I was. These are strange newes to me Madame, I woulde rather haue thought him on his way towards Macedon, in respect of the solemne leaue he tooke in the Court. For my part, I woulde that the Traytor which was the cause hereof, ha long since binne buried in the bottome of the See, then he shoulde abuse the Honour of Florendos, with a matter of such villany, wherin I cannot judge him faultie : but were it Madame, I am at a point, let him dy the Death as

as he hath well deserved, for my cause to you my Parents bath taught me better nurture, and Love can be no pridlege to me to flend. Young Master, twit not me with impeach of Honour in so innocente a cause, for defence whereof, were the Death present before mine eyes, I haue soz rowed as much as I could, and am moze ready to embrase it then live in suspect. So shall my Father and you be eased of providing me a Husband. As soz the Prison wherein I am, I will not deny his fauour when it shall please him to deliver me: But I could take it farre mezs contentedly, to spend the remainder of my following dayes thus solitarie, then to live abroad misdoomed on byng. Faire Daughter (said the Empresse) doe not discomfyt your selfe in this soft, the Emperour had some reason (in regard of the love hee beares you, and the cut-ragius tumult which happened) to doo as he hath done: but I hope in the end all will say to the best, and that you your selfe shal revialne contented. Many oþer speches passed betwene them, till at length the Empresse left her and departed, for she thought long till she was with the Emperour, to let him know the talke betwene her and Griana: which she did without omitting any thing, notwithstanding he was more levers to his Daughter every day after. Then sent hee soz the Ambassadores and thus he began with them.

My Lordz, at this time I am advised, that you shall returns to your King my Brother, soz in respect of the accidents which you haue seen to happen, I will crans pardon for this time, referring matters over till some other time, when thynge shall fall in better disposition.

The Ambassadores understanding the Emperours pleasure, the next day tookes their leave toward the King their Master, to whom they declared the whole in generall: wherent hee conceaved such displeasure, as he presently sent soz his Sonne Tarisius, who had not as yet recovered his health. But hee was so engaured on the young Princeesse,

as he would not obey his Fathers command: but so soon as he was insolterently amende, he intreated the Emperour to pardon his Daughter, accusing his owne men, who un-disceretly had raised this false rumour of her and Florendos. By this meanes, the Empresse and her Ladies obtained liberte daily to accompany Griana; but all the night-time he caused her to be locked vp as closely as before, committing her to the charge of an aged Gentlewoman named Tolomestra, whom hee commanded upon paine of Death, not to be a minute of an houre swyth of her company.

## C H A P. VIII.

How Florendos arriving on the Frontiers of Macedon, made many sorrowfull Complaints, for not bringing away Griana, according to his Enterprise.

**F**lorendos sooner had Florendos and Frenato overtane their Company, but they ridds on in such hast (fearing to be followed) as at length they got the Frontiers of Macedon. And because Florendos imagined himselfe without life, not hearing any tydings from his Mistresse Griana, he concluded to rest at the first Towne he came unto, there to expect the returne of the Esquire he sent to Constantinople: who returned towards his Master sooner then he looked for, by reason of the littles abode he made in the Emperours Court; for he stayed not when he heard that Griana was Imprisoned, and that Tarisius was not slayne, as his Master was perswaded. These newes did wonderfully afflict the Prince, as well for the hard vsage of his sweet friend, as that he had failed in killing him, by whose Death he well hoped to recover his losse: all the whole day would he receive no sustinance, but locked himselfe close in his Chamber, and layed on his Bed as a man halfe desperate. But Frenato,

who

who would not be long absent from him, fearing least his Fortune would cause him wayke some violence on himselfe, made such meanes that he got into the Chamber, at what time the Prince was thus lamenting.

Alas sweet Madame, was I borne in such an unhap-  
pie houre, that without desert you must endure impris-  
onment for me? What satisfaction may your Florendos  
live to make, in requitall of this injurie? When did you  
ever merit to be so hardly intreated for him? Belike me,  
could you be discharged so soone as I could wish it, Bolts,  
Lockes, nor Malles, could hold you a thought while: yet  
wishing is not action, every thing is contrary to me, all  
helps refuse me, and death likewise denyes me: but by my  
Sword (and therewith he started vp) in spight of whatsoe-  
ver, I will deliver you. Frenato seeing him rise in such a  
furie, came and tookes him by the armes, demanding what  
he would have. Death (quod ubique) if I could, for it grieves me  
to live any longer. You speak very wisely (quoth he in mo-  
ckage) all this is for the imprisonment of Giana: Is it not  
better she should be there, then in the custodie of Tarisius?  
Her Captivitie you know can not long endure, but were she  
married, sh: could never be recovered. Wherefore, let good  
hope perswade you, and nobly send another Messenger, with  
speed to Constantinople, to know what accidents have hap-  
pened since, and to practise the meaus to speake with Cardi-  
na, who will certifie you from Giana, what is or may be  
done in these affaires. This Councell liked well Floren-  
dos, whersupon he presently dispatched a Gentleman of  
trust, who with all diligence did execute the command of his  
Master. For in good tyme he arrived at Constantinople,  
when Giana had liberty to speake with her Gentlewoman:  
which when he heard, he was not a little gladd: whereupon  
he searched earnestly, till he had found Cardina, in whome  
he delivered his Masters mande, as also in what sad and  
heavy plights he left him, desiring her with all speed to certifi-

fe the Princesse thereof, and what service she would com-  
mand him to his Master. Cardina knowing how glad the  
Princesse would be, to heare these tydings from Florendos,  
went to seeke her Sister Lerina, to whom she imparted  
what you have heard, and she, well advised of the tyme and  
place, discoursed the same to the Princesse, belieue, and not  
suspected of old Tolomestra. How joyfull she was of this  
message, I cannot wite, noz you conceve, but she was re-  
solved, never to hate my Husband but Florendos: And  
therefore to comfort him, she devised to write unto him: that  
she might hope as well as she did; But well she knew not  
how to accomplish her intent, by reason she wanted penne,  
Inke, and Paper, and she was so forbidden to haue any. Not-  
withstanding, she so well perswaded her woman Tolome-  
stra, (as beginning to write to the Emperour her Father) she  
recovered the meane to execute her desire. Then withdraw-  
ing her selfe apart, first she wrote a letter to the Emperour,  
and afterwards ons to Florendos, wherein she desired him  
not to be offended, albeit thys fell not out to his liking:  
for (with the favours of Fortune) the end would be as plea-  
sant to him, as the beginning had bene unhappie to them  
both: wherall that as he desir'd to prolong her life, he shoulde  
doe nothing to the prejudice of his owne person.

These two Letters thus written and sealed, he called To-  
lonestra, and gaue her that she haue written to the Emperoz,  
desiring her to carry it presently to his Majestye: by whose  
departing, she had opportunity to conferre with Lerina: In  
breife, he desired her to goe seeke the Esquire, that he might  
returne to his Master, with the Letter she sent him: which  
she did effectually, and the gentle Esquire made no little hast  
to his Master. Who receiving the Letter from his Mi-  
stresse Giana, was not content alone to reade it, but kiss,  
and rekin it a hundredth times, saying: Ah sweet Let-  
ter, written with the hand of the onely fairest Princesse

this day living : And (for her sake will I keepe thee) as the best token a true Knight can receve from his Mistris.

## C H A P . IX.

How the Emperour promised Tarisius that hee should Marry Griana, whether shee would or no : and how shee was delivered of a faire Sonne, without the knowledge of any, but old Tolomestra, who had her in guard.

**V**hen the Emperour had received the Letter, which Tolomestra presented him from his Daughter, although hee found nothing therein might provoke him to anger, sauing that shs earnestly desired him to pitt her estate, being innocent of anything was laid to her charge : yet he shewed himselfe more discontented then before, sending Tolomestra backe with this answer :

Say to Griana, that seeing he was so aduenturous to incurre my displeasure, he shall well know, that I will not spare to punish her offence : And let her assure her selfe, that I will never looke on her while I liue, if she match not with Tarisius, to whom I haue given her. All this Tolomestra told to Griana : which rather then to obey, he desired to dye.

Wheresoever when any came to visite her, shs would shew her selfe moze pleasant in their company then shee had done, in respect of vnspected heabinesse that secretly touched her, saeling her selfe so farre conceyved with Child, as he knew no meanes to save it and her Honour, if it should happen to be percevvd. One onely helpe shée had in this extremity, that being so weake and sickly, the Physicians could not discerne his disease ; but reputed her likely to dye, which shē with all her heart desired, yet doe what injurie to her selfe

shee

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

shee could, shē had better health then hee desired to haue. In the end saeling her selfe to grosse and vnweloy, shē durst not leauue her bed, but kept it dayly, till her tyme drew very neare at hand, when the Emperour (by the earnest importunitie of the Empresse) happened to come and see her, bringing with him the Prince Tarisius : who being thus entred the Tower, they found her in such grieuous and dangerous estate, as for all the anger the Emperour had against her, it moued the teares to stand in his eyes, which he shadwido so well as hee could, framing his speeches to her in this sort. Well daughter, it likes you to contrary me, in that which concerneſ your Horoz, and profit, and without any feare (as is thy dely) thou haſt boldly released thy Husband which I haue appynted thee : bat (by mine honour) I will cause thee know that thou haſt displeased mee, for wil thou or not (before I leauue thee) I will giue thee to him whom I haue promised. Then taking her by the hand, and causing Tarisius to come neare, hee laid, My Sonne, in regard of my word, whch I will keepe incalably, I giue thee here Griana, from henceforth account of her as thy wife : And hold thee, Heros is the King of the Tower, keepe her in thine owne custody, and hereafter thinks of her as thou findest occasion. Well saw Griana that perforce shē must obey her Fathers will : wherefore with great wisedome couering her secret thoughts, with extreame teares delinered this answere. Alas, my good Lord and Father, I never thought that your highnesse would vse such crueltie towards me : as to inforce mee take a Husband contrary to my liking, not (my good Lord) but that Tarisius hath much better deserued : but that whch toucheth me most in opinion is, that our neare alliance in kindred, is sufficient to continue the loue betwixne the King his Father and you, without any such needless seeking of newuniting. And moreover, good Father, his education in your Court with my Brother Caniano and mee, since our very younges

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

your greatest yeeres to this present, had bene of such equall and familiar condicione : as it seemes to me impossible to reue-  
rence him with that entire duely, which women must and  
cugge vse to their Husbands. Wherefore my god Lord  
and Father, I perswade my selfe (vnder your correction)  
that you shold support me in this just request : the rather in  
respect of my present estate, which may induce you somewhat  
to concide, that the obsequies of my buriall is moze likely  
to be solemnized, then those holy ceremonys that shold be  
vied at my marriage. And with these words shee perswade  
forth such abundance of teares, as the Emperour knew  
not what to answeare : but ouercome with pitty, withdrew  
himselfe, leauing Tarisius with her : who hoping to haue  
better words of her, said Madame, I beseech you not to of-  
fend your selfe for any thing the Emperour hath said concer-  
ning me, for I will not doe any thing to your discontent, and  
rather would I losse all my life, then cause the least doubt  
to incurre your dislike, hoping that in time to come, you will  
take such pitty on mee, as being perswaded of the loue I  
bear you, and the reverent deale I haue to doe you seruice.  
you will grant that with good will, which the Emperour  
trues to gaine persone, assuring you that nothing can bee  
moze grieuous to me, then the hard dealing which hitherto  
to hath bene vied towards you. And to the end you may  
resolute your selfe of that I say, your Father having deliue-  
red me the Key of your Prison, and the guard of your  
person, I here comitte both to your gentle pleasure. So  
kissing the Key, he laid it by her, and without expecting any  
answeare, with great reverence hee departed, leauing her  
with Tolomestra, so rapt into a dumber of trance as her  
Deeper would not for pitty trouble her. The Princesse in  
this silent passion, thought that shee saw a fierce Lyon be-  
fore her, with open throte to devoure her, and neere at  
hand she espied an armed Knight, to whom shee laboured  
for desence, crying, that for Gods sake he would sheld her  
from

from the beast : but the Knight with ferne and angry  
countenance, thus answered. I will not defend thee, but  
with my sword will take thy life from thee. Thou hast so  
much offendid the heavenly powers in disobedience to thy  
Father, as I ought rather to diuide thy heade from thy  
shoulders, then to hinder this beast from devouiring thee.  
Thinkest thou to contrary their divine pleasures ? Hasti-  
ceth not the fault thou hast committed with Florendos? con-  
tent thee, and shrowde thy shame, in regarde of the frute in  
thy wombe, whose worthynesse thou shalte know more of  
hereafter. If thou doest not, thou dyest an curllastng death,  
from which thou canst haue no meanes to defend thee. The  
Knight did so affright Griana, as shee promised him to ac-  
complish the Emperours commandement without fayle :  
whereupon the Knight and the Lyon banished away, leauing  
her (as shes thought) by a faire fountaine, enironed  
with trees and diversitie of flowers, the sweet sent where-  
of was so pleasant and odoriferous, as made the cheerfull  
blood to revive agayne in the Princesse, and with brea-  
thing forth a dehement sigh shew awaked, invoking on the  
powers to pardon her transgressions, and promising to  
obey the will of her Father, albeit shew could hardly forget  
Florendos so soone. Within two or three dages after, the  
Prince Tarisius came to visite her, to whom shew shewed  
better countenance then shew had done : and as they were de-  
aling together in amorous talke, shew said. Beleue me Sir  
Tarisius, you haue vied such honest and gentle countesse to-  
wards me, as henceforth I will glorie my selfe wholy yours:  
therefore being sorry for my long disobedience to my Par-  
ents and you : triumph now Tarisius in the honour of my  
loue. These words pleased Tarisius, it is not to be doubt-  
ed: for joy whereof he went presently to the Emperour,  
and made him acquainted with these happy tidings: so  
that (to make short) after many promises and solemn  
oathes to the Princesse, not onely to accept her as his spouse  
and

# The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

and wife, but as his Soueraigne Lady and Missesse, he brought her with him to the Emperour, who hearing the resolution of his Daughter, imbraced her and took her into as good conceit as ever he did.

Notwithstanding, Tolomestra was commanded to attend on her still: wherefore Gianna knowing her time to draw near, and hardly could she concall her fortune: after many difficult doubts and feares rebated in her thoughts, at last she imparted the whole to Tolomestra. The old Gentlewoman after many motherly rebukes, for the fault committed, as the danger eminent, thought better yet to cover this misadventure, then to publish that which would displease many, and profite none: so leaving to reprehend when care and consort was more required, at that instant, the Princesse was deliuereed of a godly man child. Thus in the ninth moneth, after the returne of Florendos towards Macedon, on Sunday at night about eight of the clocke, the Princesse had her houre of deliurance: When Tolomestra receyting the Child, saw it so beautisull and well formed, as it grieved her meruailously to thinke what hard fortune it brought with the birth. For the honour of the Mother could not be disended, but by the price of the infants life: wherefore having wrapped it in swaddling clothes whiche the Princesse had prepared of some value, she brought it to the sorrowfull Mother, saying. Trust me Madam, it much displeaseth me that we must thus lose this louely child, whom I could haue esteemed happy, and the mother likewise, if it might haue without displeasure: but he sweet babe must suffer the punishment for the offence, whereof he is not any way culpable.

Alas (said the Princesse) what shall we doe: Would God it were dead, or out of danger: then taking it in her armes, and washing his face with flouds of teare, after many sweete kisses, thus said: Ah my little dainty, and most Indes leane thee: But the safety of thy life remayns in the mercy of a

Strange

# Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Strange woman, who not knowing thy parentes: may deale with thee discourteously? Well, if thou doe, thy Mother will not be long after thee. And as he thus mourned over her Infant, she perceived on his right cheeke a little mawe in like-nesse of a Crosse: which made her call her selfe to remembraunce, and the words of the Knight, that promised good fortune to the Childe: which made her conceive a confectable hope, whereupon, about his necke she tyed a faire Crucifix of Gold. Now was the night very latre spent, and Tolomestra feare they shuld be prevented, wherefore (quoth she) Madame it is time to determine of some thing, leave musing I pray you any longer on the Childe, and let me goe carry it to Cardina to be borne forth of the Court. The weeping Mother seeing she counselled for the best, for her last adone sealed many sweete kisses on the face of the Infant, and so in great griefe delivered it to Tolomestra, who went and found Cardina, to whom she gaue it, and she without any tardiance mounted on Horsebacke, and not knowing what way she tooke, rode on which way fortune guided her. Very doubtfull was she how to be discharged of her carriage, for she feared to let any woman in the neighbour Villages haue it, lest so the Princesse might be discovered: For that it was commonly blazed through the Empire, that the Princesse was imprisoned for the loue of Florendos. At length the day began to appeare, when she perceived her selfe on a high Mountaine, which was very thicke set with Palme and Olive-trees: Then she alighted from her Horse, and made a little bed of sweete Herbes, wherein she layd the Childe, hoping some body would passe by, that would take some compassion on it. So committing the tender Infant to the protection of the powers aboue, she returned to the Cittie in very good time.

## C H A P. X.

How Gerrard passing where Cardina had left the Childe heard it cry, and so brought it home with him to his Wife to nourish it.



He Mountaine where Cardina had left the Princesse young Sonne, was about a dayes journey from Constantinople, and was comonly cal'd the Mount of Olives, where noere at hand dwelt a wealthy Farmer, who having the occupation of the ground, grew very rich by gathering the fruits of the Palme, Olive, Date, and other Trees, and like a god Husband he daily followed his affaires, being named Gerrard. His Wife the same Morning likewise was delivered of a Man-childe, which being dead borne, caused this good man to walke forth into his Grounds in great heaviness, for he had but one Daughter aged thre yeares, and his Sonne wold haue beene a great comfort to him. In these Melancholy passions, as he went nare the Tre, where Cardina had left the silly Infant, he heard it cry : Whereat he greatly marveling, approached noier, and saw the sweet Babie pitifully weeping, wanting the nurture that shold comfort it.

He tooke it very tenderly in his armes, and seeing it so swet and lonely, was perswaded that God had sent it him, in recompence of his owne that was dead borne : and so fuli went home with it to his wife, who was named Marcella : and to her he beginneth in this manner : Hold swet wife, in the place of your young dead Sonne, God hath this day sent vs another, which I haue brought you home. Then recounted he to her, how he found it on the Mountaine under an Olive Tree : And therfore (quoth he) I pray thee nourissh

nourissh it in stead of thine owne, for a godlier Childe did I never behold. The good Woman tooke it, and brawpling the swadling clothes, saw they were rich and of good value, but chiefly the Crucifix which hung about his neck : whereupon she iudged it of some noble house, and meued with pity, thus sayd. I belewe sweet Infant, that thy mother is in no small gretfe for the losse of thee, but seeing thy fortune hath brought thee to mee, I will foster thee as thou were mine owne Sonne. And from thence forward shew used it so louingly, as every one thought it to bee Gerrards owne childe : and bringing it to Baptisme, because he found it so among the Palme Trees, hee caused the Childe to bee named Palmerin, who grew on in yeares, both in comely feature and gentle behauour. Not long after Marcella brought her husband another son whose name was Colmellio, and him did Palmerin loue as his owne brother, and companion, as hereafter you shall more at large understand : but heare I will craue leue to pause so a while, and following the intent of the Historie, you shall understand how Griana gouerned herselue, after shew had escaped this hard aduenture.

So soone as Cardina was returned to the Court, Griana sent for her, to know what shew had done with the Infant : to whom shew discoursed in what sort shew had left it : which grieved her as much as the weight of her offence.

Notwithstanding, considering how happily shew had escaped shame and disgrace, from thence forward shew dissembled her passions better, and shewed her selfe so well reclaymed, as the Empresse much rejoiced thereat, hoping now to end the matter for her Nephew Tarisius : whereupon one day finding her Daughter alone, shew tooke occasion to conferre with her thus. Daughter will you now accomplish that, which your Father and I have long bene importunate for, I pray you hold of no longer, least you draine him into anger againe, which can no way returne you benefits.

When Criana heard her Mother speake so gently, and knowing well, (that whither ye wouldest no) it must lost to that conclusion, she answered : Madame, haue you thought good (will I, will I) that I should match with your Nephew Tarisius, I must then by force doe that which willingly I cannot, neywhile I loue shall I conceiue better opinion : If then (Mother) hereafter our fortunes fall out so contrary, that any misadventure happen by this your wilfullnesse, you need not complains but of your selfe, being the inventor and procurer thereof.

All these speeches of Criana could not alter her opinion, but without regard of any danger, she went presently to the Emperour, desiring him (seeing Criana was recovered) to end the Marriage betwene her Nephew and her : Where- to he gaue such sodaine consent, as before a Housenight was finished, Tarisius and she were married together, to her great griefe, as her Countenance declared ; soz when every one were at their Feasting, Dancing, and other delights, the wofull Princesse thought on the great injurie she had done to Florendos, accounting her selfe the most unhappy on the Earth, and to her selfe thus sorrowed :

Ah my deare friend, what wilt thou say, when thou hearst these tydings, that I am become so false and disloyall to thee ? What excuse may plead for me to thee ? By good reason may I soz ever be excluded from their company who haue kept their Faith inviolable to their friends, and continue in possession of their unchangeable affections : soz never did Woman commit such treason as this that I haue done : and yet (my Lord) altogether against my will, as my wofull Woart may give evident witnessse, which shal be thine while it remaines in this miserable Body, which Tarisius must new haue, thongh in justice it be thine. And in this sort contained her dolourous complaints till night approached, when she must yield that honour to Tarisius, which with better will she could haue afforded Florendos.

After

After the feasts and Tympanies of the Marriage were finished, Criana desirous to absent her selfe from her Fathers Court, because the remembrance of Florendos passions was so grievous to her : Desired Tarisius to make short his day, and set forward to Hungaria, whither the Emperour her Father caused her to be so honourably conveyed, as besimed the Daughter of so great a Prince. But as shee was taking her leaue among the Ladies, the Empresse came to her sorrowfully weeping : Which when Criana beheld, she said : Madame, I am abashed to see what heauinesse you shew for the departure of your Daughter, to whom you alone haue borne so cruell, as by your meanes she is banished soz euer from you and your Countrey : Why lament you then, seeing it is your pleasure to make her unfortunate while she liues ? I heartily desire the Heavens to pardon you, and that the first Newes, hereafter you shall hearre of me, may be the true report of my Death. This said, she mounted on Horsebacke, and without any shew of resentement tooke her leaue of her Father : So being honourably accompanied, in short time she arrived in Hungaria with Tarisius, whose love to her so vehemently increased, as he reputed himselfe the most fortunate Prince in Europe, hauing gained the Paragon among all Ladies.

Soon after the aged King dyed, by which meanes Tarisius came to the Crowne. Criana highly esteeming all such as she had brought with her from Constantinople, to wit, Lerina and Cardina, but especially Tolomestra, to whom she very often imparted the whole secrets of her n. inde, leading so strict and constant a Life, as all the Court did wonder at her. But the remorse of Conscience, which daily touched her for the losse of her Sonne, caused her to spend day and night in devout Dylions, that the heavens would forget her haynous offence.

## C H A P. X I.

How Florendos understood by the Esquire hee sent to Constantinople, the Marriage of Griana and Tarisius: Whereat hee conceived such inward griefe, as he had like to have dyed with extreame sorrow.



In this while continued Florendos on the frontiers between Constantinople and Macedon, till at length he heard, that Griana was released of her imprisonment: whereof he was so glad, as now he thought to deale moze surely then he did before: Whereupon he dispatched Lyomenus one of his Esquires towards her, with a Letter of earnest and intire affection; wherein he desired to know, if he might compasse the means to come and see her, and he doubted not to bring her so secretly on her journey, and with so good prouision, as before they should be againe discovered, they wold be safely arrived in Macedon. But this hope was soone frustrate, for Lyomenus, being come to Constantinople, found the Marriage betwene Tarisius and Griana consummated: which hee tooke so displeasantly, as without giving the Letter, or speaking to the Princesse, he returned hastily againe to his Lord and Master. Who boeing aduertised of his coming, sent for him immedately vp into his Chamber, at whose entrance, the Prince discerned the newes by his countenance: wherevpon he demanded, if Griana were sick, or how shee fared? My Lord (qd. he) happy had shee bane, if shee had dyed tenne yeares hence: for I doubt (vnlesse you arm your selfe with wonderfull patience) that what is done will higly endanger your person. Ohe (quoth Florendos) what is happened? Tell me my Lord (qd. he) the very moze that can

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

can be for you, Tarisius hath espoused her, and (despight of her) the Emperour caused it to be done. No sooner had Lyomenus spoken the word, but Florendos cast himselfe cruelly against the ground, saying. O my God, take pitty on my soule, for my body must needs suffer misfortune. At which words he fell in a swoone, wherin Lyomenus thinking him dead, calle him by his name Frenato: who knowing well the causis of his passion, laboured by all meanes he might to perswade him, vut notwithstanding all the intreaties he used, in fourte and twentie heures hee could not get one word of him, whereupon hee sent for an auncient Hermit neare at hand, whom Florendos made very much account of: who being come, and applying diuers soueraigne Herbes to his temples, whereof the old Father knew well the vertue, at length Florendos recovered his sences, and opening his eyes, beheld the old Hermit, to whom with very fesseble voice hee said. Ah good Father pray for me, for I feele my end nigh at hand. Set so my sonne, said the Hermit, what? are you so vnprouided of diuinie perswasyon, as you will lose both body and soule for a matter of so meane consequence? Hast thou liued so long, and yet ignorant of the inconstancy of women which is no other then thou beholdest in Griana? Knowest thou not, that as the sayle of the shipp is subject to all windes, so are their affections to continuall mutability? And knowest thou not, that what they purpose to execute irreuocably, in one moment they are suddenly dissuaded from? By Sonnie, believe my counsell, and with as much pleasure learne to forget this folys, as with extreame paine thou diuestest first imprint it in thy thoughts. Ah Father (quoth Florendos) never seeke in this sort to perswade me, beeing assured if you knew how things haue past, you would not thus intarmes disgrace my Lady: for shee is mine, and Tarisius hath no right to her, to whom the Emperour hath married her perforce, els would shee never haue broken her faith to me: and whyle

# The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

while I live father, none but she can be called the wife o Florendos, Sonne to the mighty King of Macedon. The wise old Father seeing him in Choller, and being loth likewise to offend the Prince, would no longer cresse him in spaches, but fearing to moue him too much, mildly thus speake : May be (ing Sonne) she hath bene deare to you, and I woulde your consent in loue had answered your liking : But thus to dispaire, and indanger your olde life, trust me it is not well done ; therefore I desire you to perswade your selfe , and by your Constancie condempne her lightnesse, taking patiently what hath happened. These and such like god words vsed the old Father, but Florendos would take no sustenance, neither be remoued from his opinion, soz fives daies while the Old man stayed with him : Neither would he take charefully as he was wont, but continued euermore sad and melancholique, nez could the King his Father cause him like of any wife, but onely Griana, soz whom continuallie he never left Mourning.

## CHAP. XII.

How young Palmerin sleeping, had a strange Vision, which provoked him to know whote Sonne hee was : and of the talke which passed betweene him and Dyofenza, the Daughter of Gerrard.



During Palmerin being now come to the age of fiftene yeares, nourished in the Fountaine as the Child of Gerrard his supposed Father, well beloved of him and Marcella his wife, as their olwe Sonne : grew in stature so tall, comely, and well nurtured, as well might he be knowne of noble Parentage. For albeit he companied with Gerrards Children, who vsed him after their rustickall capacitie

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

capacities : yet he desired more to passe the Mountaines with his long Bowe, to chase the Boars and Bores thorothe chiche and thinn, and to keepe Hawkes and Dogges, rather then Sheeps and Cattell as the other Children did. In these spottes hee had such wonderfull delight, as often times he would come home very late and soore wearied, as he was glad to lay him downe to rest, and he was no swiner fallen a sleepe, but he was sollicit with a marauilous vision, the effect whereof thus followeth. He thought (as he was pursuing a goodly Hare thorothe a Forrest) hee met with the fairest Lady that euer eye beheld, who sat on the side of a goodly Fountaine, and called him unto her saying :

We not abashed Palmerin, though I am come from the furthest parts to finde thee in this Country, soz I am well assured that ere many daies be past thy bounty and prowalles shall make thee renowned through the world, soz one of the hardiest Knights that euer lived. Leue therefore this obscure & rustieall kind of life, and hencforth lise thy mind to high occasions whiche ars offered thee : and hereof belue me, as she that loueth thes as her owne life, vbeing deuoted onely thine at all times as nature may witnesse who hath marked me with the like Charactr. Then shewing her arme, she said. Behold in this hand, and on this side of my heart, one like & selfe same marke, as thou broughtest on thy face from the Mothers womb. To which words Palmerin woulde haue answered, but the Lady vanished away so sodainly, as he could not perceiue what was become of her. Whereupon raising himself, and maruailing from whence this occasion shoulde p<sup>r</sup>ecced, he aduised the beauty of the Lady he saw in his sleepe, which was so lively in his remembrance, as he judged her present before his eyes. But persuading himselfe that such apparitions happened by idle thoughts, or by some vapour of no effect : made no account thereof, wherupon, the next night following

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

following the same Lady that appeared to him in the forest, presented her selfe to him againe, holding in her hands a sumptuous Crowne of Gold, and thus spake. So heare (my Lord) the honour which I hold, being givuen me onely for the loue of you.

In this sorte continued this vision for scuretane o; Alstene dices following, till at length the Lady shewed her selfe very angry, saying. I am ashamed Palmerin, that you deserve so long to seeke me out: do you think the promises I have made you are frivoles? No, no, the time and trauaile thou takest (if thou giuest credit to my words) shal make thee know that thou art the Son of a King, and not of the Countrey swaine that hath fostered thee. From henceforth therefore expect me no more in this Mountaine, but if my beauty haue found place in thy heart, seeke then to conquer me, that thou maist be the Lord and possessor of me. Thus departed the Lady, leaving a desire (more then accustomed) in the heart of Palmerin, who till that time made little reckoning of so high matters, for the pastoall life hee led with Gerrard and his family, seemed the most happiest to him in all the world, not hauing seene any person of greater calling then he. But now new affections so elenated his minde, as hee intended to go seeke her, whom in dreys he had beheld so often: For (quoth he) if shes assure me to descend of a royall lineage, I may well presume she knowes me better then my Father Gerrard, else wold she not so often induce me to follow my fortune, and the good that is promised for me: well might I be accounted a swol, if I would not adventure on so especciall an occasion, therfore happen what will, I meane to search thoroou the whole world till I haue found her, and none but shee shall euer be my Mistresse. But how can it be that I am descended from so high a place, seeing my Father is such a simple Countreyman? With my Mother, haue forgotfull of her reputation, that some Prince or great Lord hath so become my Father? Well, I will know of her (if I can) before I depart, and if she will not tell me, I will search her that shall assure me. Thus was Palmerin confounded with remembrance of his Wifrons, as from that time he became maruailes penitus and solitarie: then bethought he, how he might know of his Mother Marcella, the end of his desire, whereof Dyofena (who loved him dearely) partly aduised him.

You haue heard heretofore, how when Gerrard found Palmerin aming the Blue-trees, he had a Daughter thre yeares old, named Dyofena, indifferent fayre, who as she increased in yeares, became so amorous of her supposed brother, that hardly she could dissimble her affection: notwithstanding, shame and regard lecked up her Lippes, but she durst not speake what she gladly woulde, but seeing Palmerin in like sadnessse as he was, shes imagined that one sicknesse had stricken them both, wherefore causing many doubts as she lay in her Bed, in the same Chamber her Parents did, she heard them enter into this discourse. Haue you not seene Palmerin (quoth she) how hearie and sadde he hath beene a long time? Verily haue I (quoth she) it may be that some haue told him he is not your Sonne: so falling out of one matter into another, Dyofena heaid them report the manner how they found him, which she desirous to let Palmerin vnderstand, arose early the next Morning, and comming to Palmerin, thus conserued with him. Brother, if you knew so much as I doe, peradventure you would be not a little abashed?

Wher god almighty (qd. he) I pray you let me understand the matter. In sooth (quoth she) I euer thought till this time, that you had bin mine owne naturall Brother, but by chance hearing some talkie betwene my Father and Mother this last night, I am no other then your Friend, and he that leues you dearely: Which I haue cvernoye hitherto feared to let you know, doubting the noorenesse of our Consanguinitie, which I now perceive cannot hinder our Sparrage, if you will

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

will request me of my Father, who I am sure will not deny you. And so he rehearsed the maner of his meeting which so well liked Palmerin, as he gave the moys credite to the chansons he had sene, nevertheless, he thus dallied with Dyofena. It may be Sir, you misandour our Parents, my selfe will demand the truth of our Mother, if she assure me as you haue done, then will I talk with them conseruing our mariage. So shall you doe well (said Dyofena) to be therewy assured, get ned you not repreynis to haue informed you, least thereby you bring me into the Parents displeasure. Palmerin this leaving Dyofena, chanced to finde his Mother Marcella alone, to whom he said: Mother, I beseech you graunt me one request that I shall demand of you. That will I my Denie (quoth she) if it be in my power to doe. Understand hem gvs Mother (quoth he) That I haue often times dreamt how I am not your Son, so that I know not what to say, vulsse you please to assure me better. When Marcella heard these words, she was stricken in a study: but Palmerin was all so impotunate, as at last she thus answered: In good farr (fare: friend) I never knew thine owne naturall Parents, yet haue I loued thee as if thou were mine owne Sonnes: And so what words Dyofena had before reported, Marcella constred, taking him with her into her Chamber, where she drest him the cosily Swadling-clothes that he was found in, and the Crucisire likewise that hang about his necke, which he intreated her to be stow upon him, to the end (quoth he) that for your sakes I may keepe it whils I live. Marcella would not deny his request, but put it about his necke her selfe.

From which tyme forward, Palmerin shewed himselfe of moys chearefull disouersies, desyring how he might compasse the meane to goe seeke his Fortune, whereto his sondry appariitions had so often incited him. And as mons can shonne what is ordained him by Divine prouidence, not many daies after, as he was walking alone upon the Mountaine, he heard

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART I.

heard a voice cry very racketly say tripe and farent: whereupon Palmerin ranne that hee knew he haue the boyce, where he beheld a Ly - a great swanne a Doyse. Palmerin having no weapon to defend him selfe withall but a Kniffe, very hauily it aperte he adde, hit hit such a stroake betwene the eyen, that he fel downe dead to the grounde, then coming to ym, he heare him to replaine, saio: I haue yf feind in some place remouing to losynge. Alas, Sir (quoth he) and ha you not fere, my bairn haue perisched, for as I travellid on my jorney, the Engla faysonly set open me to decoure me: whereon all my company perisched, take themselves to fayre, leauing me as you loun me. Ere wele is, (said Palmerin) if at you haue escaped with life, and if you pleyn to ges me fere, no farre hence where I haue bens noorthree, you shall haue the best entretainmente that I can make you. My frind (quoth the Stranger) you haue already done so much for me, as if you will goe with me into the Country where I dwel, I haue wherewithall to reward your travell richly. Is it farre hence Sir (sayd Palmerin?) In the City of Hermida (quoth he) in the Realme of Macedon I dwel, from whence I departed a moneth since with my merchandise, whiche I haue left at Constantinople: from whence returning homeward, this unlooked for mischance beset me, whiche had made an end of me without poor resittance. As they were thus conserving together, one of the Strangers seruantes came to looke him, and farding him so happily escaped, was not a litte ioyfull, reportyng that he had left his compansions not far off. Returne then (said the Master) and will them to come to me to the next village, where I mean to haue my husband fayled, whiche the servant performede imediately, and all this while stood Palmerin in debating with himselfe, if he shoulde haue leauie his Father Gerrard or not: at length, (after many opinions) fearing if he returned home againe not to finde the like opportunity, concludes

to depart with the Strangers. So was he set on a very good palfrey, and setting forward to Maccio, that night they were entertained in a very good lodging, where the Stranger caused his wounds to be searched, reporting to everyone how by the grace of Palmerin his life was preserved, for which cause he accounted of him as his true Sonne. All this while Gerrard and his wife little thought of this mishap, but expected Palmerins returne till darke night, and seeing he came not as he was wont, both he and his wife the next day searched the Mountaines, but they could not finde him, which made Gerrard to question in himself what evill he had offered him, that shold make him thus depart. Now durst not his wife Marcella tell him, the talke betweene her and Palmerin, but accompanied her husband in sorrow for their losse: especially Dyofena and her brother Colmelio were most sorry, Dyofena for losse (as she thought) of her husband, and Colmelio for the company of his supposed Brother, whose absence went so neare his heart, as he intended never to gaine out search till he had found him.

### CHAP. XIII.

How Palmerin went with this Merchant named Estebon to the City of Hermida, who afterward gave him Horse and Armour to be made Knight.



Estebon the Merchant thus conducting Palmerin on his way, at length arrived in the City of Hermida, where he was louingly welcommed home by his wife, both young and beautifull as any in that Country, to whom he reported his dangerous assault by the Lyon, and without Palmerins helpe he had bin devoured: but (quoth he) good fortune sent him at the very instant that

saw him, for which I shall be beholding to him while I have a day to live, therefore good wife entertaine him in the best sort you can devise, for he hath well deserved it. This speech had the Merchant with his faire wife, who embracing Palmerin, sayd: That nature had omitted nothing in her workmanship, making him so nimble, and full of hardinesse. Palmerin seeing himselfe so fauoured of so beautifull a Woman, having before spent his time among Shepheards, Swineheards, and louish Swaines of the Country, with modesty began to blush, and was so well vexed with ciuilty to make her this answere. I desire Distresse that my behaviour may be such, as may continue my Masters good liking and yours towards me. So from that time he followed Merchant, and profited so well in the course of traſfique: as Estebon committed all his affaires to Palmerins trust wherather gave his minde to Martiall exercises, and followed knightly dispositions so much, as very nature declared the noblenesse of his minde, for he delighted to manage great Horses, to fight at all manner of weapons, to see dangerous Combates, to frequent the assembly of Knights, to talke of Armes and honourable exploits, and in brefe, to exercise all the bazaarites of a noble Courter.

Whereat Estebon maruelled so much, as falling in talke with him, he sayd. We thinks it is strange Palmerin, that thou being the Sonne of a drudge, and nourished on the Mountaines of Olines ( as thy selfe hath often told me ) disdainest the life of a Merchant, frequenting the company of hardy Knights, as though thou couldest take Lunce and Sheld to enter the combate. Sir ( said Palmerin ) I know not if my Father be such as I haue told you, but I wot well my heart so serues me, as I can thinke of nothing but actions of Honour and Knighthood. The Merchant was contenten to heare Palmerin in these termes, beca're he perceiued that his wife fauoured him greatly, wherat he became a little jealous, and gladly would remoue the occaſion,

## The Historye of Palmerin D'Oliver,

and before he saue: sauing it is so Palmerin, that thou  
hast no man to followe the Alayres, I am well content  
to go thither to Cybaldie, being the King then naturally  
diseased, and thereby thou mayst attaine credite and ac-  
complissh. For in the same part, because I will not knyght the  
Dwarfe, he shal haue of me thonke, Hysse, and  
I shal knyght at the same syt go to Macedon to the King, where  
at thys request of the Prince Florendos his Sonne, he will  
not refuse to gye thee thy Order. Palmerin returned him  
verye early thankes, and dairing provided all things excep-  
tional for his journey, to the leue of the Merchant Kichon  
and his Wiffe, hoping to sped well in his aduenturous en-  
terprise.

### CHAP. X LII.

Thus Palmerin arrived at the Court of Macedonia, hoping  
to recyue the Order of Knighthood, at the hand of  
the Prince Florendos, Sonne to the aged King Primaleon  
by the favour of the Lady Arismena.



King departed from the Merchant, Palmerin made such sped, that on the fourth day following, usynge by a Rimer Ade, he  
found a Dwarfe sitting heavily weeping,  
of whom he demanded the cause of his  
wrenting. Alas sir ( said the Dwarfe )  
as I was riding by the commandement  
of my Master, to a Ladie whom he dearely leueth, a Knight  
cam now take my horse from me, and very vilyanously o-  
red me out rage, whiche yet doth me so much grise me,  
( as being thus en foyt ) I know not how to get ouer the  
River. Mount vp behinde me ( said Palmerin ) and at the  
first Colyne we come unto, I will prouide the of another  
Horse.

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Then mounted the Dwarfe vp behinde him, and haunng past  
the river, desired to know of Palmerin whether he traual-  
led: for ( quoth he ) I never saw man whom I had greater  
desire to serue then you. Dwarfe ( saide Palmerin ) I now  
jorney toward the Court of Macedon to the King, where  
I hope to fynde the Prince Florendos, who is accounted one  
of the worthiest Knights in the world, and by his hand I  
desire to be knyghted, if I may. And after you haue received  
your order ( said the Dwarfe ) I hope you will not be so un-  
wise to hazard the aduenture wherein so many haue sayld  
and lost their lives. What aduenture is that, quoth Palme-  
rin? To goe to the Mountaine Artifaria ( said the Dwarfe )  
in hope to kill the Serpent, which hath haue the deale of so  
many valiant Knights. And what occasion sayd Palmerin  
moched them to fight with the Serpent? That I wil tell you  
answerid the Dwarfe. The King Primaleon Father to  
Prince Florendos whom you seeke, thys yeres since fell  
into a very strange Disease, for whiche no remedy can yet  
be found, notwithstanding the diligent endeouours of the  
Queene and Ldy Arismena her Daughter, one of the fairest  
and most vertuous Princesses that ever was heard of,  
who seeing her Father in such dangerous estate, hath of-  
ten assembled the best Physitians in the whole world, whiche  
haue practised all possible meanes to recover his health:  
yet hitherto all hath vens to no purpose. Wherupon sh  
sent to an ancient Knight, the most killslille in the Art of  
Migromancy this day living, who returned this answere:  
That he shold never be healed, except he be first washed  
with the water of a fountaine, whiche standeth on the top  
of the Mountaine Artifaria, whither soure times a year  
resort there Alers, Magitians of the Isle Cardini, to ga-  
ther vertuous Warbes whiche there they wash, and where-  
of they framme all their enchaungements. This place is de-  
fended by the Merchant, wherof I tolde you, that no man as  
get durst approach it. Which newes when the Princesse

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

thous Coach, he carried his curious counterfeite of the Duke, superficially yet forth, and with such perfection of Art, as though it had beene the Duchesse her selfe.

After folld were Journe Lewes, to rich and glorie the fift  
Journe after, all other graunt with most ornittall floweres, in  
inlaid on recouer of Spare, etcured one at the hilt han-  
des of Europe, which made way with brane and lesser ob-  
sticles, as did never a man delight the beholders : one at the  
clayre pointe, sayle about bearing his Helmet, and shoul-  
ders his Arme. And ther wes I make further report of de-  
signe storum, for to comen unto the field with him. Equi-  
pagny arme mee, and the horse from whence he to come, and  
as he foun d a lassell, that bin presence of his Ladie, who  
as her greate and fayre pinn that morning, a cosily Chape-  
gowne, with veleris, girdis, Garteris, and o-  
ther vnuallable richesse, with a solued or gaudis  
knight warr, and therof bate required to the field. So  
doe he went, the King his Father thus spake to him.

My Sonne, this day and all the other following, for me  
spendha so well, as thou mayst to have the better my heart  
with thee. My knyght, I answere the Prince's  
speche before I sennynge, for I am ryght, to accomplis thy desire  
et al doyle I durst haue for that may command me. So I do  
unto the King, he came to the place appoynted for the Cam-  
bat, the knyghts placing themselves where they shuld, and  
the Prince himselfe in his Tent, where having his picturis  
picture set on the appoynted place, he comandid the trump-  
pers to sound, and a Herald to proclayme, that no Knight  
bearing Armes, shuld be so hardy as to enter his Tent,  
except he ffor granted his Ladie to be the most fairest crea-  
ture in all the world: and if any were so stubborno not to  
confesse it, by knyghtly provys he wold force him to doe it.

The Herald having done his charge, and the Judges can-  
sed the Conditions to be openly read, and the people diuined  
themselves in conuenient places, and the Lorde, Ladys, and

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Gentlewomen betook them to their Tents and Hestolds.  
The knyght that entred the field against the Prince, was the  
Count Durcell of Arragon, his soure Squires cuneging  
before him in a great gorgeous Litter, the statue of his Hi-  
stresse Daughter to th. King of Arragon, the fairest Lady  
in all Spayne, and soz whose Beauty he tooke in hand this  
quarrell. After hym came soure other Squires, the soverene  
leading his Courser, the second bearing his Helmet, the  
third his Htield, and the fourth his Gantlets and Lance:  
and comming to the moniment appoynted for strange La-  
dies, caused the portrait of his Lady to be placed thereon :  
then comming to the Princes Tent, said. I know not Lord  
Lewes, if euer come with glory presumption of your strength,  
or overboasting your selfe, you haue made this large enter-  
prise, to Combat with the best appoynted Knights in the  
whole world, in sodding no fatter Lady, to bee this day li-  
ving then your owne : for mine owne part, I am not trou-  
bled in conceit as you are, to quarrell for such a fabulous  
matter, yet dare I tell you that my Lady is much more  
beautifull then yours, whiche if you will deey, I am ready  
by the strenght of my armes to make you confesse it. Lewes  
saying himselfe grimed with these iurious speches of the  
Count, answered. Proud Knyght, I am ashamed to heare  
thy judgement so simple, as to thinke I am come hither for  
a matter of so light moment, as though I would not justis  
against the and all other what I haue promised : but let  
that passe, before we depart he will cause the know thy folly,  
by that time thy pats and thy body to thowoly bumbasted,  
look to thy selfe, so I intend to doe it. So mountynge on  
horsebacke, and prepared as it had ben to a warre mortall,  
encountred each other with such fury, as their Lances  
laying in bluers vp into the arze, they met together so ter-  
ribly with their bodies, their Htields, their Horsles and  
their heads, as they were both dismounited to the ground.  
But earnest desire to vanquish, they being besids, strong  
and

# The Hillerie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

and well respoed Knights, made them begin quickly the second assault with their Swordes, which was so dangerous, and handled with such dexteritie, as it was hard to judge who shold haue the honour of the Combat. But Lewes holding the representation of his Lady, and considering her to excellent and fauourable to him, tooke heart afresh, and (as it were inspi red with new vigour) so laid on th. Count Durcell, as in that time he brought him under the meche of his Sword, when holding it against his throat, hee said, Peremptory Knight, if now thou confesse not my Lady to excell thine in beauty, thy undiscerte head shall ransome thy folly. The Count ( for all this ) would not answer one word, by reason of the debility hee felte himselfe in, having lost so much of his blood, as for the griefe hee conceaved to bee thus vanquished: where it Prince Lewes not content, wold haue taken his head from his sholders, but the Juges of the field came to him, saying. O<sup>r</sup> Lord, you ought to saye, haing brought your enemy beyond his owne defence, your victory being sufficient to content you, so bids his death. The Prince persuaded, entred his Pavillion, and joyful of his conquest, commanded two Gardars of the field to take the figure of the Princessse of Arragon, and place it at the feet of the Duchesse counterfet: which was done immedately, and the Count Durcell brought into his owne Tent, where the Chirurgions tooke diligent care for the curing of his woundes. Soone after came a Knight of Myllaine, who giving such defiance as the other did, was in the end conuict with great shame, to confesse vnder the conquering Sworde. Lewes, the imperfections of his Lady, and her stature placidly the Princessse of Arragon. The same day were fwe great Lords of Italy brought in like subjection, and so the triumph ended till the next day, when the first that came into the field was a byane Gallant of Spaine, a Knight of good estimation, and specially reputed, who after a valne gloires exaltation made

# Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I

(as the nature of the people is that war affected) put his fortane to the tryall of his Lance: where he spred so ill, as hee was vanquished, and in the following Combat likewise received the foyle. After him seauen other Knights of Cattile proved as unforunate, their Ladys Pictures all reuerencing the Duchesse, who being not a little proued of her Knight, and the memorizable renowme he tristnessed of her beauty, I leue to your consideracions, both for her conceit that way, as also in loue towards the Prince, who seeing no man ready to enter the quarell, returned thence to the Pallace, to conferre with his sweet spillets of his high god soveraines.

## CHAP. XXXV.

Of the Combat betweene Prince Laires of France, and Crenus the Duke of Gaule.



Great pleasure did the King conceiue, and all the nobilitie of the Court, at the gotten victories of Prince Lewes, against so many worthy Knights, so that they altogether accounted him most fortunate. And now the third day when hee was entred his Tent, an English Knight ( no lesse brave in fearnes then the other ) defied the Prince, and betweens them beganne a dangerous conflict. In the middest whereof, the King with many Princes, Barons, and Lords, as also the Queen and the Duchesse of Burgundy, came to their standing, and unhappy beheld the foyle of the English Knight, the Duchesse bearing him conesse her beauty, and beheld his Ladys portrait placed vnder hers. But now the couragious Duke of Gaule named Crenus, came bravely mounted into the field, doing his duty to the King. Queen, and Ladys,

# The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

who not knowing him, by his Amour judged him faire  
gre Lord, In that no Knight before cauled so good opinion  
generally, nor came with bauier countenance into the field,  
he being undear a Prince et wonderfull perfections, and a  
Knight at Armes verzbly praued. The Duke (as all  
the other had done) caused his Ladys comit, selfe to be  
placed where it ought by his Squires, to the no little admira-  
tion of all the beholders, noting what rare and excellant  
beauty it was aduised withall, the workman having per-  
forne such exquisite perfections, as it had beeue the Lady  
her selfe naturally living: while the Squires were thus  
placing it on the monement, the Duke advanced himselfe  
to Lewes, in this manner. The ouermuch selfe conceit  
(Lord Lewes) of munders but easilly acquainted with mat-  
ters of difficultie, hath often bane, and yet is the cause to  
plucke great personages moze low then they expect: so  
that men huse sene them deceiptes of their intentes, and re-  
warded with ridiculous shame and confusson. This speak  
I to you, having here begun a busynesse, the end whereof  
will be moze hard to you, then as yet the beginning hath  
beeue: for Europe is suffisently stord with hardy Knights  
to asswage your presumptaous opinion, and Ladies much  
more faire and excellent, then she whom you contend for.  
And this (by the fauour of Fortune, gracious regard of my  
Lady and Mistresse, and helpe of my god Sword) will I  
ensure you to confesse, that incomparable Agriola, daugh-  
ter to the King of England, soz vertue, soz beauty, and all di-  
vine perfections, exceedeth yours whatsoeuer she be. Before  
such a leading (quoth the Prince) shall passe the lippes of a  
Denne of France, either wil I consent to be peaceable  
torn in sunder, and before sayre Phœbus have paced ons  
heures journey, I doubt not to make thee repent thy pride  
and arrogancy. By the soule of King Arthur, said the Duke,  
look thou guard the selfe well, for I have (with my courtes-  
ies, abated the pride of a better man then thy selfe, andere

# Emperour of Constantiopie. PART. I

we two part, I meane to try if I can doe it againe, there-  
foze resolve thy selfe to thy best defence, soz (by my life)  
I will not labour thee. Without any further speches they  
encountred with such violence together, as Prince Lewes  
was thowne betweene his horse's feete, and he soz England  
lost his stirrups, but recovered hymselfe well enough by the  
mene of his Horse: then he fixing his enemy got vp a-  
gaine: cast himselfe out of the Saddle to haue taken his ad-  
vantage, but Lewes prevented him, and came marching a-  
gainst the Duke with his Sword drawne, who stayed him  
thus. He thinks Prince of France before any woyse be-  
fall the, thou wert best to yeld thy selfe, and remembret  
that our Combat beginnes soz the excellency of Beauty.  
By God man of England, answered Lewes, thou canst not  
perswade me to a thing so farre from my thought, therfore  
goe too, and he that hath the fyrst Friend shall sone be  
knowne. In this great choller he reached the Duke such a  
stroake on the head, as made him set one knee to the ground,  
but recovering himselfe quickly, and both thowtowly angry,  
they laydon each other so cruelly, as the very hardest of the  
beholders feared the successe. Thus fought they soz mat-  
ter of spectall value, the defence of their owne reputations,  
and honour of their Ladys, whose love was moze prectious  
in their heares then their owne lives. So long these eager  
charges continued on both sides, as Prince Lewes having  
receivd moze then twenty wounds on his body, seeling  
himselfe faint, fell downe besyde his enemy, saying. O  
noble heart of France, the true succeder of thy famous  
predecessours. The victorius Englishman setting his foot  
upon him, said; Lord Lewes, if now thou declare not my  
Lady to excell thine in beauty, it costteth thee thy life, a mas-  
ter for nothing pleasing to me, in respect of the chivalry and au-  
gular prouesse I haue found in the, as also this magnan-  
ious enterprize of thine, which in despight of thy foyle, and  
death it selfe, shall make thee live soever. But Lewes made

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

no answer, either for his weakness, or for full conceit of his misfortune, wherefore the Judges cause, who granting the Duke victory, desired him to proceed no further, which he honourably granting, was as full of the conquest, as the Duchesse sad and pensive, thinking Prince Lewes had been slaine outright: wherefore she stung away to her lodging, not carrying for the King or any of the Ladies, who likewise departed the field in mattheus sorrow, seeing their Son so pitifully wounded: but above all, the Duchesse made moe lamentation, then she would have done for the death of her husband, yet fearing what she thought secretly, should by her griefe be openly suspected, remeeted her selfe so well as she could: and being by herselfe, with one of her trusty Gentlewomen, she thus brawled forth her moanes. Ah trecherous Fortune, employing all actions of regard, why hast thou suffered the man that I most fauoured, thus to be vanquished: and (which is next to be pitied) without hope of life? Ah deceiptfull Trompette, saying thou hast offered him so much wrong, do me the favour to beare him company in death, that liued and dyed so honourably for my loue. Ah death, let it suffice thee that long hath wounded him, and make not thou experient of thine inaultable stroake, vntille thou wilt doe as much for me. Ah false and flattering Donnes of Venus, is this the gaeden thou rewardest them withall that serue thee faithfully? ceasing her complaint a while, in great impatience she ther began againe. Alas, neither the one eother are cause hereof, but my most unhappy selfe, when (prayned by my beaute) he tooke in hand this enterprise, but if it be so (dear friend) that embious fate deale so hard with thee, soon mayst thou be revenged on her that caused it. And with these words she fell betweens the arms of one of her Ladys present, whom she specially trusted, who thus spake to her. Why how now Madame? will you perswade your selfe no otherwise? believe me there is no remedy but you

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I

must change your conceit. What will you forget your selfe: it is no time if you remember your selfe well, for if he whom you loue and endure those paties for, should understand hereof, in stead of saving his health, you will shorten his dayes, if (as you say) he live not without your wellfare. More requisite is it that you goe comfort him with your cherefull presence, then thus to be the argument of both your deaths. Beside Madame, if my Lord sur vive, as no doubt he shall, what may he prouise? trust me matter sufficient (if you gouerne not your selfe better) that you sake to discouer, what most of all beloves you to concerne. Alas (my friend) answered the Duchesse, I know you speake the truth: but how is it possible for me to content my selfe, seeing what estate he is in, onely for my loue? But if he dye, small reckoning will I make of my life: for let my honour be blamed or otherwise, let all aduersities and misfortunes go together. Yet will I somewhat be advised by thee, and I will goe see if my presence will anything comfort him. To breakes off this talke, came an Esquire from the Queens, to intreat her come to her Chambre: which she did, and went with the Dame to the Princes Lodging, who beholding the Duchesse so pale and full of griefe: and with this conceit his wounds opened and bled a fresh, for which cause the Chirurgions, who imagined the occasion to proceed by shame the Prince conceived, that any one should see what wounds he tooke by the Duke of Gaule, wherefore they forbade any to enter his Chamber, vntill the perill of death were better passed over, which was within short time, when the Duchesse by her often visiting him, converted his sorowes into manke joyfull conceits. But because our history appertaines not onely to his dñe, or the loue of the Duchesse, we will returne to the Duke of Gaule, who after he had thus conquered Prince Lewes, followed the conditions of the field; taking the portrait of his Lady Agriola, and placed it where the Duchesse Picture stood,

# The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

setting it among the other conquered Ladies. That day divers other Knights came on behalfe of their Ladys, whom the valiant Englishman entertained with such valour, as all his paines turned to the honour of his Distress Agriola, who now was seated as paragon of the field.

## C H A P. XXXVI.

Of the Combat betweene Palmerin and the Duke of Gaul, and of the successe thereof.



¶ the same day that the Prince of France was vanquished by the Duke of Gaul, and their traine, but the Combat was first ended, wherefore they commanded their Squyters to prepare their Tent. Palmerin understanding that the Duke was conquerred, grieved not a little, in that he came no sooner to win the honour of the Prince: yet knowing, if now he could conquer the Duke, more honour shold arise to him then by the Prince Lewes, he contented himself, passing that night in his Tent with the Prince Trincus, in divers arguments of the Combat betwene Lewes of France and the Duke: yet was Lewes highly commended of Palmerin though he were overcome, because he had so bravely done the two former daies against all the Knights that came. All this night could not Palmerin sleep, thinking on the day ensuing, but rising early in the morning, and commanding himselfe to God in his prayers, he put on the Coate of Armes his Lady Polinarda gave him before his departure, and took the counterafeit of his Lady in his armes, not thinking any of his Knights or Squyters woythy to beare it, and thus accompanied with Trincus and other Almaine Rodes, entered the Lists with so brava

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

a gesture and countenance, as every man commended him for a good Knight. And having placed the Picture on the accustomed Moniment, as it had bene to the lively creature her selfe, he thus began. Ab perfecte richeur et all beauty, vertue, and excellency, resolve thy selfe this day, to bearre the Palme of honour from all Ladys in the World, in that your Knight craves a thousand deaths, before he gives consent to the contrary: and persuades himselfe so assuredly of your present favour, as he durst beware en a whole Army, to kepe his religion in your divine service. These words were spoken so lowe, as the Duke of Gaul heard him, wherewith not contented, he answered. What new Knight, demandest thou (conge) of a Lady to defend her Beauty? Ill canst thou performe what thou speakest, if there be no better provided. For all that Sir, said Palmerin, I hope to make you grant what I say, and that there is not a fairer Lady living, then she whose figure thou here beholdest, otherwise I shall constraine thee to verifie it, whether thou leste or no.

That shall we sone see (quoib the Duke:) So departing into their Tents to be armed, and ready to Joust, they met so valiantly together as both of them brake their lances bravely without moving each other, and taking new Staves, encountered againe, where the Duke was unhezed, and Palmerin very soze wounded: So betaking them to their good Swords, continued a dangerous and doubtfull Combat, till in the end Palmerin overcame the Duke, and holding his Sword ready to cut off his head, said, Kniȝt il on att dead, if he graunt not my Lady to excell me in beauty. Ab Sir, (saide the Duke) unhappy be the houre that you tooke in hand this voyage, to deprive us of that which made me the most happy Knight of the World, with what countenance may I present myselfe before her, saing fortune hath been so adverse to me? Thus filling the ayre with his regrette, the Judges came desiring Palmerin to save his life, where to he consented; whiche words were moze bitter to the Duke then death

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva,

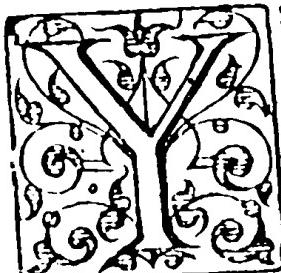
death, who in these complaints was led into his Tent by his Squires. Palmerin not forgetting the honour to do to his Lady, tooke downe the Image of Agriola, and set his Ladys in the room, saying: Now are you in the place Madame, which is your owne by right. This victory was not a little pleasant to y Frenchmen, but especially to the Prince Lewes, when he heard thereof: who the better to make his joy knowigne to Palmerin, sent him two of the best Horses in his Stable, as glad of the revenge on the Duke, as that Palmerin remained Conquerour. Palmerin sent hearty thanks to the Prince, as well for the present as his good will, and so continued in his denouement to his Ladys beauty, as that day he honoured her with the conquest of soure French Knights, and the submission of their Ladys portraictures: yet above all, Palmerin commended to Trineus, the valour of the Englishman, confirming the Duke for a chosen Knight at Arms, and neither Frenchmen, Italian, Spanyard, English man, Romane, or Greeke, that attempted against Palmerin, in the following daies: but still he bare away the victory, and Polinarda Picture their Ladys obeyrance: The last of the eyght daies, came into the field the Lord of Albert, greatly esteemed for Prowesse and Chivalry, and hee would defend the Beauty of his French Lady: but Palmerin after a long and tedious fight, brought him and his Mistresse among the vanquished, and so concluded the French Princes enterprize, to his owne immortall honour. Afterwards came the King Agariel, with the Princes and Lords of his Court to Palmerins Tent, making him the greatest entertainment could be devised, whereof Trineus, and the other Allmaigne Lords were highly contented, and after his wounds were healed, caused him and his company to be lodged in his owne Palace, where the Queen and her Ladys would often visite him, and the Prince Lewes likewise, who by many intreates with Trineus, underand her Name for whom Palmerin thus aduentured. But when the King understood, that

# Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Trineus was the Emperour of Allmaignes Honne, and al this honourable Company came from his Fathers Court, their Welcome cannot be sufficiently set downe, nor Palmerins praises effectually rehearsed: whom the Prince Lewes thus entertained. In god sooth Sir Palmerin, the Prince may imagine himselfe happy, that is honoured with your Knighthly seruice, abous all, the noble Emperour of Almaigne. My Lord (q.d. Palmerin) it likes you to speak your pleasure of me, yet did I never know Knights more worthy in fight then your Countrey men, among whom your deserts may not escape unreported, no more then the daies of Scipio can among the Romanes. Many other honourable and familiar speches passed betwene the Prince and Palmerin, about the Ladys Figures, that we brought to the Jousts. Polinarda, onely triumphing beyond all the rest, having no second but faire Agriola of England, the greateste and faireste of the Duke of Gaule.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

Of the Combate which the Dukes of Savoy and Lorrain had together, for the beauty of their Ladys: and what was the issue therof.



Da hane herte before heard, the Enterprise of the Duke of Savoy, for the beauty of his Lady, and how al. et Prince Lewes his dayes of Combat were finished, he shoulde maintaine nine others in the like quarrell: Alberesore the day after Palmerins victory, he puts himselfe in order as the time required, and hauing in the field erected two Pillars of Porphyre, displacing them that belenged to the Prince Lewes, his Tent was there set up all of Crimson helmet, very curiously embrodered with Colc and pearle, and

# The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

and round about within, were Inscriptions of many brave sentences of Love, extracted from Historiographers and Poets, as well in Greek, as in Latine, in praise of the Hysresse of his devoted affections. In the morning he went to give the good no; ral to the Princesse Lucemania, Daughter to the King of France, whom he had chosen for his Spouse and wife. After many soleyme courtisies passed between them, fearing the Queen shold finde them toge her, he took his leave of her, she giuing him from her arme a sumptuous Braclet, garnished with sixe great Diamonds, and sixe faire Rubies: which gift much encouraged him to follow his Enterprize. Being come into the field the Judges appymet were the eldest Senne of France, and the Count of Armignac: wise Princes and valiant Knights at Armes, and standing in the Gate of the Tent bnarmed, because he saw none ready to offer him Battell, the Duke of Lorraine at length entered the Field, attenedden by a brave company of Knights and Squires, who brought the portrait of his Lady, being a figure of great Beauty, and having a Crowne on her head, where over was written in great Letters of Gold, This is Polinarda, exceeding in Beauty all Ladys in the world: Which was read by many, who could not satisfie their eyes in beholding so brave a spectacle, and being set on the Pillar appoynted, he came to the Duke of Savoy, saying: Blasphemous Knight, detractor of the Beauty of Lady's, here may thine ou he eyes witnesse how thou hast blyp'd Beauty, in presuming to thinke any moze faire thenst is incomparable Creature, to whom thy Lady may not worthily be hand maled. And if thou wilt not presently confess what I command thee, shield thy head from my weapon, which I meane to knock well for thy great indiscretion. The Duke of Savoy enraged with these words, Armed himself presently without any answer, and mounting on horseback, with a strong Launce in his hand, encountered his enemy so couragiouely, as breaking both their

Spikes

# Emperour of Constantinople: PART. 1.

Spikes braclez in shivers, to their very Gantlets, casted on without any further harme. The Duke of Savoy sayng that he had not dismunteid his enemy, with his sword drawne returned furterly upon him, and laid on such strokes as the fire spakid from his Helmet: yet the Duke of Lorraine, like a god and hardy Knight, defended himselfe most valiantly, and reached the Duke of Savoy many shrewd wounds, so that both of them (being thoroughly uelled) rent each others Armes, in such sort with their Swords, and mangled their flesh so unmercifully, as the Judges could not imagine who had the better vantage. The Duke of Savoy wondering to see the Duke of Lorraine hold out so long, began to stome more like a Fiend then a man, rayling on fortune, that (in respect of his Ladys beauty) she assid him no better, and being at the very poyn of despaire, took heart afresh, and redoubting his stroaks vpon his adversary, at length slew his horse vnder him, who falling downe, and his Master with him, by reason that he was so sore wearied, and bruised, and beside, had broken his thigh in the fall, could not recuer himselfe, before the Duke of Savoy (being alighted) set fast vpon him, & in fury would haue parted his head from off his shoulders, but onely that the Judges ranne quickly and stayed him. Then was the Duke of Lorraine halfe dead carryed into his Tent, and the Duke of Savoy caused Polinardas Picture to be set at Lucemanias feet . a thing very strange in respect of their great difference. Afterwards he was unarmed to haue his Wounds bound vp: which were so dangerous, as gladly he would haue beeorne excusid from the Combat with any other Knight for that day, did not shame, and the Law he had made himselfe provoke him to the contrary. But within an houre after, was desid by a Knight of Sicilia, who would Combate on Foote, with the battell-Are, in whch conflict the Duke was very neare overcome, he had lost so much blood before: but yet in hyselfe, the

Sicil-

# The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

Scicilian Knight lost the day, his Ladies Picture was rebled conquer'd, and the Duke of Savoy went to rest him in his Tent.

## Chap. XXXVIII.

How the Duke of Savoy entered the Combat against Palmerin, and how he sped.



Palmerin not as yet in perfect health, was advertised how the Duke of Savoy had conquered the Duke of Lorraine fighting for the Beauty of the Princesse Polinarda, the conceit whereof so grieved him as nothing could move, to see her honour so badly defended whom above all other he esteemed dearest, which made him in great choller, say before the Prince Trineus. By God (my Lord) I have made a slender choyse of the Duke of Lorraine for his valtell, and Madame Polinarda seemed to be scant wise to chuse him for her Champion, in respect of the excellent Beauty Dame hath bestowed on her. And yet it could not be imagined, how the Duke of Lorraine should goine the victory without shame, in seeking honour beyond his desert, because he is unworthy of such extraordinary favour; which makes me repute it rather of a fatut heart, then any want of just quarrell. Trineus hearing Palmerin so affectionate in his speeches, in a merry laughter, said. In good sooth Sir Palmerin, the Duke of Lorraine was but ill counseled, to enter the Combat for my Sisters beauty without her licence, in that he once learned how you could defend it much better then hee. Palmerin fearing he had spoken more then he might, because he durst not openly excused the matter thus. If it were so (my Lord) that I doubt to offer wrong to a Ladie, on whom dependeth my

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

life, and in whom I love more deare then my selfe: I would caue the Frenchman well to understand, how Madam Polinarda your Sister, surpasseth in all perfections, either of grace or beautie, all the Ladies of the Countrey: yea, I dare say of the whole Welt; wherefore one may easily conjecture, that the Duke of Lorraine ining the Combat, had his mind fixed on baser occasions. Even Trineus smiling to see Palmerin so diligent to shadew his leve, said: It is no strange matter (friend Palmerin) to see presuming mindes payd with selfe-same Coyne, as the Duke is: and yet I cannot marvel enough, that my Sister Polinarda would not commit this matter to my charge, or having had so good knowledg of your Valour and Powesse. These speeches pleased no: Palmerin a little: and did in such sort encouage him, as for the injury done his Lady by the Duke of Savoy, in setting her Figure at the feet of Lucceania, had not Trineus perswaded him with faire speeches, all sick and soze as he was, he would have gone to revenge this dish-nest. notwithstanding, he called Ptolome secretly, saying: Thou knowest (my deere Friend) what shame is offered her, to whom I was destinatene before my birth, by the presumpcion of an over-bold Knight, and what griefe it is to me, that I cannot at this present reenge the wrong my selfe. I pray thee therefore supply my insufficiency, and enter the Combat with that valiant glorious Duke, of whom thou maist gaine honour and yeld me content, in giving ease to my affliction, which are insupportable. I promise yeus (my Lord) answered Ptolome, before you made the motion I intended it, and I will accomplish it with such good will, as I make no drudg to overcome the Duke of Savoy. And for my Mistress Biionella, will I enter the Field, whose beauty is sufficient to entice me with the Elizayr, so surely in my conceit, she farre surpasseth Lucceania. Wherefore my Lord let me request one courtesie, which I am loath you should deny me: that is yet shall be able to morrow but to accom-

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

accompany me with your presence in the field. If the Duke will suffer me, (quoth Palmerin) I will, in meane while I will pray that the Fortune may fall out to my harts desir.

Thus Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, were passing the time, conferring with other Noblemen, of the valour of the Duke of Savoy, against all Strange Knights: & holo he had couled the Duke of Lorrain, had not his Horse falne on him, and maimed him: otherwise, he brought the Combat to a Judgement, as he had wonne the bencey of the field. Whereat Palmerin was more offended then before, because himselfe was not able to revenge this misfortune: Herewithall he conceived a kinde of Jealousie of the Duke of Lorraine, because he had chosen his Lady Polynarda for his Mistresse, and on her behalfe he had entered the Combat; and how he durst place her Picture on the Pillar with her name, without he had received some commandement from her: Which conceit so grieved him, as his wounds began to be as dangerous as at the first, continually labozing in his thoughts: Now with the lightenesse, then againe with the incensancy of Women, nevertheless he could not judge, (assaying earnestly the vertues of his Lady) that she wuld be of such a double lking: and in this doubtfull estate, sayd.

Ah God, I see that Women win lightly, and loose againe moze easily. Then repenting his words, followes on thus: O heavens, and what shall I say? It is impossible that she (meaning Polinarda) shold be so forgetfull, and never will I belieue, that a Princesse so wise and vertuous would reward me with such Treason, which may not, nay I dare sayre cannot once enter her thoughts. Yet wold not all opinions serue to allay this new jealousie, but still it had power to confound reason: and all the night continued he in this variable conceit, till the next morning, wh<sup>e</sup>re Ptolome (as soone as the Sun arose) accompanid with Trineus, went to his Tent, where being armed, all saving his Helmet, having

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I

hauling his Lance and Shielde, he came to the Duke, saying. Thou knowest knoing it the cause of my comming, stand byon the guard, for I fight for beautie. The Duke suddenly at these words mounted on horseback, and ranne against his enmy in my leaher strength, as Ptolome cast the Duke forth of his Helme. and suddenly alighted with his Horse drawne: but the Duke recovering himselfe, entered on him in sharper sorte then he expectid. Now began betwene them a cruell and pitious Combat, as their Armoir, shields and sways, flew about in pieces, and the blodtrickling dwelde their bodies in many places, so that it was generally reportid, how the fight could not end without the loss of both to the lnes. Yet in the end, the Duke being of stronger constitution then Ptolome, and greedy of victye over his enemy, ran so violently vpon hym as he got hym on the ground, and he bring vpermost, offered to take the advantage of his life: but the Judges forbidding it, caused Ptolome to be carried into his Tent, where the Prince Trineus stured, not a little; sorry for this great misfortune. The Duke likewise soe wounded was carried into his Pavillion, but first he saw the portrait of Brionella set in the rance of the conquered. The same day did the Duke figh with a King of Scotland at the stace, who not nimble enough in usynge that weapon, in the ent hid the foyle, and thre o her Knights afterwards at severall wepons, so that it was admirable to behold the explots of Armes the Duke did, in that no Knight as yet medled with him, but departed with shame, and their Ladys pictures placed as vanquish'd. And now was Palmerins Combat against the Duke of Gaule not talkid on: for the Duke of Savoy was accounted the onely Knight in the world, to the no small son of the Princesse Luceinaria, who perswaded her selfe now, that her beautie was most excellent. But she was not so pleasant as Palmerin was pensiue, and enraged out of measure: notwithstanding his weaknesse, and the of-

# The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

ten intreates of Trineus, he wold needs to the field, saying, God my Lord peradue me not, for I reckon not my life, so I may take vengeaunce of the dishonour done to my Lady your ffreind, the manis to contestes of the Emperour your father, have so bound me to her and you, as cread my life faire, and therefore I besach you not to hinder me. Trineus yet overcame him by pereson alone, assuring him to haue thare sufficienc for his revenge, whereat greatly displeased, he sayd: unlucke to be beheld sooner than he was indeed, for the great desir he had o d alwaies the Duke. And Prince Lewes answery to see the Duke hole the field longer than he did, not able to be overcome by any knight, came to Palmerin, saying. I knew not by Lord, whether you vnderstand the Duke of Savoies victories agaist so many hardy knyghts, but belike his strengthe much better then mine was, or Fortune allowes him more favour then she did to me. In my intent, if you enter not the Combat, you do me wrong and your selfe too: and if he depart hence with victory, then shall I have cause to complaine of you: in that his successe hath made him so brave and presumptuous, as though no knyght is able to answer him in the field: let me intreate you Sir Palmerin to abate his pride, and (as well he deserves) make him know his folly. Palmerin having greater desire to execute this matter, then thus to be intreated, returned the Prince this answery, My Lord, God giveth honour and victory to whom he pleaseth, without either regard of the cause or the persons. If according to bounty or nobility of minde he distributed such gifts, then had you been among the better knyghts furnished sufficiently with valour and magnanimitie: yet if your enterprise have not sorted to your brefe, account this for certaine, that it is for your god; and for other reasons then are to you known, for such matters are his secrets, and he doth ballance them by his divine wisedomie. Notwithstanding, as well to satisfie your request, as easle mine owne

# Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I

owne minde, to morrow morning will I enter my Tent, albeit my present estate would have me stagg a while: then will I Combat with the Duke, not certayne how fortune meanes to deal with me. But happen what shall, I go with a minde to conquer, and don't necur the issue will be such, as shall yeld you content, and me the victory: so shall your sadness and paine be converted into pleasure. With this answery the Prince fasshed departed, yet was he ignorant of Palmerins intent, which was far other wise then he imagined: but pleased as he was, he went into the presence Chamber, where many knyghts were conserfing of bards of Armes past, to whom he opened the fasshion of Palmerin, which caused a generall doubting of the Duke, setting him downe for unquished, except Palmerins weakness were his greater friend.

## CHAP. XXXIX.

Of the perillous Combat betweene Palmerin and the Duke of Savoy, and the issue thereof.



IX dayes together had the Duke of Savoy maintained this quarrell, for the beauty of his Laor Lucceania, and no knyght as yet could get any advantage of him, vntill the seavenish day, when Palmerin prepared himselfe to the field, and entered his Tent, accompanied with Prince Lewes of France, Trineus, and many other Princes. The King with all his traine taking their stading to behold the Combat, Palmerin camie armed forth of his Tent, laying his Helmet, which was carried before him by two Squires with his shield and spaco, and next to them camie two Princes, who bare the portraiture of his

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

his Lady Polinarda, which being set on the Piller, had clasped on his Helmet, and taking his Space in his hand, marched to the Dukes Tent, and thus spakyned him. Knight, thou hast long enough defended the field, and to my great griele that it hath ben so long, my turne is now to come, and it is godly reason I shuld keepe the rest of the time: for the Lady whome I loue, is not much more beautifull then thine, but beside, exalteth all other whatsoever, and if thou wylt not confess the same, I wyl not leare thee with this Space till I haue forced the to do it. I know not said the Duke, what thou canst do, but I am of the minde, that I shal soon quallifie thy ouer-beld living.

At these wordes the Duke taking his Space, deluercd Palmerin a sounde stroke on the head, as made him to stagge, but Palmerin requited him full againe for it, and long had they fought together, and brawled each other very plissfully, till at length Palmerin gaue the Duke such a cruell stroake betwene the head and the shoulders, as he fell to the ground cleane bereft of sence: when Palmerin taking off his Helmet, would not offer him any further violence, but setting his Sward against his best, sayd. Now am I sufficiently revenged on him, that so ill intreated the figure of the most fairest among Ladys. The Judges of the field, thinking Palmerin wold haue slayne the Duke, came running to him with these wordes. Content you Sir, he is vanquished, and hath no power to defend himselfe. Whereupon Palmerin put up his Sward againe, and leauing the Duke, went presently to the Pillar where his Ladys pentail stod, which embracing in his armes, he placed highest, and Lucemania at her safe, sayng. I beseech you Madamie to pardon your Knight, in that he did no sooner repell the famous injury offered you, and impute it not to feare, exhalt of courage, but deßility of body, which once a little recovered, I wyl to maintaine your honour, and here conserue you for the most beautifull Lady living. Wh. i. Palmerin

## Emperour of Constantiopie. PART, I

merin thus contemplated his Mistresse figure, the Judges comanded the Duke to be carried into his Pavillion, where, with soneraigne drynks life was got into him again, but when he knew himselfe to be banquethed, and that in one houre he lost the greatest honour of all his life-tyme, very conceit of griele had well-nere daunc him. Solemn was the sorrow of Madame Lucemania, but she and her Knight were got so much discontented, as Palmerin, Trineus, and Ptolome were joyfull: but above all other, Prince Lewes of France, more pleasant then if himselfe had triumphed in victory, thinking he could not sufficienly extoll the renowme of Palmerin, calling hym the onely puller downe of the proud. That day did Palmerin encounter with seauen other Knights, and in his conquests shewed himselfe not onely magnanimous, but mercifull, sauting their liues, and honouring his Mistresse with the humilitie of theirs. The next day like wise after many braue exploits, being ready to leare the field because none came to resist him, on a sudden there entred a Knight in black Armour, striped all over with Gold, and bearing in his shield of Azure the Golden Sunne, whose braue order of entrance declared hym to be a hardy Knight at Armes, who advancing himselfe to Palmerin, said. By intent of comming hither (Sir Knight) is to let the understand, that I am the Servant and helmed of a Lady, who may not be equalled with any other, & because I am informed, that thou watakest the freind, to excell all Ladres whatsoever, I offer to prove the contrary, and will make the confess it. I never speake wordes more true, answered Palmerin, and here abide to justifie them: but this place is ordained to no other end, then to make the and thy like know, what vnaudisq enterprises you take in hand. And one thing is required of the, that before you begin the Combat, thou set upon this Pillar the countefet of her, whom thou persuadest thy selfe to excell my Lady in beauty, according to the conditions of this

# The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

This stode published through all Europe. That cannot I do, answered the Knight of the Sunne, for I haue no other picture of her then is imprinted in my heart, where loue hath so lively figured her person, as she is dayly presented to me by her incomparable beauty, which cannot be taken from me but only by death. And if loue follow the soule, (as divers hold opinion) whole worlds cannot separate me from her. And theretw a.c all men my worthy to receive frution (by their rega v) of a thing so precious, v. which makes me imagine, none but my selfe worthy t. louke in her dulne figure. Prepare thee therefore to the Horse, and defend the selfe. Palmerin d'Oliva to know the name of this faire Lady, said. I se Sir Knight that thou art maluillous prude and surly, whiche makes me rather desire to Combat with that then any other to abate this herte humour: albeit this is contrary to his conditions, who was the principall authour of this enterprise: which is, that then shouldest set on this pillar her portrait whom thou so desirwest: yet this exception shall be granted thes, for the desire I haue to know what thou canst do, as also her name, if thou darrest reveale it. To tell thes her name (answered the Knight of the Sunne) I will not sticke with thes, and because in concealing it, I shall offer her wrong, nature having in her set downe the onely work of beauty: know therfore that her name is Polina da, Daugther to the mighty Emperor of Allmaigne. Whiche words were so yksome to Palmerin, and troubled his thought's in such sorte, that he knew not readily what to answer: notwithstanding in wisedom of his choller, thus spake. By God Knight, thou hast made a godly cheape, for against her beauty will no: I certene, hauing in it greater estimation & reverence then thou canst haue: but I am ready to prove, that thou deseruest not to be named her Knight, no not so much as her mooste deuant. What shall we sy, said the Knight of the Sunne, before we part: and albeit her excellency deserue farre greate

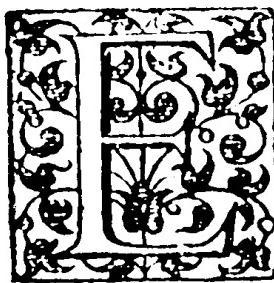
# Emperour of Constantinople. PART, I

ter service then mins, yet so it is, that for the loue I bears her, and the affection I haue to obey her by some agreeable strate, I may by good reason name my selfe hers. At this speech s Palmerin conceiued such scalcusie, as without attending any further matter, mounte in great aray on horseback, and met the Knight of the Sunne so soveray, as both of them were sent to the ground: where upon they drew their Swords, and charged each other with such fury, as their Armour and Shields were broken in peices, and the ground coloured with their expence of bloud. No permission of breathing was suffered between them, but bloud and death earnestly desired on either part, so that the King, the Lords and the Judges, reputed this for the strangest Combat that ever they saw, nor could they say who was likeliest to winne the field, but if the one dyed, the other could not escape, so that the King moued with compassion, caused them to be seuered, and commanded them to enter their Tents. Whiche motton liked well the Knight of the Sunne, so long he perswaded himselfe he could not hold out, wherefore he mounted on horseback so well as he could and withdrew himselfe. Palmerin being wonderfully displeased, that he could not obtaine the victory of this Knight. Soon after, the King and the Prince Lewes came into his Tent, and seeing him very seze wounded, shouldest not let him stay there, but said, Believe me (Sir Palmerin) you haue great need of rest, and your wounds I see are very dangerous, you shal therfore be conueyed to my Wallace, where all helps that may be deuised shall be giuen, assuring you, that greater honour could never Knight purchase, then you haue done. And though the last Combat were not ended, you need not be displeased, the issue thereof imponeth the death of the one or the other, and perhaps of both, which I would not haue seene for two of the best Drouines in my Realme. And me think you shouldest content yur selfe, haing receiued before such honour over so many Ladies and Knights of

# The History of Palmerin D'Qava,

## CHAP. LXI.

How Palmerin promised the Princesse Agriola, to convey her out of England, with his friends, which he performed to the speciall content of the Prince Trincus.



Arly on the next moring, Palmerin arose, and wrote a letter to his Lady Polinarda v herein he secretly put a ring, whitch she gave him when he departed from her, straigntly commanding Urbanillo that he shold diligently attend on the Princesse till he came, whitch shold be with all the sped he could possible.

Ptolome likewise wrote to his Lady Brionella, and these Letters dispatched, the Messengers immediately set forward on their journey. From this time Colmilio was Palmerins Squire, which pleased him very well, because he knew that Palmerin was nobly borne, so that by his meanes in time he shold rise to p[ro]f[ession].

This day the King wold ride abroad a Hunting, which gaue Palmerin occasion to see the Faulcon flye, being reputed by the King and all his traine, to be the best that euer fley. In this time of recreation, Hermes reported to the King, that the Knight so long absent was named Palmerin, and the same Knight that wonne so much honour in France: whitch so well contented the King, as he moze and meze desired his company: summoning all his Barons and Loxes to his Court, where he made such feasts, triumphs, and other spo[ts], for the honour of the noble Palmerin and his

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

companions as the like had not bin of long tyme before.

At night, when the Maskers, Summers and Moyses were in presence, that Palmerin espyed convenient tyme to talk with the Princesse, he took her aside to a Window, and thus began. Madame, before I begin what I have to acquaint you withall, I must give you this ring, as I was commanded by the Lady of the Castle in the Lake: the singular vertues thereof are such, as I intreat you to keepe continually on your finger: whitch Agriola receiving, with a courteous reverence, faithfully promised to performe his request: then Palmerin, with earnest affection on his friends behalfe; thus continued his discourse. I cannot but marvel, saire Princesse, you being a Lady of so speciall quality, renowned among the most vertuous creatures in the world, for your rare integrity and profound judgement, that you will be governed by the unadvised persuasions of other: whitch I would not believe, had not the Prince Trincus certaintly assured me, how since my departure, in stead of favourable countenance, and the intentance besyning so great a Lord, he can haue nothing but frownes, disdaine, and coy regard, whitch is as easie for him to endure, as a thousand deathes one after another.

Assure your selfe so farre beguiled, as your counsellors dissuade you from your chieffest good, desirous to withhold you from the height of honor, wherof you cannot sayle being matched in Marraige with the most vertuous and worthye Prince Trincus. Make you no small account, that he being one of the most Noble States on the earth, hath left his Parents, his Friends, and Country, hath past so many solitarie, strange, and uncooth Regions, hath aduentured the injury of the See-s, beaten with so many bitter blasts, and rasing billowes, every minute in danger of Shipwreck, and all for your Love? Thinke you that he being wonne to the Emperour of Allmaigne, attending evry day the rule and government of yEmpire, that he came hither to you in hope of your rich doowy? Holme me, Madame, and I thinks

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

your own conscience doth so resolve you, that neuer he me he could haue found other, endued with larger possessions then this Realme affords you. But hearing the same of your manisold vertues, rare life, choyse beauty, and all other god gifts, he was willing without any regard of his owne estate, to thrust himselfe in danger, yea, to forget himselfe for your love, which hitherto he hath with religious service intreated, and except you enterteine him with moze gracious favour, he is in danger of life. Which if it shoulde happen by your occasion, soz ever you shall be notes of monstrosus ingratitude, and Chyldendome shoulde sustaine a losse vñrecoverable. How farre such a thought ought to be from you, I leave to your owne construction.

If hitherto you haue knowne me, a Knight ready to say, porst the causes of Ladys far beneath your bright, think you I haue not greater reason to honour you? yea met to move you with any request, but what may every way advance your credite. And though my Lord Trineus were not of the bloud Imperiall, yet might his gentle heart, vnseigned love, and surpassing humanity, cause you to make choyce of him, aboue all other whatsoeuer they be. But seeing it so falls out, that you will not regard good counsell, following rather the perswasen of meane capacities, whose judgements may not reach to so high occasions, continue in your obstinacy, and mark the end of such vnscruteneasures.

I see that our company is vskeome to you, therfore (soz then you imagine) we will remoue that occasion. I know well enough, that you intend to match with the Duke of Gaule, who is but your fathers Subject & so refusing the daigne of an Empyre, you shall tarry in England and be a Dauchesse. Think you, that if my Lord matched not with you, the greatest Princesse in Europe, would not triumph in his Love? Yes certainly Madam, when you may at leisure aldowne and account your losse, which you sustained by flatterers and parasites. Think what will be the danger after in-

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART. I.

departure, the Emperour his Father, not minding to pochet the losse of his late Army, will send such a puissant strenght into England, as the King your father, nor the Duke your husband that must be, will scant excuse the whole ruines of this country. The meane to prevent this mishap, and assure your continuall tranquillity, is in entertaining the counsell I haue giuen you: where otherwise your selfe conceit, makes way to manisold misfortunes & dangers. Thus concluding his speches, in great heauiness he turned from her, whereat the Princesse now inwardly grieved, for the King whch he had giuen her was of such vertue, that after she had put it on her finger, he was wonderfully affected toward Trineus, as she could not think on any other: wherefore in this sudden change, and trembling with the doblefull conceit of her owne Spirit, she called Palmerin to her, thus answering. Alas my Lord, and only comfort in these heauy passions, what fears hath these hard and rigozous speches brought me into? It is very true that following the counsell of young Ladys like my selfe, haue bene perswaded to cast off the Princes Loue, accounting him but a simple Knight errant: but now being assured of his nobility, loyalty, and great gentlenesse, and that he would not request (as I hope) any thing contrary to vertue and honour, I belue what you haue said, and submit my selfe to your discretion, as willing to obey any thing you shall command me. Yet this I will request that above all things mine honor may be defended, for rather would I suffer mine owne losse soz ever, then this famous Realme of my Father shoulde be any way endangered.

Believe me Lady (quoth Palmerin) If thus you continue, you may well vnture to gaine this genera benefit, soz heres forth there will none be so hardy, as to molest your Father with warre, having matched his Daughter with the great Emperours Sonne of Almaigne. To confirme this promise, you shall give me this sweet hand which I kisse, as

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

the hand of the sovereigne Lady and Empresse of high Almaine, that you will not shrik hereafter from this honora ble determination; but for your owne regard, you must conceale this contract from your most trusty friends, and dispose in such sort of your selfe: so I hope to compasse the meanes and opportunity, that you shall leave England, and go to the noble regions of your most worthy Lord and Husband.

What I have promised (sayd Agriola) I will performe, and with what spad you shall think convenient: albeit I re pose such trust in you, that having bin so fortunate hitherto in your Enterprizes, you will be most carefull in accom plishing these dangerous intentions.

Thus before they departed, the marriage of Trineus and Agriola was concluded, and because they would not as then be suspected, they kept into the Dance, next the young Prince, shewing very amiable and pleasant gestures: which Trineus (in his often turning) diligently noted: imagining that Palmerin had not so long conferred with his Lady, but some as fared resolution was determined, yet he dissembled his inward joyes so cunningly as he could. Each eye was fixed on these two brave Knights, the Ladys and Gentlewomen persuading themselves, that they never beheld more noble personages: deserving like estimation for their specia ll Chi valry, as also for their Bounte and Courtly Civility.

Thus passed the feaste in all kinde of pleasures, and these two knyghtes withdrawing themselves into their Chamber, Palmerin discoursed to Trineus his talke with Agriola, and how he had with such cunning pursued the matter, that in the end he had obtained what he demanded, reporting the sequell of the gentle conclusion he made with the Princeesse.

Those joyfull knyghtes drove the Prince into such a quandary, as he could not expresse his secret content, wherefore Palmerin awaking him out of his musing, sayd: As I am a true knyght, I never thought that a man of your estate could be of so slender courage. What countenance would you

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

In a matter of so great, when such dauntly tynges make you so effeminate? Who of god chere man: Agriola is your swane, and none but Trineus will be her onely Lord and Husband. I must confess my Lord, (sayd Trineus) that my behaviour, but little becomes my calling: but that cause thereof, that I know no desert in my selfe that may be rewarded wth-  
th the least labour of my Lady. Beside, these newes brought me such specia ll contentment, as I am no longer mine own, but in her onely I live, and she holds the bellapes of my danger or safety, in that I was born to be her Servant. But now I desire you my Lord, seeing the occasion offereth it selfe, we hinder it not by any negligence: so if new  
we loose the favour of the time, we never (I fere) shall re-  
cover the like, therfore let vs so soon as we can, provide  
all things ready for our Departure. Requerre that to me, quoth  
Palmerin, do you as ready as I shall make provision. The  
next day he went to the Master of a Ship, to know when  
time would serue for their secret departure, who answ-  
ered him, that the time was then very convenient, the  
winds serving prosperously, and the sea calme and naut-  
gible, and he would furnish him with all necessaries for  
his passage. Quoth Palmerin, see that your men and all  
things be inreadiness, that we may launch away vpon halfe  
an hours warning. So departed the Master about his  
busynesse, and Palmerin to the Prince Trineus, whom he in-  
formed with these glad tynges, now nothing remaining  
but to know the Princeesse pleasure, he being likewise as  
ready to depart as the most coward. But (quoth Palmerin)  
how shall we safely get you sooth of the Court: I will,  
sayd the Princeesse, this night seigne my selfe vcke, and for  
my greater quiet, cause my Ladys to absent my Cham-  
ber, and so secretly will I escape disguised to the backe gats  
of the Wallace, whiche is not farre from my lodging, where-  
to I may passe unseene of any, and from thence god with  
you safely to the Haven. This practise was faithfully con-  
cluded.

## The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

cladred betwene them and Agriola withdrew her selfe cloesly to her Chamber, where at night she began her counterfeitt Schrulle, commanding her Ladys to leabe her alone, because she would see if she could daape a little. Her Ladys little thinking of her secret deccit, went to their owne lodgings very penible and scrutfull, whiche Agriola perceiving, covered her selfe with her night mantle, and came to the place where the Knights layed her comming, Palmerin taking her under his arme, conveyed her in that maner to the Princes Chamber, where they altogether laid downe the oder for their embarking, Trineus exstolling his happy sorte, seeing his Lady so ready to accomplish his desire. They arming themselves, and taking with them the Princes costly Jewels, whereof she had plentifull stored her selfe, they came to the Haven, where they foud the shipp and mariners ready, and getting all abord, the knytes seruing for their awayle, they set sayle, and before day they got faire enough from London.

### C H A P. LXII.

How the King of England and the Queene were advertised, how their daughter Agriola was conveyed away, and of their sorrow for her departure.



He Duke of Gaules Daughter, who continually was bedfellede to the Princesse, abiding her selfe very leng from a bed, fearing to disquiet her Lady, being sick as she supposed; but comming at length to see how she fared, finding the Bedde empie, and Agriola gone, she presently mads a great constrie, whensat the other Ladys came, and altogether

## Emperour of Constantinople: PART. I.

marazed at this sudden aduenture, went to the Queens Chamber, where they reported how the Princesse was gone, but how, or when, they knew not. The Queen at these sydings suddenly arose, and comming to her daughters Chamber found it too true, whiche made her fall into such pitiful acclamations, farre surpassing those of Blaguelona, when she lost her friend Peter of Province in the wood.

In these lamentings she returned to the King, whose hauidesse exceeded judgement, for the losse of his daughter, and then same divers Lords and Gentlemen, who declared that the strange Knights were likewise departed. Which raised such a rumour through all the Cittie, that they had stollen away the Princesse. The King understanding the generall sorrow for his daughters absence, said. In sooth my friends, if these Knights have done such service for me, they have sufficently recompenced themselves, in doing me the greatest dishonour they could devise: yet will I not condemne them so much as my Daughter, for that I am perswaded shee procured this mischance. But now I well perceue what credit a man may repose in his enemy: for Palmerin euermoze serued the Emperour of Allemaigne, then hardly could hee be true to me. Yet is it in diame soone to blame him, or his companions, if they tooke the advantage of their owne intents. But now there is no remedy, my daughter is in the company of most chosen Knights: if she haue done well, or ill, hereafter her deserts will answer her misdemeanour. Thus the King would not suffer any pursue after them, though the Queen and her Ladys earnestly intreated him: he answering that no such mone shold be made, for a Childe so ungratefull and disobedient, but having committed an action so vile and execrable, she shold no moze account of her as her childe. And well may we (quoth he) to refuse her, in that she would leave her Parents, and depart with Strangers: happy

# The Historic of Palmerin D'Oliva,

might we have accounted our selues, if we had lost her in her Infancie. The Queen, seeing her Loy so impatient, appeased his displeasure so well as she could, because she wold not income him so much. Within few daze after the Duke of Gaule arriued at the Court, who most of all grieved at these unappy tydings, wherefore he perswaded the King to proclaim open warre against the Emperour of Allemaigne, assuring him, that the Knight which most commonly accompanied Palmerin, was Trineus the Capversus sonne. When the King heard the Dukes speches, forgetting his anger, he rejoiced, esteeming himselfe happy, and his Daugther wise, in matching her selfe with such a Husband: and if she had made her chosse among all the Princes of the world, he could not haue sorted out one comparable in honour. In bytise answered the Duke, that for a Daughter so lost, he wold not seeke the death of his louers and Subjects: but being one of Fortunes changes, he could not withstand it, and thus the King wisely and patiently indued his grise.

## CHAP. LXIII.

How Vrbanillo and the Prince Trineus Esquire, arrived at the Emperours Court, and what great joy their coming procured.



The Willing in this place taketh occasion to speake, how the King of France vally expected newes from Palmerin, as concerning his intent of Marriage, betwene his Daugther and the Prince Trineus: but seeing he heard no tydings at all, he determined to send his Ambassadors to the Emperour, electing for chese in this embassage

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

embassage the Count of Armignac, to whom he gaue full power and authority to conclude the Marriage betwene Trineus and his Daughter Lucimania, as also of the Prince Palimarda with his Sonne and heire. The King dispatching all things for his Ambassage, sent many Barons and Knights of name to accompany the Count, to countenance the matter with more royaltie and magnificence, and in this manner they came to Gaunt, where the Emperour being adverstised of their arriall, made no great account thereof, such was his griefs for his Sonnes absence and Palmerins, of whom he could not haue any tydings, as also for the sole his Army sustainted in England. But while the messenger sic in the Ambassadors of France stayed with the Emperour, Vrbanillo and the Prince Esquire entred the Hall, whose presence highly contented the Emperour, as embracing them very louingly, he demanded for Palmerin and his Sonne Trineus, when they delivering there Letters, and the Emperour perswaded therby of their speedy returne, was greatly contented, saying to the Ambassador messenger. Thy friend, seeing I haue heard such long looked for tydings of my Sonne, you may returne to the Count your Master, desiring him to come when he thinks convenient, and he shall be heartily welcome to me: with this answer the messenger departed. Then the Emperour taking Vrbanillo by the hand, said: Tell me now I pray thee, wherares thy Master? Where is he? Is my Son with him? By gracieus Lord quoth the Dwarfe, where your noble Sonne abideth, there is my Master, both of them in good disposition, and highly honoured. And herof I can advise your Majestie, that you haue a Son, who good reason ought to be numbered among the best Knights living, for such honorablie experiance hath he made of his irostiche, that perpetuall memoire will record his deeds of Chivalrie: what else remaineth you shall know at their coming, which will be so soon as they can possibly. I ever perswade

## The Historie of Palmerin D'Olva,

ved my selfe, said the Emperour, that in the company of so good a knight as Palmerin, my sonne could not but purchase credit and honour : Wherefore seeing they haue such prosperity of health, I care the less for their stay, but welcome are they whensoeuer they come.

By this time Polynarda baird of the Dwarres arruall, which greatly pleaseing her, she said to Brionella; I pray thee sweet friend goe speedily and seeke the Dwarre, that we may know what is become of our Lords and my brother Trincus. Brionella, who longed to heare of her loue Sir Ptolome, whom well she knew to be one of the company, with all speed accomplished the Princesse commandement, and found the ioyfull messenger with the Emperour, who take great delight in the Dwarres reports : but his Harte by perceiving with what chearesfull countenance she came to bring Vrbanillo to her Lady the Princesse, bad him go with her, hoping by his meanes his Daughters extreme sadness would be comforted. Brionella being forth of the Emperours presence, embrased him many times to know his sydings, when the Dwarre not ignorant of the Ladys passions, delueraud Ptolomes letter to chsere her : but when the Princesse saw Vrbanillo comming, with the teares in her eyes she ranne apace to meet him, and casting her armes about his necke, embrased him very often, saying: Tell me Vrbanillo, tell me, how fares my Brother and thy Master Palmerin ? Madams, quoth the Dwarre, so well as your owne heart can wch, and will ere long be hcer with you. Then delueraud he the Letter from Trincus, which certified her of his shert returne, and that he wold bring with him the thing she most esteemed. But the wch knowing shes expected other matters, and that her Brothers mesdine was not sufficient for her care, he gave her his masters letter, when she hastly breaking open the seale, found the Ring which her louall friend had sent her, and after she had welcomed it with many devout kisses, she put it on her finger

## Emperour of Constantiople. PART I.

finger, with these words. I charge thee keeps this token safely, in witness of the Knights gentleesse that sent it, whom my heart hath made speciall choyse of above all other. Then reading the Letter, and discreetly considering (not without great crosse of teares) the sweet words, humbl supplications, entitl rymes, and extreme passions, that her friend continually suffered for her loue, delueraud many bitter sighes, she said: Ah my true and louall friend, I desire well, and take in good part your cause of absence, being assured, that if possibly you could returne sooner, nothing shuld stay you from the place, where the cnyng remedy of your dolorous grieses abideth. But seeing for my loue you may not forswake my Brother, I pray you for your continual safety, and speedy conduction to your longing desires, that mine eyes ewerwatched with tedious expectation, and my heart neare tyred with bothele desyngs, may by your presence be thowtly conforted. Afterward Vrbanillo bytely reported to her the noble actions of his Lord and Master, the loue of Trincus to the Princesse Agriola, describing her beauty and rare perfections, & her cuper Polinarda thus answered:

Welcume me Vrbanillo, if the Princesse be so faire as thou sayest she is, her great vertues and floricall louelike comparable, enuy and false report shal not impeach her, to be reckoned amoungst the most happy Ladys of the world, and her desires will be as honorably effected, as with vertuous thoughts she first began them. Who like (I doubt not) will happen to thy Master, for fortune hath euermore so specially favoured him, as now it were against reason she shuld alter her countenance. So departed the Dwarre from the Princesse, returning to the Emperour, who by no meanes could get any other syding of his Son then to hat you have heard, which made him doubt the dwarre ingled with him. The next day the Emperor sent his chiefe Lords and Barons, to conduct the French Ambassadoys to Court, which

# Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

was sumptuously hanged with Tapistry, especially the great Hall, which was adorned with costly cloth of gold and rich Purple, as it had borne the Hallace of Salomon. The Ambassadours entertraied with marvellous Royalty, and having delivred the summe of their Ambassage, the Emperour answered, that hee would conferre thereon with his Councell, in me any while they might returne to their loeunge. After ther were departid the Hall, the Emperour demanded of the Princes, Circars, and the rest of his nobilitie, if these matrimonages of his Sonne and daughter, with the heire and Princesse of France, might not be graunted as well for the utilite and honor of the Empire, as for the generall benefit of Christendome, commandinge them to speake their iudgements without feare. The Lords alledged their answerew, that the mariage was so good and the alliance so honourable, as it was no way to be disliked. I will then (quoth he) talke with the Empresse, that she may understand her Daughters opinion, and then my Lordes of France shall be answered. So leauing them he went unto the Empresse Chamber, to whom he reported his agreement with his Councell, whch pleased her likewise maruellous well; but when she had a little conserued on the matter, he answered, that but littel could be sayd before Trineus returned home againe. You reason well, quoth the Emperour, but in meane time I pray you sond your daughters judgement, that we may returne our brother of France some certaine answer. Which he promised to doe, and so departing from her Lord, he went to her daughters chamber, where having commanded her Ladys aside, he thus began. Fairie daugher, it is the Emperours pleasure and mine, that you marry with the eldest Sonne and heire of France, and your Brother Trineus with his Sister, for he is one of the most renowned Kings in Europe, and his Son reuante among the best Knights of the world: for whch good sorte you may thank the heauens, that so great a Prince offers his

Sonne

# The Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva,

Sonne to be your Husband. Advise your selfe of your answere for by your opinion must the Ambassadours be dispatched hence, who came to the Court for nothing else but to conclude these honoorable marriages. Polinarda hearing the words of her mother, was surprised with such sudden heauiness, as she could not tell what to answer: but fearing the Empresse shuld perceiue that her Love was already determined, with a sad countenance, thus replied.

Madam, you know what promise I made my brother, the day when he departed from the Court, in the presence of you, and all the Nobility, that I would not marry before his returne: and me thinks I were greatly to be blamed, and well worthy grieuous reprehension, if I shoulde so falsifie my word, which I cannot do, without impeaching of mine Honour,

And herein shall I follow the laudable vertue of the Emperor, my Father, whs evermoze esteemed his promise above all earthly possesions. Besids, I can assure you that my brother will never marry with the Princesse Lucimania: for her Loves are many degrees beyond her, and (may I speake it without offence) one of the most beautifull Ladys that ever Nature framed. Thus Madame, my Father and you have excuses sufficient and availlable, wherewith to answer the King of France. It may be (quoth the Empresse) that your Brother loves elsewheres: but I can tell ye, that neither he nor you shall doe any thing, contrary to the Emperors commandement. Polinarda, saying her Mother perll in her opinion, bit in her sorowes with many secret sighes: yet knew she so well how to dissemble her passions, as the Empresse could not discerne her private meaning. So returned she to the Emperor, advertising him of her Daughters answere: wheras he was so offended, as in great anger he caste himselfe to his daughter, saying: Why, holw now Daugher? Are you so bold to disobey my commandement? Do dare you repugne against my will? All to come end that you habe doubled with your Mother: for (will ye say) it shall

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva,

be as I have appointed. I know right well dread Lord and Father, (quoth he) that I ought no way to deny your good pleasure: But yet rather will I dye a thousand deaths, then consent to match with the Son of France, considering what promise I have made unto my deare Brother: and if I should but once so siffer dishonour my selfe, as not to regard what I have promised, I shoud think my selfe unlykly hereafter to be called your Daughter. He has stood her resolute in her answer, and therewith had such abundance of teares, as the Emperour was constrained to tell the Ambassadores, that the matrages could not be concluded till the returne of Trineus, notwithstanding he granted all the articles of their Embassage. The Princesse qualifiying her griefe so well as he could, sent for the Dwarf, and taking him by the hand, said. Alas my friend, I am now in the greatest perplexity in the world, nevertheless, one thing comfortes me: that thou behovdest the true love and loyalty I bear thy master, which never shall be broken, what ever become of me. And would to God he were now here, then would I speak openly without feare of any, that I am his, and he mine. Madame ( quoth the Dwarf ) if you continue faithfull to my Master, perswade your selfe of his assurance, so he building on your constance, takes such continuall pleasure in rememb'ring you, that it is the only meane that preserves his life: and you may be bold to credit me, that if your Brothers lone did not withhold him, he would have bin here long ere this, but he will come sone enough ( I hope ) to end this doubt.

As for me, I am of the opinion that heauen will not suffer so good a Knight to dye, but first will permit him to see his misteris. Die: quoth the princesse, sooner let all the Knights in the world end their dayes, and the eldest Sonne of France likewise, though he love me so dearely, so might I bee rid of these importunate Ambassadores. The Emperour seeing he could get no other answere of his Daughter, conclus-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

ed with the French Ambassadores, that so soon as his Sonne was returned, he shold be aduertised, and so soz that time they might depart: but the Emperour and he first bestowed on them many rich presents, and so in short time they arrived againe in France, where great joy was made in hope of these Marriages, albeit they little thought the Prince Trineus would tarry so long. Above all other, the French Prince was most hoyll, hearing the Counte of Armignac report the wonderfull beauty of Polinarda: but the good Lady was of another minde, soz she had rather bestake her selfe to a Cloyster, then to break her faith to Palmerin, whom she loued so constantly. Thus leade we her conserning with Urbanillo, returning to Palmerin, and the Prince Trineus.

## CHAP. LXIII.

How Palmerin being thus on the Sea, caused Trineus there to marry the Princesse Agriola.



His noble company being thus on the sea, having wylde at will, sayled with such expedition, as in four dayes they had gotten farre enough from England, and the Prince seeing the Princesse Agriola very penkue and sad, comforting her with many swete welcomes and kisses, and taking her by the hand, thus spake.

O Scueralgne Creatour, how shall I render sufficient thankes and prayse to the, in granting me the onely thing I desire? Ah swete Madame, and my onely deare Mistresse Agriola, how much is your Servant indebted to you? Hath any Knight more cause to honour and excell his Lady then I?

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. I.

Welue me faire Princeſſe, ſuch are the rare effects of your  
gracious Nature, and I ſo toysfull of my happy Fortune, as  
neither friend or Father ſhall fetch you againe from me. If  
my life might endure the length of ten mens, and every day  
I ſhould accomplish wonders in your good Seruice, yet could  
I not remunerate the leaſt part of your Princeſſe deſerts.  
But if your Love be ſuch to me, as I am right well alſoed  
it is, let me intreat you to forbearre this heauynge, and banish  
from your thoughts your melancholy humours: for ſo long you  
ſo ſadde and peniſhur, I ſuffer a torment wofuler then death it  
ſelfe. Ife let me perceiue ( how little ſoever it be) that my  
preſence may be to your liking, and our preſent Enterprize  
ſomewhat more pleaſing: I ſire to the Heauens with con-  
cēlt of my ſincere, and value my fortune aboue the reach of hu-  
mane capacity. In stead of teares, let vs vſe quaint tearines,  
and for these dumpe, pleasant imaginacions: perſwade your  
ſelue Madame, you are now in his euſtody that honours you  
for your vertues, reverenceth you for your diuine perfections,  
extolleth you for incomparabile merites, and lueth for you,  
with his very uitermoſt endeauours. Thinke not Madame,  
though you haue left your Parents, the fault is not pardona-  
ble: For the new alliance wherein you haue combined your  
ſelue, shall one day gladd you with your ſpeciall content: that  
what you doe imagine now a dangerous offence, will be im-  
puted an act of prouident and Princeſſe discretion. Then ſhall  
you finde it true, what Palmerin hath ſpoken, and his pro-  
poules of preferment, and Imperiall dignitie, ſhall be both right-  
ly and ſufficiently performed. Let these perſuasions, if not  
my intreaties, excell these paſſions, and procure better com-  
fort. Madame (quoth Palmerin) though you haue left your  
native Country, consider the occaſion, the loue of a mighty  
Prince, and the heavenly appointment, that your noble ver-  
tues ſhould be coupled together, hath brought you ſt am England,  
to ſit on the Imperiall ſeat in Allemaigne.

How careſall we haue bane of your honour, your ſelue  
can

## Palmerin D'oliva: THE SECOND PART: OF THE HONOVRABLE HISTORIE OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Continuing his rare fortunes, Knightly  
deeds of Chiualry, happy ſuccesse in love,  
and how he was crowned Emperour of  
Conſtantinople.

Herein is likewife concluded the variable troubles  
of the Prince Trineus, and faire Agriola the  
Kings daughter of England: with their  
fortunate Marriage.

Translated by A. M. one of the Messengers of  
her Majesties Chamber.

*Patere aut abſine.*



LONDON.

Printed for B. ALSOR and T. FAUVCER, dwelling in

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

a precious Jewell you receive of them in requitall of your  
Service, or acceptance of any amorous contentment.

Even wouldest not (gentle Knight) it to see you, I have left  
my Country : for beside your great valour, boun yano long  
aloy, which never can be sufficiently commendid: your beaute,  
abilitie, and most rare perfections, deserve not only  
the Lobs of the greatest Lady and PrinceEs, but their con-  
stant service likewise, if they but consider theire owne ou-  
ties. If then your vertues and gifts of nature are of such ha-  
gue amercy, what may we imagine of her selfe, who is  
your dauly Lady and Mistresse, and above all other is hono-  
red with your faitfull service, as well records the memory  
of the b. mrs. *Cleant*? Palmerin hearing himselfe so com-  
mended by such an excellent Queene, blushed with bashful-  
nesse, and durably shap'd this answer. Madam, so faire am-  
iable a n. I, to deserve the Love and good will you beare me,  
as never will fortune labour me sufficiently to recompence  
the least part of this Princely kindnesse. Yet hereof faire  
Queene, you may assure your selfe, that you have a Knight  
so forward in your service, as nothing shall withhold him  
from executing your commandement, though the penalty of  
my life were enjognes thereon.

Trust me (quoth the Queen) you shallour promiseth  
no leffe then you speake of; and if I haue taken any paines  
for you, I thinke my selfe now thoroughly satisfied: let it suffice  
you then, that I account me fortunate not the least, ha-  
ving gain'd such place in your good opinion. These and such  
like speeches passed betwixt them, till they came to Alfa-  
reno's Palace, where they spent the rest of the Day in di-  
versite of pleasures: the Queene intreating Palmerin and  
Ororo the next day to dine with her in her Lodging, wheres-  
by she used unmercifully to feate them. The next day at  
least the clocke, there two young Princes came to see her,  
hanging her in a gaudy Hall, which was richly hanged with  
*Cloth* of *Gold*, and therin two a faire Cupboard garnished

# Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

with the most costly plate that ever was seen: for the base or  
piece was cleane Gold, embelished with pretious stones,  
beside divers other inestimable Orange Cups and Glasses  
of Agatha. What their Service at dinner was, I leave  
to the judgment of Ladies desirous of favour. Yet this I  
dare well say, that the Chards were so rare and exquisite,  
and abounding in such plenty, as though she had them daily  
at her command. The Tables withdrawne, the Queen  
ooke each of the Princes by the hand, and setting bothe  
betwixne them, with a sweet smiling countenance she be-  
gan thus.

I pray you (gentle Knights) to tell me, which of you is  
most affected to the service of Love, and follows it with  
greatest endeavour? Gladly would I be resolved by you all,  
but I know the certainty as well as yont selves?

Madam (quoth Palmerin) if you have such knowledge  
of our dispositions, well may our answer be excused. Very  
true (said the Queen) especially you, of whose Loyalty the  
Prince Maurice is so notable a witness. Now I thinke  
you, which of you both most mistrust the intentment of her  
Grace, to whom he is most devo't in Love, let him not give  
over the purſuit of his desire: but rather let me intell you  
continuall your Love with much more force, as to those  
renowned Ladies, who by their vertues and graces, once  
boastingly chalenged you from all others: for I dare assyue you  
such a successsive end if you will, as with speciall condicione  
you shall finde your affectionate desire. Ife bytome for-  
sight of this assurance, there no question to be demanded that  
k. Ororo, who till then despaired: but now so happy he re-  
left the place to Palmerin, who was desirous to ren-  
dert same privateely with the Queene: therin behin meane  
time he debt eth with another Dame, and Palmerin saying  
the occasion so fit, began his tale in this manner. I can  
not forget (faire Queene) when you sent your Dame to me  
at the Souldans Court: that after her message deliv'red, the

## The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

said to me, that you were acquainted with farther secrets, concerning my estate. For this cause I intreat your highnessse, if you doe not imagine me too impotunate: that it might please you to acquaint me with my father and mother, for that above all other things I most desire. The Queen amazed at this demand, thus answered. Know gentle Knight, that what the Lady in this matter said to you, is also what my selfe ebo[n] no[n] promised you: com[m]un th[is] not from me, for one of my Knights acquainted me therewith, he being the most skilfull in the Magicall sciences, that is in all Turke. And now he is returned into his owne Country, and no other answer could I get of him: but that you are the Sonne of the most logall, redoubted, and valiant Prince in the world, whom before you have any further knowledge of, you shall deliver from death, and that very shortly. Beside, you l[ie]ve a Lady, who in all perfectnes of nature, fortune or spott, hath not her equall.

In sooth (quoth Palmerin) I shall account my selfe right happy, to deliver my Father from such danger, and heaven I beseech that it may so be. On these tearmes came Altarano, and the dancing began, which constrained them to breake off talkie, and step into the dance, in which delight they spent the time till Supper was summened, till which advertisement, they were as well, as was Ogyer the Dauncaria. For never was Iido such an affectionate and trice of Alas, recounting the ruine of the Trojans, then to is the Queen of Thartus to Palmerin: towh[er]es when her heart was so intirred, and with secret fire so busse are consumed, as both the celles before the fire. Which set at the Banquet, Palmerin and Olorico on the one side, and the Queen and Altarano on the other, the two ladies attending on them were two Ladies, who had in charge to give the one, the sleepeing and dangerous drinke, and to the other, the amorous and delicate, yet in effect to provoke sorgetfulness: so well did the Ladies discharge their office,

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

office, and the Princes take this mixed drinke so substantiellly, as they could hardly keare sleepeing at the Table: wherefore every one arising, the Queen gave the goodnight to Altarano, who presently went to his lodging. When were these two sleepe Princes conducted to their Chamber, where being in Bed, they slept soundly, and the Queen comming to them, accompanied with those truelle Ladies that waited at Supper: took the Prince Olorico, carrying him to another Bed, soz he was so charmed as he could not awake.

Afterwards the Ladies departed, and the Queen went to Bed to Palmerin, whom she abusid at her owne pleasure. A matter not to be esteemed fabulcus, in that other have bene brought into the like case, as well may it selfe Bangiena, who endurid these sweet skirmishes, bee in she would not manifest the history of Ycul her selfe, and Tritham. The Queen having satisfied her muchall desire, caused Olorico to be brought into his place again, and then returned to her owne Chamber.

But nelo this Enchantment lossing his operation, a faire she appeared to Palmerin, resembling his Lady Polynarda, who said. Ah Palmerin, dissolue Traytor and Adulterer, how much are they deceivib[us], that reput thee a logall and faithfull Lover? Ah wretched, unworthy of so god a nature, having so intirously forgotten me. Deest thou not consider thy great offence, committed against the God of Heaven: meeting with a Clever man more brute then brutishesse it selfe, and thy basspall treason against my selfe? Be assurid, that if thou presently forslake not her company: I will in her forget thy fault, but chastise thee continually, as a dissembling reprobate. So she departed, Palmerin increasing her to pardon this injury, which she shoulde not heare, but flung away in great anger: and he awaking, brake forth into these speeches.

Ah unhappy wretch that I am, thus to lose the gracie

ous

# The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

was favour of my Mistresse. These words awaked the Prince Olorico, who embracing him in his arms, demanded the cause of his sorrow; but Palmerin was so surprised with greate, as he would make no answer, but fell dead to bed in a swoone. Olorico fearing he was dead, cried out for helpe, wherat the Duane arose, and casting her Mantle about her, came to know the occasion of this clamour: and finding Palmerin in breathlesse, she called to so many present remedies, as extinguished the passionate heat. Palmerin seeing the Duane so neare him, clothed himselfe immediately, and departed the Chamber, commanding his people to probue themselves, for he would repaire twice within an hours space. Neither could the earnest intreaties of the Duane, nor cautions perswassions of Alia, availe, cause him to stay till dinner time: but his Carriage being sent before, and Alia still attending him, he came to take his leaue of the Duane, who very lamentable for this strange accident, left him at his departure:

Nexte day Palmerin, by heart affrayed by such an extreme greate, as he had alreadie bath for it, but as yet unreported further booke it, came in presence of the Duke of Lepartur, by chance to talke. O praye my goodme, that I do for my sake, as I can, extenuate, that I am fengered in my nexte journey to Alia. (spake Palmerin) Nowe my lord to remuner to thy quest, as I have done, as I have alreadie purfumall me. But I say to the contrary, and see I am affligte here, where I stande alone to remuner to her. Come my lord to Talleyrion, the Duke of Lepartur, saye thou hast lesse vaine to complayne, as all that I have will be by thy home.

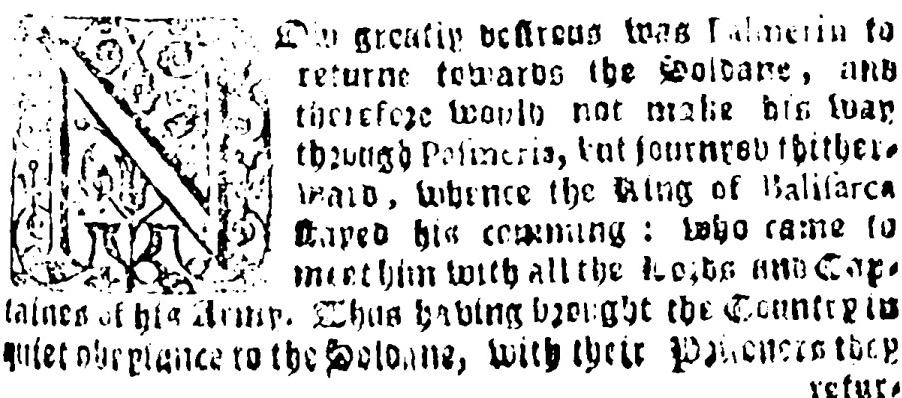
I saye my lord to remuner her backe spacher, bated, for her helpe, or saving me, being the mornigne come, and to finde what ther was se ne: So I saye my lord to remuner her backe spacher, so I lavelp as could be a. by day, and a. by night p, as in the Night time a partie

# Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

led great light. The Duane likewise, after she had given great Riches to the Admirall, returned to her owne Cittie, leading thenceforwards a very Chaste and Continent life, only for his sake, by whom in (short tyme) she sound her selfe conceaved with chid. And at the time appointed by nature, she was delivered of a g. dly Sonne, resembling his Father in brave countenance: whom the Mother caused to be named Palmerendos, as well in memorie of his Father Palmerin, as also of his Grandfatre Florendos, from their deriving his Name, as being the enely flower of Chivalry. And as Palmerin was vertuous, so did his Sonne follow him in all bountie, prudence, magnanimitie, knyghte, likevaltie, curiositie and humanitie: in which he had all the noble vertues that a Childe might receive from his father, as you may at large perceve in his historie. But because as yet his deces serue not to our purpose: we will leave him growing under his Mothers charge, and returns to them whom lately we left.

## CHAP. XXI.

How Palmerin to colour his intended and desirous Voyage into Christendome, perswaded the Souldane to send his Army to Constantinople, and what followed thereon.



On greatly desirous was Palmerin to returne towards the Souldane, and therefore would not make his way through Palmeris, but journeyed thitherward, whence the King of Balisarca stayed his coming: who came to meet him with all the Kodes and Capitanes of his Army. Thus having brought the Country in quiet obglance to the Souldane, with their Weapons they return-

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

returned towards his Princesse, sending word before of their speedy coming. The Soldane was not a little joyful of the event, as also of the fortunate victory against his enemies, wherefore he left the City of Caliphia, and determined to meet them at a Castle of Pierine, which he had lately built, it being because he feared to see the end of his Army, which was now conducted in better array, than before an intent to be seen in Asia.

The King of Balcarca caused the Captives to be lead before him (by his commandment) when they came in the Soldan's presence: stripping them of their Armour to the ground, and thereupon set upon flat faces kissing the Earth, prostrating themselves before him with great reverence. All these ceremonies finished, Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, and the other Chevaliers of the Field came, and kissing his Highness hand, he entertained them very graciously: and after he had embrac'd Palmerin, he would needs noe between them but the King of Balcarca. In this order rode he on to the Palace Gate, where his Lady Letitia and Alchidiana her Daughter, stuck up in vesture of surprising value, attended their coming: and after the accustomed reverence, on all sides entered the great Hall, where the Dauphine taking Palmerin by the hand, before her Lady and all his Ladies, thus spake.

My Palmerin, so well is your proesse and highty deeds of armes knowne to every one, as my praise cannot extoll them to advantage: Notwithstanding, I have lay before my Father, and all his Lords here present, that he is so much indebted to you, as he can never returne sufficient recompence. Whereupon uttered with such affection, were noted by every one, especially the Prince Olorico, and that at Palmerin made this answer to the Princesse: Madam, here may you behold the Prince of Araby, one of the best Knights that ever I knew, and who hath done more service to your Father and you in this Enterrie, than any

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

any other beside: For with his owne hand he slew Grammellus who was chiefe Leader of the Phrygians Army. Beside, such and so many have borne his rare Exploites, as no one that I know may be equalled with him. And all this he admitteth to your favour, wherein he earnestly desareth to conunge, so please you to accept him for your Knight: Considering this assurance before hand, that hereafter he will adventure his life in your cause, wheresoeuer it shall like you to command him. For this cause (Madam) you may not refuse him, being the man that among the Allyans, doth best deserve to be your Servant. Alchidiana, who well understood to what end his speeches tended, and the occasion why Palmerin thus spake, advised her selfe well, and returned this answer.

No helpe can our God, I knowe well that the Prince Olorico is as puissant and renowned as any man of whom I yet heard: notwithstanding, I hope the Soldan my Father will not be ingratesoll in the knowledge thereof, and that sufficiently I dare warrant you. But I desire you, faire Sir, to tell me how the Queen of Tharius intendes you, and what is your opinion of her? In god sooth Madame (answered Palmerin) She is one of the most courteous and vertuous Ladies that ever I came in company withall, and to whom I greatly desire to doe any service. You have good reason (quod. the Princesse) in that she came farre to see me, and discover her love: which others could as well accomplish, as good, or rather in Honour beyond her. If they wight rep of any ease in their passionate desires. Palmerin saying amaner to understand her meaning, entered into other time of talk, untill supper time, which finished, each came to their Chamber. Then the Prince being himself alone with his friend, thus spake. To my true friend Palmerin, how worshipablye and worthy says to be without compare, in all perfections that a knight ought to habe, Love enely excepted: Yet herein (if I be not deceived) you

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

doe for me against all reason, for a thousand times art thou  
more beloved, than your selfe can love any. Notwithstan-  
ding, for this default, if so it may be named, and for the  
words this dayesed in my presence to Alchidiana, I re-  
maine bound to your Service: for in truth you know not  
the good you did me, supporting my imperfection of speech  
when I was before my Highnesse. Yet know I not whence  
such a beauty should proceed, if not by being ratcheted  
With regard of her celestiall countenance, my over labou-  
red heart tooke me, and being too much too nooted in  
this languishing body: abandoned all the parts sensative,  
placing it selfe only in mine eyes, which never could trans-  
mit the mindes intent, contemplating beauty of so rare  
and especiall creation. And were it not my hope one-  
ly to please in you, compeling my small deserte, and the  
excellency of my Roote: long ere this had my soule forsaken  
her infortunate habitation, which so undiscrately fell into  
these oppressing passions. And this I earnestly intreat  
you to let her understand: in that I fears least the tempts  
happy alteration, to want of wisdom and civility. Tell  
me, quoth Palmerin, I promise you my uttermost ability,  
and so much will I doe, as one friend may for another, to  
discharge my selfe of the promise which heretofore I made  
ye.

And let me intreat you on mine owne behalfe, to re-  
move that opinion of speciall lobs, which you report the  
Princess bears me, being not such as you doe imagine:  
for (noble Prince, and my deare friend) yeanted me be-  
spaire of the benefit whereof I have so solemnely assured  
you. After many other speeches, they slept till the next  
morning, wher clotching themselves in their richest gar-  
ments, they went and gave the good morrow to the Sol-  
dane, who very honourably thanked them; and Palmerin  
espying convenient occasion, thus began.

My Lord, you have sufficient experiance, that by the  
bounty

# Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

bounty and great favour of the Gods, you have obtained  
victory against your enemies, to the no little content of your  
Subjects: all which being so happily finished, base were  
the thought, to feare the percellion of higher Enterprizes.  
Wherefore my Lord, I thinke it expedient, so it may stand  
with your good liking, considering your provision for the  
Sea, is in such readinesse, your people likewise acquainted  
with your intent, before we medled with the Brethren of  
Amarano, came daily in scropes to offer their Service: that  
now you send your Army to Constantinople, for your an-  
swer once heard, right swone will we Embatke our selves,  
and set forwards on our voyage. For the rest, I pray you  
deliver these Prisoners, to be used as your slaves: But as  
for the Prince, I think (having seen the fortune of their  
Brethren, and their owne bad successe in Armes) that they  
will serve you with continuall loyalty. My Sonne, (quoth  
the Saldan) let all be done as you have apppointed, for such  
is my confidence in you, that this your intent cannot but  
sort to a good end: wherfore my Gallies and all things be-  
ing ready furnished, depart when you please, having first  
sent your Soldiers aboard.

The Prince Olorico being present, offered againe to  
go in this Voyage, with like number of men, as he brought  
against the Brethren of Amarano: For which the Sol-  
dane greatly thanked him, promising him such satisfaction  
at his returne, as would agree with his owne content. Al-  
chidiana taking in ill part, the words of Palmerin on the  
Prince Oloricos behalfe sent for him to come speake with  
her, which he did, and finding her very sad and melancholy,  
he demanded if any one had done her any wronge, and  
what the cause might be of her pessimaltie? To my deare  
friend (quoth she) home in I but we agreed to bring no one  
Loy in the world, bath so many countreyes as my  
selfe? Alas, my heart hath chosen you for a lonely Lord  
and Friend, thinking to finde place worthy my conceit,  
and

and that year Love would answer me with the like : but in  
wright I can perceiue, I am too much begalled, for you, ey-  
ther as ingratefull, or carelesse, use effecting speeches to me,  
impostring no other end, but that in leading you, I should  
take the Prince Olorico for my Husband. Do you imagine  
me so mutabile and inconstant, that I will, or can lobe any  
other but you ? D<sup>r</sup> that my affection entirely settled so high  
can breake so haughty a downesell, as to like the man so much in-  
rejexce you ? And (which most of all offendeth me) not  
contented to mocke me, in obtaining my kindeone lode : but  
discourteously woldst persuade me to chuse another ? Let  
all our Gods be judge, if I habs not just cause to complaine  
of you, albeit I habe greater reason to hate and despise my  
waine falle : Because that I have more then deserued you.  
Love, yet (as too much unwise) I cannot consider, that in  
the heare of an ingratefull person, Love hath no place of  
refiance abiding. But letting our Gods have in such sort  
subjected me, as against my will I am constrained to lode  
saine enemite; in daie were illo me to resist against them,  
that they beholding the unspotted lode of the one, maye  
the end punish the ingratitudine of the other. Thus think-  
ing to continue longer speech, so many violent Ughes inter-  
cepted her, as she was not able to proffer one word more,  
whereby Palmerin enforced, thus answered. I beseech you  
Madam, crosse me not with these vngodly words, for al-  
though the Prince is so worthy to be beloved, as any man  
that ever I saw: yet were I very much unprovided of  
wit, and a niers stranger to good consideration, shoulde I re-  
sule that speciall felicity, then whiche I can desyre no great-  
er.

I knowe (sweetable) that you Love me suffisely, per-  
suade your selfe then, that my Loyaltie is no lesse, ney-  
can death cause me to gakeneay the promises I habe made  
you: and were it not to the great disadvantage of myne he-  
nour, to saye to this honenable Prince your Father had  
intended,

intended, which might procure him to miscreance of me :  
assure your selfe I would forsake Dignities, Arms, and all,  
to do the service you worthily deserve, which at my retorne  
shall be effected. Palmerin dissimiled the matter so well, as  
the Princesse was well pacified : and taking his leave, re-  
turned to the Soldan : Before whom he caused to be brought  
the Princes, and Lords that were prisoners, and at his re-  
quest Maulicus gave them Liberty, with this charge, that  
they should serve him in this War. Whiche that they might  
the better accomplish, he gave them Horsse, Armez, and all  
other things necessary, making all possible speede could be  
devised, that his Army might set forward to Sea.

## C H A P. XXII.

How Palmerin Sayling with the Soldans Armie, was  
brought by Tempest into the Sea of Almaigne, where  
he took Landing with the Prince Olorico.



Almerin quickly consented so to Em-  
barke the Armie) destring the Prince  
Olorico to accompany him to the Ha-  
ven, to the end they might make choyce  
of the best Vessels for themselves : and  
surveying them all, they found a godly  
Carracke, new and very well appoin-  
ted, wherein maner Prisoners lan chat-  
ned, who formerly had been taken by the Soldans Gallies,  
and other Robers of the Moores. D<sup>r</sup>. whom Palmerin de-  
manded what people they were ? They answere that they  
were Christians, and had of long time laved there in that  
thaldome. Palmerin not a little glad of thise news, as-  
ked of what Countrey they were, whereupon one of them  
that could well speake the Arabian tongue, thus answere :  
We are all borne in Almaigne, to whom Fratene  
halb

## The Hiltory of Palmerin D'Oliva.

bath exceeded in crueltie. These words were marbaulous welcome to Palmerin, and soz which inwardly he thanked his God: but the better to dissemble his joy, he thus spake: This Country shoulde seeme to be very farrs from hence, because I never heard thereof before. So finding this to tell fit for his purpose, he appointed it for himselfe, and the Prince Olorico, discharging all others that were therein, two Knights onely excepted, to whose charge hee committed the Christians: causing his Horses, Tents, and all other necessaries, to be carried aboard, as well the Prince Oloricoes, as his owne, accomplishing every thing in such order, as within thre dayes after the Souldiers were ready to depart. And now the day is come to launch away, with the Soldane and other Cabozlans, accompanied the King of Balifaria to the Haven: But the faire Alchidiana would not be gone, by reason of her grieke and sorrow for her Friends departure: For when she came to take her leave of Palmerin in his Chamber, she fell (in a manner dead) at his feet, and soone after she delivered these lamenting speches:

Edys is no common farewell, my belched Lord, which you now take of me, but say it is my very last Adieyn: for my heart perswades me, that I shall never see you more, because the extremities of my sorowes are such, as well I know I cannot long endure. Adieu then sweet friend, who instead of say and comfort, leavest me in despaire, whiche never can have end but by my death.

God ihadam say not so, (qd. Palmerin) for I hope right soone to see you againe. So leaving her, Olorico and he went towards the Haven, the Prince being so passionate to leave her sight, by whose sweet looks his life was maintained as had not his friendly companion comforted him, he had bin nable to depart the Wallace. But being come to the port, and seeing the walues and sea serdicable, loth to leide the ship with any longer say, they came to take their

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

their leave of the Soldane, who tooke great care for their contentment, and many times embrasing Palmerin, commanding to him the disposition of all his affaires, said: My noble Sonne and Friend, I baw to you in presence of our God, that if you returne hither againe with victory, with such honours I will endow you, as shall be sufficient for the whole world to talke on. Palmerin humbly kissing his hand, went abord, the Mariners hysing Sails, lanched forth into the Sea: with such a hysse noyse of Drums, Trumpets, Clarions, Cornets, Fife, and other Instruments, as though Heaven and Earth would have encountered together. Palmerin thus floting on the government of Neptune, imagined how with safetie he might for sake his company, wherefore he commanded to unbinde all the Christians. For (quoth he to Olorico) seeing they are Mariners, and well skill'd in the Art of Navigation, they may land us in good stead, if time so require, or any sudaine Tempest shou'd attaile us: but the better to beguile his owne people, he caused them to sacre their safty, all service to him.

The night being come, and he serteing that every one slept soundly: called two of the Christians, and in the Almaigne tongue thus began. My friends, give th me to God for your Fortune, in that you Christians be be found one of your Faith and Religion, who hath gaide hope shortly to deliver you from these Heathen helthounds: therfore seare apart, and regard well your Commandant, if you can compasse any meanes to get the Coast of Almaigne. The Christians more glad then can be expressed, answered, that they wold accomplish his commandement, and therfore he shoulde repose his trust in them. About midnight, as God wold, began a great Tempest and blustering of wind, so that in despight of the Pilots and Mariners, the Fleet was severd in many parts: but the Christians perceiving that this Claude served well for their availe, knew so well

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

how to exder their Course, that in ther time they got farre enough from their compaines, and thus continued the Wind soe tane to twelve dayes, for which Palmerin devoutly thanked God.

So happily escaped Palmerin with his Almaignes, that one of them at length told him, they were neare the Streates of Gib.altar : soz which Palmerin not a little joyful, said : Nowch it they myght passe Spaine without feare, and so the sooner traç Almaigne. But when they began to Coast th. Straite, the Turkish Partiners were amazed, saying that the Christians knwo not their Course, being more then eight thousand Leagues sooth of their Empyre.

Palmerin fearing to be discovered before he came to his intent, answered in anger ; that the Christians knew their Course better then they did, bidding them to prate no more on paine of thir livs : which threatening, presently drove them all to silence. Afterwards, they sailed with so god Wind, as they took Landing at a Port in Almaigne, which at this day is calld Toledo : wherein the Christians said to Palmerin, how that w is the place whero they were borne, where (if so he p'eased) they desired their liberarie. Palmerin assuring them of their request, answered that he himselfe would land there, and therefore went to it on horse, seigning to seek fresh Water, and all things accomplished to his owne desire : he caused his horse to be brought to th, and Oloricoes likewise, who was impertante to bears him company. No sooner was Palmerin on thore, but he knoaled downe, giving thankes to God for his safe delivrance. The Merchants and Mariners of the Citle, saing them whom they thought lost in the Sea, more then ten yeres before, were greatly abashed, welcoming them home with exceeding joy : but they answered, that they ought rather to thank the Knight in greene Arme, for he delivered us from the Moores and Infidels, without Ransome.

Olorico

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

Olorico amazed at these signes of joy, as also when he saw Palmerin pray, knew not well what to thinke : which Palmerin presently perceiving, and to resolve him of all doubts whatsoeuer, said. No longer ned I new my god Lord and Friend, to hide the affaires and secrets of my heart from you: know th. rezo, that I am a Christian, and a Gentleman of the Emperours Court of Almaigne. But that which mest of all gribeth me, is that I am constrainted to forlaine your company, and returne againe to my Lord, soz too much should I offend my God, to goe with you in the Seldans Service. Wherefore my loving friend, let me intreat you to hold me excused, swearing to you (by the faith of a Knight) that whether else it shall like you to see, I will accomplish your mind: in any thing. I intreat you likewise, to entertaine all my Squires and Gentlemen into your Service, and among them to share all my treasure in the ship, because I will have nothing with me bat my Horse and Armour. And notwithstanding all this, fear not to present your selfe before the Seldane and Alchidiana : soz to them will I write such matter of you, as they shall accept you in my place, and with as great honour as ever they did me. If Heaven so favour me, as I may come to the knowledge of my Father, I will certifie you with the truth of all. As for my counterfeiting to be dumbe, was onely but to awaite opportunity, when with safety I might escape from thence.

I Olorico at the first was amazed, what may be sudged of him now? Notwithstanding, he loved Palmerin so perfectly, as he returned him this answer. Although Sir Palmerin, we are of contrary Faith and Opinion, yet hath your Noblenes and humanity gained such privilege over me, that as you have long time lived a Christian among the Turkes, so for your sake will I live a Turke among the Christians, dissembling in like sort as you did, and never shall any occasion force me to forlaine you, till you have

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

found your Father, and know if he be descended of the Souldans blood. No honor will it be for me now, to returne again to the Almain Princes, and as for my people, I joyce not though they go backe again with my Treasure: so on my Knighthood, I will be no richer then you, nor will I reserve any thing with me, but what belongs to a Knight Errant, whitch is Horse and Armes. For the rest, let Fortune do the best she can, I hope for all this, one day to be R. of Arabia. Then noble Friend, be not offended, for I will beare you compaine: if death or strong imprisonment doe not with hold me. Palmerin embracing him saith.

Ah worthy Prince, so noble is your Mind, and replete with Loyalty, as perswads your selfe to finde me your loyal Brother, and fellow in Armes, never to forsake you while I can lift my Sword, so please you to abide with me. So calling the chielest of them in the Ship, they said as much to them as you have heard, commanding them not to quare from Arabia, before they heard some other taynges. As so: their strange concert at these newes, I bequeath to pent judgments, yet durst they nyt gainsay their Dafters: but launching late the depe, sailed backe again into their own Countrey.

Palmerin and Olorico for this night lodged in the Citye, to refresh themselves: and the next Morning, after they had taken leade of the Marchants, they delidered, they set forward on their journey. Continuing their travaille thre dayes together, at length they met a Knight, whusaign them Achmed after the Turkish Manner, said. Gentleman. God save ye, if I shoulde not forme troublome to you, because I mege you to be Strangers: I would gladly know if you could tell me any tidings of two Knights, which long since left this Countrey. How were they named (quoth Palmerin?) Sir said the Knight, one of them is Trineus, sonne to our dread Lord the Emperour; and the other, the most valiant Palmerin d'Oliva. Two years and moe since

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

they left the Court, without any newes what is become of them: saving that we heard they were a while with the King of England, and thence they conbaied his Daughter, the Emperour continuing so sorowfull for her losse, as every houre his death is expected. May it be (qu. Palmerin) that all this while Trineus is not returned? What danger will noble Almaine sustaine, by losing their young Prince? Overcome with exceeding griefe and sorrow, by report of these unhappy taynges, to himselfe he began in this manner.

What shall I do? Dare I be so presumptuous, as to present my selfe before my Sister? What sufficient excuse can I make for the losse of her Brother? Doubtless, if it were such a Hell to me, to haue the meane to say reparative, from that long Captivity in the Souldans Court, whiche neze wll it be to me now in search of the Prince, for without him I dares not approach the Emperore presence.

While he thus secretly discoursed with himselfe, he became so exceeding passionate, as Olorico thought he had lost his senses: which was the cause, that without any further inquire the Almaine Knights departed from them, when Olorico amazed at this soddain alteration, saith:

How now Sir Palmerin? What hath moved you to this Meabuse? I belike you conceale not the cause from me: for if it be by any offence, that the Knight offered which spake to you, same shall I deliver him his Penance. Wherefore tell me I pray you, for undoubtedly I will not suffer you to rest, untill you haue acquainted me with the truthe. Palmerin knowing how dearely the Prince loved him, and that onely for his sake he had left Countrey, Parents, and Friends: reposing on his loyalty, imparted his Losse to him, as also the losse of Trineus and the Princess Agiola. Olorico then laboured to perswade him, advising him to compasse some secret speach with his Lady, of whom he might learne how to recover her lost Brother, and the faire

Agriola of England againe. Palmerin following his counsell, pacified himselfe, and he kept himselfe so closely as he could, from being knowne to any.

CHAP. XXIIII.

How Palmerin, by the meanes of Urbainillo his Dwarfe, spake with his Lady Polynarda, with whom he stayed five dayes, to recompence some part of his long absence, and to the great contentment of them both.



In this expedition in their Journey made these Noble Companions, and most worthy Knights, that at length they arrived neare a Strong Castle, which was about four miles distant from Gaunt, where the Emperour as then was disposed for Hunting, for the delight of the Ladys: but chiefly to expell his owne melancholie and sadnessse, for the losse of his beloved Sonne, as also to recreate the Princesse Polynarda: who after presence of shadowing the cause, by her Brothers absence, lamented continually for her Noble Friend Palmerin, of whom she could understand no certain synges, albeit she travailed her verguttermost endeavours, which forced her to so many extreme imaginations, as that the very least was worse then death it selfe.

The Emperours Traine lodging each way about the Castle, hindered our Knights from any good Hostage, so that they were constrained to Lodge in a boynly simple house: Where they demanded of a Courtier which lay there, what time the Emperour would depart thence: Who answered that his Highnesse was minded that day to returne to Gaunt, to conselers with the Princes Electours of Speciall affaires concerning the Empyre. Palmerin joyfull hereof

hereof, caused his houle to be bridle; and accompanied with Olorico, went and Ambushed themselves in a little Thicket neare the High-way, where the Emperour must needs passe, to the end he might behold his Ladie Polynarda. Palmerin attending her coming who was the only support of his life: his heart leapt with conceit of his Joy to come, yet trembled likewise, because he durst not present himselfe before the Imperiall Majestie, without the Noble Trinens.

Sone after, by the Guard of Archers that came for most, he well perceaved the Emperour was at hand: when remembryng the honours and favours he had received to his Court, the teares trickled downe his Cheeks, chiesly for want of his Highnes Sonne, which was so especially committed to his trust. Then followed the Empresse, and with her the faire Princesse Polynarda, clothed all in blacke, witnessing by her outward habit, the secret sorrowe of her heart. Her thoughts still hammering on her private grieses, yet assallied with a suddeine thought, she gave such a sigh, as Palmerin easly heard it: which troubled him in such sort, as without the assistance of Olorico, he had falle downe from off his Housle. Polynarda beholding his suddains alteration, without any regard of her Mother, called Urbainillo the Dwarfe to her: who since his coming from England, never houged from her, and to him she said. Hast thou heretofore (Urbainillo) seene these two Knights, who shadow themselves in the wood side, while we passe by? So trust me Madam (quoth the Dwarfe) I never saw them, to my remembryance. I pray then (said she) ride to them so fast as thou canst, and demand of them from me, of whence they are? And if they can tell any tydings of thy Master, and my Brother Trinens. The Dwarfe, who was a good Doctor in such like affaires, dissembling that his Housle would fall, suffered the Traine to passe by, and then rode towards the Knights, who were devising on the Princesse

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Princesse beauty. Palmerin well knowing Vibanillo, and seeing him come to such haſt, was not a little glad, thinking how he would haue some newes of his ſister, wherefore he ſet to Olorico. I pray let us go meet this Dwarke for I thinke his returne is onely to us.

Both haſte the Dwarke come to them, and hauing humbly aduised them, ſaide. I beseech you faire Knights to tell me whether you belong to the Empereur or are Strangers? See the Lady whom I ſerve is very desirous to know; and that for matters nearey concerning her, wherof if you can any way truly reſolve her, your reward shall anſwer your contentment. Then Vibanillo (qd. Palmerin) lifting up his herte: D'ale thou not know thy Dwarke?

Oh Heauen (quoth the Dwarke) prayed be my Maſter for ever for this Adventure. And moved with extreame ſay, he ſat at his Walkers ſat, ſaying: Oh my Lord, what comfort will this be to the Princesse Polyndra, when th' ſhall understand of your preſence? And not without ſome cauſe: for this ſeane is he deliuered from the greate tormentis in the world. And that nothing may tranſto furth this long expeſte ſay, tell me if the Knight in your empriarie be the Prince Thaddeus or no? It is not he (quoth Palmerin) for it is more then a yeare, ſince that of him, and the faire English Agnold, (after th'ir unforuinate loſt them) I heare no appertayn report. For this cauſe Vibanillo, it behoves theſe to be ſearfull and ſecret, nor diſclosyng my bring here to anie but our Warde: of whom thou muſt learme, by what meane I may best come to ſee her? The Dwarke taking his leaue of his Warde, turned his hede to veue me, but coming backe ſuddenly againe, ſaid. Is'tis Warde Ptolome that is with you? Madam Brionelli ſhall not be a little glorie to haue el ſumme knyfes. If you like (qd. Palmerin) I ſet him in company with the rest. You ſhall reſcue them o're day again (ſaide the Dwarke.) ſo giving me ſpurs to his houſe, he galloped till he came to the Princesſe.

# Emperour of Conſtantinople. PART. 2.

wholking him returned in ſuch haſte, knew not well what to think: yet ſearing to be discovered by a Knight that accompanied her, determined not to requeſt his tydinges, untill the ſame home into her Chamber. But never was paue loker in greater agonie, when he expected her friend in ſome priuate place, then was the faire Princesſe at this preſent: wherof as ſoon as ſhe came to her Chamber, he called for the Dwarke, who being come, he ſaide; I pray theſe Vibanillo, by the reverend dueſt thou owre me, whence are the two Knights, & what anſWER did they make thee? They are ſuch ſweet Madam (quoth the Dwarke) as when all the men in the world could tell no tydinges of, my ſelfe by happy ſortane, haue found: for by them I bring you the Key of Paradiſe, if your ſelfe will but ſind the meane to ſaue. Truly, I pray thee, quoth the Princesſe, tell me with iae in this ſort, ſe now is no time of ſport or merriment: tell me who they are I doffre thee: Know then faire Madam (quoth he) that one of them is my Mr. Palmerin, whon thus concealeth him, because he bath not brought the Prince your Brother with him, and he (humble kiling your hand) commandeth him to poor gracieous fauour, deſiring you to ſend him anſWER, how he may ſecrely ſpeak with you, because he would not be knowne to the Empereur, or any other of the Court. Now welcom theſe long expeſted newes were to the Princesſe, I brave to the opinion of long diſtent ſtricks. Oh heauen (quoth he) doth Palmerin live, and is he neare at hand? Now hath my heart his only deſire to reſiſt: and ſuch is my hope, that ſaing he is come, my brother (by his meane) ſhall not be long hence, to ſuch good fortunes are all his actions deſtined. Presently he ten to tell Brionella theſe newes, who likewiſe was exceeding hopfull, because ſhe imagined Palmerins companion to be her Ptolome. Whereupon they concluded together, that Palmerin ſhould the night following come to the Warder, where ſtreight his ſweet amours were ſolicited, and by a Ladie of corde he ſhould aſcende her Chamber. This resolution

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

set downe, the Duke also departed to execute his charge, when Polinarda thus began to Brionella. Ah my deare friend, how impossible is it for me to hide the joy my heart conceiveth, that was so late in such surpassing heauinesse?

What will my Ladys now thinke, when they behold their Mistresse so pleasant? Let them speak what please them (quoth Brionella) Whilso you render them account of your behaviour? Yet this I thinke, that your discretion is so good, when you habbe some the only consecrete for your cares: that you can so wittifable poore thoughts, as the most warlike Wall hardly discerne you. Well haue you said (quoth the Prince) if Loue could be governed by wiſdom: but the pleasure which the wiſest haue receiv'd by his rules, hath in the end discovered their vanity and follie. Such were the speeches betwene these two Ladys attending all the night in good devotion, when each one thought to ſee her Lord and beſt beloved, that their long ſorrows might ſomewhile be qualifi'd.

The Duke being gone on his viage, as yo' haue heard, the knyghts repold themſelvſon the grāne grāſe till ſunne ſetting, that they miȝt aȝe covertly enter the Cittie; and be it ne be na come that they would ſet forwarde, Palmerin ſaid to Olorico. My Lord, we will take this by way, whiche leadeth to the Cittie, ſo I intend before I depart, to heare ſome newes from my reare Mistresse. Goe which may you pl.ass (quoth the Prince) yet muſt I ſeas maruile at you, that you wend ſo long abſent from ſuch an ercellen' Duke eue: Leuſt þine Archidiuſts ſaife, yet may not he be equallid with your Lady. The grieues I haue endur'd (ſaid Palmerin) by my long abſence, are not to be ſpoken of: yet could no way compaſſe my celuaracion. By this tyme they were come to the Cittie, and to a Lodging appoynted them by Urbanillo, who being now come to hiſ Halle, deliuered the ſage he was commandēd. Palmerin underſtāding hiſ Mistresse pleasure,

## Emperour of Conſtantinople. PART.2.

pleasure, preſently unarm'd himſelfe and wrapped a Scarf about hiȝ, taking hiȝ ſword under hiȝ Arme, he intrated Olorico to lay there till he returned, or heard for her ſtidings from him, leauing Urbanillo, in hiȝ company, with charge to ſe him as hiȝ owne perſon.

He being come to the Wall's lovely Paradise, found the Laddet ready prepared for him, whereby he made a ſpedie paſſage: and finding Brionella, therē ſtaying hiȝ coming, embracing her sweetly, ſaid. Trust me Lady, the want of Mys Peolome your freind, diȝ not a little grieve me: but by the grace of God, ere it be leng I hope to bring him with me. Ah my Lord (quoth ſhe) right happy is your god committing hiȝther: for your preſence hath been here moſt of all deſires. But albeit ſhe ſet a good countenance on thiſ anſwere, yet were her ſecret ſorrows innumerablie, being deceiued of the conſort ſhe expected. Palmerin who thought he ſtarred too long from hiſ Ladys Chamber, who angrily had throned herſelfe on a Pallet, because he ſayed to ſpeak with Brionella, then fallen on hiȝ knee before her, he offered to kille her hand, which with diſtembling diſoaine, ſhe would not ſuffer him, ſaying: Truly you shall receive no fauour of me, before I know certaintly who you are: ſo I ſtan in doubt to be deceiued, and that you are ſome other then my Palmerin, ſeeing you haue ban ſo long tyme from me, and (whiche is moze,) would never vouchafe to ſend to me.

When taking a light in her hand, and carnedly beholding him, hardly could ſhe ſet it from her againe, when welcomming him with an infinite number of ſweet kiffes ſhe thus ſaid: Now know I well that thiſ is my Palmerin: what Countrey miȝt he ſo delectible, or Fortune ſo contrarie, that could with helpe all the world from me? What it miȝt haue stood with mine honore, for my ſelfe to haue ſought you out: with god will could I haſſured the Crabbell. Yea, much moze then you haue done to me,

# The History of Palmerin D'Olva.

me. How often (considering the dangers of the Sea) hath very death surprize me? And into how many sundry opportunities have I falle? Sometimes to disguise my selfe into a Mans attire, to enter the estate of a Knight Errant; and begun a search which never shold have ended, till I found you? For this hath been received for a generall Rule, that by too long sufferance and expectation one may endure a thousand deaths: and think not but the very least of my afflictions, have bin of force to deprive my life. Consider that griece, desire, remembrance, languor, sorrow, hope, suspicion, teares, complaints, and other such like passions common in love, continually beat upon the heart with burning affection, and to such inconvenience their issue growes, as the vital spirit is chased from the body. Her Goods sake Thavam (quoth Palmerin) leavs these wounding speeches, and suffer me to take a little rest, in beholding that which is no lesse divine than humaine, for my selfe devalues not these accualtions. When discovered he all his fortunes passed, which drew the Princelie to no little admiration. When she said;

Bela be my Lord, seeing that by your meanes my Prince Timus is lost: for my selfe, and to satisfie your prouesse to my Lord father, you must needs go unto him again. Loathly I thank her (quoth Palmerin) but before I begin this Journey, let me intreat that sober regard: which is the comfort in love, and uniteth life and Soule together, which heretofore you have graced, and I hope will not now deny me. What may I urge (quoth she) of your constancy since you at once? For not long since I was solcited with a Question, which told me, that you committid breach of leynage with a Queen, to my no little griece: although full often I reprehended you therfore, to cause you for'sake that sinne, when we thought the Queen thus answer'd. We then adured Polyamora, that although Palmerin esteem the above all other, yet

Hall

# Emperour of Constantynople. PART. 2.

shall he leave some part of his love with me. Hearing these words, I brake sooth into teares, wherewith you seemed to be incov'd, and so forsaking her, followed me: and here with I awaked, finding (indeed) my face besprent with teares, and my heart overcome with insuppoitable griece. Palmerin abashed horeat, remembred what entertainment the Queen of Tharsus made him at the Banquet: of her sumptuous delights and great favour for his arrivall, her piercing, amorous, and alluring speeches, wherewith she incessantly did solcites him: and such was his conceit, as he verily perswaded himselfe, that by enchanted practises she had abus'd him: wherupon he said, I swears to you Madam, by the Kellglons vertues of our Love, that never did I commit such wrong against you: if the Queen of Tharsus, of whom you have spoken, did not one night deceiue me by an Enchanted drinke, which unwittingly I received as I late at supper, causing me to loose both sense and understanding: and so acquainted her with his Dreame that night likewise.

Doubtless my Lord (quoth she) considering the extremity of her affection, she practised some meanes to compasse her desire: but seeing it fell out in that sort, and believing you would not willingly offend me, I am contented to pardon that fault. In these and such like speeches, they spent that night, and fours more afterward, all whiche time Palmerin was kept unseene in her Chamber: till his departing time being come, when the Prince attyng her selfe in her wondred Mourning Garments, and Chaping her countenance to her former sorrow, shrowded her pleasures past: and thus we will leave them, returning to our Aslyrians dyring on the Sea.

Chap. XXXIII.

How after the Tempest was past the Soldans Armie assembled together, and came against Constantinople, where by the Emperors power they were discomfited: and the King of Balisarca, his Sonne Guerefin, and divers other great Lords of Turkie slaine.

**N**ow the Tempest (which had throwne Palmerin on Hercules Pillars, after many long and contagious soymes, began now to cease, the Sea being faire and calme, and the Windes very quiet, whereupon the King of Balisarca, Generall of the Arme, in shert time assembled together tho most part of his Fleet, and came upon the Coast of Natolia, where he attened the rest of his Souldys and Gallyes. And having there stayed about fiftene dayes, among all the Shippes the long stay whereof caused him to doubt, lest he had un-happily perished in the Sea, and overcome with exceeding griefe, he thus began:

Ah gentle Palmerin, the flower of all Chivalrie, In a lacklesse houre didst thou betake thy selfe to the Sea: what answer shall I make the Soldane for the losse of thee, and the Prince Olorico, being so especially committed to me trust? Now cannot fortune be so favourable to us as she would: For by thy losse I utterly despaine of expected victorie. To cut off these bootless complaints, he was counseled by the Loris, Knights and ancient Captaines, to set forward to Constantinople, to discharges them & dues of their promise to the Soldane, least in returning without dealing with the enemie, they shoulde be reputed for fearfull and faint-hearted Cowarde. Setting their Sails to the wind at

at length they came to the Bo'phor. Now was the Emperour very aged and sickly, having altogether committed the superintendance of the Empire, to his Sonne Caniano, who had a Sonne aged euen ten yeares, named Cariteos. And being aduertised of the commynge of so many As-syrians, Turkes and Moores, he sent to all the Christian Princes to succour: the greater part whereof, was therer as now arrived, with resolute determination to welcome these Infidels.

When the Emperours sone had espied the Enemy to enter the Straight, young Cariteos beholding the Knights on all sides, some on the Walles, and other in the Field: came and kneeled besyde his Grandfather, earnestly desiring him to graunt him his Knighthood. For my Lord, quod he, a better time and occasion cannot be then now. The aged Emperour graunted his request, and with the teates in his eyes said. In the name of God, my Son, maist thou receive thy order, and to the gloriouse maintenance of the Christian faith: albeit thy youth forbids thee to venture so soon.

Presently arose the young Knight Cariteos, and clapping on his Helmet, was the first that went forwyr of the Cittie, accompanied with tenne thousand Horsemen, and twentie thousand Footemen, to hinder the landyng of the Enemys: which a great while he did with such valour, as the Haven was charged with the blood of the slayred. The King of Balisarca hearing thereof, commanded his Archers to their taske, whose shafts flew so thick in such multitude, as it were the Mayle that falleth from the Cloudes: and on the other syde he got thirty thousand men on Land, who assailed the Christians so furiously, as young Cariteos was slaine, and a great number of noble personages, which was the cause that the Christians retred to the very Gates of the Cittie. The Prince Caniano aduertised of his Sonnes death, & the great danger where-

CHAP. XXXIX.

How Palmerin tooke his leave of the Emperour, his Father and Mother, to follow the search of the Prince of Almaine.

C H A P T E R . - C faine dayes after the solemnity of this  
heneueable Marriage was ended between Fryfoll and the yong Princeesse  
of Hungaria. Nerides likewise gone to  
the Duke of government: all the Lords  
and Princes of the Empire, except such  
as continually abode in the Emperours  
Court, returned to their owne homes, the like did all the  
strange Knights that came to the Errumpches, except the  
King of Sparta and the Leros of Macedon. Wherefore Palmerin  
now remembryng his promise to his Ladie, and how  
long he had staid soothfull at Constantinople, determined  
to depart, and understanding that his Father was with the  
Emperour, came to them with these speches.

My gracieus Lords, it is no n thyng done less and more  
that I have remained here by your comandement,  
contrary to the promise that I made my Ladie: where-  
soe (with your leav.) I am now determined to depart  
hence, before the Duke of Loraine returne backe again,  
that he may assisse my Lord the Emperour, that I am gones  
to seeke my friends. My Denne (quoth the Emperour)  
willing am I thou shuldest leabe vs so lone, but if the  
matter may not be contrayled, in respect you are bound to  
her by faithfull promise, who abch's all o her deserbeth los-  
ing of service: In my ther maray will hem say you, but in-  
trust your returme soone as may be. You shall therefore  
take with you a good company of Knights, who may pre-  
vent any ill occurrent, & high your traualle in strange

Countries happily may offer: that my heart enjoying life  
by your presence, may once moze see you before my daie be  
expired.

I beseech you my Lord, answered Palmerin, geve not  
your selfs by my absence, which shall not be long I hope,  
nether will the multitude of Knights availe in my enter-  
prise, soz more by fortune then by force of Armes must the  
adventure be finished. Doe then as you thynke god an-  
swered the Emperour, in meane tyme I will cause probis-  
on for your traine. Palmerin having now licence to depart,  
perswaded Fryfoll so earnestly as he could, to abide at  
Constantinople, as wel for the labe he bare his wifer Ar-  
mida, as because he was loth to part the new married cou-  
ple: but all the circumstances he could use, might not per-  
suade him: soz his religiouse vow to his friend, exceeded  
his affection to the Princeesse, so that for a flat resolution,  
he answered, that nothing but deth shuld separate their  
company. Palmerin seeing Fryfoll continue in his former  
amity, and that the desire which conquereth all men, could  
not prevaile in his noble minde: rejoiced greatly thereat,  
determining to recompence his princely knawledge, if For-  
tune did not contrary him in this enterprised journey. And  
leaving least any new occasion shold arise to delay this  
intent, dispatched presently his Letters to the Emperoz of  
Almaine, and his Lady Polynarda, honouring his High-  
nesse Amballabours with many sumptuous gifts. Having  
neworderes all his affaires, and every one bring ready to  
mount on Horsebacks, he cam to bid the Quene his  
Mother fare well: for well he knew, that if she could any  
way hinder his departure, his journey shold be soone pre-  
vented. The Quene with Motherly love embrasing her  
Denne, said: Ah my Denne, haue thou been so chose a tyme  
with me, and wilt thou now leave me? trust me it is a  
point of great vngentlenes: to deale so hardly with thy mo-  
ther: but seeing the Emperour and my Lord have given

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

their consent, may gaine say will be to little purpose. And nothing would it availe me to set before thine eyes, the inconstancy of Fortune, her strengths and treachery, commonly against great persons : when they are in the way to prosperity, honor and renowne. Wherefore, my Sonne, I commit thee to the protection of Heaven, desiring thee to regard thine honor, which by this ought to be defended, and now may runne in danger of commona reproch, in that the vulgar soft iuge after their owne humours, not according to the quality and estimation of vertue. For this cause let thy iurme be the twiner, as thou tenderest my life and thine owne good.

All which Palmerin promised to doe, and so comming downe into the Court, found there the Emperour and his father mounted on horsebacke, who bare him company two miles from the City : where after many courtesies betwene them, the Emperour and Fiorendos returned to the Court againe, wheres the Duke of Lorraine stayed their comming, when taking his leave likewise, went aboard and sayled with so god a wind, as in shoxt time he arrived in Alaigne, where he was graciously welcommed by the Emperour, and especially by the Princesse his Daughter, to whom he reported the honourable behavioz of Palmerin, and how he was siveyne Prince of Greece and Macedon. Whereof was she so ioyfull: as never could she be satisfied with the discourse, making many demands to the Duke, as well of the Triumphs, Tournay and disports, as also of the mariage celebryted at Constantinople: whereto the Duke returned such answers, as nothing wanted to extoll her Friends honoz, yet with any occurrance of fealouise to the Princesse, whereto amorous Ladys are commonly subiect.

But now returning where we left before, you must note, that Palmerin being departed the Confines of the Empyre, entered his Fathers Realms, where in every Citi-

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

ty he was enterained with great triumphing : especially in the City of Hermida, where the Merchant dwelt that was Palmerins Master, for whom he sent, but he was aduertized by his wife, that her Husband was gone to the sea, and his two Sonnes with him, wherfore he gaue her many Rich gifts, and Letters to his Masters frere encanthis and liberty. At his departure from thence, he camis to the place wheres Urbanillo his Dwarke was borne, whose Father was there living a poore ancient knyght, and his Sister of as tall stature as Urbanillo, whom Palmerin (at her Brothers request) sent to Constantinople, to his Mother. And for the honyz of the Duke his Dwarke Father had receyved, he gave him the Village wherein he dwelt, and in the presence of the Macedouians put him in possesyon thereof, who not a little commended the discrete and liberall minde of the Prince.

From thence he journeyed to the chiche City of Macedonia, wheres remained the Aged King his Grandfather: but here the Citizens enterained him, and what honourable Triumphs were made at the Court, I list not here sette downe, because it would be moze tedious then beneficiall. As for his Aunte the Princesse Arimena, she at his coming met him in the Basse court, with all her Ladys: and as Palmerin fell on his knee before her, to kisse her hand, she kysed him in her armes, saying: God forbid Sir Palmerin, that the knyght of greatest fame in the world, shoulde reverence so simple a Damosell as my selfe: but rather am I bound by duty to honor you, as the man by whose especiall vertues, our Lineage is this day crowned with perpetuall memory.

Fayre Aunt (answered Palmerin) if before I knew you to be my Fathers Master, I deuoted my selfe to your Service, with much more affection shall I do. As to follow it no o: Wherefore lette me (white Hadame) to kisse your hand, as being the Lady to whom I list continually be-  
ly

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

den. I beseech you my Lord (quoth the Prince) to pardon me, soz never shall a Macedonian Maiden be so reprob'd, but that she well knowes her duty to her betters. At these speches came the King of Sparta, the Dukes of Pontus, and Mecena, and the Prince Eustace, whom the Prince welcomm'd with exceeding honour. After all courtesies ended, Palmerin sayd.

I understand Madam, that the King your Father is crazed and sickly: if it be so I am very sorry, I pray you therefore let us goe see how his Majestie fareth. When you please my Lord (quoth the Prince) so I thinke if hee to soore he receyves health by you, Fortune may at this time afford the like: and yet (as I have read) there is no remedy soz comblisome age, but onely death it selfe, whiche is the Gate to Immortality, and endeth all Diseases whatsoeuer. So entered they the Kings Chamber, and the Princess going to the Bed side to her Father, said: My Lord, saz here the good Knight Palmerin your Neophew, may it please you to speake to him, and bid him welcome: Well know I that he is right welcome to your Majestie, were there no other cause then the happy recovery of your sonnes health, which his Adventurous Travell hereunto brought you.

The good Old King, whom the Palme caused to shake and tremble: raised himselfe up a little, and beholding Palmerin, with weake and feeble voice, thus spake. Come neare my Noble Sonne, that these armes halfe dead may embrace thee, and my lips noondrie and withered, may once kiss thee before I die. So holting him between his armes, and lifting his eyes to Heaven, said. O my God, for ever be thy name honor'd and praised, in bouchsaking me to see my Sonne before my death. Ah swart death, the end of all miseries, and beginning of felicity, now art thou welcome, soz beare not thy stroke, in that I have now seene the honourable defens of my Subjects hereafter, yea such a worthye

## Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

friend for them, as never had they the like. Ah my Son, who dairily ought I to lobe thee? how gracieus hath the remembraunce beene of me: yet stede I my selfe so weake and feeble, no manre cannot prolong my life thys daies. As las, I know not which of vs twaine hath greate & cause to rejoice; either the Father leving his Sonne, even when he is ready to leave hym, or the Sonne finding his Father al- tending his comming before he gibe up the ghost. I hope my good Lord, said Palmerin, that you shall not leade us so soon, therfore take a good hart, and that no doubt will prolon your life. Alas my Sonne, quoth the King, unwealynge bath so weakened my body, and even dyed up my vital blood, no longer I may nor live: and had not hope to see thys lengthened my languishing daies, thou hast found my be- dy breathlesse, which yet sustaynes feble life, onely by thy presence.

Sow that I may leabe this world with content, and travaille with better quiet to mine end: tell me (good Sonne) the whole matter concerning the Father Florendos with the perfect discourse of thys owne fortunes. The Palmerin rehearsed every circumstance, both of his Fathers delivery, how he had married the Queen Giana, and in what estate he left them both at his departure.

CHAP. XL.

How the aged King *Primaleon* of *Macedon*, Grand-Father to *Palmerin*, dyed: and how the King of *Sparta* espoused the faire Princesse *Arismena*, Sister to Prince *Florendos*.



At two dayes had Palmerin stayed in the Court of his Grand-Father, but the aged King resigned his life to the celestiall powers: for which cause, all the Triumphs ceased, and generall joyes enteratained for the losse of their good King. Arismena who so reverently loved her Father, as in his life time she would not match in Marriage with any one, because it was his will it shold be so: nevertheles herselfe discontented therewith, but her Father being now dead, she committed the whole affaires of the Realme to the Counte Roldin, one appointed for that office by generall good liking. With such honestable Dempe was the Generall Obiequies executed, and the Princesse gracious behavoir therin so especially commended: as the yong King of Sparta became amorous of her, and discovered his minds to Palmerin, in treating him so to labour the cause, as he might make Arismena his Queene.

Palmerin very joyfull of the Kings matten, in that he was one of the chieffest Estates of Greece, acquainted his Aunt with the Kings request, and what an honoū it was to her to be so matched. Soj was the Princesse herte so cold by her Fathers death, but seeing the yong beautifull King loved her so well, it began to warme againe: so that considering her owne estate, being now in yeares past fourte and twenty, she made some excuses by her Fathers late decease,

decease, but Palmerin perceved by her modest yelding looks, that the heart consented, although the mouth was loth to utter it. Wherefore the next day they were espoused together, by which means the King was more afficed to follow Palmerin, as he determined vsoze he came from Constantinople: as well for the great kindnes he found in him, as for his favour in furthering him with the end of his desires.

Now was the King more impotunate on Palmerin, to accept him for his Companion in his Travell: who at length conduced, al though he imagined, that his Aunt had rather have her new Husband farre with her. The day being appointed for their departure, Palmerin concluded with the King of Sparta, that he shuld send Arismena to Constantinople, there to stay his returne with her Brother Florendos. For her safe conduct thither, all the chieffest Knights that came thence with her were chosen, except Prince Eustace, Sonne to the Duke of Mecena. And Palmerin fearing his Marriage would be longer then he expected, commanded Urbanillo his Dwarfe to return to the Queen Arismena: and if I say (quoth he) longer then a yere from Constantinople, go then to Almaigne with this Letter to comfort my Ladie, and take with you the Siler, whom I sent to the Queen my Mother.

The Dwarfe (although he had rather have gone with his Master, then attend on Ladies) not caring to gain say him, returned with Arismena, who in short time after arrived at Constantinople, where the Prince Florendos verely joyfully received her, being not a little contented that she was borne in Marriage with the King of Sparta, yet his Fathers death he took verely heavily. How welcome she was to the Emperour, Empresse, and Eugene Criana, I doubt not but you can sufficiently imagine, who continuall comforstod her till her Husbands returne. Whense Palmerin departed from Macedon, he established all things in

# The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

due and decent order, creating the County Roldin Lieutenant Generall for the Roldis: commanding as full obeysance to him, as to their Soveraigne Lord the King his father. Afterwards he tooke order that his Shippes might be ready, because he would delay no longer the search of Tryneus.

## CHAP. XLI.

How Palmerin and his Companions sayling on the Mediterranean Sea, were taken by Olimaell, Admirall to the great Turke: and of their fortunes in Greece, where Palmerin saved Laurana the Princesse of Durace.



On Roldin being established in the Government of Macedon, and the Whippeside whiche Palmerin hadde appointed: he went aboard with his bold Friends that would not leave him, viz. Fisoll, the Prince Olorico, the Duke of Pontus, the King of Sparta, and Eustace Ocnes to the Duke of Mecena. These are having sworne theyr endevours to the search of Tryneus, committed themselves to the mercy of the Winde and Seas, not knowing where they shald stak Linding. Hving thus sayled ore of seaven dayes together, & he was nothing rough or tempestuous: they climed up to the malte top, to see if they could discry any shire. And as they were devising merrily together, they suddenly spred a great Flote of Shippes, which with wind at full wile apies towards them: but because you shal understand of whence and what they were, attend the sequell and you shall be resolved. the Moor Olimaell, as you have read in the former part of this History, after he had givin the Prince Agriola to the great Turke, com-  
terey

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

red into so great credit, as in recompence of his gift, he was made high Admirall of Turkie: so that being renouned for a Knight of peerless deserte, the Turke gave hym the charge of his great Army, wherewith he shoulde continually disturbance the Christians. This Olimaell was Generall of this huge Fleet desirous by Palmerin, wherat somewhat amazed, he called one of the Pilote, demanding if he knew the Ensigne of whence they were. The Pilote had no sooner he held him, but he presently sayd they were Turkes, and no way was there for themselves to escape, because he saw the light Gallopes were made out to him, and the rest came mainly upon them. But Palmerin as a Prince experemented in dangers, thus spake to his Companions.

Fayble Friends, where knighthly force or bountie cannot availe, it were were folly to bfe it, we are but few, and all in ones shal, and faire we cannot flye before we shall be taken: I thinke it best therefore that we use sound dissimulation, and so expect when Fortune will better teach us the way to recover our losse, and rebigne us on our enemies to their consillor. Withdraw your selves, and leane me alone to talk to them, because I can well speake the Arabian language. Perchance not that covetise of force of death makes me bid these speeches: for in an action invincible, hardinesse and knighthly balsur will be esteemed as folly and indiscretion. Have then patience, my good Friends, I hope that all shall turne to our good.

No sooner had he ended his specher, but he heard the Captainne command them to yield, else they shoulde die. Wye? (quoth Palmerin) that goes very hard: abuse vs our lives, and we yield, otherwise not. I promise theire, said the Captainne, neyther thou nor thy company shall have any harme. He seazing upon the shipp, they brought it to the Admirall Olimaell, presenting to him all the Knights they took theron: for which he heartily thanked them, saying,

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliver.

Tell me Gentlemen and dissimble not, are ye Turks or Christians? Sir, quoth Palmerin, sayng Fortune hath bane so contrary to vs, you shall understand truly what we are. We are Christians and poore Knights, searching adventures to gaine honor and profit, in some Princes service, be he Heathen or Christian. And because we cannot now shew you what we are able to do: so please you to infuse vs injoy our liberty, and graunt vs the benefit of our Armeur. We will promise you leual and faulchul service. Olimaell who was by nature stern and austere, seeing these few Knights so rong and haue accomplished persons, imagined their assistance wold greatly availe him, wherefore he thus answered; Gentleman, if you wil swearre to me by your faith that you will not departing me without my licence, but will loyally imploy yourselves in what I shall command: you shall have your Armeur againe, and I will not use you as my Rudes and prisoners, but as my honeste compaines and Friends. Whiche oþer they all took to him, wherefore they were immediately armes againe, and remained in the Galleys with Olimaell: who setting their armour so rich and costly, esteemed them to be of noble bloud, and therofore caused them to be very haþteable intreated.

So sagylling on, at length they came nere to the great City of Albania, when Olimaell commanded two of þeir syllies, to goe vnderland in what estate the City was: who were adverstised by certayne Frenchmen, that the people were unprovided of any fortifications, so that winning the Porte, the whole City might easly be conquered. These rydings caused them suzibly to enter the bourn, where setting al the shippes on fire, they went on boate, and mundering the Walbers at the Gates, tolke the City: at the first assault, when Palmerin and his noble friends (to every great sorrow) declared how well they could shal of such affayres. The City thus overcome, and

# Emperour of Constantynie. PART 2.

the chieffest Citizens tharein taken Prisoners, the Turke following their foote, marched forther, and came to the City of Durace, where the faire Princessse Laurana abode, of whom Palmerin was sometimes Amorous: when he imagined by her excellent Beuty, that it was she who so often sollicited him in his Dreames. Palmerin being there come on Land, presently knew the Countrey: wherelse he said to his compaines,

I now perceybe dñe Friends, that Fortune sozeth vs from ill to worse: This speake I in respect of this City, against which we must be compelled to fight, and not many yeares since, with the pice of my Blood I labored to defend it. But because the Dukes Daughter is as woeþ a Lady, as in my heart I reverence and honor: I beseech you every one imploy yourselves, to poyson both her and her Ladys, and demand them of the Kingall for our part of the spoyle.

Whiles Palmerin thus conferred with his friendes, Olimaell understoode by certayne Prisoners, that the City was very slenderly defended, and therofore no great mallyng to winne it quickly. Yet at they first Assult, they were savantly repulsed, as Olimaell and his men beganne to despayre of victor: wherefore he made open Proclamation, that he who first Entred the City, shold obtaine of him any Woone he would require. Palmerin sofull of this promise, caused þeir strong Scaling-Laders to be raised vp against the Wall, wheron he and his Friends ascended, and on the Wall cryed, the City is ours: wherewith the people within were so dismayed, having endured a long and sullen kyrrish, as they all fledde out at the further Gates. The Turkes then burned the Gates on the Sea side, and entring the City, put olde and young to the sword. But Palmerin and his compaines fayning to pursue them that fledde, ranne straite to the Palacie, at the entrance wherof they found many woones, who had taken the Duke, where-

## The History of Palmerin D'Orsay.

for him went to find the Princessse Laurana, who sat in her Chamber, full nere dead with griefe, because she heard that her Father was slaine. Her he committeth to the chayre of the King of Spyna, Frytoll, Olorico, and Valence, desiring them to condigne the Princess, in that whether she or her Ladies shalld fall into the Empresse power: and so continuing to Olmecell, on his knat he began in this manner. You know my Lord the promise you made to day, by vertue whereof, because I haue gott over the wall into the Citie: for my loue I request the Dukes Daughter, and for my friends that followed me, her Ladies and Gentlewomen, for other spoile of the riches and treasure we desire us.

Olimpiell graunted his demand, charging his people  
on paine of their lives, not any way to offend the Ladies.  
In this manner was the Princesse saved, whereupon the  
Duke of Pontus presently went to her, and taking her by  
the hand, acquainteth her with these joyfull newes, where-  
with she thus replied. Can it be possible that Palmerin,  
who heretofore ventured his life to my fathers defence, ag-  
ainst the County Passaco of Meccina, should now become  
so familiar among Turks and Moyses? Verch he so forget  
his hencz to God, that him selfe is not only a bataile to the  
enimies of his faith, but doth likewise seeke their destruc-  
tion that serue Christ Jesus: Be alent good Madame, an-  
swered the Duke, soz if his name be knowne we all perdy-  
that hath bene done, is soz the safety of your life, and our  
parts likewise, whiche ye hath obtained of the Generall of  
the Army.

With these words she was somewhat pacified, and the old stories of love, which now began to spread abroad, caused her to return this answer. In sooth my Lord, saith  
I am because Palmerins paysoner, I thinke my banck in  
better assurance : and my fathers death is the lesse grie-  
vensse me, in that this matter may leade to better effect  
then

Emperour of Constantinople. PART. 2.

then I can conceive. By this time was Palmerin come to her, who entreated her to keape all things secretly, for he would endure a thousand deaths, before his should be any wrong dishonoured. In time (quoth he) we may be delivered from these b'listions, as for you and your Ladies, the Adm'rtall hath openly commanded that you be reverently  
etc.

A thousand thanks my Lord, quoth the Princesse, and  
saying matters are so come to passe, yet doe I rejoyce that I  
fell into your powre. The Cittie of Durace left in the same  
estate as Albania was, the Luzzes went abwarde, taking  
no pay n. is thence but Lanana and her Ladies, whom  
Olimpius intended to give to the great Turke. So passing  
along the Countie of Illyrie, hee spoiled many Citties on  
the S. side, took the King and many Noble men: so that  
no other but Sforza with a number of Christian priso-  
ners. Now Olimpius receyved, that the Christian Princes  
bearing viceroyall teame in their demissons, would  
trye a nightwyme to helpe agaynst him, wherefore he gave  
charge to... to keepe their course towards the Cittie  
of Durace, for so soon as the great Turke kept his  
Carr.

After three daies before his taking, when he was great with Childe) to one of his daughters, who had beene journey from the See : but when she heard of his late iudgments fortune, the grise she conceived, caused him presently to fall in travaille, when she was deliverec as a goodly Daughter, named Franceolina. At this time the three Magical Sisters, who appeared to Palmerin on the Mountain Artatia, and one of them afterward in his getting to Buda : made their abode in an Isle thereby named Carderia. When they (by their hidden Philosophy) heard how the King was taken, and shold be kept in perpetuall prison, without the helpe of his Daughter which was newlly boorne : they concluded to framie such an enchantment

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

chantment, as nager the Turke and his power, as he that wold not deigne to kille his ſhoe, wold be delivred from imp'lonment. Hereupon the youngelt of thare Sisters went to the Caste where the woſull Queene reſained, where ſhe was very honourably enterteined: becaſe the Queene deſired to haue, if the King her Husband was dead or alive, and if any hope might be expeced of his delivrance.

The D'mosell Enchauntrefſe adverſized the Queene, that in departing with her Daugher Francelina, the King her Husband ſhould enjouy it ſweetly, and in time to come, ſhe ſhould be maried to one of the best Knights in the world.

We māde not doubt that the Queene was bereat amazd, yet the leſs of the Hauer to þe Infant, cannot conquer the Love of the Muſt to her dāre Husband: which among all L'ves is the moſt honeſt and ioyall: So that in hope to ſet him agayne, on whom depended her wealth and Welfare ſhe gaue her Child to the D'mosell, intreating that ſhe might be v̄ed as beſemmed the daughter of a King and as the ſweete beauty of the Infant deſerved. ſhe reſturning to Cardia, with the Child, made her Sisters veſt ioyfull by her coming, who there nourished the Infant till he was three yeares old: when the beaut̄ of the young Prince ſe began to ſhew it ſelfe, as faire Cynthia doeth among the Starres.

Now bid the Sisters encloſe her in a strong Tower, made of curſeſe for young Francelina, wherein was the moſt ſmell of Cardia in the World, where was ſhe attened by her Sisters, and ſix baptyng Gentlewomen: and ſuch Enchauntrefſe were impos'd in the Tower, as no man ſhould enter for her, unleſſe he were the beſt Knight of his time. The Entranc'e into the Tower was very ſcarpe and narrow, baree byre with a great Gate of Iron and Guarded by two fūtous Lyons. Ouer the Gate ſtarde a huge image of Copper, holding a mighty Pace of Steele, wrought

wrought by ſuch crafte, as if any Knight but he that was deſtined to end thi abventure, ſhould eftay to enter, hardly might be ſcape to reurne againe. Moreover, the conqueſtor ſhould not deſire the firſt demands of the Princeſſe, which was the delivrance of her Father: and for thi cauſe the S. M. rs enchaunted the ſame Francelina, whose history we muſt yet forbare, preceſting where we left her.

Olimaell being thus on the ſea, laden wiþ Chriftian ſpoiles and priſoners, at length entered the per. of the great Emp'ry of Turant: where he made ſuch a chaſtfull noyſe of Drummes, Trompetts, Clarions and Cornets, as though the greaſt Spayn eth in the world had come to take landing. The great Turke marbuſling at thi ſuddaine inclody, ſent one of hiſ Knights to understand the cauſe, who being certaiñed by Olimaell, what great victories he had obtained againſt the Chriftians and the number of priſoners he brought with him returned, to the Wallace, where he told hiſ Lord that the Admirall Olimaell was come, and had brought wiþ him great ſpoiles from the Chriftians, where among (quod he) is a Chriftian King in personne, many worthy Knights and Gentlemen, and a ſong Prin-cess of incomparabile beauty. Not a little ioyfull was the Turke at thiſe newes, wherelze comuring into hiſ great Hall, where the impetall ſeatcs of maſt eyre are creſt, hiſmiſſe ſate downe in the one, and faſte Agriola of Eng-land in the other, execting the comming of Olimaell: who in triumphant manner ſet ſcward wiþ hiſ prize, brabed, lyouned on a hasty Courſer uuptuously caparaled, and adbauneting hiſ ſword drafone in ſigne of v̄cory. Be-ing come to the Wallace, Olimaell ſaluted hiſ Lord with great reverence, ſtandig by him to make report of hiſ conqueſt, and make preſent of hiſ priſoners after their estate and califrg.

First he caused all the riches to be brought, and all the meanest

meanest capture one after another to his the great King his  
fete : then commanding them to be carried thence, he  
gan in this manner. It is not to be doubted, most high and  
mighty Seneschal, that this victory gotten in the Chan-  
nel, excuseth to say. Soode, hath been obtained thereby  
rouse f.ours: therefore it is great reason, that to the priu-  
pall here of this entente, the great and chaste honour  
should be ours. The buttis hereof are the treasurys  
sent, and their legataries abiding your mercys : who from  
the very meaneit to the highest, shall bridle the aseloes  
at your Majesties late. When evry man had done  
their reverence, and the King of Thedali should next fel-  
dole, soe though his mates were prouide behind him,  
yet had a Closyn of Gold on his bosome shew what he  
was although he was hanstelle in the Turcys power, and  
Olimaell had commandes him to kill his masters fote,  
hololy made this custome. How will I so much displease my  
Companions & d' Ernica when art in such sorte to abase  
my selfe, being a King, & admitt strait out of justice to faith-  
full Christians : to kisse the face of the most nascie and un-  
cleane creature in the world: declaring the basship whiche  
I onely owe to my master. It is in thy power to take my  
life from me: but not to constaine me baw the thing where-  
in consists my damnacion, and a thousand deaths I will  
endure, before I wold so much as intough to ther. Agri-  
laine (quoth the Adastrall) I wist ih u speake so bare-  
rently in the presence of my Lord ? do not my regardes of  
him withhold me, soone shal I separeate thy curched head  
from thy shouders. With these wordes he gav the King  
such a blow in the face, as made him fall on his knessto the  
ground.

An Envoyour, quoth the King, well hast thou shonne  
the nature of a villaine, that without command urgkest a  
King captive, and unprovided of armes: but might it so  
please the Lord, in open field will I prove the adage  
all

all and unchristened Curte, that thus abusest tho blood roy-  
all. The great Turke seeing the King so mowved and angry,  
the blood likewise trickling from his nose and mouth: com-  
manded him to be carried thence, to one of the strongest  
Castels in Natolia, where he shold be enclosed without a  
me company, that this captivity might be the moxe gre-  
vous to him.

When the King of Thessalie was depaired, Palmerin  
approached, leading the Princesse Laurana by the hand, he  
and his five companions being Armed, except their Hel-  
mets, Gantlets and Swords: whereat the great Turke  
merwailing, demandid of Olimaell why he suffered them  
to be Armed? My Lord, quoth he, these sixe Knights were  
the st. & prize I tooke, who (after they had given me their  
oathes) have done such service to your M. h. S., especially  
this, pointing to Palmerin, one of the best Knights that ever  
I saw: as full well do they deserve liberty, which in re-  
compence of adventuring their lves in your service, under  
your high corzacion, I promised them. By Madamet,  
answere the great Turk, for thy sake I likewise conserue  
it, and if hereafter they will abide with me, I will make  
them greater then ever they were. While the Turke was  
making his promises, Agriola having well noted Palmerin,  
knew him, and with the suddaine conceite thereof was  
ready to woun: but laying her sciss on her Chayre, sayd.  
Diole bonny, who is this? are not mine eyes deluded and  
my thoughts beguiled? At these wordes Palmerin knew  
her, which before he did not, by reason of her strange dis-  
guised apparel: yet thought he best to conceale his in-  
ward joy, least crooked Fortune shold now againe pre-  
tent him.

The great Turke seeing Agriola looke so pale and wan-  
sited from his Chayre, and taking her in his armes,  
sayd. Alas Madamie, hath any suddaine ill besallen ye? both  
any one in this company offendid ye? by our Gods if I  
knewe

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

knew him, presently should he die the death. The Princess trembling with fear, seeing Hippolyta was not present, spake thus in English. What will the Lord and His bane Trinibus say, if he be in this company, seeing I have so大大ly forsaken him, and thus (though God knowes peresse) in spite of him, have taken the enemy to him and cut with? Yet one comfort have I that this knave hath not earthly knowledge me, so which protection I thankie the heavenly traxity. At these speeches Palmerin was so glad, as the fears of death could not with holde him: but in the same language he thus answered.

Feare not yond Gabane, Tryneus is not in our company : but so please you to say I am your Brother, you may happily save my life, and practise your vengerance. The Earle misoubting of Palmerins persuadeng, that he had caused this sudden alteration : imagining him to be her Husband of whom he had heard her talke so often, in a great rage sayd, Knight, how darst thou presume my Ladies presence, knowing the light of the world any way displeas her? By the Prophet Habocast thou shalt immedately die, that all such audacious villainies may take an example by this.

Agnolo knowing the Turks malices were very peremptory and coumally no sooner late then executed, even before him thus replyed. Ah my Lord, do not the thing in haste, for which afterward you will be sorry, for I assure you on my honor, the knyght that spake to me is my brother, and hat he left his Countrey only to finde me : and him I left so effectually, as if you put him to death, impossible is it for me to ille afterward. When the Turk heard her speake with such affection, qualifying his anger, said, I promise ye Davarac, for your sake, he shall have no harme, but he entartained with love and honour : conditionall yc, that you forget this melancholy, and henceforth shew your selfe more pleasant, for in seeing you sed I am moche grachid

## Emperor of Constantinople. PART.2.

græved, then if I had leſt y moſt of my dominions. In ſoſth  
my Lord auſwered Agriola, now shall I be merci, ſeing  
you intend to lebe my brother, for greater good cannot  
happen to me then his gentle entreatance : and hence-  
forth shall I trave vnder ſcote, the ſaid remembrance of  
my Countrey & parents, having him with me, by wher  
I hope to gaine my greates & conſort. So the Turke ar-  
ring from his Chayre, cauſed Palmerin and Laurana to ac-  
company Agriola, and the other ſive Knights hating his  
ſec his hand: he went to his Chamber, comauarding O-  
liverell (for his greater honour) to vþer Agriola, who as he  
went, thus ſpalie.

Believe me Apixall, if I was offended when thou  
broughtest me Prisoner hither : thou hast now made me  
sufficient amends, in that by this I enjoy my Brother,  
whom I was out of all hope to see againe. Alas Madame,  
(quoth he) little did I thinke him to be such a one, soz had I:  
his usage shold have been much better whiche fault I hope  
hereafter to recompence. I command him to thy courtesie,  
said Agriola, let him and his Friends have all things they  
want, according as my Lord hath appointed. So taking  
her leave of them, she entred her Chamber, where she and  
Hyppolita conserred with Laurana, of all her sorrows pas-  
sed, and the adventures of her Brother. Now was Palmer-  
tin and his compansions, by the Turkes commandement,  
lodged neare the Wallace, and to each of them he sent a god-  
ly Horse with costly Furniture, thinking by these meanes  
to conquer Agriola, and purchase her of her which he long  
had desired, and talking with Palmerin, said. Right well  
may you be Brother to my Lady Ariola, in that your beau-  
ty and complextion delivers great likelyhood: Hiring then  
over Gaul have permitted, that for her comsoor y nith ill  
be brought hither: perswade her I pray ye, that she be no  
longer repugnant to my will, soz could I be a Childe by  
her, I woulde think my selfe the happiest Lord on the earth.

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Beside, I would have you forsake the folly of your Christianity, and yield your selfe to our Law, which is much better then yours: and you shall see how our Gods will favour you, likewise what great good you shall receive thereby. By Lord (quoth Palmerin) I will labour with my Sister, so much as lies in me to do, as for your Law as yet I am but acquainted therewith: but when I shall finde it to be such as you assure me, easily may I be drawn thereunto, and to serve you with such loyalty, as so great an estate both worthily deserve. I confess my selfe likewise greatly bound to your Majestie, in that you have accepted my Sister as your wife, and to me a poore slave given both Life and Liberty, which I beseech you also grant the Partners, in whose behalf it was my chance to be taken. In so doing sh: may be greatly moved by your magnificent liberality and mercy.

The great Turke presently gave his consent, causing their safe Conduct to be openly proclaimed: So Palmerin and his Friends humbly departing to their Lodging, the Turke went to Agriolas Chamber, where sitting downe by her, he thus beganne. Now shall I perceve Madame, how much your Brother may preuale w<sup>t</sup> h<sup>t</sup> you: for he hath promised me so to order the matter, as you shall grant my long desired suite. By Lord (quoth she) my Brother shall command me nothing, but I will do it with all my heart: as for your request, it is not in my power, but in the hand of God, who defendeth me as best him pleaseth. How can I change the opinion I have held so long: though by having my Brother with me, I enjoy farre greater content then I did before.

It sufficeth me (said the Turke) to see you so well pleased, and as so<sup>r</sup> your Brother, that you may perceve how well I love him: before one moneth be expredd, I will make him the chiefe<sup>r</sup> Lord in my Court, next mine owne person: so leaving the Princesse, he departed to his Chamber.

# Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

ver. The day following, Palmerin said to his compantons You see me friends, how friendly Fezzans straileth on vs, but least sh: change, as ebermoze she is want: we must practise some good means to escape from these Turkish Inuictos. Beside, laging we have found the Princesse Agriola I hope Tryneus is not so secretly hidden, but we shall heare some tgodings of him. Of her therefore will I enquire, if she know what became of him & Ptolome, when I left them: in meane while you may closely conclude with our Partners, that they be ever ready at an hours warning, so<sup>r</sup> I hope we shall set hence before eight daies be past. Palmerin went to Agriolas Chamber, and there by good hap he found her alone: whom after he had humbly saluted, the Princesse thus spake to him. My noble Friend, you must be carefull how you speake to me, especially before the aged Lady you saw here yesterday, for she understandeth all languages, and if we be discovered, there is no way but death: therefore when you see her with me; conserue rather with Laurana, and say to her what you would have me know, because she is a Lady both vertuous and faithfull. No lesse (Madame) have I alwaies sound her, quoth Palmerin: therefore I beseech you make account of her, and acquaint her with your greatest affaires, so<sup>r</sup> she is Daughter to one of the most gentle Princes in the world. But Madame, I would gladly know what became of Tryneus, after that so unhappily I departed from you. The Admirall Olimaell, quoth she, came with his Galleys so soone as you were departed, who tooke vs and then separated vs in sunder: scant permitting me to speake to him & Ptolome, nor know I what is become of them. It sufficeth then Madame, answered Palmerin, that I have sound you, so<sup>r</sup> on you dependeth the life of Tryneus, who shall not long (I hope) be concealed from vs: therefore addle your selfe on the day when you will depart, so<sup>r</sup> I have a ship ready to carry you from this ieritudo. Thanks be to heaven, quoth

# The History Of Palmerin D'Oliva

She, soz soz give fortune, I will be so ready as you shall not  
say soz me. Hev entred Hyppolita, to soz baxe off the  
talke o other occasions, where we will leave, and returne  
to the Prince Trineus.

## CHAP. XLII.

How Trynens being Enchanted into the shape of a Dog  
in the Isle of Malfada, there came a Princele of the  
Moores, who requested him of the aged Enchantele,  
to whom he was given: and what happened to him  
afterward.

**T**hen thinke as yet you remember, without repe-  
titions of the soverne discou- se, in what man-  
ner the Knight, Cosen to the Admirall Oli-  
mael, to whom the Prince Trineus was gi-  
ven: arrived by Tempell in the Isle of Mal-  
fada, and how he with his people, were transformed into  
divers shipes of Beasts, among whom Trynens had the  
likenele of a goodly Dog. Being thus disguised, a young  
Princelle named Zephira, Daugter to the King of the  
same Countrey, came to demand counsell of the aged  
Enchantele Malfada, for the cure of a certayne Dis-  
ease, whiche by strange aduenture happened to her in this  
manner.

This young Princelle one day being pleasant in her  
Fathers Court, among many of her wayting Ladies: en-  
tered a goodly Gartenn, which abounded with great diversy  
of sweet flowers, and after she had walked a pretty while  
in an Albour of Huskes-rises, she espred a Willey flower,  
whiche seemed so faire and beautifull to her eye, as she was  
provoked to goe & trop it from the stalke. Having this deli-  
cate flower in her hand, wherein (by misforune) a ven-  
emous worme was crept, she took such delight in smelling

it: as her breath dzeu wyp the worme into one of her Noses  
thils, not being able to get it out againe. So the venomes  
and poisen of this little worme engendred a putrefaction,  
and other like wormies, whiche gabs a smell so filthy and  
loathsome, as hardly could any abide to stand by her. Her  
father not a little grieved at this mischance, sent for the  
most skilful phisitours, to know what remedy might be  
concluded upon: but all their pain and travell was in vain,  
for the Disease continuall still without any amendment.  
In the end, the King fearing it would torne to a Cancer  
vinciable, and having heard what strange things the En-  
chantele Malfada performed, sent the Princesse Zephira  
to her, where she being arrived without any danger,  
because she would not hurt any inhabiting in the Isle, de-  
clared to the Sorceresse the whole manner of her misfor-  
tune.

The Enchantele answered that she could gibe her  
her remedie, and hardl shuld sh. finde any at all, except it  
were by an ancien Knight, who remained in the Courte  
of the King of Romara and Grisca, & alwaies subiect to the  
Soldan of Perisia. and the Knight was named Muzabeli-  
no. The Princele was so displeased at this answer, see-  
ing her intent frustrated, as she would receyve no succe-  
nace: therfore walking in the fields, to expresse her  
anger, and so to the Sea-shor, where the Ships lay censu-  
sed, she beheld the Dog whiche was the Prince Trineus,  
and so farre in liking was she with him, as shes desired the  
Enchantele to give him her, and having obtained her re-  
quest, returned to her Father, who lay sickle in one of his  
Cities called Nabor, whereof the whole Kingdome bare  
the name.

When the King saw his Daughter returnyd without  
cure, his melanchalite concrest so strok to his hart, as with-  
in thre dayes after he dyed. Having made his Testament  
before his decease, he gave his Daughter as her portion a

# The History Of Palmerin De Oliva

Citty called Elain, one of the greatest & surest Strengths in the Realme, with all the Sognories belonging thereto. To Maulerino his youngest Sonne, he gave an other like position, which was a daies journey distant from Elain. After the Kings funerall rites were sollemnized, the Princess with her Brother Maulerino, went to their owne pessillans: doubting the fury of the Prince Tyreno, their Eldest Brother, who alwaies had shewne hymselfe prud and contentious.

She being thus in good quiet by her selfe, tooke no other pleasure then in playing with her Dog, because he seemed very subtle and politique, so that she prepared a Couche for him at her Wifes feste. Tyreno being crowned King after his Fathers decease, began greatly to despise that his Sister should enjoy the fairest Citty in the Kingdome: for which cause he cunningly practised all the meanes he could to put her to death. And that he might the better compasse his mischievous purpose, he secretly sent a Messenger to the Master of the Princesses Horses, that if he would but condiscend to kill or poison his Brother and Sister, he would give him ffty thousand Deraphes, and make him Gouvernour of Elain. The wicked Noble man, grady and covetous, seeing the large promise of the Tyrant, consented thereto: so that one night the Princess being asleepe, he entered her Chamber with his sword drawne, thore to have marthered her, and afterward the Prince her Brother.

Tryneus, who had lost nothing belonging to a man, but bodily shaps and voice, seeing the Traytor enter his Ladies Chamber with his Weapon drawnes, started vp presently, and setting his two sofesete on the Villains breast, bit him so cruelly by the face and throat, as he being vnable to help himselfe, was constrained to cry out aloud. With this noise the Princess awaked, and her Brother likewise, who lay in the next Chamber, comming in haste to see the cause of this outcry: and knowing the Traytor, beat him so sore with the

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

the pommeil of his sword about the Stomack, as in the end enforced him to confess his Treason. Whereat Maulerino not a little merbailling, and wrathfull at his villanous intent, smote his head from his Shoulders. In the morring he appointed such guard in the Citty, as no stranger might enter without great examination. The Princess knowing how her Dog had saved her life, loved him afterward so tenderly, as she would feare him at her owne Table, and none but her selfe might give him any food. Here will he likewise pursue a while, and declare the delivrance of the Princess Agriola.

### CHAP. XLIII.

How the great Turk became enamoured with the Princess Laurana, by meanes whereof he was slaine, and Agriola delivered.



Almerin being upon a day in his Chamber with his companions, practising some meanes for the delivrance of Agriola the Princess Laurana of Durace, came to them, framing her speeches in this manner. Gentlemen, if any of you be desirous to deliver vs from this cruell enemy, who holds vs in this thral and bondage: I have devised the best meanes that may be, and thus it is. The Turke, the most luxurios and unchaste man in the world, not contented with infinite number of Concubines, hath many times made love to me, so that to compasse mine intent, I have mad him promise within thre dates to graunt his request. In this tyme I have intreated the Princess Agriola to shew him the most disdaisfull countenance that may be, which she hath faithfully promised, and so this cause hath sent me to you, conveye hence

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

hence all the riches ha had given ye, and whiche she her selfe will likewise send ye: so that when the houre is come se me to falall his pleasure, one of you being parbly armed, shall in my place morder him, in rebeuge of the ill Christendome back sustalned, by the last unhappy borage of Otonell, whiche dete munech very shorly, as I vnderstand, to goe spegle he Ill of Rhodes. Palmerin v. ry glad of the Princesse notable invention, thus answered. Be cause (Madame) I lately promyed the Turke, not to de- part his Court, but to kepe him company, when he denysed his Abirrell, that I and my compaynes shold goe with him to the Rhodes: I cannot be the man to ead this wox thy revenge, therfore one of you (me f. i. nos) must resolue to perfoare it. In meane tyme, you Madame Laurana my returme to the Turke, pl. assyng him with faire and friendly speeches: for if never so litle suspition be gathered, not one of vs can escape with life. Feare not, said the Princesse, I will use the matter so carefullly as you can desire, right well know I how to enstainc his hart with queint looks, coy disdaines, fent paldings, and other such like ceremoniles usyd in love: as feare not you to prosecute the stratageme, in that a beginning so good, myt mades for to a successive end. The young Duke of Pontus, who began to grow afficionate towards the Princesse Laurana, said.

In sooth my Lord, so please you to commit the charge hereof to me: so will hope I to eructe the same for her sake that did so woyfully abut it, as I dare warrant to deserve no reouch therby. For my self carress to gentle Love, shall be so gracious, as in qualifing the valaball heate of our enemy, I will end my selfe never to lebe an other: and her faire recyed, if I bring nat his head to Madame Laurana, let me be accounted as one of the most bockfull Knights that ever bare Armes. Adverysse me therefore of the place and houre, and doubt not of my faith-

# Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

full performance. At this pleasant answer they all began to smile, whereupon Palmerin thus spake. Welde me noble Duke, considering your youth and brave disposition, I knote no one in this company more welc for the Princesse Laurana, then you are: but I thinke when the appointed houre shall come, you will be a little more angry with the Turke then her, if she have you in that subjection as it serues she hath. Yet let vs not now trifle the tyme in vaine, when such waightie occasions commandeth our diligence.

So returned Laurana to the Princesse Agriola, acquainting her with the Knights determination, when not long after, the great Duke entred the Chamber, accompanied with Palmerin and the King of Sparta, and that he might the better speake to her he so earnestly desyred, he caused Palmerin to sit betweene him and Agriola, then turning to Laurana, he began to devile familiarly with her. Whiche when Palmerin and Agriola perceved, the better to begotte him, he made a sygne to the King of Sparta, that he would enter into some talke of hunting: whereat the Turk presently arose, and taking Laurana by the hand, led her to the window, with these speeches. Mytresse of my heart, and the very fairest creature that ever mine eyes beheld, will ye grant the request I made to you yesterday? Dix you not what great honour I have done to Madam Agriola? notwithstanding, if you will love me, I will make you my wife, that I may have issue by you to succeed in my Kingdome, and your honours shall be nothing inferiour to hers. And though he still deny me the favour, whiche with long and continuall pursuite I have desyred: yet doe you consider my grise, and in thyt tyme you vouchsafe me no pity, the extreme afflictions I endure for your love, are rated at the pice of my life. God forby, quoth Laurana, that so great a losse shold come to the Orientall Empyre by me, rather will I forget the accustomed regard of mine honour, to be accepted into your grace and favour. And the cause

## The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

cause that made me deferre so long from this answer, was the feare I have of Madamo Agriola, and her Brother, to whom I was given by your Admirall after my Fathers decease.

But to the end my Lord, that none of them may suspect our love, I thinke it convenient that Hypolita, who alwaies lieth in your Chamber: remoue her selfe to the Ladies attending on Agriola, and her shall you command to give me the Key of my Ladies Chamber, which hitherto she hath used to carry. By this meanes may I the more safely, and without suspition of any one, come in the night to fulfill your desire. The Turke imagined he had gained the Princesses booke indeede, was not a little sorrell whereto he laid.

My Lady, you shall have the Key as you request. nor shall she longer lunge in my Chamber, whom you feare so much. Moreover, this night will I perswade Agriola, that I keele my selfe not halfe curiant: and thereto to keepe her selfe in her owne Chamber, and so may you come boldly to me this night. If any one chaunce to mette ye, say, that I sent for you: and if they dare be so bolde as to hinder your comming, in the mozaing shall my Janissaries put them to death, whatsoever they be. So taking a Ring from his finger, wherein was a Stone of the steepest value, he gave it to the Princesse, saying. Hold Madame, take this as a pledge of my promise: for which Laurana humbly thanking him, coust replied. My Lord, I see Agriola hath soure or five times earnestly noted you. I thinke it good therefore that we speake of talke: assuring you that I will not taile at midnight, when every one is fast a sleepe to keepe my word, and in the Mantle which you sent me yesterdag, I will couertly enter your Chamber, conditionallie that you keepe your promise to me afterward.

Doubt not therof, said the Turk, and so taking his leave of her, went presently to his Chamber, where finding

Hypolita

## Emperour of Constantinople. PART.2.

Hypolita, he commanded her to take thence her Bed, and carry it to the Ladies Chamber, likewise taking the Key from her, he sent it by one of his Pages to Laurana, who having it in hand, came laughing therewith to Palmerin, saying.

How say you my Lord, hane I not handled the matter as it shoulde be? The Turke moved with pitie of our strait imprisonment, bath givin me the charge of Madam Agriola: so by his Page hath he sent me the Key of her Chamber, and Hypolita shall lode new among other Ladie. And because this night the action must be fulfilled, do you adverte the Duke of Pentus, that at midnight he saile not to come, to use drunken Holofernes as he bath deserued. Palmerin and the King of Sparta, praising God that their affaires went sooward so luckily: returned to their Lodging, intreating Agriola to be ready at the houre, that their intent might not be hindered by her. Afterward they rehearsed to their companions, what was concluded by the Princesse Laurana: wherefore quoth he to the Duke, prepare to bring your Armes secretly to Agriolas Chamber, where you shall finde the King of Sparta and my selfe. Meane while, Fry soll, Olorico and Eustace, see that all our Baggage be combayed into our Ship, which may safely be done without suspect, conserning what great multitude of Souldiers are Embarking, and therfore provide all things ready against our comming. The houre being at hand, Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and the Duke of Pentus, went to the Princesse Chamber, where the Duke was immediately armed, except his Helmet, which he left on the Table, covered with the mantle wherof Laurana spake, putting on the Axys the Princesse wroze vpon her head, and so finely was he disguised in those habits, as in the daik he might be reputed rather a woman than a man, and being ready to depart about the practise, he said to Palmerin. I thinke it best my Lord, that you and the King of Sparta, conduct

# The History of Palmerin D'Oliva.

sended the Ladies before to the portes : so if in mine attempt, I shoulde happen to fail, yet shouldest thou look but the worst in your company. So impotunate was he with them to follow his advise, as he caused them to depart presently to the Haven, where they were so fully informed by Fideli, and the rest, without troubling any by the way to hinder them. When the Duke saw himselfe lesse alone, and how he was to dispose himselfe to his intent, saluting on his hant he shalde.

Sainte Odile, that infested the mighty Holofernes to be bereaved of thy servant Judith : afford me at this time thy like grace, to give me strength to worke his death, who is the greatest living enemy to Christians. This said, he went to the Loris Chamber, where he found the doore ready open, and appreasing the bed : the Loris ( who verely thought it was Laurana ) raised up himselfe, and taking him in the arme, said. Welcomme sweete Lady, so very long have I expected the comming. Ah Traytor, quoth the Duke. I am not the thou leste. A sorre regard of honour will not suffer her to stane in such sorte. With which words he stabs him to the heart, and smiting off his head, weipp'd it in the shidle that Laurana gaue him : so going to Agnelas Chamber, and clasping on his helmet, went presently to his friends, whom he sound to praper sayng goddesse, and thrawing the head into Lauranas bier, sayd.

My dame, he that has so impotunate for your digne  
nor, as a witness of his love to you, hath sent you his head  
here by me: wherwith I present you so devoutly, as he did  
leath I dedicate my life & service to your dispiseng. A thousand  
thanks my Lord, quod the Princessse, this be to me  
as hath made me so constantly to be yours : as to say  
much it toucheth not the impeach of mine honor, I re  
queste with my utermest endeavours to pleasure you. As  
the Duke would have replied, the other Knights came to

# Emperour of Constantynople. PART.2.

white on the head, whiche when they had cast into the sea, they presently hoised sate, and before day had gotten faire enough from thence.

In the morning, as the Harringers came from their Galleges towards the City, they cyped the head floting on the water, and taking it up, shewed it to their companiere, to knowe if they could tell whose it was. When they beheld it so dreadfull, the mistachers straining rat like stiffe bristles, and the locks of haire haing hangyng downe, they knew not what to thinke: and one of them halding it well marked it said :

By all our Gods, if I be not deceived, this is the head  
of my Lord the great Lorde : at which word all the other  
began to seeze and weare. Hyppolita seeing faire Phobus  
set soorth the morning light, came to the Princesse Agnol  
les Chamber, where not finding her nor Laurana, the  
chamber likewise espoiled of many things: she doubted im  
mediately that they were fled, whereof to be received, she  
went to the great Loris chamber, and seeing the Pages  
standing at the doore, said; Why enter you not? the houre  
is past, and my Lord is not yet risen. Lady, quoth they, as  
sacred he hath not called vs, and you know that yesternight he  
forbad our entrance till we were called: it may be he  
slept but badly this night, and therefore now is contented  
to take his rest. I feare, quoth she, some other matter then  
theyre debt hinder his calling you, so brevelling open the  
doore, and entring the Chamber, saw the bloud dispersed  
on the ground, and the headlesse truncke hanging beside the  
bed, with which sight she made a very pitifull outcry,  
wherat many noble men and Gentlemen came, who when  
they beheldin what had happened, journed with them to  
a sorrefull complainte. Soone was the report of this mur  
der blazed through the City, so that Olimaell hearing  
therof, raigna shisher in all haste: where he was no sonne  
present, but Hyppolita thus began. Ah Olimaell, thou  
broughtest

broughte all the traitors bither, that haue rain my Lord, and by the means hath this Treason been committed. By all our Gods, said one of the Turks *Sephewes* present, it is true: but because thou hast suffered Agriola, her Brother and the other Knights to escape, thou Willain shall abyde it derryly. So dyving soylt his Sennare, killed Olmaell therewith, layng. Such be their reward that trayeronously betray their Sovereigne: mine Uncle of a pwoze Janiz it made the he his chiefe Admirell, and thou for his kindnesse hast requited him with death, but now thy Ellangis woythly recompenced.

Olmaell the Raine, his men ranne furiously on the Turkes Sephew, and st. w him, with fity Knights behid that defended his quurrell: and had it not been for an ancient Walla, whi with an hundrede Wooldiers came to part them, they were in daunger of a greater sedition, because they saw none purue Palmerin and his Companione.

The Walla that had thus pacified the tumult, by promises perswaded he Janizites, and prebatled so well with them: as the same day he was declared younger Brother to the Holdane deceased, and great Emperoz of Turkie. Many injuries did he to Chriſtendoms afterward, in rebenge of his Brothers death: which yet we will forbear, to rehearse what happened to Palmerin, and his Companions, being on the Sea.

CHAP. XLIII.

How Palmerin and his companions met two Turkish Ships, from whom they delivered Estebon the Merchant and his Sonnes: and came to the Isle of Malta, where Palmerin lost them all, and of the sorrow he made for this mishap.



Aurana was so joyfull, that she had so fortunately escaped the Turkes bands, and besyde was so revenged of her chiefeſt enemy, as nothing could yeld her greater contentation: but how much more would she have rejoiced, if she had knowne the daughter at the Wallace: As she sat discouſing heron with Palmerin and the Duke of Pontus, Frisoll being alſt on the decke, espyed ſoure Shippes commynge towards them with full ſaile: whereupon he called to his compartons, that they ſhould preſently arme themſelues. For (quoth he) I ſee two Robing Ships, and they haue taken two other, or elſe my iudgement falſeth: let vs therefore labour to withstand them, leſt we ſustaine a further danger.

No ſooner had he ſpoken theſe wordes, but they all put themſelues in readinesſe, ſo that when the enemy cloſed with them, and many entred the ſhip, thinking it was reſleed: they had a ſharper entertainment then they expeſted, ſoſt not one escaped aliue that came a board, but either were Raine or thowne into the ſea. In brefe, they overcame both the Pirats, and leſt not one alſt to carry ſyburngs hereros into Turkie. Afterward, as Palmerin ſearched the Cabins, to ſee what Prisoners the ſhoores had taken: he ſpyed his Waller Estebon, the Marchant of Hermida, and his two Sonnes by him, with two other Merchants chayned